

# PROCEEDINGS

OF THE

## American Society for Psychical Research

Section "B" of the American Institute for Scientific Research

---

Volume V

---

American Society for Psychical Research  
Tribune Building  
New York  
1911



# TABLE OF CONTENTS

## PART I.

### A CASE OF HYSTERIA.

|   |     |
|---|-----|
| Preface .....                                     | 1   |
| Chapter I.—Introduction .....                     | 7   |
| Chapter II.—Summary of the Facts .....            | 30  |
| 1. Physical Phenomena.....                        | 30  |
| 2. Mental Phenomena.....                          | 67  |
| Chapter III.—Conclusion.....                      | 109 |
| 1. Conscious Fraud.....                           | 111 |
| 2. Trance Deception.....                          | 111 |
| 3. Spiritistic Hypothesis.....                    | 144 |
| Detailed Records.....                             | 179 |
| 1. Part I. Report by Drs. Hamilton and Smyth..... | 179 |
| 2. Part II. Report by James H. Hyslop.....        | 261 |
| (1) First Series.....                             | 263 |
| (2) Second Series.....                            | 353 |
| (3) Third Series.....                             | 434 |
| (4) Fourth Series.....                            | 550 |
| Appendix .....                                    | 642 |
| Medical Examination of Anna Burton.....           | 654 |
| Book Review.....                                  | 657 |
| Explanation of Illustrations.....                 | 658 |

## PART II.

### EXPERIMENTS AND EXPERIENCES IN TELEPATHY.

By Miss Miles, Miss Ramsden and Miss Statkowski.

|  |     |
|--|-----|
| 1. Introduction .....                                      | 673 |
| 2. First Report of Miss Ramsden.....                       | 675 |
| 3. Questions addressed to Miss Ramsden and Miss Miles..... | 678 |
| 4. Miss Ramsden's Replies.....                             | 690 |
| 5. Answers of Miss Miles to Questions.....                 | 683 |
| 6. Second Set of Questions.....                            | 689 |
| 7. Miss Ramsden's Replies.....                             | 690 |
| 8. Recent Experiments.....                                 | 701 |
| 9. A vision of White Light.....                            | 712 |

6/23/37  
Amer. Soc. for Psychological Research  
Donor

PART III.

SIGNIFICANT COMPLICATIONS OF THESE TELEPATHIC  
PHENOMENA.

By James H. Hyslop.

|                                     |     |
|-------------------------------------|-----|
| 1. General Discussion.....          | 714 |
| 2. Sitting with Mrs. Chenoweth..... | 731 |

317419



PROCEEDINGS  
OF THE  
AMERICAN SOCIETY  
FOR  
PSYCHICAL RESEARCH

133.07  
A512P  
v. 5  
1911

---

A CASE OF HYSTERIA.

By Dr. W. H. Hamilton, Dr. J. S. Smyth and James H. Hyslop.

PREFACE.

The phenomena of this report have the usual superficial claim to being supernormal physical ones, and when I say "superficial" I do not mean to beg any questions regarding their real character. But they invited the interest and created an obligation in the investigator because they occurred in a private family of good standing. There was no professional background or experience in the case, tho this was unfortunately one of the prospects entertained in the development of it. But the first important thing which the investigator had to recognize was the fact that *Miss Burton—this not being the real name of the subject—actually believes in herself*, tho she has borrowed this belief from the convictions of Mrs. Milton, her foster mother, who is undoubtedly sincere in her belief that the phenomena are what they purport to be. These two circumstances, the absence of professional antecedents and the sincerity of the belief of the parties concerned, make the case one of extreme psychological interest to start with and exclude the amateur investigator at once from any part in the determination of its character.

It was not long before Drs. Hamilton and Smyth—both names are pseudonyms—in their investigations discovered the marks of hysteria in the case and this opened up a rare opportunity for scientific and humane work in this field. They were not slow to accept the situation and to make their observations to fit the discovery. The combination of cir-

cumstances was favorable to the right interest and the report should be a milestone on the way to better knowledge of these phenomena without indulging the contempt and ridicule which usually marks the attitude of the average Philistine. The majority of our intellectuals and respectables take no better conception of the problem and the phenomena than do the untrained laymen. They accept the issue as the laymen define or conceive it and differ from them only in being sceptical while they indulge the pride of intellect without scientific insight or humanitarian feeling. If the man of common sense would only rise in his wrath and hang the whole set we might make a forward step in progress. A little common sense might save the intellectuals much loss of power and a larger influence in the affairs of the world than their arrogance and conceit will allow. It requires very little real knowledge and experience with psychology and human nature to discover the mean between miracles and fraud which are the false alternatives that both parties try to force on us. The same fault, that of snap judgments, characterizes both classes.

Fortunately the present case offers no excuse for either scientific contempt or neglect. It quickly revealed the features that make it a crucial one for the application of methods that will throw light upon a large borderland in the investigation of mediumistic phenomena. It has been too much neglected for the pursuit of pseudo-miracles and the real scientific opportunities have been lost for lack of interest in the psychological medium in which all supernormal phenomena are cast. When I began my own investigations I did not care whether there were any physical inexplicabilities in it or not. It sufficed to see that we had a subconscious life of more than ordinary interest and importance, and if miracles came as a gratuitous surplus, so much the better. But they were not the primary desideratum. The hysteria that at least simulated them was of more interest to our ordinary science, and perhaps more important, even on the theory that the phenomena were what they appeared to be. The scientific men who ignore the non-evidential phenomena, and especially the psychological anomalies which

they observe in mediumship ought not to be surprised at their perplexities with the supernormal. They might find an easy solution by giving adequate and proportional attention to the complex conditions affecting their problem. The present case is a specially rich one in the phenomena which may help to explain the limitations and obstacles to the mediumship of all kinds. Its primary, perhaps its whole value lies just in this fact.

Had the important question been the genuineness of the supernormal phenomena claimed in it the obstacles to proper investigation of them might have been sufficient to remove all interest from them, and from that point of view also both the conditions of experiment and the imperfections of the report would be sufficient to nullify its value. But the evidence of hysteria in it soon demonstrated the duty of patience with the limitations under which the experiments had to be conducted and the reward was the discovery of many facts which would never have betrayed themselves had "test conditions" prevailed. A well furnished laboratory, however, would have enabled us to conduct the investigation in a manner to satisfy both requirements at the same time; that of determining easily what was going on in the apparent physical phenomena and that of determining the psychological concomitants of the facts. As it is all such cases have their value exposed to the mercies of the crowd and the impatient or impoverished scientists. The result is that the centuries go by without the proper investigation. The physiologist has his eye upon some immediately practical outcome in therapeutics whenever he attempts to probe such cases and also goes at it with physiological instead of psychological instruments. He is not trying to solve cosmic problems, but the more personal one of his profession. The layman has neither the knowledge nor the patience for dealing with so complicated a question as hysteria and its congeners offer. The result is that nothing will be rightly done until even psychic researchers learn what their problem is and can obtain the equipment for it. It is not consulting mediums that solve the problem, but the psychological study of just such cases as the one represented in this Report. It may not afford

much, if any, material which interests the more curious psychic researcher, but with the existence of certain incidents which classify it undoubtedly with the mediumistic type, whether they represent the usual standard of the supernormal or not, and with the obstacles to the expression of this supernormal so evident in it, we have a rare case for studying just what will resolve most of the perplexities that afflict the psychiatrist when he approaches the supernormal, mutilated as it usually is by the omission of the psychological matter of importance. The very impediments to the investigation which we wanted to hasten were a means of developing or discovering the existence of the phenomena which were a clue to the whole apparent mystery, while they exempted the subject of them from the ordinary suspicions, and opened the way to the explanation of much that appears inexplicable to the layman without offending the theories which are based upon the supernormal. In fact they lead right up to the articulation of this supernormal with the conditions which hysteria seems to limit or thwart. Mr. Myers and Dr. Hodgson held that mediumship was a normal function of human nature. To many hysterical conditions seem to be its cause and explanation. But it may be more proper to regard them as its disease rather than as its essential characteristic. The present case will throw light on that question.

I reported, in connection with this very case, another instance of apparent fraud by a perfectly honest person (*Journal Am. S. P. R.*, Vol IV, pp. 65-68). There was no opportunity to study that case in the same manner as this, but the gentleman, a judge in one of the State courts, who investigated it, was convinced that, in spite of external appearances, it was not a conscious fraud. The evidence undoubtedly pointed to his apologetic verdict. The phenomena of Miss Burton throw much light on such cases and the future of investigation may have much in store for similar hysterical associates with mediumship.

The present case is also a most excellent proof of the statements of Dr. Pierre Janet which we published in the early history of this Society and in which he indicated just

how we should be obliged to distinguish between fraudulent and genuine phenomena a class of incidents which are associated with somnambulism. Cf. *Journal Am. S. P. R.*, Vol. I, pp. 86-87; *Proceedings Am. S. P. R.*, Vol. I, pp. 66-67. The case also confirms remarks of my own on that of Madame d'Esperance published in our own *Proceedings*, Vol. I, pp. 131-168. Professor Seiling criticized the view there taken of her dematerialization and his criticism was published in the *Journal*, with comments of my own showing that it was not necessary to suspect fraud where somnambulant or hysterical phenomena were possible. Cf. *Journal Am. S. P. R.*, Vol. I, pp. 610-611. The case of Miss Burton is proof of the contention there made.

I wish here to express my appreciation of the entire openness and honesty with which Mr. and Mrs. Milton and Miss Burton gave us the freedom to apply restraints such as test experiments required. It was more than mere willingness that they should be made. They fully realized the necessity of this in behalf of themselves as well as Miss Burton and voluntarily expressed the desire that no obstacles be placed in the way of proper experiment and the exclusion of possible fraud of any kind. They did not at first know what the objections of certain persons would be in such cases, but as soon as they were pointed out they were glad to accord us the utmost demands we saw fit to make. Our contact with the case and the family made it clear that we were not dealing with dishonest people of any kind and we had no suspicions of the normal Miss Burton, but we well knew the difficulties which the mere readers of records will make and so found it necessary to apply for restraints that hysterical phenomena make applicable and this was fully appreciated by all the parties concerned. No criticism can be made for any unwillingness to meet the severest tests.

One thing is clearly indicated by this report. It is the absolute disqualification of the conjurer for experimenting with such cases or for passing judgment upon the phenomena. Had we proceeded with his ideas on the type of phenomena we should never have found traces of hysteria or have been able to study the changes of personality involved. The



public, both scientific and lay, has accepted too readily the conjurer's point of view and methods in such cases, but I now regard this report as forever shutting out that class of self-constituted authorities and as justifying the policy of wholly ignoring them in the future. Conjurers have their place, but it is not in the investigation of hysterics or phenomena that are associated with them.

I had Miss Burton examined in her normal state by a specialist in neurology and the result was negative. It was my desire that a similar examination could be made of her in the trance, but this was not carried out as desired and hence there is nothing to add to what the regular investigators report. I include, however, Dr. Millard's Report in the Appendix.

JAMES H. HYSLOP.

## CHAPTER I.

### Introduction.

By James H. Hyslop.

The case which is to come under more exhaustive discussion here is that of Miss Burton and has been briefly considered in two articles of the *Journal* (Am. S. P. R., Vol. III, pp. 689-710, and Vol. IV, pp. 53-62). Those articles were designed to indicate a group of phenomena lying between conscious fraud and the supernormal, while simulating the latter and to serve the timely end of showing the public a richer field of scientific interest than is usually supposed, while diverting it from the two alternatives between which its assumed explanation had to be obtained in physical or quasi-physical phenomena. The present report will have the same object more exhaustively discussed. But it will be the emphatic intention here to lay the stress upon the hysterical aspect of the case. In fact, this is the first and most important point of view to be taken of it, and if there be any more striking interest in it this will be purely secondary and only supplementary to the phenomena of hysteria which constitutes its primary value.

The gentlemen who called my attention to it in a report on it in detail below very early in their experiments discovered the importance of the case in the study of hysteria and of all alleged supernormal phenomena that simulate spiritistic claims. It is to them that we owe the opportunity for understanding it and the most important of the facts exhibiting its real character. They are both practicing physicians, one of them a surgeon and the other a specialist in his work as an oculist. Their standing in their community, which is a large city, is not questioned by scientific men and their identity might be revealed but for the desire to protect the subject, who is a private person, from a publicity that would be un-

pleasant and undesirable. At least one of the physicians has a state wide reputation and is well known outside his state. The other is connected with a medical school of some standing and promise. Consequently what the two men have to say regarding the case may be accepted as more than usually reliable.

The history of the case has to be sought in the statements of Mrs. Milton, who is the foster-mother of Miss Burton, the subject of this report. But these come with the vouchers of the family physician who was one of the experimenters. There is no good reason for questioning the account which the members of the family give regarding the case. There was nothing in the early development of it which appeared marvellous. The phenomena were the usual symptoms of mediumship in the incipient stages of its history and probably took the form they did from the superficial knowledge of spiritualism which Mrs. Milton had and the suggestions which it instigated. That, at least, is the evidence which inquiry brought out. The private nature of the case during this entire period of development, and for the most part in all subsequent experiments, removes it from the suspicion of the ordinary motives and attracted attention where it would otherwise have merited no notice. Some of the incidents in the subject's experience are the orthodox physical phenomena, such as raps, levitation of the table, rope tying, and movements of the tambourine. Others are more unique such as trance whistling of an expert type and simultaneous singing, and starting and stopping a phonograph. Automatic writing and clairvoyant visions, with occasional automatic speech also characterize the case. In this respect it is much richer in variety of phenomena than the case of Eusapia Palladino, and in some respects represents a psychological interest much greater than hers. But whatever the superficial nature of the phenomena the primary interest of the case is its hysteria, as the matrix in which all these phenomena are born. This was never apparent to the family.

Miss Burton is an orphan, now about twenty years of age. After the death of her mother she was taken under the

care of Mrs. Galton (pseudonym), sister of Mrs. Milton, and on the death of Mrs. Galton she fell to the care of Mrs. Milton. During the life of Mrs. Galton the first indication of the girl's mediumship was the discovery of raps on the head-board of the child's bed while she slept. The development of her psychic powers was suggested by this incident and it was some years before anything of special interest appeared. The story of Mrs. Milton below will give the details of this development, so far as her memory can recall them accurately. I shall not repeat the story told in the *Journal*, but shall simply refer interested readers to it, in case they desire to know what the family physician says of it. I give below Mrs. Milton's own story of the development. It was sent to me on July 22d, 1909.

[July 22d, 1909.]

Being greatly interested in spirit phenomena, and not being entirely satisfied with outside investigation, I decided to make some experiments in my own home,—in the year 1904—a very favorable opportunity having presented itself.

A child of thirteen summers,—Miss Anna Burton—came to make her home with me. She seemed gifted with occult powers, as little raps indicated during her sleeping hours.

Feeling that the child was too young to sit for development, I gradually interested her in the phenomena, and after two years of play and study, we decided to sit for development, under rather discouraging conditions, as my immediate family did not seem greatly interested in the physical phenomena. So Miss Anna and I had our sittings alone, for the most part, until we began getting results, by the little raps with intelligent answers.

In the beginning the work was slow, and required a good deal of patience all around the board, with varied amusements for the young medium. At first, we sat with a dim light in the room, and decided to place a small bell and a tambourine beneath the table,—as directed by the forces,—by the raps to answers as given above. To all appearances, the medium was in her normal condition, and we would sing, laugh, and make merry over our success, until the male members of the family would look in and wonder if we had lost our reason. The bells would ring, and the

tambourine glide around beneath the table; and, after a few months, the bell or tambourine would be lifted up to the opening in the extension table and put up to our hand as we reached for it. At that time we could not see the force that elevated it.

About that time we were instructed to sit in the dark; so we two nerved ourselves for the trial;—and I was rewarded by having my foot pulled, and my dress skirt yanked several times, while I held on to the medium's hands.

The first guide who came called himself—Black Cloud. And the next to come was *Dan*,—a young soldier in the Spanish-American War,—who said Black Cloud's influence was not always good for the medium, as he was determined to work in the light, and the medium did not have the physical strength to stand the strain. He said, "I was obliged to pass to the other side of life to find my sweetheart in this." Dan always brings a cheerful influence; and he has given me several messages in regard to Miss Anna's health,—(dangers in the coming years) which have been verified to the letter.

Often, we would be directed to place our hands on the edge of the big extension table, that weighs over one hundred (100) pounds, then it would rise up on two feet and swing nearly over;—back and forth it would fly, and then rise clear off the floor—several inches—and then turn completely around, while we followed with hands flat out on top or side. Then it would be put in position again. Then we would both sit at one end of the table,—and the far end would push out several feet and come back with great force. This was done times without number.

We had been getting instructions intuitively, and through Miss Anna's hand (by automatic writing, usually in dark, some in light)—as she was occasionally controlled by this time,—and our family and friends were able to "sit up and take notice,"—and call for test work—which the guides cheerfully gave.

We were instructed to give the forces some good music, as it would add strength and make harmony. So we bought a talking machine—which I operated in the dark, often, with the aid of "Lenore"—a little Spanish maid, who comes as a guide to Miss Anna, and who plays the tambourine beautifully, as many friends will testify.

One night a handkerchief was placed on the table, and when

lights were called for, we found the medium's hands tied behind her.—That gave me an idea. So I bought a 38 foot cotton clothes line, and at the next sitting, I placed it on the table, saying,—“We will see if *they* can use this,” and to our astonishment—when the call for light was made—the medium was tied to table and chair, each ankle bound to the chair leg,—and her body bound to the chair-back,—so it was impossible for her to stand. I placed a pair of shears on the table, and said,—“You may cut it if you like it better so.”—And it was parted nearly in the middle.

*The rope was all in use*; as it has been many times since. Other people have been allowed to tie the medium;—and the forces would untie her just the same.

The forces soon found that, for strong test work, it was necessary to place the medium in a deep trance in order to make her passive;—she is naturally very high strung, and easily disturbed,—but has a warm and lovable nature.

Out next experiment was to place a trumpet on the table. I asked Black Cloud if they could use it;—and he wrote out—“Don't know; will try.”—Very soon we were getting results, tho weak. They would sing or whistle with the machine music, but the trumpet would fall several times during the singing or whistling.

Matters ran along in this way for some time, different friends sitting with us. We found certain people brought great strength for certain phenomena, and we continued to improve.—But, when great success came, it was like a flash of lightning from a clear sky. Then, there were bells ringing, beautiful whistling through trumpet, tambourine, and bone playing; all in fine time to the machine music.

From that night on, the forces managed things to suit themselves:—The talking machine was stopped and started, needles changed, and records taken from the machine or cabinet while the medium's hands were held;—my own hands and feet being confined, also;—or, I would be taken away from the machine to the other side of the big table.

My sister,—Mrs. Galton—who passed out February 22d, 1906 (before Miss Anna had developed any strong mediumistic powers) handled the bells very skilfully;—and said—“Clara,

I will surprise you all yet!"—Which she did by the rendering of—"Love me and the World is Mine" in her own beautiful contralto voice;—as it is exquisitely given by William T. Evans, Tenor; accompaniment by Victor Orchestra.

A number of beautiful singing voices come to us, including high soprano, alto, mezzo soprano, and falsetto;—several are those of friends or guides. Perhaps the strongest talking and singing voice is that of Oma,—who, before her death was a young friend of Miss Anna's.

The most powerful, as well as most musical whistler that comes, first came as a guide to C. P. Morton,—brother-in-law of Mrs. Milton. He gave his name as "Signor Pietra Domuria," and said whistling had been a profession with him. It certainly would be hard for a professional to show greater strength or sweetness of notes. When Signor Pietra has the right conditions, he fills the air with sweet and wonderful melody.

Another force whistles by what he terms "tongue-ing." It is not at all like the ordinary method, and has a distinction of merit all its own.

Black Cloud favors us with an occasional "War-Whoop"—all his own;—and a good deal of grumbling at times about conditions that are hard to overcome.—When he says—"Me no like. Me have to bring medium back too much. Me can't talk; me watch her,"—then we are pretty sure to have a short session. He usually speaks through the medium.

Mrs. Galton—and Dan—have given some splendid advice to the family and friends; sometimes through the hand of the medium, and again independently. We soon learned by the touch of the hand to whom it belonged. Mrs. Galton's hand being small and dry, the same as in life;—while Lenore's fingers seem plump and firm as she thrums on our hands.

We have often been amused by having five or six finger rings taken from those around the table and exchanged. Side and back combs would also be taken from the ladies and placed in the hair of the gentlemen.—Then there is a call for lights, so all can see how they are adorned.—Then, when the lights are out, each person would have ring or comb returned and placed where it belonged.

Lenore's singing creates amusement, as it is soft and plaintive,



tho full of expression. She seems anxious to make the best of conditions.

It would be impossible for me to give all the phases of entertainment and knowledge we gain at these meetings. One of the strongest proofs we have that it is the return of the spirits is, the singing and whistling at the same time,—the singing comes through the trumpet, and you can understand the words, while the whistling is independent, or sounds that way,—as it is well up in the air.

We requested the forces to elevate the table, while we were all seated, to save confusion;—so, with the medium's right hand held down on the table by the person at her right, the table floats or keeps time to the music.

An interesting feature, is the display of lights;—some look like fire-bugs, and others reflect a light on the face of the medium, or on the face of a watch, and, often, on the instruments.

The strength of the forces are often tested.—The large end of a trumpet was torn in two in the twinkling of an eye by Dan, when an investigator tried to hold it,—much to that gentleman's discomfort,—who was trying the experiment on the quiet, —and had no idea that it could be done.

Another test of strength is shown when Miss Anna and I stand, one at each end of a piano, weighing 600 pounds, said piano—having glass cups under the rollers—with two or three sweeps it glides out in to the room, and then, when the command is given, it slides back in to the corner, between two windows, with rug undisturbed. This has been accomplished once in daylight, with shades drawn, and witnessed by Mr. Wood, who will vouch for the statement.\*

---

\* July 5th, 1910.

Having been requested to make a statement in regard to the moving of their piano by some invisible force of power, I will say that I was present when Mrs. M. C. Milton and Miss Anna Burton asked for assistance in moving their piano from its place across the corner of the parlor in order to obtain some small articles which had fallen behind it. We found that we were unable to move it, the piano being an upright and weighing all of 650 pounds. The feet were standing in glass cups, one only of which was on the rug. All curtains were drawn, the doors leading to the dining-room and reception hall were left open, but the window



During the past two or three months the force or form that elevates the table has been seen by at least four gentlemen; one, a physician of high standing, has seen the profile six times; the others, once or twice. The window shade is raised when Black Cloud gives the word,—and there, between the physicians and light which filters through the window, the face or form can be plainly seen. This also will be vouched for,—and the phenomena have taken place once while I was out of the city.

When we work under test conditions windows and doors are sealed.

This is only a small part of the experiments made and vouched for during the development of Miss Anna Burton whose powers were unknown to the majority of her friends three short years ago; and, in fact, many are just finding it out.

MRS. M. C. MILTON.

June 23, 1909.

Having witnessed practically all the phenomena described in this article, under conditions that made fraud impossible, I heartily endorse all that is stated.

In several séances held at my own house, all the phenomena described took place exactly as when the séances were held at the medium's home.

H. T. CAMERON.

shades were drawn so that furniture and persons were dimly distinguishable. Then after placing their hands on the piano, one standing at each end, Mrs. Milton asked Black Cloud if he were present. He answered promptly "Yes" by three raps on the piano. Then she asked if he would assist in moving the piano out so she could get behind it. He answered "No" by one loud rap, which set us all laughing, as we knew he had a fancy for doing things his own way. The piano was very perceptibly shaken. Finally Mrs. Milton said to the invisible one: "Black Cloud, will you move it alone?" The reply was "Yes" by three distinct raps. Then Mrs. Milton said, "All right, Black Cloud, go ahead." I then took a seat back from the piano where I could see both Mrs. Milton and Anna. Each had their hands flat on the piano, Anna at the end which was to swing out into the room. Then in a moment a light trembling sound was heard and in two glides it was found that one end of the instrument was more than a foot from the wall, with the feet still in the glass cups and the rug on which one foot was standing was undisturbed and in perfect order.

ALONZO WOOD.

P. S. In my experiments I failed to mention a test which happened in January, 1909, and which I consider one of the best I ever had.

I took a twenty-four (24) inch top center table,—that stood twenty-nine (29) inches from the floor—and placed it in an archway between music room and dining room.

The medium sat with back to dining room, with hands flat out on table.

I was seated at her right, at side of table, with my right hand on tips of her left hand fingers, and my left hand over her right hand.

The tambourine was taken up from table and tapped on my hands, and went up to the right of Medium, playing in time to music; and, when well up, all was quiet. I said—

“Black Cloud, can we have light?”

They rapped—“Yes”—

So I turned on the light, which was near at hand, and found the tambourine six (6) feet from the floor, and three (3) feet eight (8) inches from the medium, hanging on the side of a fancy gilt frame in music room.

I then called my father to come and see that I was neither dreaming nor out of my head.

I had him seat himself across the table from the medium. I then turned out the light, and took my position as before.

Soon the tambourine came to us, playing on the way, and was gently placed on my hands. Then my father's hands were placed on the medium's—and the table levitated to a height that made standing necessary.

Another time, under the same test conditions, the tambourine was hung on corner of wood-work in arch between music and dining rooms, four (4) feet above the medium's head, and three (3) feet to the right of where she was seated.

When it was all over I did my best to hang the tambourine up in the same place, but could not make it stay. I gave up trying, as I did not want to ruin the frame.

During these experiments I made no note of dates:—but the strong test work started in February, 1907.

MRS. M. C. MILTON.

This report is signed by four persons who were more or less witnesses of the phenomena and their development—Mr. Morton, Mrs. Morton, Mr. H. P. Galton, surviving husband of the deceased Mrs. Galton, and Mr. A. Wood.

Mrs. Milton's report, as trained readers will quickly remark, does not observe the scientific rules of observation, and it is not intended here that it shall have any such value. Her spiritistic views and enthusiasm are evident, and equally so the failure to describe the facts so as to distinguish between interpretation and the actual facts. There is no proof that the phenomena were supernormal, and it is not our purpose that they should be regarded as such. This introduction is only to give some idea of the history of the case beyond the reach of a scientific record, and readers can easily pick out the incidents that have an interest in the development of the case without troubling their critical faculty with objections, which, of course, are numerous enough. The naive acceptance of the phenomena on their superficial credentials, as miraculous, so to speak, and the failure to remark any symptoms of hysteria, are evidence of good faith in the narrative and the experienced reader can easily discover what he has to deal with in such a case. The phenomena naturally enough appear marvellous to the layman whose standard of evidence is less exacting than the scientific mind. For him the honesty of the parties concerned is sufficient and he does not reckon with subconscious processes of simulation. The lay mind is infected with Cartesian assumptions tho not aware of the fact. These are that what is not consciously produced is initiated by foreign intelligence and what is honestly done—assuming this in terms of the normal consciousness—is genuine and what it purports to be. Belief, not proof, is the natural disposition of this type of mind, and hence with the exclusion of subconscious agencies and the assumption of normal honesty, the supernormal has an easy road with the lay mind. This explains the narrative before us, and readers may thus understand just where its value lies, which is not in the reality of the supernormal as reported, but in the honesty of the narrative and the natural development of the phenomena without supposing the ordi-

nary fraud. The moment that this is excluded the case becomes one of special scientific interest. The history of the case thus shows a background of normal development, with every accompaniment of simplicity and faith which more or less assure the genuineness of the narrative, discounting it for an interpretation of the facts which they do not scientifically sustain, and that is all that we desire to effect by this account of its development.

For further information I sent Mrs. Milton a series of questions to which the following is a reply.

(1) Miss Anna, when a child of twelve (12) summers, lived with my sister,—Mrs. H. P. Galton—who first heard the little raps around the bed of the sleeping child.

(2) *We*—(Miss Anna and myself)—commenced our work for development by sitting at the table and inviting our spirit friends to come and rap for us,—which they did after a few trials. Tho very faint for several months, we soon found they understood our questions, and we could depend on the answers of "Yes" or "No."

(3) I had a small bell and tambourine, which I placed on the table, and said,—

(Do you want them there?)

No.

(Shall I take them away?)

No.

(Shall I place them beneath the table?)

Yes.

[So I did as directed, with encouraging results.]

At this time we always had a little light in the room. We were told by one of the guides who calls himself Dan, and who answered questions by raps, that we would get better results with the light out.

Black Cloud objected to this. He insisted on having the light. But the other forces said, in answer to questions, that the medium could not stand the light, in the work they were trying to do. So we put the light out,—much to Black Cloud's seeming displeasure.

(4) We then bought a talking machine,—because we were in need of music,—as neither one of us could sing or

was musical, altho we both loved music. Then I was impressed to get a trumpet, which seemed to be just what the forces wanted. In a very short time we got whistling and singing—altho it was not at all strong; and the trumpet would fall several times during the tune. We continued in the work until we got great results.

(5) About that time I placed a thirty-eight (38) foot rope on the table,—just to see what, if anything, would happen,—and it was used as stated in my experiments.

(6) The forces tried automatic writing several times, at the suggestion of friends,—but seemed anxious to push the other work first; so we did as directed,—and worked for the physical phenomena. Since then we have turned our attention to the automatic writing, with surprising results.

(7) We are greatly interested in materialization,—so I was anxious to sit for it,—which we did—altho the medium objected to sitting alone in the cabinet.

However, that fear was soon overcome,—and we first got good results on Miss Anna's nineteenth birthday. We have not devoted very much time to the development, but enough to satisfy myself, and others, that there is something in it. But, like everything else, it takes patience, and lots of it.

I made very few notes of dates, but we have been getting good results for the past three years.

Mrs. M. C. MILTON.

---

As the phenomena, if naturally explained, or perhaps better, normally explained, had to be traceable to earlier education and practice and perhaps some knowledge of conjuring, I made special inquiries of Mrs. Milton and the following are her replies:

"She came to my sister, Mrs. Galton, when she was twelve, and to our house about two months before she was fourteen. We knew nothing of her history previous to her coming to Mrs. Galton's house, except what she told as a child. She was born in Rochester, N. Y. Her mother died when she was seven and her father left her in charge of a

woman in London, Ontario, who brought her to —— and left her at Mrs. Galton's house, saying she would return for her as soon as she located her father. After a few weeks she returned saying she had been unable to locate the father, and Mrs. Galton refused to give the child to her. The father afterwards located the child at Mrs. Galton's, but as he was not in shape to properly care for her, it was decided she was to remain in the care of Mrs. Galton until a good home was found for her.

"Her education was very limited. Her father was a carpenter. He lost his wife and three daughters in five years, and as he was of a roving disposition he became unsettled and has spent all his time in wandering from place to place. Since Anna has been with me, she has lost one sister and we think still another one, as we have been unable to find any trace of her for five years. The father was not at all interested in spiritualism, and in fact seemed much opposed to it."

In reply to the inquiry about her whistling in early life, assuming that she had been trained to do it normally, and her education and intellectual tastes, Mrs. Milton states:

"She never whistled any as a child, but tried to sing. But her singing was distracting and it was impossible for her to carry a tune. Her school privileges were very limited and as far as we know she had no more difficulties than the average child. She enjoys the better class of light literature."

She has done nothing to fit herself for anything except taking care of a house and at this she is said to be good and to take the interest of the average person. But she prefers mediumistic work.

---

There is an important consideration which I should emphasize at this stage of the report. It is the mediation of the scientific mind, if it be really scientific, between the two opposite theories of trickery and miracle in the interpretation of such phenomena. It is apparent to all readers what the explanation of Mrs. Milton is of the incidents which she observed or produced. The phenomena as reported are the

orthodox spiritistic ones and it is more than manifest what interpretation she gives them. Nor is she alone in that view. At first her friends and relatives treated the case as fraud, the usual explanation of such phenomena, at least as manifested by professional adventurers. They had no patience with Mrs. Milton's faith and experiments. But the most obstinate of them submitted when they had the courage to share in the experiments and to observe the facts. At first convinced that Miss Burton did all the things herself, they finally observed phenomena that they could not explain, and it matters not whether their standard of evidence would satisfy the scientific man or not, they became convinced that dishonesty was not the explanation of the incidents, and tho they frankly recognized the complicity of Miss Burton in many results, they believed that in some way the phenomena attested the source which they claimed to have. This at least sufficed to give the conception of the causes which are named in the term "spirits." It is this view of the facts which was presented to scientific scrutiny for settlement. The two physicians who were asked to investigate the case had to come to it with the pre-emption of other views by the strong conviction of the parties that spirits were the agents in the phenomena, and it must be said to their lasting credit that they were neither frightened by this idea into ridiculing the facts nor attracted to it by ready acceptance of its claims. They quickly discovered an interest which lay between the two extremes of faith and scepticism. This was the scientific alternative between fraud and miracle.

There seems to be a hereditary feud here between layman and scientific man. Both take the same conception of the facts but opposite attitudes of mind regarding them. The layman insists upon spirits as the interpretation of such phenomena. The scientific man, even if he admits the facts, repudiates that view of them and prefers fraud. He too readily accepts the point of view of the layman and escapes the layman's conclusions only by either denying his facts or rejecting his explanations. The layman resents the implication of fraud, as too simple to account for the facts, and the scientific man has no interest in fraud. The latter exhibits all



the narrowness that he ascribes to the spiritist, in that he manifests no interest in the fraud which he supposes explains the facts. He is quite content to impute this as the easier escape from the layman's miracles, and he is afraid to avow any other interest either from ignorance as to its existence or from the desire to concede nothing of importance to science. It is hard to tell in this situation which is the worst fool of the two, the layman or the scientist. The layman, however, is to be less censured than the scientist. The latter is supposed to know enough to appreciate the facts and to see below the surface. We cannot expect those who are not acquainted with hysteria to understand the real nature of the phenomena or to discover where their real interest lies. The scientific man ought to know better and not to judge the facts from the point of view of those whom he finds it necessary to antagonize.

It ought to be apparent to even the less trained scientist, or to intelligent men with a sense of humor, that such phenomena, originating in the environment of private people not interested in deceiving themselves, that we have a group of phenomena of extraordinary scientific importance, and this without assuming that they are what they purport to be in the definite conceptions of the layman. There is no necessity that we should accept the superficial appearance of the facts even as fraud any more than we should assume the possibility of spirits. The interpretation of them by the one as the other may be equally absurd, and it is only the habit of assuming an antagonism to the layman's idea of spirits that prompts the natural hostility of the intellectualist to take fraud as the easiest escape from a serious view of the phenomena and as an excuse for ridicule, where, if he were not really as ignorant as the layman, he might find facts of a profound significance lying between or beyond the horizon of both alternatives.

Now it is the transparent character of this situation in this and similar cases that ought to invoke scientific interest, regardless of conclusions in either of the directions that superficially appear. It ought to be as clear that fraud is as absurd as spirits appear to be and intelligent men ought not



to be caught conceding that the layman has the right conception of the facts, if they are not the apparent fraud that commends itself to the indolent Philistine. It often happens to be an easy and unanswerable, tho not a true, way out of investigation to evade their scientific interest by the hypothesis of fraud. That is so familiar a fact and so simple a device that the innocent layman does not think to ask for evidence, and the sceptic relies on his immunity from responsibility and succeeds only in keeping facts from being investigated. They continue to infest human experience until they are attended to in the right way. The layman has to confine his work to himself until another generation will give him a hearing, and whether the facts are as they have been claimed to be or not, they always justify themselves in some advance of knowledge.

No doubt many alleged facts which the layman asserts are not worth the investigation they have had or claim, but it is easy for an intelligent person to distinguish between promising and hopeless cases. I have found that even the most palpable frauds have their psychological interest of no mean value, tho the facts of importance are not observed or reported in the usual accounts of such performances. But in no instance can the intelligent man escape responsibility for investigating private cases simply because they have resemblances to what is evidently plain trickery. It is only a self-complacent dogmatism that resorts to fraud because it cannot admit spirits into a case, even tho there is no satisfactory evidence that spirits are at any time involved either directly or indirectly. It ought to be clear to common sense that many facts are important for other than the reasons which affect the layman, and the present case offered such facts in abundance to any man who had scientific sense of any sort. Yet it is of the type which has been systematically avoided or neglected by the self-constituted leaders of human knowledge. They do not seem to be able to choose between fraud and spirits in anything that the laity happens to think is spirits. The reason for this is not far to seek. It is in the inherent dogmatism of established opinions which force into their mold every would-be investigator at the cost of his

bread or social standing, if he does not bow down and worship the idols of those whose only bugbear is the danger of thinking the public can ever have the truth on its side, even tho its theories are naive and erroneous.

Of course the scientific man cannot listen to every weird story of the unusual. Tho had he the means of investigating and also had more than the mercenary interest in the truths that he seeks to establish he might have less excuse for neglecting the claims presented to his attention. One of the things that hampers him is the cost of such investigations and the limits of his own purse. It is here that the fault lies with the public. It seeks miracles and is never any more interested in true science than the sceptic is in the marvellous. Unless it can be fed with miracles it does not think the pursuit worth the candle. One of the excuses for the scientific man's negligence or contempt is just this demand for what may not exist when the real truth is much nearer home and worth all the trouble and expense of investigation, but not so sensational as the supernormal. Unless he is supplied with the means for adequate investigation his self-defence against the charge of negligence is simple denial of the layman's miracles and the first hypothesis that offers an escape from a disagreeable situation.

The present case offers a good illustration of just this temptation. The conditions for experiment were naturally absurd for any man who had neither the time nor the means to spend on interminable experiments, and yet a sufficient fund for proper experiment might have enabled the experimenters to have accomplished in one or two trials what it took more than a year to accomplish by a process of repetition and elimination. If the subject had been as exacting and as mercenary as Eusapia Palladino investigation even into its hysterical phenomena would have been impossible and it would have gone like all others by default. But fortunately the circumstances, combined with the patience and genuinely scientific spirit and method of the two physicians enabled us to obtain facts of no mean importance, tho not bearing out the superficial conceptions of them which the layman entertains.

It would appear that both parties are equally to blame for the situation which a truly scientific man has to meet. The one will not recognize the nature and difficulties of the phenomena or supply the means for their determination, and the other, in default of the means, will not demand them for the work, but contents itself with denial and ridicule. The only present remedy is the utilization of those favorable cases which reward the patience of the investigator without exceeding the means he has at hand for his work. In the end we may bring the public to a realization of its place in such work, tho unfortunately the scientific man too often justifies the public in taking the reins into its hand, as history only shows that the phenomena spring up anew after every quietus that science has tried to put upon them. This ought to be a lesson to both sides, the one to give up arrogating scientific functions and the other to admit that phenomena may have a supreme value without being taken at the superficial estimate of their nature. Progress might be easy and effectual if this course were adopted.

Unfortunately there is another fault of the scientific man in such cases that should be noticed. He is very loth to undertake purely scientific investigation that does not promise him some reward either in reputation or in material profit. The medical world is less interested in science than it is in that branch of it which promises to help its fees. It is all very well to boast of an interest in science, but often the real motive that lurks behind this is the hope of increasing one's special knowledge where human nature will sacrifice its last cent to save life. Many of us vociferously accuse the poor professional medium of a mercenary interest in his or her fees, but we as constantly forget that we may be living in glass houses, and we carefully avoid investigating facts that do not promise to monopolize human power over the needs of others. Truth that does not increase the receipts of the treasury suffers eclipse and science conceals its mercenary motives behind the mask of philanthropy which only feeds on the misfortunes of the weak and their passion for living. The professional medium frankly avows a mercenary interest. The scientific man too often has

no sense of humor, concealing his mercenary objects behind ideas which get the name of philanthropy from the satisfaction of the public in the results. Of course the public is as much to blame for this conception of science and philanthropy as those who exploit it. But if a wider conception of scientific duty were prevalent important truths of another than the mercenary kind might obtain recognition.

These are side issues, but they indicate the environment which determines the attitude of the two classes which are equally deluded by such facts as this report considers. Its importance consists in the emphasis which it lays on hysterical phenomena and the prior claim which they often have to the consideration of the theories which they superficially suggest. The term, of course, has a wider significance than it had in the past generation, where it was limited to certain nervous symptoms of a clear and well defined type. But today it is as extensive as somnambulism and all phenomena of altered personality and subconscious aberrations of a systematic sort. With this extended import of the term scientific students should be ready to recognize the conditions of such phenomena as this report considers. Hysteria or subconscious phenomena of some sort seem to lie at the basis of all mediumistic phenomena whatever, whether of the genuine or non-genuine type. This fact indicates that we should expect to find simulation of the inexplicable in all of it and that we have no right to employ the standards of normal psychology in estimating the nature of the facts which we are expected to explain. In determining the question of fraud, which means conscious effort to deceive, we should always recognize the duty of prior investigation of hysterical conditions. When that position is assumed we find phenomena of a scientific interest that not only extends the field of humanity but also discovers an alternative between conscious fraud and the supernormal for explanation of the facts, while it opens the way to the possible discovery that even the supernormal is either conditioned or accompanied by the existence of hysteria in some form during the incipient stages of its development. Such a view would completely alter the terms of the controversy and force the

scientific man as well as the layman to approach the problem in a different manner and with less confidence in superficial interpretations, whether they be fraud or spirits. Such an approach would save much trouble and bickering, as well as many a failure to settle mooted points. I do not know any case to which this remark will apply more effectively than that of Eusapia Palladino. If the men who essayed to investigate her in this country had first tried to determine whether she was a hysteric or not they would have saved all the foolish discussion that has centered about her phenomena. It would have offered a scientific alternative between fraud and miracle for investigating it and the problem taken out of the hands of mountebanks for its solution. The Burton case proves the importance of this contention beyond dispute. Those who investigated it without first knowing something about hysteria only succeeded in arousing a great deal of resentment and in employing a great deal of foolish explanation where very simple causes are transparent to the student of abnormal psychology. The lesson which it teaches is thus past measure in this respect. The detailed record with all its complicated incidents is the justification of this remark. The various situations and actions of Miss Burton, when put together collectively, are not capable of any other interpretation by any one who could have witnessed them than hysterical simulation, with occasional vistas of the supernormal, unless she be given credit for unconscious genius at deception that is wholly incompatible with her normal experience. I do not see how any amount of moral delinquency, whether conscious or unconscious, could effect such consistency of conduct as her various actions had, except that we accompany it with hysterical conditions, and this is to eliminate the supposition of fraud of all kinds. This view, however, must seek its vindication in the incidents of the detailed record.

In her normal state Miss Burton is a demure and retiring girl, with excessive modesty and nothing of self-confidence. She has had difficulty with her education because of a lethargic temperament and has been unable to do anything with stenography or typewriting in behalf of her self-support.

According to the statements of the family with whom she lives she has had no training in conjuring, and it is certain that the opportunities in the community are not unusual for that art. She could not have had any training in this without the knowledge of the family and besides she had no means for this purpose, which would have to come from the purse of the family. While we know that there are surreptitious methods of learning tricks of all sorts, the things that Miss Burton does would require education and practice that could not be concealed from the members of the family and perhaps would require their coöperation to effect them at first. In fact, it admits more than the facts will justify to concede even the possibility of it by thus alluding to it, if we are to judge of the normal experience of any young girl of such a character, especially when taken with the scepticism which her phenomena met in her family. I am only alluding to the situation to show that it has been reckoned with in estimating the girl's exemption from suspicion for the ordinary explanation of her conduct. There was nothing to be gained by the process unless an extraordinary professional career was to be opened to Miss Burton by such a training, and there was certainly no hope of this in such a field, when the demand for conjuring is limited to normal life and actions. Moreover the parties are too sincere in their spiritistic interpretation of the facts either to be accomplices in deception or to expect that the real interest would be in normal conjuring. The girl's development at first began only in disinterested curiosity and it was only when it appeared to have promises of the marvellous that remuneration for it entered into the motives of the work, and even then it did not take the form of demands. The remuneration when it did come—and this was not always—was in the form of gratuities. It is unfortunate in the case, which is private in its origin and usual experience, that it should have been situated so that even the breath of suspicion for mercenary motives should be possible. But the family is not supplied with the means to devote itself to scientific work and the girl will one day have to be self-supporting. The temptation was thus to expect remuner-



ation for the long and exhausting séances which were necessary to produce the phenomena of this record and similar experiments. There is no doubt that the girl is entitled to this consideration and only the fastidious critic would object to it. But the motive which this establishes as possible has to be admitted, tho all this burden of limiting or eliminating it has to be the consequence of the slightest mercenary disposition. It has been nothing more than natural and legitimate in the situation as known to all of us, but it would have strengthened the case for strangers and doubters had the temptation not been present and had the development been undertaken in the interest of science alone. This goes without saying, and it may savor of injustice in the case to discuss it even to satisfy unreasonable prejudices against reward for services. Those of us who have investigated the case, while we had this situation in view, found no more reason to distrust it than we should that hypercritical class which either never works without pay or lives the life of "gentlemen" from the investments whose interest or rents demand no return of service. The aristocratic class never asks any questions about itself, but is extremely suspicious about the wages of those who are not so fortunate as to have the means of making others their dependents. The respectability of collecting rents or interest does not prevent the social system from being a fraud. People who live in glass houses must not throw stones. There has, however, never been the slightest reason to suspect the case either of undue mercenary motives or a disposition to profit by deception, and the situation has required notice only in the interest of stating all the facts and concealing nothing. The student of details will have no difficulty in recognizing the justice of the claim that unproved suspicions based on *a priori* opportunities can have no standing in the court of science. The reader may rest satisfied that there is no conscious fraud of any sort in the case. That is all that needs elimination to give the case a psychological interest, and as we do not discuss it for any primary importance in the supernormal, there is less at stake than the man without a sense of humor might insist upon when he is intent upon resisting the belief in

miracles. Any individual fact, whether of the hysterical or supernormal type, would be amenable to the simplest explanation, but it is different when we have to deal with the *ensemble* of consistent facts in this case where no amount of conscious fraud could escape detection. The tests for the trance were sufficient to exclude any ordinary view of the phenomena and to insure the existence of hysteria, and that once admitted makes all reference to the simple explanation of conscious fraud wholly supererogatory.

It may be worth adding here that, if Miss Burton could whistle in her normal state as well as she does in the trance, she could easily and quickly make quite a fortune out of it. This has been remarked by the two physicians who have had her under observation. The circumstance not only indicates what her skill is in that performance but also offers clear evidence of her normal honesty. In her normal life she cannot whistle at all save to make a noise and this poorly, while she is also unable to sing in a musical manner. There can be no doubt about the decided contrast between her normal performances in these arts and the trance phenomena in them, and that the latter are not based upon any normal education in such practices.



## CHAPTER II.

## SUMMARY OF THE FACTS.

## 1. PHYSICAL PHENOMENA.

The only interest in the earlier facts of the case is their help in proving the case one of hysteria. They have no significance in establishing even a presumption of the supernatural. They are not the result of that kind of observation which is necessary to make a case worth the investigation. For instance, the hanging of the tambourine on the edge of a picture frame. This seemed the most marvellous possible to Mrs. Milton and she said that she had never been able to do it herself, tho having tried it often. She tried it without success a number of times in my presence, and so did I without success. But with care I soon did it with some ease. It only requires some mechanical ingenuity and patience to do it. I have no doubt that it could never be accomplished by rough methods. But care and intelligence will do it easily and makes the claim set up for the phenomenon questionable. How many of the other phenomena reported by Mrs. Milton are capable of as simple an explanation cannot be known, and they suffice only, under the circumstances, to call attention to the occurrence of things which are not based upon ordinarily normal experience and that always seem to be associated with hysterical incidents of some kind.

The facts having a psychological interest are independent of the more marvellous ones reported by Mrs. Milton and are associated with the abnormal mental and physical conditions of the young girl. She was not a strong or healthy child. Indeed at the time of the experiments here recorded the girl had decided symptoms of tubercular trouble in the glands of her throat. Her breath was very perceptible and unpleasant to endure. She had a very anæmic skin and showed no physical strength equal to her size, as the dynamometer proved. Even in her trances where she seemed

at least twice as strong as she was normally her strength was not equal to mine, and mine is not great. This was true after she had obtained better health and some of the indications which I have remarked had disappeared. She had frequent headaches, often following a séance, and often the next day she was unfit for anything but lying around in idleness. This was more particularly true after an exhaustive test séance, and she had as often, perhaps, to be "treated" in a trance by massage or suggestion by Mrs. Milton or left in a trance to sleep off the effects of the strain. She had a cough at the time of the two physicians' experiments, which was natural with the tubercular symptoms. But this had practically disappeared at the end of my experiments, save during the oncoming trance or emergence from it, when it was an evident symptom of her condition at the time and not of her general health.

The facts of importance to psychology begin with the experiments of the two physicians. They came to their attention rather casually in the efforts to test the claims of the supernormal. The physical phenomena which claimed attention were the levitation of the table, the playing of the tambourine, and raps. They all purported to be independent phenomena, that is, to be produced directly by spirits and without the direct physical intervention of Miss Burton. The whistling and singing purported also to be direct phenomena and had a more determinable relation to physiological action and were more unique in their character than is usual in spiritistic pretensions. The rope tying was not without its physiological interest, tho not so clearly dissociated in appearance from the action of Miss Burton. The details will explain their character. This will come up for notice presently.

The most important initial facts pertain to the trance, the use of the phonograph and the real or apparent necessity for darkness. The anæsthesias and hyperæsthesias will come up for separate notice. But the two facts of requiring music and darkness are those which suggest most emphatically a desire to hide trickery of some sort. They are wholly indefensible from the standpoint of normal consciousness,

and only the evidence for their absolute necessity in the production of any phenomena can excuse them. They are just the conditions to conceal the part which we would naturally attribute to Miss Burton in the execution of the phenomena, and many of the experiments, with their accompaniment of collapse by Miss Burton, sustain this interpretation of their function, and this without ascribing conscious fraud of any kind. It is more than probable that their existence was as much due to suggestion and imitation of what Mrs. Milton and Miss Burton had witnessed in their attendance on other séances than their own as to any other supposable cause. But whether suggested or not, in the course of events there is no doubt that they became indispensable to the production of the phenomena. This is so true that we might say that neither the trance nor the phenomena would occur without the music and darkness, except that occasionally in a normal state the trance has spontaneously come on for automatic writing. But usually, and perhaps always for the physical phenomena, the music and darkness have been necessary, whether they were so in the beginning or not. The music and darkness are not absolutely necessary for the automatic writing and clairvoyant visions, tho these are best in a red light. The whistling and singing, however, are so impossible without the music of the phonograph and darkness that they can never occur, except that they have first been started under these auspices when their momentum will carry them along for a short time, but not long and never so well as when the music is going on. Once spontaneously the whistling began after the phonograph had been stopped and Mrs. Milton had gone to the kitchen for some purpose and continued some moments with tolerable clearness, but in no respect with the skill and excellence that accompanied the music on other occasions. We tried the experiment two or three times and were barely successful after several trials, and then the whistling was very poor and soon dwindled into silence. Several trials to get whistling and singing without the initial impulse of the music did not succeed, tho there was no known reason for the failure. In fact every circumstance of interest and motive, normally considered, favored the importance

of producing the effect without the music. This necessity of the music to results was demonstrated in many a situation where there was nothing to be concealed by it, such as going into the trance and diminishing the loudness of the music for the sake of hearing the voice which had to communicate with us through the trumpet. Its relation to the phenomena was also apparent in the tiresome repetition of the demand for a change of the music or the playing of certain kinds of it. This had always to be indicated by raps. If any piece of music were disagreeable to the trance personalities a rap would indicate the fact and a new piece had to be inserted. If this was not agreeable, as the mere starting of it sufficed to indicate, the rap occurred again and music would have to be inserted until satisfied. Similar indications were always given for any other necessary alteration of the music, and these bore no apparent relation to the necessities of the case on the hypothesis of any kind of deception.

The necessity for darkness was not so easily proved, when we consider the usual protection that it offers for the concealment of trickery, and we do not yet know why it is that the demand for it exists. It is all very well to talk about the necessity for darkness in photography and certain other chemical phenomena, but we see no clear reasons for it in phenomena of this kind, especially when care reveals the definite simulation of fraud. But there were several facts which proved that the exclusion of bright light was necessary, no matter what theory you take of the phenomena. In the first place, the medium's collapse with white light seemed not more necessary than with red light, and she could always stand the turning up of the red light. In the second place, the collapse with the turning on of the white light bore no uniform relation to the phenomena concerned. It was as certain when nothing was to be concealed as when it might be. In the third place, an accident in turning up the white light when the red one was expected resulted in the same collapse as on occasions when it was more important to avoid it, that is, important for concealment. Then in the experiment of taking the pictures she was quite willing that it

be turned up and yet she suffered the shock described by the physicians without knowing that the pictures showed a "trick" on the part of the trance personality. The red light tends to make her wince at it even when herself consenting to its presence, and the physiological effects of the white light are evidence of some shock, especially when nothing is to be gained by not having it turned on. But as a better test I resolved to try an experiment which did not involve any danger of shock and yet would come unawares.

I obtained an electric bull's eye lamp and had a tube made for it about eighteen inches long, so as to shut off all radiation of the light when turned on and so that it would throw on the walls or ceiling of the room a small patch of light about the size of a silver dollar, a circle about one and a half inches in diameter. She did not know that I had this light with me and she was put into the trance and the phonograph playing before I took it out of my pocket and placed it on a chair near by. At the proper time I picked it up and while the phonograph was playing I held it between myself and Miss Burton and threw the small circle of light on the wall behind her about eighteen inches directly behind her head. It was seen by the others in the room, but as there was no sensible radiation of light from the circle about the room and as Miss Burton had her eyes closed in the trance, she could not perceive it. Nevertheless Miss Burton collapsed as usual when the slightest light appeared in the room without warning. Half or three quarters of an hour later I tried the experiment again, but this time threw the light in the corner of the room on the floor where no one could see it and there were four of us in the room besides Miss Burton. My body was directly between her and the spot where the light was thrown. Yet Miss Burton collapsed as usual. Once I placed the end of the sheath or tube on the floor and turned on the light. A very little of it could be seen at the edge on the carpet, but it was out of her sight, the table intervening between her and the spot. She was not disturbed by it. It is possible that in the two instances when she did collapse there was radiation enough about the room from the lighted spot to cause the collapse, tho this radiation

was not perceptible to any of us. She was undoubtedly extraordinarily hypersensitive to light and this on any theory whatever of her condition and of the phenomena.

The next fact of interest is that of the anæsthesias and hyperæsthesias. Usually in trances the subject is more or less anæsthetic and constantly so during the performances. But Miss Burton has no stable condition and is not always the same in different parts of her body. She exhibits a great variety of conditions and these change from time to time without any apparent reason or purpose. In her clairvoyant visions she was always normal under my observation and showed neither trance nor anæsthesia. But in the experiments for physical phenomena she varies between partial and total anæsthesia, or between anæsthesia and hyperæsthesia, and even exhibits local or zonal anæsthesias. In this respect she is quite remarkable. At times she has been observed to be quite anæsthetic on the left side of the body and either ordinarily æsthetic or hyperæsthetic on the right side, or *vice versa*. At times she is hyperæsthetic all over the body. This is apparently the case when Black Cloud, one of the controls, gives trouble. At times again she is anæsthetic all over the body as high as the larynx, but above this point is æsthetic or normally sensible. These conditions, both variable and constant, prevail during experiments for physical phenomena.

In the fourth series of experiments for mental phenomena, Miss Burton did show anæsthesia most of the time but it seemed to be limited to that part of the body below the larynx. But her mental state during these experiments seems to have been unusually unstable and fluctuating.

The detailed records give the facts in evidence of these peculiarities and I do not require to repeat incidents. But I may note a few of them. The two physicians remarked once that Miss Burton, when it was quite light and she was clearly perceptible, put her own hand to her face and startled, exclaiming that some one had touched her face. Her eyes seem to have been closed and she did not know that she herself had touched her face. A similar phenomenon occurred in my presence, tho it was not in the light. I had always

asked if she felt me touch her whenever I tested her for anæsthesia, so that she could interpret my action. On one occasion, however, I was holding my right hand on hers and she suddenly pulled hers from under mine, evidently touched her face with it, returned it to the table when I replaced mine on it, and then she asked me if I touched her face. On my saying that I did not, she remarked that some one did, and I then told her that she had done it herself, when she was much surprised. It was on one of those occasions when the "gloved" anæsthesia had occurred.

On one occasion Miss Burton remarked that she saw lights. We were experimenting to get them. At times they were visible to all of us, but usually they were not seen by Miss Burton. On this occasion she was evidently anæsthetic except above the larynx, and she was probably making the lights with her left hand and did not know it in spite of her eyes being open and she looking for them as we were.

Early in my experiments with her I had remarked, as did the physicians long before, that the occurrence of any particular phenomenon was preceded by an automatic jerk of the hand that I was holding. I ascertained also at various times that the left hand would jerk simultaneously with the right. This was when I held both of them. We had taken it to mean that a phenomenon was going to take place soon. But in the last series of experiments I found that this jerk, whatever its relation to a subsequent phenomenon, was the signal of a change of sensibility or personality, perhaps of control. It was discovered in the following manner.

When we discovered that the anæsthesia varied in different parts of the body I tried frequent testing for its occurrence. I soon discovered that it instantly followed a jerk in the hand I was holding. I then proceeded to watch for its coincidence with this jerk and in perhaps hundreds of instances found it premonitory, or rather coincident with an instant occurrence of anæsthesia. On one occasion it was so quick that she did not finish the sentence in answer to my question when the anæsthesia and trance shut it off. She would emerge from the trance and anæsthesia quite



as quickly and usually there were no indicative symptoms of it. The whole process seemed quite capricious.

It should be apparent from the limitations implied in the need for music, darkness and the presence of varying anæsthesias and hyperæsthesias, and all sorts of local and other fluctuations in these, that experimentation of a satisfactory type was very greatly handicapped. It was indeed impossible to experiment in the case as was desirable, at least for any purpose of deciding a special form of phenomenon in the desirably limited time. Like all other cases the phenomena were of a type where the real or alleged mystery of them was concealed by the darkness, and when we attempted to overcome this handicap we were confronted by hyperæsthesia which was as effectual in putting an end to experiment as any fear of discovery in fraud could be. Five minutes for each phenomenon would have sufficed to prove or disprove the claims made, if we could have had the light and if the phenomenon could have been produced. But there is no doubt of the sensitiveness to light and that it was not caused by any normal dishonesty of the patient. The unstable sensibility of the subject is just as certain, and also another fact not yet remarked, which was possibly necessarily connected with this instability of sensibility, namely, periods of lethargy and inactivity during which nothing whatever would occur, not even attempts to do anything which might be ascribed to either conscious or unconscious deception. All these made experimentation very slow and difficult and the resources for discovering whether a phenomenon was genuine or not were very limited. Only rare situations enabled us to detect indications of what really went on, and the fact that we had to reckon with automatisms which very frequently occurred made inferences even in these cases very doubtful. That is, incidents which ordinarily might be evidence of fraud of some kind might be mere automatisms and the necessary and sympathetic reflex of something genuine, whether it was supernormal or hysterical.

Darkness excluded vision from the investigation and the music excluded hearing from the same, so that we were left to the sense of touch often for ascertaining the associated



incidents which might discover exactly what was taking place. I do not agree with those who say that darkness makes all investigation impossible. It may make it exceedingly difficult and expensive and so limit the evidence for the claims of the supernormal that it is hardly worth while to spend so much time and money for so little returns. But if one has the patience and ingenuity he may get the best of evidence for certain phenomena, perhaps better than he could get in the light. I do not mean by this that darkness is excusable or to be ignored in problems of investigation, but that, if we take the time and trouble its limitations can be partly overcome. Of course if it be not necessary no one should waste a moment's time upon claims made under such conditions. But if we find that certain cases do not present anything at all for study in the light but do show phenomena of interest in darkness, this condition itself becomes a matter of scientific interest and importance, and the business of the scientific man is to contrive means for overcoming its restraints on investigation.

While darkness made it impossible to observe what was necessary to determine whether independent physical phenomena occurred without controlling the psychic, it did not interfere with the study of her hysterical condition. Indeed it rather tended to help it, because it kept her from knowing what the eyes might have betrayed if the light had been on and her concentration on the phenomena prevented her from knowing what we were investigating in certain tactical actions. It was in this way that I discovered many indications of the hysteria, which I might not have been able to detect in the light. The discovery and study of the unconscious associates of the phenomena that purported to be miraculous afforded an excellent test of the mental states involved in the production of the incidents, and they were often decisive proof of automatism and unconscious action. This discovery was to me of more importance than the proof of physical miracles.

So much was discoverable in spite of the limitations complained of in darkness that I cannot refrain from charging many people who refuse to investigate under them with

ignorance and prejudice and a desire to escape their responsibilities. It is not desirable, of course, to have any such limitations, but the trained and patient observer may nevertheless do much in spite of them, and tho he may not solve his problem so easily as under his own conditions there are ways and means by which science can overcome the most refractory obstacles, if it will only exhibit and apply the ingenuity and patience that the situation demands. In this special instance the rewards were important.

One of the necessary remarks to be made about the complaints regarding darkness is that, as an objection to the discovery of the supernormal, it cuts both ways. If we cannot discover genuine phenomena under this limitation we cannot discover the fraudulent. We cannot say that nothing can be determined under such conditions without excluding the right to interpret certain incidents as evidence of fraud. It is only a question of patience and ingenuity to decide one as the other. We may well refuse to spend the time, if we have not the means which science usually has to overcome the limitations under which it often has to work, but we should not say that it is impossible. We may demand the means for scientific work while we decline to waste time on infinite difficulties until these means have been supplied.

For the purpose of studying the muscular actions of Miss Burton while any phenomenon was occurring it was necessary to establish some sort of contact with her. For instance, when whistling or singing which were always, or nearly always, accompanied by the use of a trumpet on the table, we had to assume that she held the trumpet in her hand and did the whistling or singing into it, so as to make the sound appear where it was not, and to ascertain whether there was any evidence that this hypothesis was true or not, I usually held the right hand to diminish the resources at her command for doing the things and to enable me to study sympathetic muscular actions which would betray the use of the left hand for the imagined purpose. Darkness prevented visual observation and I had to rely on touch alone for the discovery of the motor incidents that would indicate the natural means for producing the effect. The same darkness also would

conceal my own activities exercised for discovering the *modus operandi* of the medium's action. Where I had certain disadvantages from the restriction of sight I had certain advantages from the exclusion of her eyesight, and then I could assume positions and watch for movements which she would make unconsciously or of which she would not suspect the discovery, and which also would indicate to me just what was done.

In this way I constantly watched for sympathetic muscular action in the right arm transmitted through the body on any movements of the left hand or arm and which would at least prove the complicity of her organism in the phenomena under investigation. I soon discovered, however, that I could detect no sympathetic action in the right hand or arm under protection, or at times very little associated action, too little to be of much significance. This put me to trying devices for ascertaining whether the left arm was in action under the circumstances. It took a long time to establish the rapport or understanding with her trance to effect this. She seemed hyperæsthesically sensitive to any effort to ascertain the movements of the left arm. When I did effect my object it was to catch a pleat in her left dress sleeve and watch for its movements which I could easily detect, and sometimes the slight movement forward of the upper part of the body. What this led to, however, was the discovery, not only of actions by the left arm tending to prove her complicity in the phenomena, but also what was more interesting and important, namely, the remarkable dissociation of the motor action of the left arm and side of the body from that of the right side under my control. That is, more or less complete dissociation between the two sides of the body in their motor action made it appear that the normal distribution of energy, as observed in ordinary life, did not occur. Indeed this was so true that more than one of us discovered that Miss Burton could actually rise to a standing position without detection while her right hand was held. Apparently also she could lean forward and turn around a considerable distance without the right hand betraying any evidence of it in sympathetic movements. The motor dissociation was one of the

remarkable phenomena of the case, a dissociation which none of us have been able to completely duplicate or imitate in our own conscious action.

The situation also enabled us to experiment for mind reading on her part. We found absolutely no reliable evidence for this. She seemed, at times, to have an abnormal knowledge of where our hands were in the effort to detect her own actions, but in no case could we find evidence of reading our minds. In hundreds of actions on my own part, such as thrusting my hands in front of her to touch the moving trumpet, or to discover some evidence of bodily complicity in the phenomena, she never had the slightest knowledge of what I was doing unless I accidentally touched her or the instrument she was handling. Then the instrument instantly fell and she either collapsed or the phenomena ceased for some time. But they were always resumed, as if there was nothing in a discovery to discourage the production of the phenomena. The usual effects of discovery, namely, the refusal to continue experiment, never took place. A little rest sufficed to bring about the attempt to repeat the same thing. This is a fact of great psychological significance and in the conclusion we shall have occasion to study this circumstance. But in no instance were we able to get evidence of the slightest amount of telepathy. Where it should have been effective it was helpless, and any occasion in which knowledge seemed to be supernormal it could be accounted for by supposing that hearing was hypersensitive and that the noise made by the motion of our hands was detected and its meaning suspected. But we found it absurd to imagine telepathy playing any part in the situation, especially as its limitations were so conspicuous that they made its claims in the apparent cases ridiculous.

But, tho we could not obtain the slightest evidence of telepathy, we did discover clear indications of remarkable hyperæsthesia and accurate muscular adjustments to meet the situation demanded by our efforts to detect the medium's actions. Many a time, when I had as quietly and cautiously as was possible placed my hand on the back of the chair, with the intention of slyly slipping it around to get contact with

the dress or pleats of the dress on the left shoulder, she would discover its presence and deftly touch it with her left hand, showing her consciousness of my actions. I say her left hand, because I do not assume the supernormal in the case. The point is that my movements were discovered in a way not easily done and showing some mode of hypersensitive action, whether of hearing or touch. There was no more clairvoyance than there was telepathy. If she had had the slightest clairvoyant power she should have detected my movements and actions in hundreds of cases in front of her where she did not exhibit the slightest knowledge of them.

It was in situations of this kind that we suspected hyperæsthesia on the left side of the body while there was evidence that the right side was anæsthetic. The proof of this, however, came from other indications. But the quick reaction from any touch of the left side and the absolute indifference of the right side to touch showed either clear knowledge of the situation or differences of sensibility that are expressed by the opposite terms mentioned, and other evidence in more crucial situations had to be invoked or produced for proof.

All these general facts, especially the anæsthesias and hyperæsthesias, with much else that will come under notice in the details of the record, are indubitable evidence of hysteria, and this admitted or assumed will throw an important light upon the phenomena that lay claim superficially to being supernormal, and will enable us to study them in a manner wholly different from the assumptions and standards of the conjurer. We shall have no obligations to make our choice of explanation between fraud and miracles, but to study the facts as involving, in any case, the complicity of the medium, just as we do in the automatic writing mediums in whom we admit the intervention of automatic machinery as necessary to the result. Whether we ever transcend this or not makes no difference to the scientific aspect of the problem. If we do, it can be accepted as illustrating the law of continuity which always insists that there must naturally be some connection between physical conditions and the facts that really or apparently transcend them. The hysteria will cover up the accusation of conscious fraud and exempt the

subject from the simplest imputations of wrong. It will show that we have a problem instead of a solution, and that is the first step in understanding the complications and irregularities of mediumship. The individual incidents which we have now to examine may be studied in the light of these observations and the interpretation which they suggest.

In summarizing the record of Drs. Hamilton and Smyth it is not to be supposed that the phenomena are test ones. They are described from their appearances, the intention having been to repeat them under better conditions.

The first interesting incident was whistling when hands were held on the larynx. The phenomenon purported to be independent whistling, and any one who has heard it will recognize that it is expert vaudeville whistling, and it seems that the medium cannot do it in her normal state at all. She can call a dog, but that seems to be all. But in the trance she whistles as well as any expert can do. It is very clear and loud, with a great deal of excellent technique. It does not seem to be located in the vicinity of the lips. But holding the larynx while it goes on reveals muscular action there, which is at least sympathetic and would in most cases be accepted as conclusive evidence of an adequate explanation of the phenomenon. But several circumstances make this an issue still to be determined. But this is not the interesting characteristic of the performance. It is her own voluntary aid in producing test conditions. She displays entire willingness and actual assistance in placing the hands on the larynx to prove that she does not do it with her own vocal organs. She did this many times in my own experiments and I felt the movements or slight vibrations of the larynx. I found that I could whistle myself with probably as slight action of the laryngeal muscles, tho I could not imitate or produce any such sounds as she did. This, however, does not prove that she was conscious of doing it, as anæsthesia of the locality would conceal from herself her own complicity or performance. There is no evidence in the situation that the medium's hand did not handle the trumpet.

In the earlier experiments of Drs. Hamilton and Smyth precautions were taken against confederates, having thought



that the conditions exempted the medium from the ordinary suspicions. These precautions need not be detailed here, but the reader may assume that they were adequate enough to exclude this possibility and also the collusion of Mrs. Milton with Miss Burton. The sequel showed that the phenomena were produced by much simpler means than superficially appeared at first. So we shall be interested only in summarizing them as they appeared, and it must be remembered also that the record of them consisted only of skeleton notes and that the reporters intended to repeat the experiments with fuller notes and better conditions. The sequel made this unnecessary.

In one of the early tests a personality called Oma sang in the trumpet while Dr. Hamilton held Miss Burton's right hand and while a handkerchief remained tied over her mouth tightly and while he, Dr. Hamilton, held his right hand and fingers on the larynx of the medium, noticing that her larynx vibrated with the tones of the voice, tho the music seemed, as perhaps it naturally would in the trumpet, to come from several parts of the table. During the same séance she grasped the hands of both physicians and whistled in the trumpet. The larynx showed the same sympathetic action as in the singing.

Again Dr. Hamilton tied the handkerchief tightly over the medium's mouth and it was inspected by the others present, finding it so tight as to leave ridges in the face. He then held the right hand; whistling occurred while the tambourine was played and two bells rung. After this the tambourine was placed on the table and Dr. Hamilton was asked to catch the hand or fingers that tapped the rim to the music. He still held the right hand and it was pitch darkness. With the left hand he tried his best to catch the hand of the medium tapping the rim of the tambourine and failed, tho a subsequent attempt succeeded at times. Dr. Smyth being sceptical of this inability tried it and failed to catch the hands or fingers.

Another more complicated experiment was performed. It was desired that the phonograph be started and stopped at a distance with both hands and feet of the medium held.



After half an hour's experiment this succeeded, but the medium showed increased heart beat from 60 to 80 and had a sick headache all the next day.

Experiments for getting simultaneous singing and talking did not succeed, but they brought out the medium's willingness to try them and the occurrence of certain subconscious phenomena of some interest. She almost choked in the effort to speak. A curious inhibition of results was noticed when the two physicians desired different things done. The opposite suggestions on their part affected the subconscious so that it would do neither.

At another experiment Dr. Hamilton asked one of the trance personalities to touch the tip of his finger in the darkness while he held it up in a position unknown to the medium. This met with unerring success several times, and then to test whether the personality feels around before the success, held his other fingers and thumb about the one whose tip was to be touched and the result was the same with no evidence of feeling around. Dr. Smyth tried the same experiment. At first it was not quite so successful, but after a few trials became accurate.

On one of these occasions lights were seen and the smell of phosphorus noticed. The trance personalities denied that the lights were made with the fingers, but the lights were at times visible to one person and not to others, just as they would be if produced by the fingers. The difference between these and the lights magicians produce was remarked.

Stories had been told of materializations in which the pulse of the "spirit" had been felt and the two experimenters asked to feel the pulse. This was agreed to and Dr. Smyth was allowed to feel the "spirit's" pulse, but could not assure himself that he felt any. Finally Dr. Hamilton's right hand was placed on the medium's left wrist and his left hand crossing over the two thus in contact—the medium's left and his own right—and laid on the table with the fingers of this hand, his left, turned up so that the "spirit" wrist might be laid upon them. The "spirit" wrist tried to light on these fingers in such a way that Dr. Hamilton could feel both pulses at the same time, that of the medium and that of the

"spirit." He could not distinguish them and then he changed the positions of his hands. He placed his left hand on the medium's right wrist and laid his right hand on the table at the right of himself and in front of the medium. A left "spirit" hand came—the medium's left hand was free—and rested on Dr. Hamilton's fingers so that he felt three or four beats of the pulse more abounding than the medium's pulse in the right hand. But the interesting thing was that the "spirit" hand had its fingers toward the medium, so that assuming that it was the left hand of the medium she had to turn it around in a manner to simulate another person. The pulse felt was said to have been distinctly different from the one in the right hand.

The "spirit kiss" was another peculiar and frequent phenomenon. It consisted of various devices to prove that it was not done by the medium. Sometimes the hand of the sitter would be seized and taken high in the air, apparently far out of reach of the medium's left hand, and then kissed in a manner to create an excellent illusion of a face. Imitating what they conjectured was done the two physicians would place the thumb against the two first fingers and by first letting the thumb come into contact with a surface bend over the hand so as to let the two finger tips extemporize a lip they got a similar effect. If Miss Burton did this subconsciously it was a curious device for producing the phenomenon, as it completely represents what would take place in dream dramatization of the affair.

At one sitting the beginning was marked by a violent slamming of the table about the room, the table being at least 100 pounds weight, and Dr. Smyth reported Miss Burton as sitting passive as she usually does in the act of moving the table. This time she was perfectly visible, as the windows were open and the street lights shone in.

Having suspicions as to possible method of stopping the phonograph they asked the controls if they would stop it at the distance at which they felt sure her hand could not reach the key. The controls replied in the usual way that they would try. The table was put 6 feet from the phonograph and after many efforts for 45 minutes they succeeded, but it

seems to have exhausted the medium. The notes are not full enough here to suggest whether the later discovered method was employed or not, but the opportunities existed for it in spite of the distance of the machine.

The next experiment was perhaps as remarkable as any that have occurred in the case. Stories of materialization had been told that were exceedingly interesting as impersonations, to say the least, and should have been the subject of investigation by myself had I had the time to spend on them. This instance was the materialization of a face and a mole on it in proof of personal identity. I quote the notes.

"Dr. Smyth asked the controls to materialize a face for him so that he could feel it. This they did on the stringer nearest him in the table. Dr. Hamilton was taken [by a 'spirit' hand] to feel it and identified the face as a face, and thought he felt a mole on the left side near the angle of the mouth. Dr. Smyth kept trying to feel the carotid pulse but could not be certain that he did. Dr. Hamilton was then allowed to touch the right side of the face, forehead, and part of the left side. From this sense of touch he described a face which Mrs. Milton thought she recognized. Both hands of the medium were held during much of the time the handling was done by 'spirit' hands. Dr. Smyth also felt the mole by direction of 'spirit' hands. We felt the radial pulse and arm from the elbow to the wrist."

Another experiment consisted in holding both hands of the medium and have her whistle in the trumpet which she did. Her catarrhal breath was perfectly traceable in the trumpet lying in a position which seemed to exclude the possibility of her getting her mouth to it.

There was another interesting experiment in which the medium had both hands tied to the stringer on the table and the cords fastened and sealed on the other stringer near Dr. Smyth on the opposite side of the table. Then threads were used to fasten her ankles, so that slight movements would break them. At the proper crisis of the tying a hand spontaneously raised the skirt which was necessary to enable Dr. Hamilton to tie the ankle. This was done for both ankles at the seasonable moment, tho it was difficult to de-

termine when this was desired, and it coincided with Dr. Hamilton's thought as if it were telepathy. In this condition, the hands being immovable, there was whistling and singing and motion of the trumpet, but the "sphere and amount of these actions was much lessened." The frequent raps that occurred were this time on her chair. At the end of it there were decided hysterical convulsions and exhaustion. But on request and after several efforts a knife was seized and the knots cut to free her, which was done while her hands were tied, these having been examined just before the act and by turning up the light.

At another sitting Dr. Hamilton noticing that the medium's hands and arms were cold, asked that they be touched by warm hands. Both Drs. Hamilton and Smyth feel the hands and arms and find them cold. They are at once touched by a warm hand and then they again feel the medium's hands and find them cold as before.

Another interesting experiment illustrates the phenomenon of temperature tested in a better manner. Her temperature was taken in the usual way and the thermometer washed, as usual. Then her mouth was bandaged with a handkerchief and Dr. Hamilton placed his left hand over the handkerchief and mouth and with the right hand he held both hands of the medium on the table. In this condition a hand came and took the thermometer and was told how to manage it to measure the temperature of the "spirit." After a few minutes, made longer than usual on purpose, the hand returned the thermometer and it registered 98.9, one tenth more than the medium's temperature taken a short time before the experiment. The question to be settled here regards the assurance with which the two hands of the medium were held. Assuming that there is an error in the notes here we might suppose that one hand got free and either that auto-suggestion raised its temperature to meet the emergency or the axilla used for the purpose. Mrs. Milton was four feet away and talking all the time.

Again the medium's mouth was bandaged, and Dr. Hamilton took both hands of the medium under his left hand and his right hand then placed on the medium's larynx, when

singing occurred in the voice of Oma. The trumpet was brought apparently by "spirit" hands and placed over his ear and the singing apparently done in the trumpet. During it Dr. Hamilton noticed the medium's enlarged gland in the throat which it was feared was due to incipient tubercular trouble. He suddenly resolved to ask that he be permitted to feel this gland in the "spirit" throat. The request was granted. At first he thought he could not feel it, but continuing the experiment he was told they would try it later. After some conversation with the controls about taking flash-light photographs of some of the phenomena the controls announced their readiness to try the gland experiment.

"Dr. Hamilton was put in charge of the medium's two hands and Dr. Smyth's hand was placed under the chin of a head over on his side of the table which is over four feet in width. At first he said: 'Doctor, this chin has no enlarged gland,' when he suddenly exclaims, 'Why an enlarged gland suddenly came under my fingers'! Of course he must try it again and again and then Dr. Hamilton was allowed to try and much to his surprise, it was so plainly felt that any mistake was impossible. Dr. Hamilton had felt that Dr. Smyth was mistaken and that the supposed gland could be accounted for on other grounds, but to his utter amazement and surprise he first felt an ordinary chin of a young person, the whole four fingers, palm up, covered the under part of the chin and careful palpation failed to discover the slightest evidence of an enlarged gland, which it may be said is very easy and positive of discovery when it exists. Suddenly the fingers detect a swelling and in a second or two one can feel an enlarged gland, the exact duplicate of that in the medium. This was not felt once only and not repeated but was done time and again for all, and at once we feel the medium's and then the phenomena are repeated until every doubt is satisfied."

Dr. Hamilton tried to produce this effect himself by using his tongue, but could not do it. Mrs. Milton remarked that the nearest that she could come to it was by hard swallowing, but Dr. Hamilton states that this effect does not last long

enough to meet the demands of the time and manner in which the enlarged gland appeared.

Another experiment for stopping the phonograph was tried with the medium 44 inches distant from it. She succeeded in stopping it once, but could not start it. She then tried touching the machine with her hand and could not reach it within 21 inches. The notes make no mention of the conditions antecedent to the attempt to stop it.

A rope tying experiment occurred which is too long to be quoted, and the reader may be referred to the detailed notes. It was interesting for the apparently perfect control of the medium, during which the phonograph was stopped and the trumpet used in whistling (p. 213).

After a number of minor experiments of inferior appearance, tho interesting as play of the subconscious, table levitation was tried. The following account will suffice to bring out the points of interest.

"The table was raised about a foot from the floor. Both the hands of the medium were held by Dr. Hamilton, and those of Mr. and Mrs. Milton by Dr. Smyth. The medium raises her hands until only the tips of the fingers touch the table and she draws these away and the table seems to follow her exactly as a metal would follow a magnet at the edge of the field of its influence. She raises her hands six inches from the table, the table follows, swaying and tipping as on a sea. She raises her hands twice the distance and the table drops with a crash."

In this latter part of the experiment Dr. Hamilton held the medium's two hands, palms together, in his left hand and followed the table with his right. This is a very pretty experiment and did not reveal to the sitters the mode of producing the phenomena, as suggested by a later experiment.

The next séances were employed in trying to take photographs of some of the physical effects during the course of their occurrence. It was fully agreed to by Miss Burton and her controls. The first attempt was a blank, but the flash of the light caused a dangerous shock to Miss Burton and she fell groaning with almost a stoppage of heart action. Supposing that this would end it the physicians did not in-

tend to try it again, but the controls, as soon as she recovered her normal trance balance suggested and insisted on trying it again, probably knowing from the conversation that the plate was a blank.

In the second experiment, after some fussing about, the medium who had been instructed how to give the signal, did so and the trumpet fell on the table, as all agree, control as well as the others, a little before the flash. The trumpet does not appear in the picture. But the medium again suffered from a shock and it was long before she could recover. The shock was not so severe as in the first experiment. The only incident of interest in it psychologically was the statement of the control that he failed to answer a question because he was too far out when asked, the question being asked as the medium was being brought out of the trance.

The next experiment shows a most interesting result. Miss Burton was tied to her chair in the trance, her hands supposedly being secure against release. The photograph shows the tambourine in the air over Dr. Smyth's head and her right hand released from its bonds and in the air in the act of throwing the tambourine.

In another instance they had taken a photograph which showed the tambourine in the air and they asked to have it repeated while both hands were held, the first one having been taken with the left hand free. The parties, Mrs. Milton, the psychic and the controls all readily consented. The two hands were held and when the photograph was developed it showed the tambourine in the medium's teeth! The flash had evidently been made too quickly for her to flip the tambourine into the air. At least that is the only natural inference to be drawn from the situation.

Sometimes in these experiments for photographs she was found standing, the sitters not having discovered indications during the experiment that she had arisen, even tho when holding her hands. The dissociation of muscular activity had been so perfect. There were several other experiments of the kind, but the detailed record must be consulted for them. They show the same hysterical versatility of adapta-



tion and ingenuity for overcoming difficulties that the medium would not resort to normally.

Other phenomena connected with the production of lights should be summarized. The experimenters noticed that they could not reproduce the lights by the use of matches or in the ordinary way in which magicians imitate these phenomena. But Dr. Smyth on one occasion, both physicians agreeing that the lights had degenerated into something like those producible by matches, suspected that she might have matches in her mouth and suddenly seized her and forced her mouth open finding the saliva saturated with phosphorescent light and it ran out into her lap still showing the light in her lap. But he did not find a trace of a match in her mouth and no evidence that anything else had been prepared for the situation. Neither Mrs. Milton nor the medium could account for it.

The record includes the accounts of two gentlemen who wanted to see the phenomena and one of them, a man who should have known better as an alleged respectable man, prepared some grease and lampblack for smearing the end of the trumpet supposedly used in the whistling, but his experiment did not succeed in revealing a ring of this preparation about her mouth. But the permission to feel the pulse of Lenore revealed finger and thumb-marks on Miss Burton's wrist. This was, of course, to be expected, but intelligent men do not need to use contemptible methods with hysterics and normally honest and confiding people, especially when the material used may cost the clothing of the victims. While their results proved that the phenomena have an ordinary physical explanation they did not prove fraud on the part of the medium. Even their statements of the medium's actions after the séance was over are largely due to their imagination misinterpreting conduct that is frequent with her when there is nothing to conceal. But their experiment in levitation of the table revealed the most probable explanation of that phenomenon in the use of crossed knees and lifting with her heel. Tho I could not succeed in duplicating this phenomenon with a table that weighed about half as much as the table used in these experiments the method is so plausible

that we must allow it a consideration, especially in the light of the anæsthesia of the medium, making her immune to pain, and the increased muscular power revealed by the dynamometer.

I have summarized the most important of the phenomena, having reference in the choice of them to such as presented a superficial appearance of being genuine or as claimed to be, and at the same time revealing the hysterical indications of their method of performance. There were many that seemed more inexplicable, but the notes are not so full as may be necessary to make them interesting either to the psychiatrist or the believer in the supernormal. Besides the reader must consult the detailed record for them, and he will find, in some instances at least, which are too complicated for a summary, evidence of interesting hysterical phenomena. That is the primary interest of this report and it will not have any other scientific interest, viewed from the point of view of miracles and the demand for independent physical phenomena as evidence for the supernormal. The popular demand in this matter is wholly erroneous in its conception of both the problem and the evidence. The discussion of these facts may make this position clear.

The results of Drs. Hamilton and Smyth made it important for me to have some experiments and these were arranged. As the phenomena were seemingly telekinetic or independently physical there was no necessity for concealing my identity, even tho it could have been done. I shall select for notice in this summary only such of the incidents in my many sittings as are of special interest in determining the nature of the case. The details will have to be sought in the complete record.

As darkness handicapped observation, the first thing that I resolved to do in the experiments was to study her muscular actions with the hope of getting evidence that her free hand was at least connected with the phenomena. These were movements of the trumpet during whistling, playing of tambourines, rope tying, levitation of the table and the production of lights. The most frequent of these phenomena were whistling and singing which purported to be independent.

What we had to suppose in the use of the trumpet was that Miss Burton held it in her left hand which was free while I held the right in my left. At least in this early stage of the experiments it was clear that I could not hold both hands even as an experiment. I was a stranger and whatever theory be involved, there was disturbance enough in anything like test conditions to make it necessary for me to proceed slowly until I could gain the confidence of her trance personalities. But I was permitted to hold the right hand which I did, also resting my elbow against hers so that I had practical command of every and the slightest movements, whether sympathetic or otherwise, in this arm. The object was to see if there were any indications of transmitted effects from the movements of the left hand of Miss Burton assuming that she used it. I did not detect in this sitting any trace of sympathetic movements in the right hand. I mean such as would be transmitted from the momentum of action in the left hand. The occasional jerks which I noticed and which had been interpreted by the two physicians as signals of coming phenomena occurred often enough and later I found that they were sympathetic with similar actions in the left hand. But they occurred when nothing was taking place usually. What I was trying to observe, however, was the effect on the right hand of any motions which occurred with the left hand in using the trumpet which we assumed Miss Burton did. I detected nothing whatever, and the sequel of many observations was the same, until I could get my left arm around the back of the chair and seize with my fingers the ruffles or pleats in her sleeve, when I could detect slight movements. They did not seem adequate to explain the imagined movements of the trumpet, and no effect was communicated to the right arm and hand which I was controlling. Events seemed to show why this communication of movement did not occur, as there seemed to be a remarkable dissociation of motor action, parts of the body being capable of vigorous action without communicating the effects sensibly to other parts of it. As evidence of this, on one occasion, I was astonished to find Miss Burton standing, she having arisen while I held her right hand and arm and yet

betrayed no sympathetic action in that arm in spite of the necessary actions and movements in rising. The secret of this dissociation of motor actions was never clearly discovered. It may have been due to the effects of local or zonal anæsthesias, which might have produced muscular lethargy to such an extent that actions in one part of the body would not be connected with or transmitted to other parts. A certain muscular tonicity is necessary to encourage or effect transmission of muscular influences. But it was remarkable to find that the expected evidence of muscular action on the part of the left hand was not in any adequate way detectible, and often not at all, a thing to be expected even if the phenomena were independent, as we learn from other cases, such as Mrs. Blake, where there was no handicapping by darkness.

This sympathetic motor action was noticeable in another and wholly distinct phenomenon. It was in connection with the jerking of the hand which I held. As I have already remarked I noticed this phenomenon very early in the experiments and it was constantly repeated during the whole system of experiments which I had, about forty. I noticed scores of times, even in a single sitting, that the hand I was holding would give a sudden jerk, tho rarely seeking or obtaining release from my control. The first suggestion that it gave me, as perhaps it would any one, was that it was designed to get freedom for the purpose of doing something with it in the production of the phenomena. I kept on the alert for this but soon noticed that in by far the largest majority of instances there was no attempt whatever to get its freedom. My hand simply lay on top of hers and did not restrain its efforts in the least. The jerk was simply a sudden impulsive movement and usually ceased immediately without either obtaining freedom or seeking it. Its meaning was soon discovered apparently to be, as the two physicians had remarked in their experiments, to serve as a forerunner of some phenomenon. It always preceded the occurrence of something, such as whistling, singing, playing the tambourine, or other event. In my last series of sittings it became apparent that it had another and wholly different

meaning, tho coinciding with the premonition of the phenomena produced. It was the signal of a change in personality. Of this again. For the present the issue is the relation between these jerks in the hand under control and any other similar phenomena. They were not discoverable until I held both hands which I did at times for obtaining better test conditions. On these occasions when holding both hands, I found that the jerks were simultaneous and exactly similar in each hand, and this whether anything subsequently occurred or not. Also at times I had reason to believe, from slight movements of a jerking type in the body when the hand I held jerked that they were not attempts at "trickery." They proved to be automatic convulsions without any significance to the hypothesis of attempts to play tricks. I kept a close watch on them during all my experiments and they occurred many hundreds of times and all with perfect consistency. Seldom was there even an apparent attempt to free the hand, and on occasions when I deliberately freed it to see whether anything would be done with it I found it lying on the table inactive, or lying on her breast or lap, or placed against her face. I never discovered the slightest attempt to use it for playing a trick. But there was evidence in many cases that the jerk which I felt was duplicated in the free left hand. This always occurred when I had my hand in contact with the left as well as the right.

Sometimes there was an apparent attempt to release the right hand as I held it and the subconsciousness would apparently discover its own effort and inhibit it and voluntarily put the hand back under control. This was conspicuously so when I held both hands during test experiments. It was during these occasions when the muscular actions of the two hands betrayed the possibility, or rather aroused the suggestion, that they were efforts to get free, as reporters describe the substitutions and movements of Eusapia Palladino. But I would leave a false impression if I stated or implied that the movements were evidence of this or that they had any clear indications of such a purpose. The fact was that investigation of them in hundreds of instances showed that there was no real similarity to such actions. The convul-

sions were too slight and were it not that the critic has a right to know that we had our eyes on such possibilities it would not be necessary to mention the suggestion at all. The movements of the two hands when held, sometimes with palms to each other and sometimes separately in each hand of mine, were slight and convulsive. They were not vigorous and did not offer the slightest doubt to the holder that they were under complete supervision all the time, except occasionally when it was manifest that they wanted freedom which was granted. But nothing occurred on such occasions to explain the freedom or its purpose. Nearly always I found the two hands folded on her breast, when contact would induce her to remove them to her lap or on the table to let them remain passive. The movements of the two hands when held were simply little jerkings which had no meaning except automatism, tho this view of them cannot be made evident to any one that does not recognize the observed relation of them to what followed. This was that no attempts were made to use the freed hands in playing "tricks." Besides hundreds of times, perhaps, I noticed that any tendency to freedom which the hands would get in these convulsive movements was immediately counteracted or inhibited by an apparently voluntary action to sustain my control of them by clasping them tightly so that the convulsions would not tend to release them. I purposely allowed them to remain loosely under my control to see if they would free themselves. I kept contact only with sufficient care to see that I had both hands under control and that there was no substitution of one for two. Indeed to mention such a thing is to indicate more possibilities of this being a fact than was actually true. I had no difficulty whatever in seeing that the two hands were under control. There was in fact no attempt whatever to substitute, as is described in the Palladino case, and even if there were it effected nothing. What the reader of the detailed record will discover is that in the majority of cases where test conditions of this kind prevailed nothing occurred and in hundreds of cases where both hands were free nothing occurred to indicate that this freedom was sought for any purpose but to escape the unpleasantness of contact



with me, due perhaps to varying hyperæsthesia or sensibility. Indeed often, too frequently for any specification of numbers, the freedom of the hands was followed by a period of passivity or lethargy in which there was not even an attempt to do anything.

The fact is that it was in the discovery of these sympathetic automatisms that I got the first suggestion that the subconsciousness was as "honest" as we found the normal consciousness to be. I have already indicated that, normally, Miss Burton is a perfectly honest young woman and that not the slightest suspicion can be entertained about her in this respect. If readers cannot make this assumption in the case they must personally investigate her. The private character of the case, the mode of origin of the phenomena, the diffidence of Miss Burton, the absence of any claims on her part, the shock she felt when she discovered through the testimony of others that she herself was doing what they supposed was spiritistic, that is, independently produced, the conversion of her relatives who first thought she was trying to deceive them, her previous habits of life, and a thousand incidents which cannot be narrated here, to say nothing of the uniform conviction of all who know her, are evidence that we do not have to assume any dishonesty in the girl normally. Besides the evidence that she is in a trance, as indicated by severe tests for anæsthesia, show that we do not have to reckon with the normal consciousness in the phenomena. We assumed that subconsciously Miss Burton was doing the things that purported to be independent physical phenomena and it was our problem to prove or disprove it while we studied her motor habits in connection with them. The photographs and some other phenomena seemed to prove that the subconscious was playing tricks exactly as a normal person would do in such alleged phenomena, and hence we interpreted the case as one of trance deception, as the title to the articles in the *Journal* (Vol. III, p. 689, and Vol. IV, p. 53). But at the first suggestion from the sympathetic automatisms that the subconscious was also honest and not trying intelligently to deceive, I found that I had before me an extraordinarily interesting and important phenomenon,



and so I set about studying it. I had no interest in the real or alleged physical phenomena except as by-products. The chief thing was to investigate the subconscious and its actions. From that point on I devoted my whole attention to watching it for evidence of one or the other characteristics. What I have described proving that her muscular movements, suspected for attempts at substitution or gaining freedom to play tricks, were automatisms goes to show that we were dealing with hysterical conditions rather than subconscious deception, at least in the majority of instances, whatever may be suspected in exceptional situations. The detailed record will show many situations and actions that make this hypothesis of subconscious honesty perfectly tenable, even tho there are apparent exceptions to it. It is a fact of very great significance in the interpretation of the case as a whole. The possible meaning of these automatisms and the assumption of subliminal honesty will be discussed when we come to explanatory hypotheses. All that I am interested in here is to remark that this possibility became the primary object of investigation the moment that I suspected its presence.

It requires the careful study of the relations between all her motor actions and the phenomena that occurred. I did not fail to watch it in all instances and I found no causal relation whatever between the muscular automatisms and the occurrence of the phenomena. The utmost that could be assigned to them was that they were premonitory of their occurrence. But later I accidentally discovered that this was not their real import. In my last series of experiments Miss Burton, early in the series, remarked that she felt strange and that she could not move her hands, and that they felt heavy. We proceeded to test her for anæsthesia, finding that she was anæsthetic over the entire body except above the larynx. In the process of watching the oncoming of anæsthetic conditions I accidentally noticed once that, immediately following one of those convulsive jerks, when she had just previously indicated that she was normally conscious, Miss Burton instantly became entranced and was anæsthetic over the entire body, including her face. I suspected that the jerking of

the hand was an index of this anæsthesia and trance, and from that time on I watched the relation between the jerk and her mental condition during the remainder of the twelve sittings. In perhaps hundreds of instances there was not a single failure to mark a change of personality incident to this motor convulsion. It often occurred when no phenomena followed and it became certain that all previous automatisms of the kind were indices of changes in control or personality or the sudden oncoming of the trance, which may be regarded as the occurrence of a change in control or personality. This discovery completely removed all suspicions of questionable motives on the part of the subconscious in the motor convulsions suggesting substitution or attempt at fraud. It strengthened or vindicated the fact of automatism and hence the existence of mental conditions favorable to the "honesty" of the subconscious in the phenomena, even tho they were not extraneously initiated and in spite of their causality by Miss Burton herself.

The existence of these automatisms and their relation to the mental state throws much light upon the phenomena which we were supposedly investigating. They show that it is a problem to prove that the phenomena were accompanied by trance deception. That the facts were calculated in their character to deceive us as observers and that they simulated trickery is evident enough, but we cannot necessarily infer from this similarity of the phenomena that the mental states are similar to fraud. It was precisely this evidence for automatisms that altered the right to make the inference. Externally the effects might be exactly what fraud would make them, but with automatism present the subjective nature of this fraud would be a question and a problem. They would at least be attributable to hysterical conditions, as the anæsthesias and automatisms implied, and the interest then became psychological, whether we ever transcended this situation of things or not. The deception would be in our interpretation, not in the motive of the psychic.

We come now to the individual phenomena and the first to be noticed is the whistling and singing. Sometimes the whistling was alone and sometimes it was simultaneous with

singing, as described in the detailed record. The simultaneous singing and whistling presented a problem for all of us, especially as it proposed the use of the physical organs of the larynx and throat for two purposes, assuming that Miss Burton did them herself, and that was the only supposition which any ordinary explanation would permit. We were to determine whether she or an external reality was responsible for them.

The fact that she could sing and whistle simultaneously did not present to us the same problem that appears to perplex the layman. It seems that there are persons who can whistle and sing simultaneously in a normal manner. I have not been able to do this myself, except to make poor whistling notes and equally poor singing notes and none of them representing normal whistling and singing. I could succeed only in making whistling and singing noises in a way to show that the vocal organs were capable of this double use. I have heard of cases that can do it musically, but I have not been able to prove it at this writing. But in no case were any of us able to imitate what we heard either in the whistling alone or in whistling and singing simultaneously. But the circumstances did not permit us to assert undoubtedly that the phenomena were supernormal, either as subjectively or objectively caused. Hence the whole question of their nature rested on the possibility of locating the source of the sounds. If the sounds issued from her throat we would either be unable to prove any other than a subjective source or could assume that only on evidence that was not apparent in the case. If we could locate the sounds indubitably external to her throat the phenomena would appear to have an extraneous source.

In the first place, on all occasions when we were allowed to hold our fingers on her larynx to see that she was not doing the singing or whistling, we noticed vibrations of the vocal organs with more or less distinctness, usually I can say with less. That the vocal organs acted on such occasions was perfectly evident, and a man cannot suspect or accuse us of illusion in our sensations generally without admitting the same possibility for those by which we detected vibra-

tions of the vocal cords. That supposition deprives the critic of any leverage in the matter. I allude to this, however, not for its special significance, but for its interest in connection with a sceptic's habit of accepting every report of facts which tells for fraud and his doubting those which would tell the other way. But there was no doubt about the complicity or sympathy of her vocal action in all the whistling and singing which we were able to test in this way, and it is more than probable that the same conditions prevailed when we were not holding our fingers on her larynx. The only question is whether this implied that Miss Burton, the subconscious Miss Burton, did the whistling and singing entirely. The movement of the vocal cords was so slight that it did not seem adequate at any time to account for the effects. In whistling myself I found that the vocal organs scarcely betray any action except with the change of notes, and then it is very manifest. Now the notes in the whistling were not single or prolonged ones. There was the most skillful and technical management of the notes which were loud and often trilled with admirable perfection. It is impossible to do this without indicating the action of the vocal organs, tho in a single note one can only detect slight trembling of the organs. In the singing it was different. The evidence of vocal action was far more distinct in all cases and was very noticeable.

Now it was absurd to suppose any conscious fraud in the voluntary offer—and it was almost always voluntary on her part to place the fingers on the throat—to prove that she was not doing the whistling and singing herself. The whole act implied that, if she was, it could be detected and it was her confidence in herself that prompted the offer. Supposing her anæsthetic, as we always found her in such situations she herself would not be conscious of this action. She might actually be doing it and not be aware of it or think that she was doing it. It made clear, however, the exclusion of conscious dishonesty, and the field was clear for the study of subliminal complicity in it. The verdict on this matter must be decided by the later discussion. But as the muscular action discoverable seemed inadequate, judging from

my own conscious attempts to reproduce the phenomena, to explain the whistling and singing directly by her own voice, it remained to ascertain what could be done in localizing the sounds. This was, indeed, the most important part of the problem, as the evidence from vocal action might tell either way. That is, if the sounds actually came from a point beyond her mouth and throat the evidence would have its weight that they were not produced by her own vocal organs naturally. Ventriloquism I regard as nonsense in the case. I gave too much attention to that sort of thing in the experiments to waste time on the consideration of it. I mention it only in deference to those who are likely to think of it, and who do not really know the nature of ventriloquism. Besides, even if it were this, we should have the girl's previous experience to deal with which had no education in ventriloquistic phenomena.

The apparent origin of the singing was never so clear as that of the whistling. I mean that its locality independent of the medium was not so evident. When the singing and whistling were simultaneous the singing often seemed to be in the vicinity of the psychic's throat, and on a few occasions undoubtedly proceeded thence. But often it seemed to be at a distance, but never so great as the whistling. When the singing occurred alone its apparent locality was more distant than when it accompanied the whistling. The whistling, however, uniformly, with one or two exceptions, appeared to be distant from two to four feet from the mouth of Miss Burton. Those exceptions represented test conditions, as explained in the detailed records (p. 504). But in the hundred and fifty or two hundred instances in which I critically studied the locality of the whistling I did not detect the slightest evidence that it proceeded from her mouth. I took for granted that this was the case, and if expectation ever has anything to do with illusions and hallucinations I should have had them here and located the whistling in her throat. But in only one instance did it seem to proceed thence and this was when I had control of her two hands. I resorted to every imaginable means for locating the whistling in the throat. I moved my head from side to side in order to elim-

inate possible illusion from the occurrence of the sounds in the median plane where we knew that illusions frequently occur, and no apparent alteration of the locality took place. I moved my head up and down for similar purposes and detected no change of judgment. I have no doubt that I could not judge the locality accurately, as in some occasions, where the larger end of the trumpet was near me I saw that the sounds which I would have otherwise located farther away were near. But I never seemed to be mistaken about the direction and the general locality. I could not discover any illusion whatever in the apparent location some distance from Miss Burton's mouth. I had one advantage in these observations. I sat beside her at the right, often or always controlling her right hand with my left or right, as the circumstances permitted, and at times sitting so that my face was directly toward her so that I could alter the median plane at will, and the sounds seemed to originate from two to four feet in front of her. When others sitting on the other side of the table were asked to locate the sound they generally agreed with my decision before I gave any indication of what it was. Sometimes three and four persons would agree as to this, tho each was sitting at wholly different angles to the situation.

Perhaps a hundred times I placed my face and ear near her throat to see if I could detect the presence of the whistling there and never found it so, with the two exceptions mentioned. I moved my ear about from place to place to correct possible illusions, and it made no difference. I even rose, perhaps a score of times, and with my head above hers could still locate the whistling in front of her. Further I thrust my head down between hers—holding my left hand on her shoulder to see that she did not change her position—trying to determine whence the sound seemed to issue and it made no alteration in the apparent locality of the origin of the sound. Of course, if she was whistling through the trumpet, as we have to assume that she was, the sounds might still retain their apparent locality without illusion.

But with my ear within an inch of her throat I could not



detect the slightest trace of the source of any whistling there. I could detect clearly and infallibly the presence of the slightest groan which was a very frequent and simultaneous phenomenon with the whistling and singing. The groan was so slight that I could never have detected it, while the phonograph was playing, had it not been for the proximity of my ear to the throat and not once had I any apparent illusion as to its source. There seemed to be no more doubt about the locality of the whistling. Why it should be so easy and so invariable to locate the groans in the throat and never possible to locate the whistling there is not readily explainable, except on the supposition that it is either more easy to produce an illusion in whistling by doing it through the trumpet or that it is what it claims to be. There was no opportunity to settle this decisively.\*

---

\* In order to study the localization of whistling sounds under similar conditions to those of Miss Burton's experiments I made a paper trumpet and tried a series of experiments with my family. At first I had only three "sitters" or observers and required them to shut their eyes while I whistled. I did not at first tell them what I intended to do or what the object of the experiment was. I simply asked them to tell me where the whistling seemed to be and they did not know whether I used the trumpet or not. When the trumpet was used the localization of the whistling was not near me in a single case. All were agreed as to the locality being at a distance and when asked to point out the place they quite accurately indicated it in the region of the farther end of the trumpet. They were as uniformly correct in stating that the sound seemed to change its position, when, in fact, I had moved the trumpet about as I whistled.

When I whistled without using the trumpet there were less clear judgments about the apparent change of locality in the sound, tho I moved my head about at times. But as to locality there was the same general accuracy, locating it nearer myself.

I tried the same experiments again at a later time. At first I made no explanation of what I wanted to study. I merely asked all the members of the family, six in all, to say where the whistling seemed to be. They knew that I had the trumpet, but did not know whether I used it or not. With the trumpet there were the same experiences as before. All except one correctly indicated the appearance of motion or hearing the sound at different places, according as I moved the trumpet from side to side or up and down as I whistled into it. This exception was my sister. But as to its apparent locus she agreed with the others. On the first trial my stepmother was evidently influenced by her belief that, as I was doing the whistling, the sound was in the vicinity of my mouth. But in all other



On a few occasions the whistling occurred without the accompaniment of the phonograph. This alteration of the conditions did not change the apparent locality of it. But the most instructive experiments were those in which the

experiments it was otherwise and she agreed with the judgment of the other "sitters."

When I whistled without the trumpet they located the sound near me, but not with any special accuracy. The judgment, however, was in agreement with the principles involved in the localization of sound generally. My son was asked to put his ear near my cheek and to see how the sound appeared to him. This made no difference to his judgments. When I used the trumpet he located the sound as did the others sitting in front of me six feet distant. The sound seemed to him to be at a distance which the larger end of the trumpet marked.

I then explained what I was doing and repeated the experiments, asking them to say where the sound seemed to them, no matter what they knew about its actual source. The result was unanimously the same as before. The same difference of localization with the movements of the trumpet was uniformly noticed and when I did not use the trumpet the localization was not the same as when I did use it.

I had one of them whistle instead of myself, placing myself in the position of observer as I was in my Burton experiments and I could easily notice the change of locality and the apparent locus of the sound away from the mouth. There was no distinct localization at the mouth, tho I knew that the sound issued thence.

The experiments cannot be taken as accurate ones or such as may determine accurate generalizations. It is not intended that they should. All that I wanted to ascertain was whether, under similar conditions, the natural judgment of unbiased observers tended to confirm the feelings which I have reported as to the apparent localization of the whistling in the Burton experiments. They do decidedly confirm those judgments and indicate, at least as far as they go, that sounds actually issuing at one point, if transmitted through a trumpet, will not naturally be located at the point of issue. This rather indicates that my judgments on the occasion were not illusions due to an interest in locating them at a distance. I tried to locate them in the vicinity of the mouth, but could not. If desire and expectation had anything to do with it I should have located them where they supposedly originated, but these experiments here recorded indicate that the judgments which I made were correct for the situation, and hence that this fact that there was no real illusion in the Burton experiments does not furnish evidence for their independent source.

This, however, does not settle the cases when the whistling was done without the trumpet and when the localization did not seem to be near the throat.

whistling occurred when both hands were controlled. Quite a number of times I held both hands when whistling was done. It was not so clear and so excellent, but the fact did not do any more to locate it in the throat. Only on two occasions and this only for two or three notes did the whistling seem to be in the vicinity of the face. These are noted in the detailed record. One of them involved its apparent locality right in the face. The other beyond it, tho I had both hands under control and my face against hers.

The instances in which I held the trumpet in my right hand at right angles to the median plane of Miss Burton and my left hand on her shoulder to prevent her getting up and whistling into the trumpet were interesting ones. What we had to suppose was that the whistling into the trumpet created an illusion regarding its origin and locality. But it did not alter its apparent locality to thus exclude the possibility of her putting it to her mouth, and she certainly could not do this under the conditions described. The whistling did not manifest the excellence it did on occasions when there were no such obstacles to it, but it was better than she can whistle normally and seemed to be at a distance from her face. It sometimes had the timbre of the trumpet in it, even when it was not touched by her and could not be. But the main point was its apparent locality when it was not possible to have the trumpet at her mouth. Whether she used her left hand to put the small section at the end of the larger section of the trumpet and whistle into it in that way I could only conjecture. On one occasion the jar of the trumpet at the farther end suggested this device, but it occurred only once, and sometimes it was impossible to conceive this a feasible process, as I held her shoulder with my left hand and was assured that she was sitting in the chair, had not leaned forward and would have had to reach with her left hand as far as my longer right could reach while I sat, or sometimes half stood, as much as eighteen inches in front of her. Whatever the facts are worth these are as described, and I do not give them as in any respect conclusive evidence for the supernormal, but as problems for the critical mind to make intelligible. I was not able as in other

situations to discover a plausible explanation, tho, had darkness not been present, this might have been very simple, as it sometimes turned out when we were entertaining much more difficult and complicated explanations.

The playing of the tambourine presented no features either of psychological or other interest, and so I pass to the instances in which I was a witness of the levitation of the table. This table weighed from one hundred to one hundred and twenty-five pounds. I mention the last figure because of the difficulty that I had in lifting it. I find that I have to make about the same exertion, so far as I can determine it, to lift my son and he weighs 128 pounds. The lower figure may be that of the table, but it certainly weighs that much. It was opened so that there was a space of at least twenty inches between the leaves. The central support and legs, claw shaped and not attached to the table proper but to the central support, made it very heavy. In the experiment I held the hands of Mr. Milton and protected the foot of the table against his feet. Dr. Smyth protected another foot and Dr. Hamilton the third foot, holding also the hands of Mrs. Milton so that she could not touch the table. With my left hand I held the right hand of Miss Burton. She had her feet free and her left hand, except that my left foot secured her right against use in any way. Under these conditions the table was levitated three times as much as eight inches, as we measured it by raising our right feet protecting the legs of the table, and when it started down we clapped our feet against our own legs and took the height as a measure of the table's levitation.

There are just three possibilities for the execution of this by Miss Burton. First we may suppose that she placed her left toe under the leg of the table which she could reach and holding the cross piece in the table raised it in that way, by lifting with the toe and pulling with the hand. I tried this experiment and found it impossible. The table would only roll on its castors. Besides there was no apparent effort on her part such as this method would require. Her right hand was passive under mine, and lying on the table. I do not believe that it was possible for her to do it in this manner,

and in spite of the fact that she shows so much more strength in the trance than she does in her normal state. The second imaginable method would be that she gets up, the dissociation of motor action preventing the discovery of this, and allowing the cross piece of the table to rest against her hip, and seizes the cross piece on the other side with her left hand and raises the table in this way. I am not at all convinced that this is possible. I tried to do it in that manner with each hand and failed. But I could do it by holding with both hands. I am stronger, however, than Miss Burton in her trance, as many experiments showed. Hence I do not see how she could do it with one hand, and especially without revealing the standing posture and extreme effort that it would involve. The fact that she is stronger in the trance does not meet the situation, as my own experiment shows. The third method which seems more plausible and unanswerable to me is one suggested by another experimenter. He supposed, and thought he got evidence of Miss Burton's crossing her legs so that the under side of the table rested on her knee, she resting her left arm on the table and making a lever handle of it, while she had only to raise the heel of her under foot and pry down on the table with the left arm. The muscular power of the foot in this way would most probably be capable of producing the effect. I wanted to try the experiment on the table but circumstances would not permit without creating more suspicion of my object than I wanted to suggest. I have tried it on a table not so heavy and failed, probably because it hurt my knee. But assuming that she was protected by anæsthesia we might conceive it possible. It has fewer objections from experimental evidence than the other methods, but it is easier to accept *a priori* than *a posteriori*, and the evidence is not at all conclusive that it was so done, tho there is no evidence that it was done in any supernatural manner by outside agencies. All that can be said is that Miss Burton could hardly do it in her normal state. If she had anything to do with it at all, it is remarkable that there was not the slightest evidence of it in any detectible motor movements of a sympathetic or other character.

In some experiments by Dr. Smyth and Dr. Milne there

were observed facts which point strongly to Miss Burton's lifting the table in a manner here doubted (p. 257), namely, the second method described. Dr. Smyth, however, recognizes the difficulty of this precisely as it seems to me. What we should have to assume in the hypothesis is even more extraordinary subconscious muscular power than the dynamometer manifested. This would imply that there was no reason for questioning the correctness of the dynamometer experiments.

The production of lights is the next type for notice. The only claim made by Mrs. Milton, and accepted by Miss Burton from her, is that the lights are not produced in a fraudulent manner and that they are not produced by any artificial means such as are employed by professional conjurers. Mrs. Milton believes that they are produced in some way through Miss Burton's hands or organism, sometimes independently and sometimes at the periphery, but not without some sort of coördination on the part of the body. She does not think that they are absolutely and always independent of the organism or bodily action on the part of the psychic. The smell of phosphorus frequently takes place during their production, and it can be noticed distinctly on her hands after the performance. Both admit this and admit it without any suspicion of its suggestiveness. They simply deny that it is prepared for beforehand or that she knows anything about the conjurer's resources in such phenomena. It of course modifies the case to have this frank admission of the nature of the lights and their association with the undoubted presence of phosphorus, especially when the same concession is not made for the whistling and singing and other physical phenomena, as it simplifies the mode of testing the case. The simple method of eliminating preparation beforehand would be to have some experiments at the house of a stranger and to dress Miss Burton so that you could exclude the possibility of getting the materials for making the lights. Unfortunately in all experiments previous to the fourth series it was impossible, owing to lack of laboratory facilities, to get any such conditions applied, tho both persons were quite willing and anxious that it should be done. No restrictions or obstacles were

placed on our desires in this respect. The best that we were able to do has been to study the phenomena in their various complications.

In the first place, in all experiments previous to the fourth series, the lights never appeared to us to be situated beyond the reach of Miss Burton's hand or hands. Their position and motion in space was always consistent with the supposition that she was making them and there is nothing to be said regarding them in this respect that would protect them against the hypothesis of a natural origin. The only thing that has ever perplexed us has been the color of the lights, and in a few instances the simultaneous production of two lights so far apart that, with the left hand, which was the only one free, it is not conceivable how the lights should have appeared so far apart, some twelve or fifteen inches. But the color of the lights was such that we could never reproduce them with phosphorus. One experimenter claimed that he could and that the lights seemed just like those which we can produce with matches. I am firmly convinced that this was either an illusion on his part or that the lights were not the same as those which Drs. Hamilton and Smyth and myself witnessed. The gentleman who thought they were identical with the lights which can be produced with matches had only one experiment and so had no chance to study them as we had, and so I am inclined to think that his view is a mistaken one. I have tried many times to produce the lights with matches in a perfectly dark place and neither in color nor in other qualities could I get any approximation to the lights produced by Miss Burton. Her lights were a bright yellow, and often radiated light about the spot at which they appeared, sometimes so clearly as to enable us to see the skin on which they appeared as clearly as in daylight. Only in one respect did they resemble ordinary phosphorus lights, and this was in the fact that the surrounding air was not illuminated by them. In color and local illumination they were like the lights of fire flies, but did not illuminate the adjacent space so readily or clearly. This may have been due entirely to the fact that there were no adjacent objects except the skin of the face on which they appeared, and this, as I have re-



marked, was illuminated. I never saw her fingers illuminated by them, tho she was supposedly making them with the fingers. Dr. Hamilton, I believe, did see her fingers illuminated by the lights a few times. But in my experiments neither he nor I saw anything but the face and the dress illuminated by them and supposedly the lights issued from the hand to produce this effect. Possibly the absence of further illumination was due to the greater dimness of the lights than such as we observe in fire flies, tho it seemed to me that the lights at times were quite as lucid as these, tho they were also often very dim and varied much in respect of brilliance and dimness. By no means that I could ascertain could I reproduce them. I sought the alleged electric lights which are supposedly used for this purpose and neither with dealers in conjurers' apparatus nor among electric toy makers could I find anything that would resemble the effects observed, and indeed the parties had never heard of such apparatus for the purpose! How Miss Burton could have obtained such things when dealers and manufacturers had never heard of them I do not know. But had she obtained such electric lights as I found she could not have used them for the purpose. In the first place the cells and wires had to be such as to have menaced her use of them. In the second place, granting that the difficulty just mentioned could be easily overcome, the radiation of the lights was such as to illuminate a whole room, tho the apparatus was not larger than a grain of wheat. Every means that I was able to secure for reproducing such lights as I observed totally failed.

One important point to be remarked was that Miss Burton often tried to produce the lights and entirely failed. Many evenings when Mrs. Milton and myself wanted them and would try for hours they could not be produced. Occasionally she could make a few lights, but they were dim and unsatisfactory. During my first series of experiments they were very successfully made, but Miss Burton was not limited by control of her hands to any extent. In the later experiments I controlled her right hand and they either did not occur at all or occurred only in an imperfect manner. Once I got her to produce a light in her lap and then put her



hands in mine while it remained. It remained for perhaps ten or fifteen seconds, but did not move as do the regular lights. But usually I could get no lights at all while holding her right hand. On the evening next to the last in my final set of experiments, when I did not attempt to apply tests by controlling either hand all the phenomena were better, that is, occurred easily, and the lights were excellent. But the moment that I held the right hand they were either extremely difficult or would not occur at all.

But it was clear that, if the lights were not produced fraudulently or hysterically by means prepared beforehand, they were not independent of Miss Burton's organism. They were undoubtedly connected with her bodily action in some way. The only preparation that would seem reasonable in the case, judging from Miss Burton's normal honesty, would be that she goes into something like a trance and makes the preparation in that condition and hence remembers nothing about it. Somewhat similar phenomena occurred with the case of Flournoy. She went into trances without knowing it at the time or afterward. Miss Burton has also done this and I have the records of her automatic writing when she did so. There is no evidence that she did this for producing the lights, but in the absence of direct investigation and means of excluding it we may imagine it possible, even tho we have nothing to make it probable.

The laborious efforts to produce lights under test conditions with the evident "honesty" of the subconsciousness and the admission that Miss Burton's hands were in some way connected with them, as the smell of phosphorus proved, induced me to have further experiments in this direction. I therefore made arrangements for the same. As I was convinced that contact with Miss Burton's hands prevented the phenomena on any explanation of them whatever and as I did not think such restraints were absolutely necessary for establishing test conditions I resolved to adopt means for determining the matter without holding the hands. The undoubted fact that her hands were connected with at least some of the lights or the production of them, even if independent, and the fact that lights could as well be supernormal

if produced by her hands without previous preparation or the use of artificial means, made it allowable to arrange for the exclusion of such materials and the removal of restraints from her hands.

The consequence was that I obtained an agreement to dress Miss Burton as I desired. I purchased the necessary outfit of clothing which included everything she might wear. I had the clothing kept in the possession of other parties not interested in the results, as is more fully explained in the detailed account (p. 568), and then arranged to have her dressed before each performance. Her hands were washed on all evenings except the one on which Mrs. Milton was also dressed. After she was dressed I saw to the combing of her hair or witnessed this by others, and then made or had made the necessary examination of her nose and mouth. From that moment I kept her in charge until the lights were turned out in the séance room. The arrangement, as the detailed record shows, excluded either the presence of artificial means on her person or access to them if they were concealed. On the first two evenings Mrs. Milton was not protected in any manner except before the lights were turned out and then for a while the first evening she was under the supervision of Dr. Smyth. The second evening there was no restriction whatever upon her after the lights were turned out, and it was not my object to treat the situation as more than practice or preparation for results of some kind under test conditions.

On the first evening no lights were made, so that it was a failure. The situation had a psychological interest nevertheless, but which will concern only the scientific student who desires to know details.

On the second evening only Mrs. Milton and myself were present. Whistling and singing took place apparently as preparation for the effort to produce lights. Finally lights were seen, a rather large number of them in the vicinity of Miss Burton. Finally she offered her hands to me and I held them in my grasp on her breast. While I so held them two bright lights appeared about the phonograph which Mrs. Milton was managing and I waited for further demonstration and in a few minutes another very large light appeared be-

yond it that appeared as two lights to me because of the phonograph and only as one to Mrs. Milton. It had shot behind it so as to appear on the other side. I saw the outline of the horn from the effect of it and Mrs. Milton was frightened by it. I had not told her I was holding Miss Burton's hands and did not tell her until after the sitting. After this demonstration a number of other lights occurred in the vicinity of Miss Burton. It was certain that she had not concealed material about her before coming into the room and all matches were excluded from the room beforehand. Besides the lights had no resemblance to lights produced by matches, as explained above.

On the third evening Mrs. Milton was dressed and examined in the same manner as Miss Burton and Dr. Hamilton and Dr. Smyth were present, the latter only a part of the evening. After some good simultaneous whistling and singing, probably in preparation for lights these latter came in abundance. Only once did any light occur when her hands were held. I had held them to get rid of one of the personalities and continued to hold them after his exorcism, and a large clear light appeared behind and to the right of Miss Burton not less than two feet from where her hands were, and in this I make allowance for illusion and error of judgment which is so likely in the darkness when locating lights. Most of the lights, however, were in the vicinity of Miss Burton and when her hands were free. I do not believe they were independent, as phenomena not produced by the hands directly are usually called. Most of the lights were undoubtedly connected with her hand, but they certainly could not have been caused by means concealed on her person beforehand. Mrs. Milton being equally protected removes ordinary suspicions from her. In both cases the possibilities imagined and entertained previously are excluded, and the quality of the lights was at variance with the same hypotheses.

In the fourth experiment Mrs. Milton was excluded from the room, and only entire strangers, so to speak, admitted. That is to say only investigators were present and all interested parties excluded. Miss Burton underwent the usual examination with a little more scrutiny than before, if we

suppose any differences at all. During the evening many lights occurred, none assuredly independent, but all not producible by artificial means concealed on her person. It is not denied by any of us that they were produced by Miss Burton's hands, but all agree as to their occurrence, their appearance, and their general locality. None found any resemblances to the lights producible from matches. They were a brilliant yellow color where they were best developed and only occasionally of the misty and filmy sort. The collective judgment agreed as to their nature and place in the main. There was no doubt that they were as objective as collective phenomena usually are or are supposed to be. The detailed record will show the grounds on which the claim can be made that they were not ordinarily produced. To that the reader must go for details of the evidence. Here it suffices to state that the exclusion of Mrs. Milton from complicity on this occasion taken with the exclusion of Miss Burton from other cases in previous experiments as in this one makes the explanation or conceivable explanation more difficult than usual, especially if that explanation demands evidence in its behalf. That is all that we need to say.

It is not our place to offer hypotheses for explanation. This report does not state more than the facts and their relation to ordinary theories. It is not necessary to advance spiritistic suppositions, as phenomena of this kind alone, no matter how assuredly supernormal, are not evidence of such a view, tho explicable by it when proved. Besides we should require to produce similar phenomena in a large number of cases before announcing proof of either the facts or the explanation. Here it suffices to make a beginning and to defer proof to the future.

The objection which any claim to the existence of supernormal lights has to meet is that the discovery of "natural" methods of producing other apparently supernormal phenomena at least suggests undiscovered methods of producing the lights in a normal manner. That is to say if trance deception had outwitted us in other phenomena it may have done so in this case. This mode of argument is legitimate enough, tho only as a precaution, not as evidence. Besides

it is an argument that applies only to like phenomena and conditions. But neither phenomena nor conditions were the same as those in which trance deception was practiced. Each group of conditions and phenomena must have its own particular explanation, even tho we incline to some sort of "natural" means. But I am not contending that the existence of supernormal lights is proved by the facts. The sceptic may have whatever hypothesis he prefers, provided he offers scientific evidence of its application to the specific case and conditions. All that I am contending for is that the ordinary explanations of the kind about which we hear so much are excluded from the case, and any new theory must present specific proof that it applies. I shall not pay any attention to imaginative might bes. I could construct half a dozen of these myself, but they would not fit. We are dealing with a situation in which any hypothesis advanced must consistently apply to details and not to some *a priori* and imaginary set of conditions. The explanation may be very simple, but it will not be the easy use of the ordinary means within the reach of every one. Nor would I maintain that the supernormal production of lights is proved. It may take many such cases to establish such a conclusion. But the experiments at least offer difficulties to those who are wont to deny the possibility of such things. Personally they seem to me to be very good evidence for supernormal phenomena, and if I am not mistaken it is due to the inability to discover any artificial methods generally known for effecting such results.

We should remember also that the phenomenon is not so great a miracle as our sceptics try to make out. There is the fire-fly and glow worm, and marine phosphorescence in the organic world, and the phosphorescence, or "fox fire," of decaying wood. The Will-o'-the-Wisp is perhaps another illustration representing the slow combustion of gases emitted from swamps. We know also that the human organism secretes phosphates very freely and it may be possible that certain persons extraordinarily endowed may be able, either through their own powers or the intervention of for-

eign agencies, to analyze these phosphates and expose them to oxygenation, in which case lights would be producible.

The incident of the rope tying deserves some account of itself. Two pieces of rope, each perhaps twenty feet long, lay on the table for tying the medium whenever this phenomenon was desired. On one occasion I held the right hand during the whole period in which the tying was done. I did not feel the slightest motion of Miss Burton's body, and indeed I was not employed in a way to discover anything except the action of the hand and arm I was holding. Apparently the psychic was perfectly passive, tho my feeling about this may be due to my ignorance of what was going on. We were waiting for anything to happen and talking occasionally. Slight motions of the body may well have gone on without my detection, but sitting as I was within a few inches of Miss Burton and holding her right hand securely in mine with the expectation that the rope tying was to be done I ought certainly to have detected any considerable movements of her body while it was being done. But I did not, and when it was announced by voice that it was done we turned up the light and found Miss Burton tied to her chair and to the table in a manner described in detail in the records.

Her left ankle was first tied with the rope and then to the left foot of her chair. The rope was then taken around her body, tied to the rung in the back of it and then around her body and tied there, proceeding thence to her left leg again and tied there. The second rope was tied first to the left leg, then around her right leg and round the right leg of the chair, around her body and to the rung in the back of the chair and about her body as before, and then around both our hands, finally tying her left hand to the cross piece in the table. That is both her hands were tied in tight knots and to the table piece. During this she had no freedom of the right hand except just at the close of the performance when she reached with it and mine together to touch her left. Strictly speaking her right hand was not free, but entirely under my supervision and what it did was while mine was with it. This was apparently too short a time to do more than perhaps fasten a knot already made otherwise. I have no proof of



this, however, and it was certain that the most of the tying had to be done without any assistance from the right hand which I held and which was related to the left hand only at this final moment and only for a few seconds.

There is no conclusive evidence that the tying was done by any one but herself. We may imagine or believe the complicity of Mrs. Milton, but this is contrary to her whole character and conduct on any and all occasions. I do not believe that she would be an accomplice in such a thing, as she is too sincere a believer in the genuineness of the phenomena and too much perplexed at the discoveries of Miss Burton's doing the things herself to have been a party to them. While the opportunity existed for such complicity I think that the simpler explanation would be the more probable, and that is that the whole performance was effected by Miss Burton's left hand. How she could do it I do not see. I cannot understand how she could get the ropes around her ankles and around the parts of the chair and her own body, with tied knots in them, without betraying evidence of motions in her own body. I detected absolutely none. I can understand tying her left ankle without detection, but how she could get the rope around her body twice with knots in it each time and also tie it about the right side of the back of the chair without detection I do not see. The process may be simpler than my experience and experiments, which I have made, would indicate. But assuming that she did it she had to do all this with the left hand and perhaps the twenty-five or thirty minutes employed in it sufficed to do it without associated muscular movements that would betray her part in it. But however we may imagine it to have been done there is no distinct evidence that it was so done, and the conditions make it a most interesting phenomenon, quite as much so perhaps on the hypothesis of her own action as on that of supposedly foreign intelligences of which there was no evidence on the occasion. We are, of course, not obliged to explain the facts, even by natural and normal means, any more than by supernatural or supernormal means. I am quite content to leave them unexplained on natural grounds, until we find that hysterics have special facilities for producing such phenomena without



the education of normal experience. The perplexity in the case is just this, that there is nothing in the girl's normal life to suggest and train her for this sort of thing and the natural obstacles to her doing it without detection under the circumstances were such as to justify as much caution in asserting any special natural method as we should display in asserting a supernatural that had no support but just this perplexity. The suggestion which points the direction to an explanation is the fact of hysteria and the motor dissociation which make possible many undetectable things and could we have witnessed the phenomena in the light it is as possible that they would have been as simple as some other facts which were perplexing until their *modus operandi* was discovered.

One of the most striking physical phenomena was the starting and stopping the phonograph while both hands and feet were held. The record gives the details. I had several trials before it succeeded. Two or three efforts failed and I then freed both hands and it soon succeeded, Mrs. Milton standing behind me with her hands on my shoulder, whither, through the trumpet in the usual way, she had been asked to go. Disappointed at this she asked to have it done under test conditions and "Dan," the control, said he would try. Through the trumpet Mrs. Milton was told to stop the machine and to go behind me. There was no pretence in these directions that the voice was an independent one, and indeed this is never claimed in the phenomena of Miss Burton. She picks up the trumpet and speaks through it in the trance. On this occasion Miss Burton sat between me and the phonograph with her back about twenty inches from it, tho a little to her left side. I sat fronting her and held both her hands in mine and my right leg twined about her two. Mrs. Milton stood behind me with her hands on my shoulder during a part of the experiment. Under these conditions the machine was started and stopped four times.

We imagined that a string might have been arranged on the key to the machine, but I could not bring myself to think this possible and I do not now think that any such string as I supposed could be successfully used in such an operation. But I desired to test it further and at a later series of experi-

ments I requested that it be repeated. The trance personality was quite willing to try.

We tried it several times, but failed and then a little later, with her right hand under control, the machine was stopped when she quickly threw her left hand into mine and with the same conditions as I have described the phonograph was started and stopped four times again. When it ceased the last time I called for the light and at once there began a vigorous struggle on the part of Miss Burton to get free. I managed to hold her and when the light was turned up by Mrs. Milton—she and I being the only two present—there on the key of the machine was one of the pieces of rope which usually lies on the table, tied in a knot, and probably put under the armpits for pulling and relaxing it suitably to start and stop the machine. When Mrs. Milton saw it she was very angry and insisted on having it repeated rightly, but it was never done.

The raps are perhaps as interesting a group of phenomena in the case as occurred. They have a mixed physical and psychological interest or character. Some of them are responses to questions and show intelligence; others are simple indications of the power to produce them, tho they also are incidental to intelligent purpose. The proper appreciation of their character can be had only by a careful study of the detailed record and both the junctures in which they occurred and the complicated situation with which they were associated. But I can give a summarized account of them in their general character, and this without necessarily raising the question of their cause or explanation.

The first manifest use of them is the indication of displeasure at the music of the phonograph. Whenever a piece of music does not satisfy the trance personalities there may be a rap of dissent and if this is not immediately attended to there may be a volley of them until the desire to have the music changed or altered in loudness is noticed. It matters not how they are made, this is their undoubted meaning, as hundreds of experiments abundantly show.

Then they come in for answering questions. One rap signifies "No," two raps "I don't know," and three "Yes."

At any point at which we desire information that can be given by these answers questions are answered accordingly, and if the questions are properly and dexterously asked the answers may reflect something more than guessing. They will at least show an intelligent set of conceptions whether they involve supernormal information or not. This is indicated by special examples in the detailed record.

The question of interest apart from the psychological accompaniments of the raps is whether they are artificially or independently produced. The presumption was that Miss Burton produced them herself whether consciously or unconsciously. The trance shows that, if she produced them at all, it was unconsciously and the phenomena would at least be products of hysteria. The circumstances under which they often occurred did not prevent our supposing that Miss Burton's hand was the cause of them. But there were many situations which absolutely disproved this and the least that you could suppose was that she had substituted her feet for the hand. It would not have altered their interest for me had I been able to prove that her hand or feet made them. But they often occurred in a manner to suggest that neither agency was involved. It was their apparent locality that suggested this independence, but as we had to allow for illusions of localization, especially in the darkness, it was not at all conclusive to feel that the raps occurred where you knew the hand was not. The versatility with which they were produced and apparently located in different places, either spontaneously or at request, is so much in favor of an unusual character. For instance, I have had the raps occur at my right while I held the right hand and hence at a point which could not easily or at all be reached by the free left hand of Miss Burton. If the raps had been produced under the table and mislocated by myself the illusion may account for their apparent locus out of her reach. But in some cases it would not have been natural to have such an illusion occur, as the table was opened some twenty inches or two feet and the raps were so distinctly located out of reach that the illusion would have had to be unusual to explain the ordinary origin of the raps. I do not mean to say or imply that they

were not so originated, but to throw the burden of proof on the man who indulges *a priori* speculation freely.

When the conditions are not test ones the question resolves itself into one of illusions of localization of sounds. We are usually told by the sceptic that we cannot locate sounds rightly, especially in the darkness, and illustrations are given in such examples as clicking two coins in front of the face or back of the head in which all sorts of errors are committed. But people who quote these illustrations are usually very careful not to state that these sounds are made in the median plane and that sounds made outside this plane are located with tolerable accuracy, often with infallible accuracy. The thesis that we cannot locate sounds rightly is false unless qualified. There are plenty of situations in which we do it well and our judgments can be relied on as well as those based upon any other sensation. Of course when the sounds occur in the median plane and when they are extremely dim or slight we are liable to all sorts of errors. But this is not true of other situations.

I took the trouble to reproduce the same kind of raps under similar conditions to test the localization, and the results were so favorable to satisfactory accuracy that there is no excuse for the usual sceptical dogmatism on this point. My son, whose hearing was especially bad when this was done, as he was suffering from inflammation of the inner ear, and was undergoing operations for it at the time, was so correct at it that he was almost infallible. In the median plane he had the usual illusions. I had him try the same experiments on myself and I was about as successful as he was. My daughter, whose hearing was good, was absolutely correct in the median plane as well as outside it. Consequently I am convinced that all this talk about illusions is subject to qualification and does not represent a law of hearing for all sounds.

Besides I tested it with Mrs. Milton right in the darkness and she was correct every time, save perhaps as to the distance from her. But as to direction and relative position from her place she was invariably correct. Besides in many of the cases when either she or the two physicians were asked

to say where the raps appeared to be the replies coincided with the judgment that I had formed. As to direction from a given point, say Miss Burton's face or hands, while I sat beside her I am certain that the general localization of the sounds had to be accepted as reasonably accurate. I could not suppose her hands to be the cause unless this localization could be trusted. But once accepted as trustworthy the appeal to illusion cannot be made without evidence. The illusion of all of us should never have been with reference to the same point in space, when we sat at wholly different positions with reference to their origin. Sometimes we differed as to the exact place, but never as to the general direction or spot. We might differ as to whether it seemed to originate under the table or occur on top of it. But we all agreed usually as to the general relation to the medium, and the sceptic can depend only on the supposition that sounds made under the table will always be dubiously assigned from above. I found in my experiments with my children, however, that the illusion did not occur more in such situations than in others. There were times enough when I could not myself have been sure where the sounds seemed to occur, but when they were distinct and when no disturbance occurred from the music of the phonograph the location of sounds was as definite as in normal life and stood the test of examination.

But there were two or three occasions where the ordinary explanation was not possible, and many of them where the simplest one was not possible. Of the later instances I refer to those raps which occurred when I held both hands and when the locus of the raps varied within a distance of three or more feet. It was an accident that brought me the opportunity to experiment under good conditions.

I often asked questions and received answers in raps. There was some confusion on one occasion and I was holding both hands when raps occurred. I saw at once that they could not be attributed to the hands, as we usually ascribed them to that source. I did not tell Mrs. Milton the situation, assuming that she might make them if she knew it, and knowing that she was not aware of my holding both hands, I asked a question and got distinct raps in reply. I saw that

the earlier raps were not illusions. I asked several questions and got the answers under the same conditions before I revealed to Mrs. Milton that I was holding both hands. When I had sufficiently observed that she had noticed the raps I told her what had occurred. We then repeated the experiment and I held both hands again. The raps occurred and seemed to be as far off as four feet from Miss Burton, and some were located on the sideboard which was eight or ten feet from us and were made distinctly enough to have Mrs. Milton remark that without knowing that I had located them in the same place. But I had to assume that Miss Burton might have substituted her foot for her hands and that I was a subject of illusion in the locus of the sounds.

Consequently, I asked the next evening if I could not fasten a pillow to the foot of the table near her left foot. This was conceded and when the time came during the séance I wrapped my right leg about her two legs and held both hands, so that no part of her body could touch the table. In this condition we got clear raps first four feet distant on the table, then in the sideboard eight or ten feet distant and finally in the corner of the room ten or twelve feet distant. Mrs. Milton remarked the locality before I gave my judgment. This was continued for some time, and I resolved to ask some questions for intelligent replies and got them with the sounds issuing apparently four feet away on the table. The answers were psychologically correct tho it was not possible for Miss Burton to know what I was seeking, tho we may say that the correctness of the answers was due to chance coincidence. But the raps were certainly not produced by either her hands or feet on the table at any point.

On another occasion I got very good evidence of their independence. It was in the light, a red light. I could see Miss Burton's hands clearly and often held my right on both of them to see if they moved in any way; when the raps occurred I detected not the slightest motion or action on her part. The raps gradually got so far away as the window sill and case on the other side of the table and two and a half feet, I would say, from the edge of the table, in all six feet



from Miss Burton and eight or ten feet from Mrs. Milton. After having the raps repeated there several times I asked if they could not be made while I stood by the window and the trance personality—Miss Burton not being in a trance—replied that he would try. I went to the window and stood by it when raps distinctly occurred, heard by Mrs. Milton and Miss Burton. There was no more illusion about them than I would have with any sounds that we hear. I could see that no sensible motion or action on the part of Miss Burton took place. Even if it had, the illusion of locality could not have occurred without making all auditory sounds alike in this respect. I never found in these experiments that expectation in the least affected the experience. This was especially true when I tried hundreds of times to locate the whistling sounds in her throat and could not.

When it comes to estimating the evidence for the supernormal character of the raps I can only say that I incline favorably toward their genuineness, by which I mean their independence of Miss Burton's organism. I do not think that we have evidence for convincing one who did not witness them in all their complicated nature and relations. The certainty that other phenomena which had appeared to be inexplicable normally were "tricks" or subconsciously done by the medium is so much in favor of a similar and undetected explanation of the raps. This argument must be accorded its weight, even tho it is never more than presumptive in any case. But while I feel no inclination to accept the genuineness of the other physical phenomena I appreciate more strongly the evidence for the independence of the raps. The only possible way to discredit this verdict is to insist upon my liability to illusion in the localization of the sounds and to me that argument is without any weight under the circumstances. While I fully recognize the existence of illusions in hearing and also the uncertainty which I often had of the locality of the raps, when they were not distinct, I found that this suspicion of illusion is mostly *a priori* and would vitiate all our judgments of sound, as experiment showed, and hence I do not attach any conclusive weight to it as an objection. It may come well from one who has not witnessed them and



who has to depend upon personal experience for his convictions, but it does not appeal to me very forcibly after my experience with them in this and other cases, especially after experimenting with various parties to test the localization. I tried the experiments with Dr. Hamilton who was himself raising that objection and he was almost invariably correct in that localization of sounds which I made as nearly like the raps as I could and also varied the locus of their occurrence. I tried even to get expectation to determine their location, but it did absolutely nothing to alter the judgment which was correct. I am, therefore, inclined to recognize the objective source of the raps, no matter what agency be supposed to cause them. I am not concerned with their causal explanation, but with the fact that ordinary explanations do not apply, and tho the evidence is not complete or such as to convince one who did not witness them I simply record my pious opinion as better supported by the facts than the contrary one.

## 2. MENTAL PHENOMENA.

The mental phenomena in the case are by far the most interesting part of it. They appear in connection with the raps more or less, which may be considered their borderland, so far as the appearance and representation of them is concerned. While there was no evidence of supernormal intelligence in the answers to questions by raps in some instances the contents of the replies coincided with the information that has been obtained through other psychics and there is no reason to believe that Miss Burton normally knew anything about the subject. It is this that shows the raps to be on the borderland of mental phenomena. But the automatic writing and clairvoyant visions represent this type entirely, tho the physical side of them is a part of the whole. But it has no superficial claim to unusual explanations.

There are several trance personalities in the case. The chief ones are Dan Rulland and Black Cloud. The others are sisters of Mrs. Milton and often her mother. These latter are not important in the production of most of the phenomena. There are other personalities connected with the sing-

ing, but these seem to have no importance for the facts which I now wish to describe.

Dan Rulland claims to have been in the Spanish war and is the principal "guide" of Miss Burton in the phenomena. Black Cloud seems to be essential for certain types of them, but rarely manifests in the automatic writing. Dan is the one who appears in raps and writing more frequently than others. A sister of Mrs. Milton also appears with some frequency in both the writing and the raps, tho in the raps usually only in response to request whether she is present. Her rap is slightly different from Dan's, tho perhaps not more so than impersonation would require. But in any emergency requiring directions or explanations, when they cannot be made clear by raps, Dan resorts to automatic writing, and it is exceedingly interesting to note that he cannot do this at will, so to speak. It requires a little time and preparation. I mean that if some obstacle to a performance arises and if it be necessary to explain the situation or to give us directions how to proceed or what to do, it cannot be done instanter, but a little time has to elapse before Dan can get the conditions necessary for the automatic writing. I never secured this immediately on asking that explanations be given in this way, when perplexed to know. It often took some minutes to get ready for it. Sometimes it was entirely spontaneous and as often showed its relevancy to the situation.

The contents of Dan's writing do not suggest the supernatural from the evidential point of view which we have at present to insist upon. If we knew more about the processes of subliminal agencies and had reason to believe that impersonation was not an admissible fact, or if admitted, a very rare fact, we might have more confidence in his claims. But as it is we have to treat him as we would Phinuit in the Piper case until we know more about the problem. The work of Dan, however, has all the psychological relevancy and fitness of the trance personalities in other psychics and we must at best suspend judgment regarding his real nature, tho interested in the psychological characteristics of his work and compare them with similar instances. In this summary I shall not take the time or pains to summarize his writing. I

may call special attention to it when the exigency demands, but the psychological student must examine the detailed record to get all the meaning attaching to Dan's interference or guidance in the phenomena. All that I require to do here is to remark those instances which at least lie on the borderland of the supernormal, as being especially interesting and important in a case which must be regarded as primarily hysterical.

Of course, it would be expected on any theory that I should have communications from Dr. Hodgson, whether of fraud, secondary personality, or spirits. My relation to him and the work would call that out in almost any case that could possibly know of it, and what purported to come from him must have its value determined by the contents and not by the fact that he is alleged to communicate. Some of the incidents touching on his alleged presence have psychological interest in this verisimilitude to evidence but perhaps nothing else in the present state of the problem. But there is one of unusual interest, and this in spite of its limitations. In my first series of sittings (p. 309) I noticed that the pencil was spontaneously placed between the first and second fingers for the writing. There was a peculiar difficulty in getting hold of it in this way. I watched it with interest and after the writing had been done I asked the question why the pencil was held thus. The reply in automatic writing was: "Because it is my way." I had not intimated anything to suggest the significance of it to me and Miss Burton did not know who was purporting to communicate. Indeed the only evidence I had that it was or might be Dr. Hodgson was just this mode of holding the pencil. It is the way that the pencil is held by Mrs. Piper in her automatic writing. Dr. Hodgson, purporting to write through Mrs. Smead, had there seized the pencil in this same manner and indicated that it was the way it was held in the work of Mrs. Piper. Hence I was prepared to see some significance in the fact here. The later incidents, however, in which this phenomenon was repeated and some interesting psychological play of an instructive type manifested are more important and will bear a fuller statement.

On January 31st, 1910. I was holding a sitting. Dan answered my inquiry whether any of my friends were present or not by vigorous raps. We were waiting to see whether they intended to have the usual séance or give us automatic writing, the expectation being that we should have the latter. Finally Miss Burton's hand reached for the pencil and Dan wrote a request to put out the light. We did so and soon he requested us to shade one of the lights and turn it up which we did. It was shaded by a red handkerchief and we had light enough to see clearly. After a few minutes the hand which held the pencil between the thumb and first finger began motions which I interpreted as an attempt to change its position so that it would be between the first and second fingers, as I have described above. The action of the first and second fingers indicated this. The top of the pencil moved forward and backward, the fingers and thumb fumbling it in a manner hard to describe. But its purpose was conjectured by me and I remained quiet and expectant, not giving the slightest hint that I suspected what was meant. After a considerable struggle it ceased these movements, and the pencil returned to its normal position, and the following message was written:—

"Yes, he will come a little later. This is going to be a little hard for us. It is all so new."

I caught instantly the significance of the pronoun in the third person, as it coincided with my conjecture that the effort was to get the pencil into the position characteristic of Dr. Hodgson. The hand writing is characteristic of Dan.

There was a long pause and then the hand tried the same movements again to get the pencil between the first and second fingers. The effort was more persistent than the first one, but failed and Dan came to the rescue again and wrote:—

"There are three people \* \* \* \* you, and they are all trying to use the pencil at the same time. That is the reason it is so slow. We will get it through and before long."

I expressed my satisfaction and understanding of it, but

gave no hint of what I felt sure it was. A pause followed and then the hand tried it again but without success. Suddenly it returned to its normal position between the thumb and finger and wrote:—

"Yes, I am here. Do you remember how I used to wonder why they couldn't talk just the same when they came back as they did \* \* ? Well I have found out it is not so easy. If I could just say anything I want to I could write a book. H \* \* [apparent attempt to finish the name 'Hodgson.']"

The first person and the characteristic ideas expressed in this, wholly foreign to Dan's style and knowledge showed the justice of my previous inference as to what was coming.

After a pause the effort was renewed to get the pencil between the first and second fingers and after a dramatic and determined struggle succeeded and the hand wrote what might be interpreted as the name: "Pelham," but which is perhaps too doubtful to be assured. It is either that or nothing decipherable. As soon as this was accomplished Miss Burton fell forward on the table in collapse. Then after a pause she resumed her natural position and the effort was renewed, but failed again and suddenly the pencil was thrust back into the position that it usually had and the hand wrote: "There is something holding him back. I believe he is too anxious." There was then some writing by Lenore and presently I was told that "your lady" was present and wanted to speak about the children, but the conditions were not favorable and the sitting came to an end. My wife had purported to communicate a short time previously through Mrs. Chenoweth and had there spent most of her time talking about the children.

After the first time that Miss Burton had held the pencil between the first and second fingers, *a la Piper*, without indicating why I did it, I asked her to write her name. She picked up the pencil between her thumb and finger and wrote the name. I then asked her if she always wrote that way and she replied in the affirmative, and when I asked if she had

ever held the pencil in any other way she replied in the negative.

While I cannot emphasize the evidential character of these messages they have a very suggestive value and represent some things which Miss Burton does not know and which were more characteristic of Dr. Hodgson and his conceptions of the subject than could be attributed to Miss Burton or Dan. They at least represent the right psychological coloring in the messages and our only perplexity would be why we did not get more that was evidential if we could get this much.

At another sitting which we started with an experiment of clairvoyant vision an interesting incident occurred. It came about rather spontaneously. When we sat down for the trance, expecting the table to be opened and moved toward the phonograph as usual, Miss Burton saw a light and I thought it was the light coming in from the outside through the window, but she said it was higher up than that. On my asking for its shape and color she replied that it was oval and yellow. I saw at once what was coming, namely, some pictorial scene and encouraged its continuance. Presently she said it was getting brighter and between long pauses it grew into the several stages of its development. First she saw that it was a face, but some time elapsed before she saw that it was a lady's, then that the lady had blue eyes, when I said I understood it. Then she saw something above her head, but it was some time before she deciphered that it was writing. Then after a considerable struggle she found that it was a name and got first the letter M and soon the other letters making the name Mary. I said I recognized the person. Then she collapsed as if a light had been turned on.

Mary was the name of my wife and her eyes were blue, a light gray blue. It was quite possible for Miss Burton to know that my wife was not living, and if she had seen my "*Science and a Future Life*" she could have known that her eyes were blue. But it is extremely improbable that she knew anything of the kind, tho I shall not urge the incident beyond its psychological interest, as later phenomena of a similar kind will show and they were more provably super-



normal. Personally I am inclined to think the present incident genuine.\*

---

\* As the incidents in connection with the clairvoyant vision are subject to the suspicion of being the result of previous knowledge I deemed it best to inquire of both Mrs. Milton and Miss Burton the extent of their information both general and specific in connection with this problem. I wished to know how much they knew of Spiritualism in general and what reading they had done on the subject. Their statements deserve record whatever the critic may think or say about them. All that I shall say is that there is no reason to question them. I accept them unhesitatingly from my knowledge of their character and the reader can safely assume that the scepticism which he may wish to apply does not begin with the incredibility of their word or a doubt about their normal honesty.

In reply to my inquiries Miss Burton makes the following statements, covering her general acquaintance with spiritualistic literature and her specific knowledge of my affairs and persons related to me.

"I have read nothing in spiritualistic literature at all. I have heard Mrs. Milton and others talk some about the artical [article] in *Everybody's Magazine* on the 'Shadow World' and a little of the Paladino [Palladino] case. But never read anything of the kind myself. I knew nothing of Dr. Hodgson and do not remember of having heard his name before you came here. Have never read any of your books or writings and did not know you had written any until you asked me this same question, the evening before you left the last time, and I knew nothing and had never heard of your wife until one evening when I saw and described a lady and saw the name Mary written out, and you said that it was your wife."

Mrs. Milton answers the same inquiries as follows: "I have never made a study of Spiritualism away from my own table. I have read nothing in the literature of Spiritualism to speak of. I did read a number of the 'Shadow World' edited by Hamlin Garland in *Everybody's Magazine* and thought we had some experiences during the past three years so much better that I asked Dr. Smyth to write up the experiences he had with us. He very kindly did so. But it was never published and I never knew just why. I know since your experiments here that Dr. Hodgson is on the other side of life. I have never seen or read any of his works and did not know that he had passed out until I was impressed with the name Richard. If I remember rightly I got the name Hodgson later. I have never seen or read any of your books or writings in my life. I did not know your wife's name and had heard nothing whatever about her before your experiments. All of one evening the name Mary Ellen kept ringing in my ears and I had all I could do to hold my peace, as I did not want to speak during the experiment. While we were waiting for Ada to come out of the trance I said the names Mary Ellen have been



At a later séance a whole group of these clairvoyant visions occurred and was connected with interesting automatic writing, and one of them was a good case of cross reference. Another had its significance completed by apparent cross reference through Mrs. Chenoweth. I shall summarize the whole incident beginning with what occurred a short time before at a sitting with Mrs. Chenoweth.

There is a personality in the automatic writing of Mrs. Chenoweth who signs the name of Jennie P—— and often calls me Hurricane and herself Whirlwind. Readers of the Thompson case (*Proceedings Am. S. P. R.*, Vol. III) will recall her, tho she appeared only a few times in that record. On the 30th of March I had a sitting with Mrs. Chenoweth and when this Jennie P—— wrote I asked if she would try to give her name Jennie P—— through another light with which I expected soon to experiment, but without indicating in the least where it was or with whom. She promised to do her best.

On April 10th I began the series of experiments with Miss Burton, but no opportunity occurred for systematic mental phenomena, except once or twice, until April 21st, when I asked that the evening be devoted to this. The phenomena began with clairvoyant visions. The first one was a vision of an iron fence which I conjectured, after a minute or two, to be a possible attempt on the part of Dr. Hodgson to give a picture of the iron fence which is on the Common in Boston between his office and private rooms and which he passed every day of his life there. I remained unresponsive except to say that I understood it and presently another vision took

---

ringing in my ears until I could hardly stand it. It seems as tho Mary was your wife's name, but I do not feel that Ellen is her name altho they come together. You said Mary is my wife's name and I understand about Ellen. See what else you can get. I had to hold most of my impressions back, so got nothing more to speak of. However that is how I first learned your wife's name."

This is a perfectly correct account of the Mary Ellen incident and its place and connections may be found in the record (p. 398). Accepting these statements regarding previous knowledge the reader will observe that many incidents obtain considerable value as evidence of the supernatural.

its place, that of a room with a large desk in it, a drop light on the desk and a large comfortable chair with high back and somewhat like a Morris chair. I recognized at once the description of his room, the desk and chair, but not the drop light. I have since ascertained that he had a drop light on the desk. Inquiry for the heating of the room brought a reference to a radiator which I have since learned was wrong.

At this point the clairvoyance was interrupted by automatic writing from Dan, which has its psychological interest as showing a consciousness, subliminal or foreign makes no difference, of other parties at work. Dan wrote:

"There are others in control to-night and they are doing things the best and easiest way for them. I am only in control to keep the medium for them to work through. Dan."

I then let Miss Burton rest a little and the clairvoyance was resumed. She returned to the iron fence and in response to inquiries gave two more incidents that were true, but not evidential, namely the bushes and that there were trees there with seats about them. Whatever value these have will rest on the fact that no mention of a park had been made, tho this might be associated with an iron fence. There was then a sudden jerk and Miss Burton was instantly in a trance. During her clairvoyant visions she is always conscious and on the borderline of the trance. I held her hands and she came out of the trance almost as quickly as she had entered it. Dan then wrote:

"The control is so different and she is so unused to it it makes it hard to keep her conscious all the time. We had better not try to hold her too long. Dan."

After another rest, she saw a shadow and then a man whom she described as not very heavy, and with a high forehead and a beard. Asked the color of the beard she said it was brown. This described Dr. Hodgson's beard, but I would not say that he had a high forehead. She then saw him in the room that had been described as above. This

terminated the visions connected with the person that I conjectured to be Dr. Hodgson.

There followed this a vision of a brick house which suggested my father's work, as he had lived in one and I put some inquiries to corroborate my suspicion. But nothing came of sufficient interest to render it more than possible.

After a pause came the vision of something tall, larger at the base, smaller as it arose and something on top. I could think of nothing but the old chimney which had been mentioned by my brother Charles through Mrs. Piper, tho the suggestion was not clear. A long struggle followed to make it clear, but no progress was made. Finally there was a convulsion or jerk again and Miss Burton was in the trance. The hand reached for the pad and pencil. There was a long and laborious as well as complicated effort to write, as I thought, the pencil after a struggle being held between the first and second fingers. When the light was turned up I saw nothing but a symbol whose meaning I did not understand. It is reproduced in the detailed record (p. 527). As I did not understand it I asked for further explanation. The hand then wrote "Wind M." Mrs. Milton, who had seen the symbol recognized simultaneously with myself that it was intended for "Windmill." When I asked if this was the meaning three raps signified that it was. I did not even then suspect what it was intended for, but thought of the old wind-pump on my father's farm, put there by my sister's husband after my father left it. As he would not naturally refer to it while my sister, who is not living, might do so, I resolved to ascertain by raps whether she had been responsible for the vision. I adopted a course to exclude guessing by first asking if it were others, thinking that, if the answer "No" came before "Yes" the answers would have more cogency. I asked if a man sent it and received a negative reply. Inquiry as to whether it was a woman brought the answer "Yes" (three raps). The question whether it was my mother was answered by "No" (one rap); whether it was my sister, "No" again. I was perplexed and repeated my questions with the same answers and added the inquiry if it was an aunt with a negative answer and if it was a cousin also with a

negative answer. I was puzzled more than ever when it suddenly shot into my mind that it was Whirlwind. I had been looking for Jennie P——. As soon as I thought of Whirlwind I tried the raps again.

(Is it another lady that is not a relative?)

Yes [three raps].

(Have you ever communicated with me before?)

Yes.

(Was it at another light?)

Yes.

(Did you promise to come here?)

Yes.

The identification of Whirlwind was as good as I could get and when Miss Burton recovered normal consciousness she asked if we had moved our positions. On being told that we had not she remarked that she felt turned around, possibly a relic of the effort to get the name Whirlwind through in connection with the windmill wheel.

At a later sitting with Mrs. Chenoweth, Jennie P—— did not think she had been successful.

The probability that the message was an attempt to give the name Whirlwind can be estimated by others as well as by myself and I need not do more than say that it seems to me at least a coincidence with a most interesting possibility of being what it superficially appears to be. The answers by raps, with their uniform correctness in a very complicated situation lend their corroborative support which is of no mean kind, and in lieu of the inability to get the name through in any other than a correct symbolic form we may well pause before we reject it as a casual coincidence.

On a previous evening a vision of a lady that I did not recognize was presented, tho I thought at the time that it was intended for Jennie P——. After its first appearance it was accompanied by an apparition of my wife, as identified by the eyes and the remark of Miss Burton that it was the same lady with the blue eyes that she had seen before, I not having told her in the trance who it was. There was a long

effort to get the name by pictures of the letters. I first got P, and supposed that this was correct, signifying only that I understood it. Then came the letters "ie" when I supposed that the attempt was to give the name Jennie P—— backward. But the attempt got no farther this evening. On a later evening the same picture presented itself and after some difficulty I got P first, then "ie," then "er" and finally "Piper." I saw at once that the original "ie P——" which I had supposed was intended for Jennie P—— started backward was not correct, and as Miss Burton knew about Mrs. Piper well enough I could only treat it as either a conscious attempt to produce a false message—she being normally conscious at the time—or a genuine effort to give some message which did not transcend interpretation by the subconscious. The incidents did not get far enough to prove the super-normal.

This was on April 16th. On April 28th I had a sitting with Mrs. Chenoweth and Dr. Hodgson, purporting to communicate and trying to say something about these experiments with Miss Burton, Mrs. Chenoweth not knowing normally that I had them, spontaneously stated that my wife had been present, with other friends and on my asking a little later if she had tried to help any one replied that she had helped "another lady who was eager to communicate." As Mrs. Chenoweth came out of the trance the following came through the subliminal. It is quoted from the experiment with Mrs. Chenoweth.

Do you know any one by the name of Jessie?

(Yes.)

It is a spirit, a lovely spirit woman I mean.

(With whom is she related?)

I don't know. She is connected with the group, you know. She is with your wife.

Jessie is the name of "Lady Q" who figured in Dr. Hodgson's first Report on the Piper case, but her name was not mentioned there. Mrs. Chenoweth had in her possession the volume of our Proceedings in which the Thompson case and

Prof. James' Report were published and in it this name Jessie is mentioned. Tho we may assume that she had seen it this circumstance would not account for the coincidence of my wife's presence with what occurred with Miss Burton and Dr. Hodgson's statement that my wife had helped a lady who was eager to communicate.

In this same series of experiments Miss Burton saw a vision of a cross. It appeared first in the form of the letter X and she did not recognize it as a cross. Then it appeared with the lines vertical to each other, and after much effort she recognized it as a cross. Afterward the hand tried automatic writing and following a considerable struggle the pencil was thrown down and the light turned up. All that I found on the sheet of paper was a very clearly drawn Greek cross. Miss Burton did not know the possible significance of it.

Thinking that I might try a very simple cross reference through Mrs. Chenoweth I asked Dr. Hodgson to get the cross through her, not indicating who it was more than to say that it was the light I had seen before coming hither. I asked that he get her both to see it and to draw it. On April 28th during the time preceding the trance for automatic writing, Mrs. Chenoweth saw a circle and two lines intersecting at a point forming an angle and cutting the circumference of the circle. I recognized its possible meaning, and the next day before the trance came on she said that the evening before, some hours after the sitting, she saw a circle with a cross in it. She then drew it as it had appeared to her. On the day before, after the attempt had been made to give this sign, I asked Dr. Hodgson if any one had tried to give Imperator's sign, and he replied by the query if I meant the sign of the cross. On my affirmative reply he said that some one had. This might have been a guess and may have influenced subliminally the vision of the afternoon and the statement on the next day, tho this is not a natural process for Mrs. Chenoweth. But this explanation does not apply to the original effort.

There came through Mrs. Chenoweth also a fairly good descriptive account of the case of Miss Burton with a number of incidents that, while they were not cross references, indi-

cated apparently supernormal knowledge of it. These incidents, however, affect the record of Mrs. Chenoweth and have only a contingent interest here.

In the fourth series of experiments there were mental phenomena of some note. I had indicated to Mrs. Milton before coming that I desired to have some of the sittings for mental phenomena. At the first two sittings the results were mixed, some physical and some mental. I held these two sittings purely for preparatory purposes. I obtained nothing evidential in them. But the initials R. H. and W. J. indicated the apparent presence of Dr. Hodgson and Prof. William James. The answers in raps to my inquiries regarding his relation to Dr. Hodgson and P. whom I assumed to be George Pelham, indicated that the W. J. correctly identified himself and P., whatever theory we take to explain the facts. Mrs. Milton and Miss Burton are absolutely ignorant of George Pelham, and had I gotten more than this initial and the association with R. H., I might have been assured that it was intended for Pelham.

In the last four sittings we had only mental phenomena. There were no attempts even at the physical. In the first of these I got the name Henry and, as an old man with a long white beard had been mentioned at an earlier sitting, I conjectured that it was intended to point to Prof. Henry Sidgwick, but the next sitting rather suggests that it was intended for another person. In close connection with it I got the initials W. H. M. and at once thought of Mr. Myers, and asked for more to be assured of my surmise. Later I got the initial F. which was strongly confirmatory of my conjecture. But I got no further in my evidence.

At the next sitting I got Richard H. and F. M. closely associated which confirmed my supposition of the previous evening that F. was associated with W. H. M. and later I got Fred. and then Frederick Myers clearly given proving the case.

Inquiry shows that it is extremely improbable that Miss Burton had ever heard the name. Mrs. Milton had never heard of it and did not know who the man was or what he had done. Mr. Milton knew that a man by the name of



Myers had left a posthumous letter to be given through a medium, having seen the fact in a newspaper, but he had not mentioned the fact to Miss Burton, so that the whole case rests on the probability or improbability that she had casually seen it. From what I know of her lethargic physical and mental temperament I think it improbable that she had seen it, tho possible and hence to be discounted. The manner of getting it, however, was entirely in favor of the hypothesis that it was not previously known.

During the same evening she got the name Newbell and Newball in connection with Dr. Hodgson. I suspected its intended meaning and encouraged its completion without hinting what I thought it was. In a moment she wrote automatically the name "New balld" or "New Bolld," which I took to be a reference to Prof. Newbold who was a warm friend of Dr. Hodgson and figures in records of Dr. Hodgson's communications since his death. It is exceedingly improbable that Miss Burton ever saw anything that would either give her the name in connection with Dr. Hodgson or make her associate it with his name in this way. The publications of the American Society she has not seen and could not see in the public library here, as they are not in it. The English Proceedings are there, but the cards indicating the readers that have consulted them do not show the Miltons or Miss Burton among them. This fact will apply also to the name of Mr. Myers.

At this sitting also I got the name Henry again and on requesting the rest of it I got the initial J. and then in a moment the names "James and Henry," when the hand signified its desire to write and on pencil being given it wrote that the communicator had to get the name through backwards, which showed that the intention was to give the name Henry James.

Inquiry showed that the Milton family had never heard of Henry James and much less of his relation to Prof. William James. I noticed in my inquiries that they thought it was the name of Prof. James himself, they not knowing that William was the Christian name of the latter.

In the next sitting I obtained nothing evidential. The

medium was too lethargic and the efforts were abortive, tho certain incidents were given which may be attempts at cross reference. The psychological play was very interesting and throws light upon the obstacles to communication. I got the name Ellen and supposed that it referred to a relative of mine mentioned through Mrs. Chenoweth and very well identified there. But the last sitting throws possible light upon its meaning.

In this last sitting I again got the name of Mr. Myers and associated with it was the initial E, said to be connected with the initials which were given for him. Also the name Marjorie was closely associated with the same. Now Eveleen is the name of Mr. Myers' wife and it is possible that Ellen is an effort to get Eveleen, as the contents and context suggest. The Marjorie is not intelligible at this time.

The getting of the name Rector was quite remarkable. At the second series of mental experiments I had gotten the letters "R e c" and soon afterward the name Richard, which I interpreted as the correction and completion of "R e c" and so for the name of Richard Hodgson, as known to the Miltons and Miss Burton by this time. Here in the last sitting this was repeated. First she got the three letters "R E C" and after a pause the letters "O R" with something before it which she could not name. In a few moments Mrs. Milton got the letter "T" and said she had gotten the letter, but refused to name it. In a moment Miss Burton excitedly exclaimed "T." As my mind was occupied with another name that I thought she might be trying to give to enable me to be sure what Marjorie meant, since it was the name of one I knew who had died thirty years before, I did not recognize what the letters meant here and so simply said that I had gotten "R e c" "o r" and then "t." The hand then seized the pencil and wrote the words "Recort, Recort, Recotr." On my saying that I understood what was meant and uttering the word "Recort" purposely to see what would take place, Miss Burton seized the pencil and wrote "Rector" which I at once acknowledged.

Inquiry showed that Mrs. Milton had gotten the whole word herself and kept still about it. The letter "t" in her

vision had been thrust into a vacancy in the visual picture of the name. I learned all this after the sitting. Mrs. Milton did not know what the name meant and expressed herself spontaneously that it was a queer name after her reply to my inquiry what it meant to her that she did not know. It seems that she had never known of Stainton Moses and the Emperor group of controls in his and the Piper cases, except that Dr. Hamilton had told her Stainton Moses was a medium. Miss Burton would not know it or have a chance to know it unless Mrs. Milton knew it. The name is thus quite evidential.

It is interesting to note that, as soon as his name had been written, Miss Burton showed fright at apparent motion as if going somewhere. I at once recognized it as an effort to more deeply intrance her, since the sensation coincided with what I have witnessed with Mrs. Chenoweth in the effort of the same group to deepen her trance. I calmed Miss Burton and in a moment there was automatic writing again in which Rector explained that he would have to overcome certain conditions to control her. Later in advising the closing of the experiment he used the capital "L" in the word "Light" which is the uniform practice in the case of Mrs. Piper and the general practice of the same group in the case of Mrs. Chenoweth, both facts not being known to Miss Burton.

Taken altogether the name and its associates, and perhaps also, the name Emperor obtained earlier, are interestingly evidential and if the reader will examine carefully the detailed record he will agree that the circumstances make out a good case for something supernormal.

I left the experiments with Miss Burton on January 19th and was in Boston on the 22d, without any knowledge on the part of Mrs. Chenoweth about my work, to arrange for a sitting with her on the 23d. We may suppose that she might guess that I had been experimenting, but the circumstances made it impossible for her to know just what I had done. The following incidents represent a summary of what occurred through Mrs. Chenoweth at that sitting.

Dr. Hodgson purported to communicate first and referred

very soon to the fact that I had been experimenting elsewhere, tho not at first clearly identifying the case. Soon, however, he identified it by saying that I had been experimenting with a case that was "a sort of a familiar one" and referred to a phase of development in it which he intimated was not writing or speaking. This was true, as it represented clairvoyant visions. A more distinct identification of it was made in the statement that "strangely enough we could only get so far; for there seems to be some action of the mind more like fear than anything else and stages of consciousness of the work and what it involves, which makes barriers for us to overcome."

This is a very accurate account of the facts. The attempts to communicate were often abortive and the medium, Miss Burton, often had a semi-consciousness of what was going on. This is always treated by the Emperor group as an obstacle to their work, a fact not normally known by Mrs. Chenoweth, unless known as a general fact not especially associated with the Emperor work. Miss Burton also manifests subconscious fear at times during the trance and I have observed it to be very marked on occasions, even to the extent of asking us to hold her hands,—complaining that she seems to be floating away.

Dr. Hodgson continued: "What long waits there were. It was rather unusual: for in most cases there will be a semblance of effort and struggle and all that sort of thing. But it was dead silence and still for a time, and then the work was resumed. It is a good light, but rather slow in all things, more phlegmatic than this you know." In the last he refers to Mrs. Chenoweth.

This is remarkably good and accurate. There were wearisome waits and silences in the experiments, which the record cannot make clear. Sometimes they would be ten or fifteen minutes, more frequently five minutes, of waiting between messages. The medium is exceeding lethargic or phlegmatic physically and mentally. None of these things were known to Mrs. Chenoweth.

George Pelham followed Dr. Hodgson, and gave a racy account of my rushing about the country to mediums and to

Boston again, all of which was true, tho perhaps not evidential, and then told a long story of incidents connected with a man said to be connected with Miss Burton whose ideas were not agreeable to the personality mentioned as with him. They were not clearly verifiable unless they refer to the grandfather of Miss Burton, to whom they might apply, tho perhaps as well to two or three others. Then he continued:

"Do you remember hearing a clock?"

(Yes I do.)

We heard that and refer to it as there is never such a sound here."

There was a large clock in the séance room where we held the sittings with Miss Burton and it strikes the half and full hours. It makes a noise that was very annoying and even disturbed Miss Burton in the trance. I had wished that it was not in the room. The communications then continue:

"Do you remember a picture that hung where your eye lighted on it?"

(Yes I do.)

It is a picture of a person I mean. I saw it and the eyes were the sort which follow. Do you know what I mean?

(Yes.)

Then there was a picture, a scene of some sort farther away in the same room. You may not have seen that picture as it was not in your range of vision as you sat there, but I saw it. The room was not as large or as many windows as this, but pleasant and sunny, home like, more like a sitting room with family influence about it you know."

As I sat on the sofa in the sitting room of the family I faced a water color picture of a lady, which is believed by the Milton family to be a spirit painting. Farther away and to the right was a landscape picture which was not in my range of vision. The room was a sunny one and was smaller and with fewer windows than the séance room of Mrs. Chenoweth.

G. P. also referred to the sound of dishes, apparently

meant to apply to this same room. This was not true but would at least apply symbolically to the dining-room where the sittings with Miss Burton were held. He referred also to an older woman who was said to have been present and a "little fearful and scared" but "pleased in the end." This would exactly fit Mrs. Milton. A little later he said that some of the guides of Stainton Moses had been there, after having correctly stated that W. J. [William James], R. H. [Dr. Hodgson], Mr. Myers and less assuredly Jennie P—— had been there. Miss Burton had given the names of Imperator and Rector, but not that of Doctor. There was an intimation that Starlight had tried to get her name through and possibly the S. obtained there may have pointed to her.

These, however, indicated undoubted cross references, tho only a part of the messages given through Miss Burton are repeated here. G. P. referred to a prophecy of my being on a train and so did Miss Burton. The records will give the details. Their general meaning in behalf of supernormal knowledge ought to be clear. What its ultimate explanation may be need not be urged at this stage of the problem.

The important incidents of the case which demand explanation are not easy to summarize, as any attention called to them is likely to be misunderstood, unless the limitations under which they have an interest be first remarked carefully. We must remember that the primary interest of the phenomena does not consist in any claims for their being supernormal. If supernormal phenomena exist in the case at all it is as a surplus or by-product. The first interest which I wished to excite or remark was that of the psychology of the phenomena, not their claims to being supernormal. The points of importance may then be summarized as follows.

1. The normal honesty of Miss Burton is not questioned by any one whatever who knows her intimately enough to pass a rational judgment upon her.
2. The performance of actions in her trance that distinctly simulate those which would be described as fraudulent, if normally done, suggests trance deception and makes it necessary to investigate her mental processes very carefully.
3. The presence of a large number of automatisms and

unconscious acts which do not consist with even subliminal fraud or deception.

4. The performance in her trance of actions which she cannot perform in her normal state, such as expert whistling and levitation of the table, without any previous training whatever in conjuring.

5. The existence of raps which have good evidence of being independent and not produced by normal means even as a hysterical phenomenon.

6. The production of lights under conditions that represent good evidence of their supernormal character, whether as independent lights or as produced by the hands, even though we may feel that the case is not conclusive.

7. The production of at least apparently supernormal mental phenomena of the usual mediumistic type, under fairly, if not conclusively, test conditions.

8. The existence of varying anæsthesias and hyperæsthesias and also amnesias showing the obstacles and limitations to the production of supernormal phenomena.

9. The facts of automatic writing with occasionally apparent evidence of the supernormal.

10. The existence of clairvoyant visions and coincidental phenomena showing some evidence of the supernormal and clear similarity to supernormal phenomena in other psychics.

The primary point of interest, however, in all this is the absence of any and all normal training for such phenomena in conjuring or education, which makes it difficult to explain the facts even though we do not admit any supernormal incidents. There is a chasm to bridge between her normal experience and the trance phenomena, regardless of the question of the supernormal, and that chasm will require unusual explanations. It is often the claim of spiritistic and other theories that enables the average scientific man to evade responsibilities by appeals to subliminal faculties which have no analogies in normal experience and which are taken for perfectly natural explanations, when in fact they are quite as supernormal as the more miraculous suppositions. If the ordinary man would only ask for an explanation of the phenomena by normal experience he would find the sceptic confronted with



a situation which he could not easily meet. The fact that Miss Burton had no education or experience in conjuring tricks and that she can do in her trance things which she cannot do in her normal state demands as much explanation as miracles and it does not solve any problem to talk about subconscious processes, when the "natural" explanation must be based upon the usual standards of education and training. The problem in her case is to explain perfectly natural phenomena by the usual "natural" processes, which can be shown to be wanting in this instance. I say nothing of the raps and lights. They are a vantage ground for producing perplexity after we have accounted for the more "natural" incidents, if we assume that the evidence be strong enough to guarantee them at all. But we may disregard them to concentrate attention upon the discrepancy in ordinary theories which have to explain phenomena involving skill and great dexterity without the ordinary experience which normally accounts for such things. The interest of the case begins there, whether we can extend it beyond that point or not, and hence it offers the possibility of being regarded as a borderland type where the supernormal superposes itself upon a foundation of normal phenomena and of some transcending these without reaching those which are of the recognized supernormal type. It would have sufficed in it never to have gone beyond the facts which cannot be explained by normal experience and education, but fortunately we have fair evidence of phenomena that transcend even the simpler ones with their ordinary perplexities.

### CHAPTER III. CONCLUSION.

In finally estimating the character of these phenomena we have to consider three hypotheses. They are Fraud, Trance Deception, and Spirits. Most people would reduce these to two, namely, Fraud and Spirits, as telepathy and telæsthesia certainly have no place whatever in the case, even if we assume that there is anything supernormal in it. But I have investigated and reported this case primarily for the reason that it so well illustrates the necessity of making a distinction which psychic researchers have been too slow to admit and use. This is the distinction between fraud as that is usually understood and hysterical phenomena which simulate it objectively but which do not carry with them the evidence of the mental states implied by fraud. Fraud as applied to hysterical phenomena is a misnomer and no intelligent person would use it for the purpose. It is a very convenient term for stigmatizing a case so that it cannot be scientifically investigated, but it accomplishes no other purpose and is usually the resource of those who do not investigate carefully.

It is not easy to obtain a single descriptive term for the group of facts which is to be classified here as coming under "Trance Deception." That term is intended to distinguish them from fraud, but it requires some refinement of meaning to prevent the same implications from being associated with it as with the term fraud. Conscious fraud implies moral imputability and indicates that the subject is perfectly conscious of the nature of the act and intends to deceive others. It represents the simplest normal explanation of certain types of facts and permits no serious investigation of them for any important scientific purposes. It is thus a most convenient mode of ostracizing any claims to new scientific interests or even scientific interests of an abnormal kind, and is the easi-

est way to evade responsibility for a more serious view of the facts. But there is a large class of phenomena that are wholly unconscious and whatever their resemblance to the actions that we ascribe to normal intent to deceive, they do not possess the rational motives which conscious fraud has. They must, therefore, be described by some other term. "Trance deception" has all the meaning of fraud except the qualification which the term "trance" is supposed to add to it, and strict logic might remonstrate against the association of two terms which contradict each other when accurately defined. "Deception" implies fraud usually at least, tho it often describes the effect of actions on others without imputing a conscious purpose on the part of the subject acting. It is compatible with errors suggested to a person by mistaking the facts of nature where no conscious motive to deceive is admitted. To this extent its conception is not incompatible with the notion of unconsciousness expressed in the term "trance." But if it be taken to imply conscious purpose on the part of the agent giving rise to the deception by his acts it is convertible with the term fraud. There is no doubt that in hysterical phenomena we have objective acts exactly like those of conscious fraud and it is equally certain that some of them are not accompanied by any consciousness of their character, whatever we may think of others. The consequence is that we have much difficulty in selecting a colorless term for describing the whole class. What we require is a term to indicate both the external characteristics of the phenomena and our ignorance of their motive accompaniment. This term may have to be coined. In the meantime we can only employ the expression "Trance Deception" as the best device for the purpose at present. The term hysteria will be more or less equivalent to this, tho it does not imply any uniformly deceptive nature in the phenomena. It indicates only that they are unconsciously produced, that is unconsciously in the sense that the normal responsibility for them is absent. With this understanding of the distinction between conscious fraud and trance phenomena, we may proceed to the examination of each type of possible causality.

### 1. Conscious Fraud.

I shall not waste any time on this hypothesis. The phenomena have too evidently the credentials of hysteria to tolerate this hypothesis. If the critic wishes to entertain it he must throw doubt on the supposition of hysteria in it, and he can do this only by personal investigation. I do not care what definition you give of hysteria. You may take a broader or a narrower view of it. All that I mean by it here is the fact of physiological and mental conditions that limit or eliminate normal consciousness from the production of the phenomena and so possibly something like somnambulism in the subject of them. I do not require any other conception of it. Hence nothing will be gained by a discussion as to the correct meaning of that term. I take the most general one possible which is merely descriptive of the facts and involves no hypothesis as to their causes. If the facts recorded of the case do not establish that view of them nothing but personal investigation will entitle a man to dispute it in favor of conscious fraud and anything else but such investigation may well be thrown out of court. Academic discussion of it is debarred. You may disbelieve the facts as reported, but you cannot displace them without a similar personal investigation. Those who are familiar with abnormal psychology will recognize at once the indications of hysteria in the phenomena reported. The remarkable anæsthesias and hyperæsthesias are indubitable proof of this, to say nothing of other physiological and mental anomalies in the case. With the presence of these and the accompanying trance conscious fraud is excluded and requires no extended consideration in details.

### 2. Trance Deception.

The existence of what we call a trance in the case is unquestionable. What its nature may be is another matter. Whether it is a wholly physiological condition in which mental actions do not participate at all, or whether it involves all the mental functions except sensibility, are the issues that have to be decided in all investigations of hysterical phenomena and upon the issue depends our ideas of what actually occurs in trances. The layman, saturated with Cartesian

ideas, tho he does not know that they were fixed by that philosopher, assumes that when consciousness is not aware of bodily actions the mind has nothing whatever to do with them and so exempts the subject from all responsibility for them. That he should deny responsibility for them, in the moral sense, is to be conceded as correct. But that he should limit the province of mental functions to normal consciousness, or self-consciousness as he really conceives consciousness, which in normal conditions is accompanied by sensibility, is the moot question. Modern psychology does not accept the dictum of Descartes that consciousness is the only function of mind. It at least assumes a vast area for what it calls subconscious action, while it conceives this action as mental nevertheless, and it intends at the same time to distinguish it from purely neural functions which may be mechanical or chemical, or in some way allied to these.

All this is well known to the intelligent man of to-day, at least as a habit of speech, but it is important to bring it out here for the sake of remarking our ignorance of what the nature and limits of the subconscious are. It is the habit of men to think that we know all about this field of mentality and to use it for solving all possible mysteries of mind, when the fact is that the subconscious is the fundamental mystery itself and demands as much investigation as spirits can require or expect. It defines a field purely in relation to the known which is conscious. Our conception of it is purely negative. It is simply the "not-conscious" and that makes it the negative term in a dichotomous division of phenomena, so that the subconscious may, for all we know, include all the mechanical actions of the body that are not voluntary and that show no resemblances or connection with mental facts of any kind. In other words the whole vast field between the limits of automatic functions and completely teleological actions which are known by the subject normally represents what we define by the subconscious, and we cannot discuss the question of trance deception without recognizing this fact and its complications.

I have already remarked that the use of the term "deception" in this connection may imply purpose on the part of

the subject performing the actions, implying that the illusion of the observer is not wholly his own affair, and that the qualification of the term "trance" is intended to exclude that purpose from the phenomena and to throw the responsibility for the illusion entirely upon the observer. The ordinary supposition is that, where we grant normal honesty at all and have normal consciousness suspended, the phenomena are genuine and not to be interrogated in the same way that we treat normal facts. But we have learned that there is this intermediate field where the phenomena are not what they claim to be and that yet the subject which produces them is not to be impugned for immoral action. This describes the whole field denominated by the terms "trance deception," but it does not settle the more fundamental problem whether the subconscious is automatic or teleological. This is the thing to be decided in determining whether there is any form of intelligent action associated with the phenomena that are not morally censurable and yet are not what they purport to be.

But in making this sharp division between automatic and teleological phenomena in trances I may be doing injustice to their real nature. They may not always or at any time be so clearly distinguished. They may constantly be interfused with each other, the total product being a composite of both of them. This alternative will have to be reckoned with in the final solution of the question, but for the purpose of making certain matters clear we shall press the distinction of function and leave the issue of their association for later consideration.

Accepting the view that "trance deception" implies or is consistent with an intent to deceive observers, even tho the acts be unconscious, we at least question whether they are wholly automatic, and this in spite of the fact that they are not morally censurable. In answering this question, we cannot shirk the instances in which the actions of Miss Burton completely simulate very complicated teleological functions. In saying that she is unconscious we may do nothing more than indicate that she is not normally conscious while intelligence of some kind on her part may be as operative as in

the normal state, even tho certain functional activities of the organism or the mind may be suspended. We have to face the strongest facts in the case and not evade them to emphasize those which are most clearly automatic. I refer, of course, to such instances as being found with the tambourine in her teeth, when under control by the two physicians, and my experiment when the rope was found fastened to the phonograph in the attempt to stop it telekinetically. These are phenomena which we can hardly conceive without supposing some sort of intelligence connected with them. The definite and complicated adjustments to meet a new situation and the conduct of the subject when the real nature of the phenomena was about to be discovered show a knowledge of ways and means which are teleological, to whatever source we ascribe them. Take the last instance and analyze it.

Miss Burton had to take the rope which lay on the table and tie a knot in it and fasten it on the key of the phonograph while I held the right hand. Then she had to attach it to herself in some way, conjecturally under her arm, and then put her left hand with the right in mine, and then alternately pull the rope and relax it to start and stop the machine, while she managed the movements of her body so that I would not suspect her intentions. These were agitation of a kind that seemed to indicate unintelligent and automatic convulsions. Then when the light was called for the violent struggle to free herself, supposedly to release the rope from the key, was a clear indication that the nature of the act was known, whether she knew it or not. The phenomena have all the characteristics of the teleological, whether there was anything like the normal knowledge of the situation or not, and we cannot shirk that interpretation of them in estimating the nature of the case. They are so strong as to suggest to the layman, and perhaps to many others who have been accustomed to regard all unconscious actions as automatic, the doubt about a trance at all. To them the simplest explanation is to suppose Miss Burton normally conscious and only pretending to be unconscious, so that they call the actions plain conscious fraud.

I should add to these instances of apparent fraud some



which seem irresistible to the man of common sense, and perhaps also to most scientists. Take the behavior of Miss Burton in the materialization experiments in which she had actually to adjust herself to different personalities and use different articles for simulating them (p. 253). These are certainly not automatic acts in the sense that they are blind or simple reflexes. They manifest intelligence. It is the same with the adjustments for lifting the table, for tying herself, for concealing her own part in the phenomena, and in some of them, such as the production of lights, previous preparation is suggested. Take the instance observed by Dr. Hamilton in which she actually wiped the substance off her thumb with which she had been producing the lights. Whatever the explanation of this there is knowledge of the situation and means taken to conceal the real cause of the phenomenon. All this is overwhelming in favor of teleological or designed action and the intelligence that goes with it and is implied by describing them as teleological.

The extraordinary adaptations to the various test conditions for taking the photographs are excellent evidence of intelligent and teleological action. The insistence on having the flash light adjusted to her situation rather than that of the experimenters shows acute appreciation of the liabilities.

It is precisely at this juncture of the discussion that it becomes interesting; for there can be no doubt whatever that the condition under which these things occurred was not normal, and this is true after conceding that the same intellectual functions, excluding normal sensibility, are associated with the actions. The disintegration of the normal personality is undoubted, and how far it modifies the entire process, if it does at all in respect to that of being actually aware of the meaning of the actions, is not known. But that those are absent which determine the normal consciousness of the situation and its meaning there can be no doubt whatever in the study of the case. It cannot be judged by the standards which determine the nature and responsibility of the normal adjustments of the will. The dissociation of the mental functions may be, and actually is, such as to completely change the situation for the ethical judgment, and every judgment

affecting a normal interpretation of the phenomena. The anæsthesia which was tested in many instances excluded sensibility from the complex which is denominated by the term consciousness, as usually understood. How it alters the situation and what the nature of it cannot be determined by mere conjecture. But if we can discover in our introspective experience analogous situations we may get a glimpse of what really occurs.

The phenomena of dreams are the best illustration of what I mean. They indicate the suspense of sensory functions and the retention of a partial consciousness, enough to establish a connection between the normal and this semi-automatic state. They represent a condition in which a measure of introspection is possible. I say a measure because this is not present at the time of the dream in any form for us usually to discover the real nature of the action in relation to the normal state. It is only memory, after we recover normal consciousness, that enables us to compare the two conditions and to declare the dream experience to be unreal, using normal experience as our criterion of reality. In the dream life we take things to be quite as real as they would seem to normal experience, and the illusion is usually discoverable only by the mnemonic connection of this life with the normal. Apparently every function of consciousness is active except the sensory and it is that which determines for our normal life the nature of reality, and the absence of it may alter our intellectual perspective sufficiently to make us do things in the dream life with the full belief in their reality and honesty that characterizes an intelligent and honest person normally, and yet the acts objectively be identical with those of normal trickery and fraud.

Let me take an analogous case in my own experience which occurred yesterday, while I was engaged in writing this report. I lay down to take a nap and the children were playing some game which involved two opposing sides. I went to sleep and dreamed that I was in a battle. I was watching the opposite side and presently I saw a man rise on an elevation, like a table rock—I am in the mountains—and aim his gun at some one on our side. I at once thought

of a sharpshooter, but I could not recall the word for this as I endeavored with all my might to tell my comrades of the situation. I tried and tried to recall it. Presently I noticed the man gliding through the air with his gun pointed at some one among us and he turned into a flying machine with two guns in it, one pointed ahead and one toward the rear. In a few moments I awakened and the vision which I had taken for reality was gone as a dream. There are three things in this experience of some interest. The first is the apparent aphasia in the recall of the word sharpshooter. I could not get this word until I had awakened and it was the inability to recall it to my dream comrades that probably awakened me in the consternation which it caused. The second fact was the partial dissociation of functions in the dream. Touch seemed wholly insensible and suspended. Vision was partly active, just enough for an idea to take the sensory and hallucinatory form which subconscious productions assume. Hearing was also apparently partially active, in that I have to assume some stimulus appreciable from the actions and voices of the children playing on the outside of the house. But whatever we assume of it the sensations or stimuli were not appreciable as normal stimuli of the same kind are. The subconscious functions dominated sufficiently to distort the impression, and if we assume that hearing was more asleep than sight we may suppose that it was the subjective idea aroused by association with the notion of a contest outside that made vision the dominant factor in the result. The introspective process was limited to the visual and the other senses had no power to intrude their corrective influence into the product, so that I was incapable of rightly interpreting anything except the visual image and its more natural associates. Possibly the word "sharpshooter" was an auditory percept to me and so not associable with the visual unless hearing were more active in the complex process. This would explain my failure to recall it in the stress of the occasion. The auditory concept was dissociated by the degree of anæsthesia from the visual one and could not be reproduced. The third fact of interest is the sense of reality that pervaded the experience, a sense that characterizes nearly all of our

dreams, the only exception being those very rare cases when the effect of a normal interpretation of a previous dream is carried into the dream life and applied there, with effects often much more puzzling than in normal life. But usually the dream images and objects are perfectly real to us and our actions are directed toward them accordingly. We are not attempting to deceive any one in what we say or do. We suppose, and act upon the supposition, that the object of consciousness is real and if there is any "deception" it is subjective and not objective. The external observer must not assign to the dreamer a motive of which he is incapable. He cannot throw upon the dreamer the responsibility for an error which is only of his own judgment alone. The "deception" for the external observer is objective, not subjective. The dreamer honestly interprets the situation as it appears and can do nothing else, since the inhibitions of sensory life are excluded. There is nothing to restrain the automatic functions of the mind from applying their categories to a set of facts which are as real for the mind as in the normal state, minus the association of other sensations which make the reality complex and objective where it is simple and subjective only for the dream life. But there can be no legitimate accusation of fraud in this life. It is too real and honest, to use that expression, for us to judge it by the standards of normal life.\*

---

\*The sudden transformation of the sharpshooter into an aeroplane has an interesting explanation involving a retinal phenomenon and an act of association.

In phosphenes and *muscae volitantes* I have always observed that there is more or less apparent motion across the field of vision. Investigation, however, always showed that the motion was of the eye as a whole due to the effort of attention to bring them into the fovea or central point of vision. The phosphenes and *muscae volitantes* remained really stationary. I have found the same phenomenon with after-images when the eyes are closed.

Now supposing this influence of attention on the sharpshooter to have given rise to the usual ocular motion and the association of this motion with the fact that the "sharpshooter" was high in the air the most natural image to be brought into consciousness would be the aeroplane which would become the substitute for the sharpshooter.

In this process one may well understand how the distortion of messages

In regarding the dream life and trances as "unconscious" we are apt to misconceive their real nature. The term "unconscious" is equivocal when it comes to naming the dream life. Its etymological import is that no mental state of intelligence exists in sleep or the suspension of normal consciousness. But the fact is that it applies to the whole field beyond the normally introspective consciousness, and in this way includes both the entire suspension of mental activity and the partial suspension of it in the dream life. In the dream and trance life every single mental function may be active except the normal memory of the action and the introspective knowledge of a sensory or physical world. The dream life is a world of hallucinations and completely simulates the real world of normal sense perception, except in the chaotic and crazy quilt character of the mental stream. All the interpreting functions of the intellect may be as operative as in the normal state, but they are not subject to the inhibitions and corrections which sensory stimuli supply. Sensory anæsthesia in the dream life and the trance exclude these corrective influences and the internal functions are left to their own free will to create and to interpret according to their natural disposition, but without the necessity of adjustment to an external world. Everything is or appears to be real, simply for the lack of anything to determine its unreality. The subject of these phenomena is deceived and without any means of detecting the deception. There may be no knowledge of the source of the impressions that possess the mind. They may be internal and subjective or they may be external and objective, and when objective they may be physical or spiritual. All will depend upon the condition of the subject and the rapport involved. All that it can do is to inspect, not introspect, the phenomena. It cannot separate itself, to use an expression of the psychologist, from its experiences and itself. It can only take them as real and make no such analysis as the normal consciousness does. In fact it is probable that the experience is of one sense only with the application of all the mental and functional categories of

---

might arise and exist to such an extent as to modify them beyond all identification.

reality, without the ability or reasons to test the situation by other sensory experiences. The result is that the only distinction between the dream life or trance and the normal consciousness is just this dissociation of sensory and introspective action from the general functions of the mind, the subject not being usually in a position to escape or discover his own illusions.

Even the collapse at discovery of "trickery" and the constant resumption of the performance, as if nothing had happened to reveal the nature of the facts, has its analogy in the dream life. Nightmares are an exact duplication of them. At the crisis of a nightmare we are awakened by some stimulus and then go to sleep again only to resume the same senseless performance from which a protecting stimulus had revived us. We seem to have no memory of the situation and simply repeat the events over and over again as often as we are awakened, experience counting for nothing in the mad course of the delirium.

The sudden collapse or fall of the trumpet at discovery of Miss Burton in any act most naturally suggests conscious or subconscious knowledge of the situation and hence attempted deception of some kind. It is just the kind of thing which a discovered criminal would do. But the prompt renewal of the experiments shows that it is not conscious deception of any kind, whatever we may think of the subconscious, whose intelligence must be very meager to take up the same course after discovery. But the fact is that the collapse or fall of the trumpet may be only the same phenomenon as the extreme sensibility to white light. Miss Burton will collapse under white light in any situation whatever during the trance, as readily when nothing is being attempted, or even when recovering normal consciousness, as when at a performance. It is not a sign of discovery but of a shock. Tactual stimuli at certain stages of the dream life or in certain conditions of zonal anæsthesias and hyperæsthesias may produce the same effect on the mind as the shock of light. Miss Burton has often manifested fright or slight shock when semi-conscious at the touch of a hand whether of her own or that of others, and hence her sensorium may yield to any surprise interrupt-



ing the dream life of the trance as it may arouse a sort of self-consciousness that does not pervade the trance.

Now if we will just suppose that Miss Burton's trance is at least analogous to the dream life we shall clearly understand what may go on without imputing either conscious or unconscious fraud to it. It may be, indeed, that the trance is absolutely identical with the dream life in all but the motor situation. In our normal sleep we are limp and flaccid. The muscles are relaxed and exhibit no natural tonicity whatever. In the ordinary trance they show the natural tonicity and this may vary all the way between the slightest tension to that of catalepsy. The mental functions may remain exactly as in sleep. Miss Burton, as we know, shows all degrees of these; now lying with her head on the table like a piece of flesh, again showing the normal tension of the muscles and sitting as she would normally, and then again in the most rigid state of catalepsy. Her normal memory is suspended equally in all of them.

Now to start with, Miss Burton is anæsthetic, as we have remarked above. This establishes a certain measure of dissociation at the outset. That is, we cannot assume that the normal conceptions of her life are correctly interpreted during the trance, any more than in our ordinary dreams and deliria. The variations of this anæsthesia are the most interesting feature of her condition, to say nothing of the variation in her motor functions. They introduce an exceedingly complex situation. If the anæsthesia were a fixed type, as it seems to be in the trances of Mrs. Piper, Mrs. Smead and Mrs. Chenoweth, we might know or ascertain just what to expect in the retention of intellectual functions during the trance. But the sensory situation varies in perfectly incalculable ways. The dissociation of functions otherwise may vary to the same extent. Hence the trance, or trances, since they may be plural where they seem to be the same state, may manifest all sorts of perplexing contradictions from time to time without being ordinarily criticizable for it. At times they may be purely automatic and at others affected or governed by the retention of intellectual functions interpreting facts within the somnambulic state while the automatic are



acting on the supposition of their reality, deceiving the subject more than the observer. It might take years of investigation with the case to determine the exact relation of the various sensory and intellectual functions in the changes of condition and personality involved.

Let us examine the various situations created by the varying anæsthesias. An instance of the incipient stage was the occasion when Miss Burton felt that her hands were heavy and immovable. She was becoming gradually anæsthetic and this condition had not reached the stage of complete insensibility. The fact that she often became instantly anæsthetic with a convulsion of the arms or body shows that she may have passed this stage when we came to test her arms and body, tho not reaching total anæsthesia, as was usually the case with this convulsion. The exact status of the intellectual functions and their dissociation from the sensory was not determinable and it would be extremely difficult to decide this by any rough methods such as were accessible to us at the time.

Then there was that unstable condition which characterized the clairvoyant visions. They were often interrupted by the sudden onslaught of the trance and complete anæsthesia. But during them Miss Burton was evidently partly anæsthetic, as she seemed sometimes dizzy and more or less torpid, or even affected in speech, tho these were not exactly determinable. But that she was on the borderline of the trance and anæsthesia was proved by the ease and readiness with which these came on at an emergency in the work. But she was normally conscious and capable of observing visually the pictures which came to her. That she was partly anæsthetic was indicated by the amount of amnesia that was often apparent. She could not always name the picture or use the word which described it. Her apperceptive functions seemed lethargic or inhibited more or less. There were long periods of complete silence and she had to be prodded to get from her a description of the phenomena, tho she often did this spontaneously without such a stimulus. The stimulus, however, which this prodding gave seemed to be the one which kept her conscious or in that balanced state which enabled

her to use the vocal organs at all, and no doubt there were times when these were completely paralyzed, so to speak, or perhaps better, aphasic, the dissociation which I have remarked in my dream characterizing her condition so that she could not recall easily and at once the words that would describe and interpret objectively the vision which was clear to her visual consciousness.

One of the best illustrations of this situation is the experience of Miss Burton in getting the cross reference involved in the name Whirlwind for Jennie P—. She got the picture of the windmill clearly enough as the sequel showed but could not name it. She has always shown a decidedly aphasic condition in connection with her trances. Black Cloud is the only one that has seemed able to utter a word and with him it is exceedingly difficult. The exceptions to this are those in which she gives directions through the trumpet regarding certain features of the phenomena. But usually she is decidedly aphasic and shows when she does utter words or sentences that it is with great difficulty. Now in this picture of the windmill she could not recall what it was, precisely as I could not recall the word "sharp-shooter" in my dream. But when asked to write it she could still not get the word and had to choose the wheel as a symbol of the whole; this being the characteristic by which to properly identify the object. When this was unintelligible she was able to write the word "Wind m" and to signify by three raps that our interpretation of it as "windmill" was correct. The raps, like the writing, were motor phenomena, so that the motor functions were less interrupted by the trance than were the auditory and vocal which, as we know in deaf muteness, usually go together. The dissociation of the auditory imagery from the visual prevented recalling and uttering the name of the object of vision and only the motor functions could be called into service to make the case clear. The same thing was more or less apparent in the slowness with which she recognized the cross in her visions. This occurred in the pictures of it during my experiments, as well as the one with Dr. Hamilton (pp. 494, 533). Even when the cross appeared in the correct form she did not at once recognize it as having

this meaning. The aphasic condition prevented this appreciation. But the windmill incident is the best illustration and shows how the dissociation is affected by the disturbances set into action by anæsthesia, and perhaps regulated by the amount of it.

We do not know how it is distributed through the various senses in the alterations of it observed in the case and until we know how these alterations take place we shall never fully appreciate the alterations of the personality and the mental complexes involved in the production of the phenomena which are observed by the spectators. But to those who are familiar with hysterical complications it would have been quite apparent that the ability to have clairvoyant visions, to interpret them, to vocally describe them, etc., all varied with fluctuating mental conditions which, whether instigated from within or without, would naturally be as much like our dream life as anæsthetic conditions would tend to make them. The illusions about the phenomena might be as great for the subject as for him who accepted their alleged nature without investigation and then found them "trickery."

Normally Miss Burton believes in herself, tho this belief is not a matter of direct experience. It is only the result of being told what she does. But does she subconsciously believe in herself? Does she really think subconsciously, as we do in our dreams, that she does not perform the actions herself which are alleged to be supernormal?

The struggle to free herself when about to be caught in having tied the rope to the phonograph would seem to indicate with perfect clearness that she knew well enough the fraudulent character of the act. All else in the affair is consistent with the dream interpretation, but it would seem that this is not, that she knew how it would be interpreted and strove to eradicate the evidences of it.

Now the significance of this incident is not to be evaded or escaped. No apology can be made for it from the standpoint of merely subliminal consciousness unless a possibility to be mentioned may explain the fact. It remains as a clear evidence of mental appreciation of the nature of the act. But it is not the only incident in the case in which this fact is

apparent. The explanation and confession by Dan involved the same consciousness. The constant collapse of Miss Burton when she was discovered at any time using the trumpet or performing an act herself, and this occurred many times within my own observation, all these indicated a subconscious appreciation of what went on.

But in this *mêlée* of dissociations and syntheses of functions a very interesting possibility arises. Miss Burton might be conscious at times of the subjective effect of her own action without being conscious of having initiated it. She might be conscious of sympathetic and synchronous motor action, as it actually takes place in hysterics of this kind, as I have remarked it in Mrs. Blake and others in Eusapia Palladino, and so conscious of the interpretation which an observer would put on this associated fact, while she was not conscious of having herself automatically or otherwise initiated the action. Whether such a situation be probable or not is another question. I am only indicating that, in this complication of anæsthesias and dissociation and abnormal syntheses such a phenomenon must remain for us entirely possible and not to be rejected without evidence.

The first step in this direction in the phenomena of Miss Burton was the performances of actions which she did not know she initiated, but of which she was sensible of the effect. Dr. Hamilton and Dr. Smyth reported an instance, already mentioned, in which Miss Burton, in the light, put her own hand to her face and was startled by the touch, having been unconscious of her motor action but conscious of the touch. I witnessed and mentioned in the record (p. 456) a similar phenomenon, in which Miss Burton put her hand to her face and thought some one else had touched her. The same conditions existed when she saw lights which she probably made with her own hand. In this latter case she was not tactually conscious of the action of her hand but only visually conscious of the effect. These were instances when only partial anæsthesia existed.

But I observed and record some other and very interesting phenomena which require analysis here because of the possibilities that may have accompanied them. In the per-

formances of whistling and singing I had always to limit my control to the right hand and this did not avail to settle questions connected with the left hand of Miss Burton. She knew both from my request to hold both hands and from spontaneous offers on her part to give me control of both that it was necessary to understand what the left hand did, and this knowledge was wholly subliminal. In the course of the experiments she apparently bethought herself of the device of having me control the left hand. At least this was the inference I drew from the phenomena that I have to describe.

Now when I held the right hand it exhibited all the evidence of anæsthesia. There was no resentment against my touch. But if I came into contact with the left hand it was quick to react, as if sensitive or hypersensitive. This same phenomenon was observable if I happened to touch the left hand or the trumpet during a performance of whistling or singing. As the conditions for producing different phenomena required variations of these relations between anæsthesia and hyperæsthesia, or even normal æsthesia for certain parts of the body the manifestations seemed to have adjusted themselves to these needs. To enable any phenomena to occur at all the right side of the body which I controlled seemed to become anæsthetic while the left side retained its sensibility. Apparently the subconscious discovered this fact and in order to enable me to control the left side bethought itself of the device of making the right side hyperæsthetic or ordinarily sensitive and the left side anæsthetic, and then offering me the left hand to control. This process was practiced for some time before I discovered the apparent object of it and took the hint. The left hand was offered to me spontaneously, after frequent alternating hemi-anæsthesias, which I remarked in the detailed record (p. 511) and also attempts to whistle and sing with that under control while the right hand was free and yet where it could not produce the phenomena if it tried, besides being sensitive and furnishing the supposed conditions for their production.

It seemed that some partial sensibility was necessary for the performance and this sensibility seemed to be hyperæsthesia, which is quite as consistent with a trance as an-

æsthesia, and in fact may itself determine a peculiar kind of trance whose nature and functions, not excluding normal anæsthesia, as well as its limits, are more difficult to determine than those produced by anæsthesia, because the tests cannot avoid being like those which determine normal sensation. In this alternation of anæsthesias, with alternation of hyperæsthesias, partial anæsthesias, suspension and restoration of reflective mental states, and perhaps differences between the senses in their anæsthesias or degrees of it, we have a chance for possibilities that are hardly calculable. Suppose that the motor sense were anæsthetic and the tactual sense sensitive, the hysterical peculiarities of the case causing their dissociation of function, we should have a condition approximating the one which would explain such phenomena as we have described as suggesting, if not proving, a knowledge of the acts done without knowing that they had been subjectively initiated. But suppose the dissociation took the form of complete tactual and motor anæsthesia, with retention of reflective consciousness as to what was actually going on subjectively, but not aware of its bodily reflection as an automatic product we might well imagine the resistance to discovery, which, to the subject, would not distinguish between the mental and the bodily act of which latter she was not conscious. That is, she might be conscious of the mental side of the phenomena and not conscious of the bodily and thus imagine that the bodily did not take place, but know that any revelation of the situation would implicate herself in it which was not assumed in the exclusion of the bodily action from the case. Something like this at least was suggested, if not clearly illustrated in the instance when Miss Burton collapsed when Dan admitted that the medium did the things when out of the body. Her mental state seemed to be the same that it was when she was discovered doing the "tricks." Apparently her mental state is of one that is conscious of being in some way related to the acts but believing that she is not responsible for them, that is not the initiator of them, tho conscious of being implicated. This may be the subliminal reflex of her normal belief that it is spirits that are concerned,



while motor anæsthesia prevents her from discovering that she is the agent.

A more complete understanding of the situation will depend upon the question whether she is automatic or echolalic and to what extent she is this. The interfusion of reflective and automatic functions might well take place, especially if the trance is not a deep one. Hence we must ascertain whether she is automatic or not, and if she is, to what extent she is so.

There are three situations in her phenomena when the facts prove her automatism. (1) There is the convulsive movements of the hands which we discovered to indicate a change of personality or control. (2) There is the convulsive movements which she herself struggles to control under test conditions, these involuntary movements tending to make her do the things herself. (3) There is the performance of acts herself which she observes without being conscious of their initiation.

The convulsive movements indicating a change of personality or control were very interesting in this respect. They never accompanied the performance of a "trick," but preceded it or were accompanied by an otherwise lethargic and perfectly passive state. They were never initiative of anything and were not followed up by any attempts immediately to do anything. They were merely premonitory. Whenever I examined her left hand which was free usually in connection with the convulsion of the right I found that this left hand was either passive or that it acted in the same way. When I held both the convulsion in both was simultaneous, showing that the automatic impulse was simultaneous for both sides of the body. Often I freed the right hand purposely when the convulsion came, assuming that it wanted to be free to perform a "trick." This is the interpretation which the average sceptic chooses to make of such movements in these phenomena. But absolutely, invariably and without exception I found that the freedom was desired simply to avoid contact with my hand and her two hands would be found lying on the table or in her lap or on her breast folded together. Not a single attempt was made to do



anything with them when the freedom was granted. All convulsive movement would cease as soon as I surrendered contact and Miss Burton would assume a lethargic condition and remain thus for a time when she might actually offer control of her right or both hands before attempting to do something. There was not the slightest effort to cheat either consciously or unconsciously and the convulsive movements which simulated this interpretation of her motives were simply automatic ones not easily explainable, unless we suppose that the hyperæsthesia accompanying the process of performance stimulated automatisms, not necessarily for freedom, but possibly as reflexes of the conditions involved in the phenomena. If any connection with the phenomenal results, other than premonitory, had been discovered we might have suspected their teleological character, but they had no connections except such as have to be regarded as automatic, there being no excuse for them but this.

One of the most interesting of these phenomena was the second type. It had the double value of showing an apparent consciousness of what the tendency was and a deliberate effort to prevent it. The fact tends to show the interfusion of reflective and automatic functions. Many times, possibly even a hundred, I held both hands, whether in response to her own voluntary offer or my request, and the convulsive movements which would naturally be interpreted as attempts to get free to do the things herself would be deliberately inhibited by a determined struggle of her own. When her hands would be threatened with freedom or appeared to get this from my purposive relaxation of control to test her she would clasp them together and sometimes thrust them over toward me appealingly for control and hold them tight together. This I observed so often that there could be no doubt about the intention, whether the purpose on her part were conscious or unconscious. It was certainly unconscious in the normal sense, as she was in a trance and anæsthetic. But the convulsions were not voluntarily initiated, as she would interfere to prevent them and to preserve the control necessary to make the phenomena tests. The convulsions also ex-

tended to her entire body usually, so that their automatic character was sustained by this sympathetic action.

I hardly need emphasize the instances of performing actions herself of which she was not conscious, except of the tactual sensations which were caused by them. They are as distinct and as interesting proof of automatisms as one could wish or obtain. I have mentioned the instances of it, and there were probably many which did not excite interest enough on her part to remark them.

The next point is the extent of this automatism. This should have been determined by more adequate means than we had at command. Laboratory methods and apparatus were necessary for this, but no one in this country is willing to supply the means for such investigations and we had to rest content, as in all our experiments, with the roughest and merely extemporized means for the work. These were the study of multiplied and varied types of phenomena in the case with a determination of their unity and analysis. These, in spite of their difficulties, gave fairly good evidence of a limited automatism and at the same time of a light trance, at least when anything occurred, the deeper trance probably being accompanied by lethargy or catalepsy, now one and now the other. But the deliberate effort to restrain automatic tendencies to gain the freedom of the hands and the consciousness of effects automatically produced prove both the limits of the automatism, or echolalic conditions, and the existence of a reflective consciousness not altogether released from control or knowledge of bodily phenomena. They show rather decisively the possibility, if not a strong probability, that the mind was aware of its own events, tho not aware of the motor cause of them, and hence may resent discovery of the sympathetic automatisms which, while they betray the complicity of the organism do not prove the source of them that many an observer would infer, tho they actually had a subjective source. What is needed is a trance condition in which a reflective consciousness of the subliminal type did not appear and in which the automatic functions are more free from its inhibitions or participation. Apparently when that occurs we have either lethargy or catalepsy, either of

which excludes motor action and the only possibility of phenomena of any kind, whatever their source, is the light trance which is an interfusion of the conscious and the automatic, or a borderland condition. In the condition necessary for visions this is very apparent. In these experiments a new phenomenon developed. She began to hear voices, but she always thought it was we that were speaking. She did not think that the voices were transcendental. This implied that she was not altogether normally conscious, but held in a transitional state in which she was normal enough to interpret the apparent sounds as ours and yet entranced enough to get effects which she could not get in a perfectly normal state. She was simply in a borderland condition. The reflective consciousness was interfused with sensory automatism. This is most probably the combination of functions in the physical phenomena, save that the automatism is motor instead of sensory.

In so far as the phenomena were automatic we could not ascribe "trance deception" conceived as an intentional effort to play tricks on the observer, and in so far as this automatism may be supposed to have been the cause of the phenomena the consciousness, on the part of the subject, that her organism was the agency in them does not alter the judgment that we have to form of them as subjective on the one hand and unintentional on the other, at least in so far as comparison with normal phenomena of the kind is concerned. The anæsthesia would make it appear that they were not personal acts, conceived as bodily ones, and the psychic might be the person really deceived as to their character, just as in our dreams the subject takes the facts for a reality which they are not, and wishing the illusion to be taken as this reality might resent the discovery of its actual nature.

That the phenomena were not what they superficially appear or are claimed to be is certain, at least in most instances. The same is true of all instances, if we assume that psychological and physiological automatisms must accompany the genuinely supernormal. But that part of the "deception" must be laid to the observer who accepts the facts on authority or at their superficial value. The subjective

source of this illusion may not be what we should naturally and rightly suppose, were we dealing with a normal person.

If we can speak of subliminal honesty at all we may call attention to the facts which point to it. I do not think we can speak of either subliminal honesty or dishonesty in strict parlance, as moral attributes, good or bad, cannot be strictly applied to automatons. But the presence of subliminal and conscious—that is deliberate—efforts to prevent “trickery,” or subjective causation of the phenomena, is a circumstance of some interest in determining the measure of personal responsibility for the effects. I shall therefore speak of subliminal honesty to describe the facts for the sake of clearness and for bringing out the limitations of the idea of subconscious “trickery” in the case.

The convulsive movements, at first interpreted as a desire to free the hands for performing the alleged telekinetic acts, as soon as I found that they had no causal relation to any such effects, suggested that the subconscious was not trying to play tricks of any kind and that the interpretation making it so was very superficial. The facts displaced the supposition of conscious or other attempt at fraud, as they had too systematic a relation to other conditions to tolerate any such hypothesis. They were provably associated with wholly different phenomena. They proved that the most natural interpretation was groundless and at once assigned limits to such theories. But the discovery of apparently deliberate efforts to prevent the automatisms that simulated fraud were better evidence still of an “honest” state of mind. This exhibited itself in hundreds of instances, if I do not exaggerate the number of cases in which I observed the phenomenon. There was the apparent consciousness of the bodily participation in the phenomena and the determined endeavor to prevent it and to have them really telekinetic. This was perfectly transparent in many an effort to whistle or to start and stop the phonograph without any accompaniment of bodily participation. Miss Burton actually exhausted herself at times in the effort to perform the feats “honestly” in the trance. She was not at all averse to control and resisted her own automatic efforts to obtain release from it. All this was

evidence, at least so far as it went, in favor of "honesty" on the part of the trance condition or the subconscious. This was at the same time more or less evidence of a reflective knowledge of what was going on and an indication of the lightness of the trance. But the resistance to actions which would be interpreted as making her bodily responsible for the phenomena was so much testimony to the identity between the normal and subliminal honesty of the psychic and limits the right to accept the simplest explanation of the phenomena, which would assume nothing abnormal in the physiological and psychological conditions of the situation. The physiological after-effects of a *séance* which often involved a headache or even disqualification for anything the next day were facts implying the same general moral characteristics, inasmuch as they were organic results of abnormal conditions which do not occur in normally conscious fraud, tho they might in the subliminal or subconscious type, not because it is subconscious, but because it entails automatic conditions which cannot control the after-effects. In any case, whatever conception we take of the supposed "trance deception" it is complicated with "honest" endeavors to prevent it. There is an undoubted contradiction between that view of it which interprets the facts as like normal trickery and the actual mental states which tried to prevent such performances. It brings the case into the field to which it belongs, namely, that of hysteria and its chief interest for the psychologist lies there, even tho we actually found some supernormal phenomena associated with it. The existence of anæsthesia and automatism decides this fact and whatever the superficial resemblances to what is known as conscious fraud and however identical the objective facts may be with the results of conscious fraud, they cannot be interpreted by those categories, and if we use the phrase "trance deception" at all it must be with the knowledge of trance conditions, with their associated anæsthesia and automatism, and hence recognize that the phenomena have a profound psychological interest, which will be all the greater if we ascertained that they were the necessary stages in the development of mediumship in some cases.

There was one phenomenon of great significance in this estimation of the real mental conditions associated with the phenomena and which strongly supports the idea of essential "honesty" of the subliminal. It was the quick resumption of the experiments, with all the normal interest and ardor after exposure. In many cases Miss Burton was told in her normal state what she had done in the trance. Finally she got used to the knowledge and was not disconcerted by it apparently, whatever internal disappointment she may have felt. But she was always subconsciously aware of exposure and would collapse, either in catalepsy or in a flabby and lethargic condition after it, to lie on the table for a time. But she would recover in a few minutes and proceed to continue the performance as if nothing had happened, as if no exposure had taken place. This occurred with wearisome repetition in the case of whistling and singing. The slightest effort to ascertain whether the left hand was holding the trumpet or not; the slightest touch of the trumpet or the left shoulder or of any other part of the body than the right hand and arm which I was holding and which was apparently perfectly anæsthetic, would result in an abrupt cessation of the whistling, the trumpet would fall quickly on the table and Miss Burton would collapse in the same way. It would be only a minute before she would resume experiments to repeat the same thing. Exposure never wholly disconcerted her subliminal. Whatever consciousness we suppose of the acts done seemed to be totally forgotten the moment the collapse came. The amnesia was apparently as remarkable as her anæsthesias. Dishonesty does not display courage and perseverance of this kind. It may stand one exposure, but it will not stand constant revelation of its actions. Even the catalepsy that followed a severe but abortive struggle to perform some physical phenomenon, when it disappeared, would be followed by an immediate attempt to renew the efforts for success. There was no disheartening the subconscious, the exposure so frequently should have shown its inability to deceive us.

Some phenomena of considerable interest, psychologically at least, were those indicating modifications of the pulse and



the enlargement of the gland in the throat. There was no concealment of the fact that the medium was a factor in the result and the phenomenon was to account for the power to produce the appearance and disappearance of a gland right under the touch of the sitters. The appearance of a mole illustrating the personal identity of a deceased person was also a remarkable phenomenon considering that it was not an independent phenomenon. Both these incidents represent most interesting characteristics of hysteria, phenomena that we should have to regard either as extemporized without any special education or practice or the result of transcendental control, somewhat like the reproduction of various motor equivalents of past life. On either hypothesis they do not seem to be independent phenomena.

Another and perhaps similar phenomenon was the registering of muscular power with the dynamometer. Tho the experimenters had to allow for possible moving of the index by the hand they think this improbable, as neither she nor Mrs. Milton knew what the instrument was for or what the experiments were for. Besides the natural difference between masculine and feminine personalities would hardly occur to the medium in the way it did. But in the trance her strength was twice as great as in the normal state, and feminine personalities, representing spirits, showed the natural inferiority to masculine spirits, tho duplicating what is known with the living. There was no pretense of independent phenomena, but only of motor action in the medium's organism, really or ostensibly makes no difference which to us, as it was her hand that was used. The special personality whose grip was to be measured was suggested by the experimenters and the result accorded with what should be expected of the personalities involved, the masculine being the stronger. Miss Burton normally knows nothing of the facts in such phenomena and the primary object was to see if the trance showed greater muscular power than the normal. It did so and may throw light upon muscular feats during the trance which would seem impossible to Miss Burton's normal strength.

The primary difficulties in judging the case in this respect grow out of the real or apparent inconsistencies in various



stages of the work. In the cases of Mrs. Piper, Mrs. Smead, Mrs. Chenoweth and others there is a comparatively quick approach of the trance and a little subliminal play, and when the trance comes on it is stable for the whole time. With Miss Burton it is not so. The trance may come on gradually or suddenly and it is not at all stable when it arrives. This may be due to the various types of phenomena produced, tho there is no present proof of this view. But whatever the cause, the condition varies in a remarkable manner and undoubtedly varies in some cases to suit the type of phenomena exhibited. But the unbalanced physiological and psychological conditions afford the evidence for remarkable manifestations of hysteria, and their consistence with this conception of them is the one proof that the case cannot be adjudged according to the ordinary standards either of the normal or the supernormal. I may therefore do well to summarize all the incidents which prove the existence of this hysteria and tend to exempt the subject of them from unfair judgment of the causes in the phenomena, while they exhibit an unusual interest for psychology in this and similar cases of mediumship. It is certain that the Palladino case should have been approached through a determination of the existence and limits of hysteria in her phenomena, and the present case is useful for the light that it throws upon that demand. Let me, then, summarize the incidents proving the hysteria and the various instabilities of the physical and mental functions with their relations to the different phenomena manifested.

1. There was evidence of dulled sensibility in the clairvoyant visions which occurred in an apparently normal condition of mind. There was no careful investigation for anæsthesia in this, as I wished not to disturb the visions. But the instability of consciousness on all such occasions, as indicated by the abrupt precipitation of the trance very frequently, in which there was complete anæsthesia, suggests that it too must have been on the borderline.

2. There was frequent complaint of dizziness in connection with the visions and the experiments for them.

3. The complaint of weariness usually in connection with

the purely mental phenomena, whether of automatic writing or visions, whenever a long period was devoted to this type of experiment. This fatigue was not felt or complained of in the physical phenomena, except when the experiments were failures under test conditions or after a severe struggle to produce genuine phenomena, and then the weariness was apparently a different kind. The lassitude that followed such efforts showed that the fatigue was apparently motor. What the fatigue was in the mental phenomena was not apparent, but there was no accompanying effort manifest to suggest or explain it.

4. There was occasionally a feeling of bodily heaviness in connection with the appearance of partial anæsthesia and trance.

5. There were occasional stomachic disturbances associated with the trances, tho not seriously nauseating.

6. There were frequent headaches after séances and exhaustion the next day, more noticeable than immediately following the séances.

7. On occasions when the consequences of a séance were disagreeable and headaches occurred it was customary to use suggestion to help remove the effects. I succeeded two or three times easily in removing them by suggestion. Often Mrs. Milton did this and resorted to what she called "mental treatment" to effect the result. Her primary resource was to make the suggestion and to get the subject into a sleep or trance and to let her rest off the condition.

8. During the performances there were frequent "treatments" of the arms and body of the psychic by herself, either in rubbing them with the trumpet or with her own hands. This was said by Mrs. Milton to be "magnetizing" the medium. Whatever the term means it was an associate of the preparation for the next phenomenon and had been a spontaneous action in the development of the psychic.

9. There was frequent folding of the hands in front of the breast in the attitude of prayer. Whether it meant the assumption of a religious condition of mind cannot be known. The girl is not a religious type. Mrs. Milton spontaneously remarked to me that this phenomenon developed for the first

time after I had come into contact with the case, and it coincides with the apparent presence of the Emperor group with their religious character.

10. The psychic frequently holds her hands together on her face, or on her breast, or in her lap folded together, or lying on the table in a passive condition, when you would imagine that she was preparing some "trick." This was always a period of lethargy.

11. The resentment of the Black Cloud personality to contact of any one and long periods of lethargy when he was in possession.

12. The exorcism of Black Cloud by holding both hands of Miss Burton firmly was accompanied by very violent muscular struggles and required unusual effort to prevent her escape.

13. The non-resistance of Miss Burton to contact when others were in possession was as characteristic as the resistance of Black Cloud to the same fact. This was especially noticeable in the automatic writing where it was frequently tested and not the slightest resistance manifested itself.

14. Very striking was the manner of awakening her from the trance by holding both hands on such occasions in the clairvoyance as she suddenly fell into it. This was done under the directions of the trance personality Dan, and tho there was the resemblance to the exorcism of Black Cloud in this act of holding the hands there was no other similarity. She would not become normal in exorcizing him, but in the cases just mentioned she became normal and there was not the slightest struggle on her part. The emergence was as abrupt as the fall into it.

15. There was a sort of motor paralysis of the vocal organs during the usual trances, especially noticeable in the Black Cloud control when he made an attempt to speak. This was not so noticeable during other controls when speech seemed easier in giving directions through the trumpet, and even here, tho there was no apparent stammering or paralysis, the condition for it was not an apparent part of the usual trance, as no response to questions could be made without

some lapse of time. It required a special effort, and was transient and difficult.

16. There were frequent fits of lethargy, apparently for rest, when nothing would occur, not even raps, which were the easiest responses to outside inquiries or the expression of internal wants. These fits were not always of the same type. Often they were a completely relaxed motor condition when the psychic would lie with her head on the table as flabby as a piece of meat, or fall upon my shoulder with her arms dropping down beside her body and I had to hold her from falling off the chair. Then there were periods of ordinary muscular tonicity but inactivity of all kinds when the hands might be held together on her face or breast, etc. The cataleptic pauses were apparently not for rest, but a consequence of some shock and the resting had to be done after recovery from them.

17. There was never any allusion by the controls to the catalepsy which usually came after some severe struggle to accomplish a phenomenon or in consequence of discovery and exposure of "trickery."

18. The sudden occurrence of anæsthesia in connection with the motor reflexes remarked in the hands and often similar reflexes in recovering from the trance.

19. Partial anæsthesia adjusted to the type of phenomena desired, apparently because of the loss of perfect motor control in lethargic conditions and the presence of it only in connection with the physical phenomena. It was adjusted also to the need of vocal action which would not occur easily during the usual trances.

20. Alternating hemi-anæsthesias and their adjustment to the need of controlling the left instead of the right hand to make the phenomena appear genuine.

21. The tactual hyperæsthesia of the Black Cloud control and apparently also whenever performing some "trick." This latter is not an assured fact, tho there were signs of it independently of the discovery of her own action at the time.

22. Visual hyperæsthesia to light in all conditions of her work, tho capable of more or less controlling it, and if warned, was always easily controlled when the light was red.

23. Variations of total and partial anæsthesia to fit the type of phenomena required, or illustrating the dissociation of functions involved in the phenomena.

24. Variations of successful and abortive attempts at the production of physical or other phenomena. For instance, the dropping of the trumpet and cessation of whistling or singing, or collapse in the efforts, when there was no reason whatever from the point of view of either conscious or unconscious "fraud" for the failure. This often occurred when there were no test conditions applied.

25. Frequent voluntary offer of control for tests, such as holding of both hands, throat or feet, and struggle to sustain the control.

26. Dissociation of motor functions, so that vigorous actions in one part of the body did not betray any motor reactions in other parts. For instance, she might arise to her feet and the one holding her hand would not detect any sympathetic motion.

27. Dissociation of motor and sensory functions so that subjective and subjectively initiated actions seemed to be foreign and objectively produced. There was a peculiarly complicated illustration of this situation when the anæsthesia was partial, one sense remaining æsthetic and another anæsthetic, while motor functions were dissociated, that is, automatic and dissociated from the sensory. In the total anæsthesia the observer had to discover the real phenomena and the dissociation; in the partial anæsthesia she discovered the phenomena, but not their origin or the dissociation of functions.

28. The existence of groans in connection with whistling or singing, and especially when there was a severe struggle to produce certain phenomena. There were also groans of a very marked character during a collapse due to the influence of light, if accidentally turned up.

29. Repugnance usually to plaintive and religious music and often distinct sobbing before such music could be stopped. In her normal state she is very fond of this kind of music.

30. Raps in dissent or approval of the music wanted or

not wanted. Instead of raps at times, she often stopped the phonograph or turned the music.

31. The absence of automatic suggestibility, except during the transition to normal consciousness, when I several times cured headaches. In the trance, suggestibility never manifested itself, except in the sense that she would accept the request to do certain things, but not at once. It was apparently an intellectual, not an automatic affair.

32. Variations of muscular strength with the use of the dynamometer between the normal state and the trance and also between different personalities in the trance, so that masculine personalities showed the natural superiority to feminine, tho this phenomenon has to be accepted with qualifications explained by the experimenters.

33. The variations of pulse and temperature apparently due to auto-suggestion or hetero-suggestion.

34. The complicated psychological conditions necessary for seeing pictures. She could not remain either in a normal or a trance condition. She had to be half the one and half the other with partial anæsthesia.

35. Perspiration under test conditions that did not manifest itself when phenomena occurred without test conditions.

36. The groans simultaneous with whistling and singing and which were so light as not to be heard unless the ear was near the throat.

37. The difference of effect between the expected and unexpected occurrence of the light, tho this difference was usually slight.

38. Apparent dissociation between muscular or motor sensations and the ordinary sensory sensations.

39. The automatic convulsions associated with changes of personality and but for a collective study of them might be suspected as efforts to escape control.

40. The existence of amnesia between the several sub-conscious personalities as well as between them and the normal consciousness.

41. The simultaneous differences of opinion regarding a phenomenon between different personalities, one orally affirming what the other denied by raps, or *vice versa*.

The only alternative to this hypothesis of the "honesty" of the subconscious, as indicated by our psychological analysis of the case, is that another personality is connected with the physical phenomena that are apparently successful than the personality which manifested the evidence of "honesty." The explanation which I have advanced assumes, no doubt, that the personality manifesting the automatisms which showed an "honest" effort to produce supernormal phenomena was more or less the same as that which was connected with the phenomena that are manifestly done by the organism of Miss Burton. As it is very clear in the case that Miss Burton manifests a variety of hysterical personalities and that there is a change of personality, or if not of personality, of a kind that suggests it, whenever there is an automatic jerk of the hands, it is conceivable that the personality manifesting evidences of "honesty" is not the same as that manifesting evidence of "trickery." There is no evidence whatever that it is a fact and I do not know that there is any evidence of its not being a fact. It may not be seriously entertainable for that reason, but it is conceivable and would require for its determination apparatus which we did not have and experiments which we could not perform. We can, however, examine what such an hypothesis would involve.

One thing is certain. This other personality, the assumed tricky personality, would involve intelligence; for that is clearly indicated by the nature of the phenomena. Whether ethical predicates can be applied to it is the question. If the trance and anæsthesia are admitted with it it cannot be abused for normally conscious fraud. We have to give up the anæsthesia to apply the idea of true trickery to it; for where anæsthesia exists the subject is not aware of its own body and so will automatically reproduce its dream states without any knowledge that they are physical events at all. Now it happens that in some conditions, especially in the Black Cloud personality, who seems to be closely related to the performance of the apparently independent physical phenomena, there seems to be some hyperæsthesia, more particularly of one side of the body, and we may suppose that this personality knows what it is doing physically and en-



deavors to conceal its actions. But it is clear that the normal Miss Burton has no knowledge of this personality and that there is complete amnesia of it. That, however, makes no special difference. It is apparent that the other personalities are not implicated in anything that manifest simulation of trickery, so that it will fall only on that of Black Cloud as the suspected one. He is not manifest in the conditions when there is clear effort to perform the phenomena honestly.

If there be any automatism associated with this intelligence it implies non-responsibility for trickery of any reproachable kind and probably also entire ignorance of the physical side of the phenomena. In automatism we assume that the subject is not the conscious initiator of the actions observed, and hence that the actions are the automatic and echolalic result either of the dream states going on in the subject's mind or the same result of mental states transferred from the outside. In both cases there is no moral imputability to the entranced subject, whatever we may choose to hold regarding any other supposed subject.

There are just four possibilities or hypotheses in regard to this assumed personality. (1) Its physical manifestations may be automatic resultants of outside agencies acting upon the entranced mental condition. (2) They may be the resultant of associated echolalia or automatism in connection with the medium's own dream state. (3) They may be the resultant of conscious action on the part of outside intelligence with both anæsthesia and amnesia on the part of the entranced subject. (4) They may be the resultant of an amnesic but not anæsthetic consciousness on the part of Miss Burton, representing the personality of Black Cloud.

The first three of these conceptions exempt Miss Burton from all suspicion for even subconscious dishonesty, and the third is the only one that suggests suspicion of it, and this only on the supposition that there is some sort of æsthetic condition analogous to the normal. To recognize hyperæsthesia does not decide the matter; for hyperæsthesia in a trance may be convertible with normal anæsthesia and is so named only because of the motor reactions accompanying it which resemble those of normal life. They may, however,

be quite as unconscious in any sense in which that term can suggest trickery as anæsthesia. Subliminal hyperæsthesia does not necessarily imply any such conditions as we assume in normal sensibility. It is but a term to denote the similarity of the reactions in the subconscious to those in the normal life, and for all that we know they may be a special type of automatic reactions which are not even subconscious in the sense of intelligent. For instance Mrs. Piper's echolalia does not manifest itself in all conditions of her trance. That extreme sensibility to stimuli manifests itself only at rare intervals and has many of the characteristics of the phenomena with which we are in the habit of associating hyperæsthesia. The echolalia is purely automatic but is a reaction just like that of sensibility when it is reflex.

It is then by no means certain that the real or apparent hyperæsthesia of the Black Cloud personality implicates it in anything like the consciousness of normal life in its actions. Whatever intelligence we ascribe to it may be the intelligence either of an outside agency, in which Miss Burton is not involved, or of a personality of Miss Burton's own which has no discoverable resemblance to any of the others normal or subliminal. That this is conceivable I have conceded and I would not dispute the right to make it an hypothesis which any other theory would have to supplant to make out its own claims. But there is no evidence either for or against it as a fact, and it would require conditions and apparatus not at our command to investigate such a personality. But it is the only supposition that can be made to escape the conclusion which the observed facts show in favor of subliminal honesty, so far as either honesty or dishonesty can be considered at all in connection with hysterical conditions.

### 3. The Spiritistic Hypothesis.

After the description of the case as one of hysteria and after explaining most of the phenomena by hysterical automatism it will seem preposterous even to mention a spiritistic hypothesis in connection with it. Scientific men might wonder why it is given any consideration as an alternative at all.

But I shall boldly affirm that such a view involves a misunderstanding of the nature of that theory and its application. I do not hesitate to treat both the ordinary scientific man or sceptic and layman with contempt in regard to it. I am quite ready to challenge him in his own field and to take up the cudgels for such a view where it would even seem preposterous to the most purblind and obstinate sceptic, if I thought there was the slightest excuse for it. I do not have any respect whatever for most people's conception of either the affirmative or negative attitude toward this hypothesis. This does not mean that I feel any obligation or even desire to defend it in this case. But it does mean that I regard the ordinary conception of it so foolish that I am quite willing even to be the devil's advocate for the sake of an argument and for exposing the ignorance and prejudices of the average man in the discussion of this subject. So I simply throw down the gauntlet and challenge any man to deny the possibility of applying a spiritistic theory to explain the facts. Whether it be a fact that such an explanation actually applies is another and different question, and may come under notice as such. But after such phenomena as the Society for Psychological Research has collected for the past twenty-five years illustrating the claims of spirit agency as an hypothesis, that possibility is guaranteed, whether the fact be proved or not.

This is perhaps a rather audacious introduction to a calm and critical consideration of the facts in reference to such a view, but I have deemed it best to defy the ordinary sceptic in a situation in which he usually assumes with impunity that he can win his victory without a strike. I am not going to be frightened by the threat of ostracism or contempt on the part of respectable orthodoxy in either science or philosophy. I prefer the opposition of these classes to their respect. There is no sane path to the truth in these matters except outside their camp as well as that of the layman, both having the same false conception of the problem and differing only in their attitudes toward it, one being sceptical and the other credulous, and both equally erroneous.

Now if the reader will just smile at this little exhibition of spleen which seems necessary in order to get at the real

subject, he will understand much better what is to come. I quite agree that a spiritistic hypothesis, in the ordinary conception of what its manifestations should be, would not have any standing in the presence of such phenomena, and it is not my intention to maintain that it has an application unless we first understand the conditions under which it can ever receive any consideration at all. But it has the right to discussion even in regard to its own claims and much more on the basis which a correct conception of it may require. The Piper and similar cases which the Society has investigated so carefully exhibit the supernormal in the form which completely justifies the spiritistic hypothesis, even if they do not prove it, so that even superficial claims are entitled to consideration. The chief interest of their phenomena, however, is the medium through which the supernormal manifests itself. This is a system of subconscious processes which serve both as the means of communication with the dead and as the means of limiting and obstructing it. The degree of success in penetrating this veil and escaping the influence which it exercises on the character of the messages coming through varies with different psychics. In some there is but the barest evidence of anything getting through and in others it is apparently so pure that one has to wonder whether the coloring effect of these subconscious processes exists at all and its character and extent have to be sought in obscure evidence to prove it, just as in others the evidence of the supernormal seems just as obscure. Indeed this modifying influence of subliminal influences is so clear that it makes no difference what theory we adopt of the supernormal. It is as evident on the telepathic as the spiritistic hypothesis, and is a necessary part of the general explanation of the phenomena. It seems to the present writer quite as important a part of the hypothesis as anything that is supposed to explain the supernormal and so much a part of it that the whole will not be made intelligible without it. In fact, I do not think the spiritistic theory is intelligible without subordinating its phenomena, that is, the supernormal incidents suggesting and justifying it, to a definite understanding of the part played by the subconscious processes and contributions

to the sum total of the facts. I have dwelt upon this fact more than upon any other one in the last *Proceedings* (Am. S. P. R., Vol. IV, pp. 201-387).

It should be apparent to every intelligent psychologist that the subconscious coloring is the fundamental question to be made intelligible in understanding the limitations of the phenomena. Accepting this as a fact we should inevitably expect many cases of mediumship to be more or less abortive. As the transmission of the supernormal depends upon the various conditions that determine the character of the medium we must expect cases in which nothing gets through and others in which a small amount penetrates. Between the best and the worst we should have cases which might be explained by the action of spirits while they afforded no evidence of them in the primary stage of the problem. That is the situation in all other scientific investigations. One group of facts proves an hypothesis and another, while not proving it, are so amenable to its explanatory agency that we do not hesitate to admit it there as the best interpretation of them. For instance, the articulated adjustments and movements of the planets in the solar system, adjusted to the density, etc., of the various bodies and the known or assumed attraction of the earth for falling objects, may prove universal gravitation, but the movement of a comet would not prove it tho the coincidence of that movement in its orbit with the law determined for planetary bodies would be explained by gravitation. So if the Piper and similar phenomena prove a spiritistic hypothesis the occurrence of facts which are manifestly allied to them and of subconscious processes identical with those cases would open the way to an explanatory application of spirits to the borderland instances, not as determining their contents, but as affecting processes which might not otherwise act at all.

The fundamental criticism that has to be directed against the average Philistine is that he comes to the investigation of the problem with the same false conception of scientific duties as the layman, and assuming the latter's conception of the problem and the facts, he differs from him only in the attitude he takes toward them. The layman expects and de-

mands the plainest miracles, exceptions to the known laws of human experience, and will be content with nothing else. While the laws of "nature," or better, the usual laws of human sensory experience, are not fast and hard laws they are sufficiently uniform to make the scientific man pause before he admits exceptions readily. For this he is not to be condemned. All of us are obliged to respect this curtailment of hasty belief. But the scientific man has no right to assume that the layman's conception of the problem and the facts is the correct one. He might have intelligence enough to see that there are often situations in which most important scientific phenomena are present that by no means confirm the layman's expectations or accounts and yet may actually suggest or prove the layman's explanation. They may not be the clear cut facts which would prove it easily, but they may be of the form that illustrates the law of continuity in nature which is the scientist's bulwark, and if he would only have the patience to investigate as patiently as the problem demands he might find an alternative between the claims of the layman and the dogmatism of his more bigotted and intolerant colleagues.

If the investigation of psychic phenomena has proved anything it has proved the participation of the subject of them in their character. This is in accordance with the laws of normal psychology. We assume or believe that all sense perception represents subjective determination of the nature of the reactions against sensory stimuli. Sensations of color, taste, smell, sound and touch are not supposed to be like the object that gives rise to them. The same stimulus on different sensoria elicits different reactions. The same blow on the head may make us hear sounds or see lights. This is the doctrine of specific nerve energies and means that the apparent object perceived is determined in its phenomenal character by the way the mind or sensory system reacts upon the stimulus and not specifically by the nature of the stimulus. The same things seem to hold in all our abnormal experiences. In dreams a tactual stimulus may evoke a visual result instead of the normal tactual sensation. In telepathy the form of the telepathic phantasm often represents, entirely



the subjective activity and product of the percipient. For instance, the chair thought of by the agent may not be the chair seen or drawn by the percipient, but the chair with which the percipient is familiar. The subject is a primary factor in the phenomenon. The laws and limitations of its action have to be regarded in the result of its experiences and perceptions, and the same general law of the external world holds good for the supernormal as the normal, for the supposedly spiritual as for the supposedly material. The subject affects the character of the phenomenal resultant of external influence.

Mediumistic phenomena are not likely to be an exception to this, and if anything is made clear by experience it is that they are influenced by this law of the subject's part in the phenomena purporting to have a foreign source. The ordinary man's conception of the case is that it does not and that independent sources must have independent results. But this is to deny or question the existence of mediums altogether. The fact of a medium or agent associated with the result implicates that subject in the phenomena, and uniform experience shows overwhelming evidence of mediumistic influence in the result of such phenomena. In automatic writing, whatever the source of the contents, the writing partakes, in my own experience uniformly, of the medium's characteristic. It is the same with automatic speech. It should be the same in physical phenomena, and it certainly is in those of impersonation, no matter whether the phenomena are supernormal or not. Impersonation, whether accompanied by hysteria or not, in its very nature, involves the complicity of the impersonator and must be subject to his limitations. We cannot demand that the phenomena shall be independent of the medium and at the same time a result of her own participation. The extent of that influence will depend upon circumstances about which we know little or nothing as yet. But we shall never ascertain what it is until the scientific man can be induced to investigate more patiently and with wholly different assumptions and interests than those he now indulges so confidently and so contemptuously. We cannot assume that the ordinary layman's



demands shall be satisfied, and then deny their legitimacy without admitting the existence of something of interest, and perhaps of importance to science, even tho it be nothing but the constant illusions of the public.

When the provably supernormal, whether of the telepathic or spiritistic character, is found to be pervaded by subjective contributions of the mind, conscious or unconscious makes no difference, we might expect the remarkable phenomena as reported by laymen, to be affected in the same way and then to investigate them, not by methods determined by false conceptions of what is to be expected, but by methods involving the expectation that the subject of phenomena is involved in the genuine as well as in others, in the supernormal as well as in the spurious.

The Burton case is an instructive one in this view of the phenomena. All that I have shown in both the summary and the detailed record illustrates this. I wish only to emphasize it here on the theoretical side. We found the claims for independent physical phenomena unsustained by the evidence, unless in the instances of the raps and lights. But in the mental phenomena which have fair claims to involving something supernormal her participation in the results as well as her limitations were most transparent. The same should be expected in her physical phenomena, even when they are supposed to be influenced by transcendental agencies. Her impersonations are good illustrations of this participation. She and her foster mother were endeavoring to develop "materializations" and the naive conception which they took of the phenomena shows that they had very elastic ideas of what "materialization" is. The exigencies of *proof* in such phenomena, as well as the term, have made us all conceive the phenomena as independent of the medium. But here it was admitted by all that had experimented with the case that the lady was implicated in the phenomena and yet they excluded fraud and were converted to spiritistic interpretations. I do not care whether they were right or wrong in their conceptions of the problem, of the phenomena and of their explanation. All that I am noticing is the admitted implication of the medium in them. This we have seen was

done in the case of the lights also. The "materializations" were in reality impersonations, and it makes no difference whether we treat them as frauds, as hysterical phenomena or as incipient transfigurations induced by outside agencies, possibly instigating hallucinations in the spectators more than effecting actual modifications of the medium.

I have the record of a case which is instructive in this connection. It was one that was generally regarded by intelligent men as a very common professional fraud. It was one that represented "materialization." The newspaper editors, that all-wise craft whose real knowledge is in an inverse ratio to their self-confidence, resolved on an exposure. They sent a reporter and a policeman to make a raid. At the proper time the lights were turned up and the medium seized with the usual result. The case was denounced as the usual simple fraud and the spectators the usual dupes. But I have the written statement of one of the spectators, a man who had known the woman for thirty years, was an intimate friend of hers, a constant attendant at the séances, and who never for one moment regarded the phenomena as anything but impersonations. He was under no illusions whatever as to their nature. He differed from the woman herself in characterizing the phenomena. He says "her guides chose to call them materializations," and she herself thought they were this. He was present the night of this raid, and reports that when the "form" was seized one of the raiders put his hand on the cabinet to prevent the woman from getting into it. He, my informant, ordered him to let it open and he had to obey. My informant looked in and the cabinet was empty and no clothes in it. The medium was allowed to go in and in a few minutes he looked in and she was there in the trance with her ordinary clothes on. He had his own view for years confirmed by the incident. The woman was a hysteric and was able to produce phenomena that had much psychological interest, but she was the principal physical factor in them. However, hysteric that she was, she had to accept the judgment of the ignorant investigators. When ever you get a newspaper reporter, a policeman, a complacent college professor and a juggler to investigating abnor-

mal mental and physical phenomena you may expect what the verdict will be, especially if the public's standards of both fraudulent and genuine phenomena are to be accepted. Pierre Janet saw this long ago (*Proceedings*, Am. S. P. R., Vol. I, p. 53). This class make really scientific investigation impossible or disreputable. They prefer to remain in aristocratic ignorance to taking part either in scientific or humanitarian work. It was that type of investigator that took grease with him into the séance of Miss Burton and had Drs. Hamilton and Smyth and myself proceeded with such methods we should have missed as much as we should have violated scientific methods and ethics. We shall make no progress until we have eliminated the demands of the laymen and the bigotted dogmatism of the academic votary.

In studying the relation of such a case as that of Miss Burton to the spiritistic theory we should have to take into account several points of view as well as the actual facts of the record. We certainly could not rely upon any undefined conception of the theory for either applying it to such facts or for measuring these facts as evidence. We must first understand on what conditions such an hypothesis can be applicable at all. The layman simply imagines that any phenomenon which does not yield readily to the application of conscious fraud and which seems unusual justifies the supposition of spirits. The sceptic at the opposite extreme, assuming the same idea of spirits and the possibility of their direct action, if they exist, easily dissolves the facts into either conscious fraud or histrionic action of the subconscious. Neither of them once thinks that it is just as possible that the whole affair is a mixture of spiritistic and subconscious agency. What the Piper and other cases clearly show is that the latter alternative is the only one that can have any standing in any instance and that our business is to study the phenomena with this alternative always in view. Of course such cases as Miss Burton are worthless in the first inception of spiritistic theories either for its evidence or for the determination of the nature and limits of foreign influences. But when that hypothesis has once been defined by appropriate evidence it is legitimate to study such phenomena as this

record affords in the light of it and either extend the operations of such hypotheses and limit those of the subconscious or *vice versa*.

The questions both of the evidence and of the explanatory powers of a spiritistic, as well as of any other hypothesis, are relative. They depend upon the status of human knowledge and the prejudices to be overcome. When both the nature of spirits and the character or method of their manifesting themselves are not understood it must be extremely difficult to admit them into any place in the problem of explaining the supernormal. But when they have once been admitted in any form their functions may not appear so objectionable. The standard of evidence in the first stage of the problem must be that of personal identity, and this criterion will vary in nature and application with different people. All phenomena not conforming to this standard will have to be set aside and in doing this we may adopt the policy of using subconscious functions of the medium for explaining them, tho this assumes that we know more about such functions than is actually the fact. We simply eliminate as subconscious all that does not meet the demands which the ultra sceptic sets up, tho neither he nor we may have the right to assume any such enlargement of the subliminal as we actually make. But when we have once been forced to admit into any case the existence of foreign agencies it is then our duty to examine into the nature and limits of their methods in making themselves manifest. We cannot assume with impunity that a device for raising the standard of evidence is an explanation of the facts which had been excluded by that standard. The explanatory function of a theory may extend far beyond the facts which prove it and its application at all.

What I have just said will have to be admitted by any one who understands scientific method and it applies to spiritistic as well as other hypotheses, whether the sceptic likes to admit it or not. When the severest evidential criterion has been satisfied in proving the right of the theory to exist it will devolve on us to make intelligible the various conditions which limited the proof and which determine the extent of the theory's application. When we find that all the cases in

which the same kind of evidence presents itself exhibit also the accompaniment of hysteria and its various complications and that these may be either the necessary precondition of the supernormal in any form or a frequent concomitant of it we may find that the area of spiritistic associations is much larger than the first conception of its evidence would suggest. Histrionic and other phenomena, if accompanied invariably by automatic conditions, might be as invariably accompanied by foreign stimuli, even tho the contents reflected nothing but the functions of the subject's subliminal or even normal experience and action.

I repeat then that the position here taken is that the spiritistic theory has first to have its scientific claims admitted before it can receive attention in such a case as that of Miss Burton. There is no primary evidential standard satisfied by it. It is only when we assume that the phenomena as a whole contain similar elements to those with which spirits are undoubtedly associated that we are justified in studying their relation to this case. We may then find in it some very valuable evidence of the psychological conditions which determine the possibility of transmitting messages at all, and this part of the hypothesis is quite as important as any other aspect of it.

But the direct issue cannot even then be faced without further analysis and limitations. The principal phenomena in this instance claim to be physical and the mental phenomena, until I came on the stage, were insignificant. The automatic writing had been practiced but only in subordination to the plans for the physical phenomena. There was no attempt to satisfy what must be the first demand for evidence of the existence of spirits, namely, supernormal facts in proof of personal identity and excluding the supposed application of telepathy. The one and only claim in support of spirits was the inexplicable nature of the physical phenomena. We had the old standard of spiritualistic phenomena, namely, physical miracles and that of a type which at once associated them with the bungling frauds of the conjurer. This situation presents no attractions or fascinations for the scientific man, even tho it may happen to contain a grain of truth in it

and that truth only hysteria. Until we have shown that spirits exist and can defy the usual laws of physical action there can be no evidence in such phenomena that they either exist or act in that manner. There is a perplexing interest in the perpetual association of such real or alleged phenomena with hysterical conditions and the dramatization of spirit action, but in the present stage of the problem their occurrence is not satisfactory evidence and can never be until we have changed our feelings about subconscious phenomena.

The first consequence of this position is that, even accepting the phenomena at their superficial value they are not evidence of spiritistic theories. Physical phenomena pure and simple can never be, unless we have first proved that all irregularities of this kind in the physical world must be due to such agencies. But we are very far from the right to assume any such view. But the worst objection to the application of spirits to the case, from the side of physical phenomena and assuming the present necessary standard of that evidence, is that the facts do not seem to be what they claim to be. Tho the investigators, including myself, have not succeeded in proving a natural explanation of certain physical phenomena, we did prove that certain of the most plausible ones were perfectly simple physical "tricks," tho associated with hysteria. This establishes a presumption of what occurs where we were ignorant of any explanation and the more we investigated the more the claims for the supernormal in the physical disappeared. The evidence, thus, as far as it goes, is against the genuineness of the physical phenomena as inexplicable, tho genuine as hysterical facts. As evidence, therefore, of a spiritistic hypothesis the case is preposterous, that is, as evidence considering the only standard which we can accept at present, which is not only a psychological as opposed to a physical one, but also excludes all mental phenomena which do not subscribe to the present rigid standard of evidence in the supernormal and the presumed application of telepathy. Whether spiritistic action might not explain the original stimulus to the phenomena, after it has been proved in other cases, is another question and one I am not now considering.



When it comes to the mental phenomena a better appearance can be detected. They at least exhibit the right psychological ring and some of them have an evidential aspect. They show much the same characteristics that are present in the Piper and other cases, namely, qualities that bear upon the identity of the alleged communicator and some that unconsciously reflect independent intelligence without making identity apparent. The play of personality other than manifest impersonation is also apparent at times. All these give the case a much larger and important interest than the physical phenomena, even supposing them genuine, for which there is not adequate evidence unless it be found in the raps and lights.

Let us examine specific instances of this and their significance may be more evident. Take the first attempt apparently of Dr. Hodgson to control the automatic writing. The manner of holding the pencil was the same as Mrs. Piper's. Miss Burton knew nothing of this fact and also nothing of the fact that Dr. Hodgson had purported spontaneously to hold it in the same way through Mrs. Smead and remarked that this was the way he held it at Mrs. Piper's. This incident made it doubly suggestive here with Miss Burton. It was all done here in the dark and only my habit of keeping my hand on hers enabled me first to discover it and the peculiar wave of the hand and its struggle to get the pencil inserted rightly between the first and second fingers. Afterward in the light I saw it in the act. But the reply to my question why he held the pencil in this manner, namely, that it was his way, and the spontaneous statement of Miss Burton in reply to my guarded question after the séance, that she always held her pencil as she had voluntarily picked it up, namely between thumb and finger, were facts of some significance in showing that the phenomenon might not have been a mere coincidence. Later repetitions of it made this evidence still stronger. But preceding this effort to hold the pencil in the Hodgsonian manner the partial spelling of his name through raps had its suggestiveness, tho not evidential because I have to assume that Dr. Hodgson and his relation to me were too well known to Miss Burton to give the inci-



dent any evidential value, tho the dramatic play and difficulties involved in giving it, together with the lethargic temperament of Miss Burton and her normal indifference to the intellectual side of the subject, is against the supposition of even her subliminal having energy enough to use the information if she had it. Not that this protects the circumstance, but that it assumes more normal interest in the problem and the facts connected with it than is actually true with her. She has not read anything in general on the subject and has not read any of the Society's publications in particular. All the knowledge that she might have had would come from gossip in connection with my name. Assuming, of course, that her subconscious was "tricky," as the physical phenomena seem to indicate, we may well suppose this incident to have been a similar mental simulation. But this cannot be the explanation of holding the pencil, as that was wholly unknown to her. In the next series the attempt on the part of the same personality was made to write and the signature, with the pencil held as in the previous instance between the first and second fingers, was an apparent effort at the name of Hodgson and the failure to make it certain was the best part of the attempt. The motor excitement in the effort was most interesting and instructive. There was another very dramatic effort in the record of January 28th (p. 384). It is too long to detail here and the reader may go to the detailed account for its most interesting characteristics. The contents of some automatic writing by Mrs. Milton at this period of the series of experiments are also not without an interest to the student. The thought, and even some of the words were more characteristic of Dr. Hodgson than of Mrs. Milton, as the detailed record indicates (p. 385).

In the record of January 31st one of the most interesting and suggestive of these incidents occurred. Again the reader must go to the detailed account of the facts for their real value, tho even then much may be inaccessible to him from not having personally witnessed the things themselves. I shall only summarize the points of importance here.

There was a long and laborious struggle to change the pencil from its position between thumb and first finger to

that between first and second finger, and the failure was marked by a sudden seizure of the pencil between thumb and finger, the normal position for Miss Burton, and the writing, apparently that of Dan, the usual control, referred in the *third person* to the communicator who had tried to change the pencil, and stated that he would come a little later. This confirmed the conjecture I had made as to the person trying to write at first. When a little later the effort was renewed it failed as before and the pencil was again suddenly seized in the normal manner and the writing this time done in the normal way and apparently signed by Hodgson. I had been told by Dan a little previously in automatic writing that three people were trying to write at the same time. Before the evening's experiments were over I had apparently heard from Hodgson, G. P. and my wife. But in this message purporting to come from Dr. Hodgson there was matter wholly uncharacteristic of Dan and quite characteristic of Dr. Hodgson both in manner and contents. The message was:—

"Yes, I am here. Do you remember how I used to wonder why they couldn't talk just the same when they came back as they did \* \*? Well I have found out it is not so easy. If I could just say anything I want to I could write a book. H \* \*."

The expression "I am here" is almost identical with Hodgson's way of introducing his messages elsewhere, and this feature of it was remarked by Dr. Hamilton, who had seen it in our publications. Mrs. Milton and Miss Burton had not seen them. The subject matter was one which had been a topic of interest to Dr. Hodgson when living and the distinction between his ability and his desire was made in much the same way through Mrs. Piper, not published at this time (*Proceedings*, Am. S. P. R., Vol. IV, p. 317). A most important characteristic also to be remarked is the first person of the message, Dan having employed the third person, as we noticed, in his reference. It was psychologically correct in both instances, when impersonation might not have been so careful, and would not be so, unless there were not only subliminal consciousness of failure but also the pretense of it, for on this supposition there is no excuse for the failure.

If I could be certain that the next effort had been by G. P. it would be no less interesting. Such as it is that interpretation is possible and for psychological interest deserves reference to it (p. 403).

There was another reference in the third person to a communicator who did not succeed in doing enough for me to infer his identity, but after a little automatic writing Lenore wrote: "There is your lady here who is very anxious to write you something she wants you to tell the children, she says, but she cannot do it to-night, Lenore."

This was pertinent in consideration of the fact that a few weeks previous my wife purported to communicate through Mrs. Chenoweth exclusively about the children. At the third series of sittings with Miss Burton (p. 474), tho she apparently aided another communicator, she made no attempt to communicate about the children. The fact was that the crisis had passed which had made illusion to the children pertinent. The present series of sittings was suddenly interrupted by a telegram to return on account of the dangerous illness of my daughter which not even I knew at the time. That is, the reference to my children may have been to apprise me of it.

The most striking incident with reference to my wife was the clairvoyant vision identifying her. It began with the apparition of a light and which only slowly developed into a face and then that of a lady with blue eyes, this fitting my wife, and finally her name, followed by a collapse of Miss Burton on my recognition of it. There were long pauses between each step in it and the reference to blue eyes was the most evidential point in it. This could not have been known by Miss Burton, as she had not seen my book in which an incident involving it had been mentioned.

One of the best incidents of the same kind is that connected apparently with Dr. Hodgson. I refer to the vision of the iron fence, the room with its desk, drop light, and comfortable chair and other incidents, which I identified as referring to scenes in Boston Common and the private rooms of Dr. Hodgson and which I shall not recapitulate again. I shall be content with the references (pp. 523-5). They repre-

sent incidents which Miss Burton could not possibly know unless we accept the iron fence, and that only by hearsay, as she has never seen it and would not know its pertinent relation to Dr. Hodgson.

But by far the most important incident was the symbolic communication of the name of Jennie P——, or Whirlwind. This was a cross reference, as I have explained both in the detailed record (p. 527) and in the summary (p. 96). I shall not repeat the details of that here. I recall it simply to emphasize a mental phenomenon of considerable importance and possibly of much evidential value. It is precisely of the type, in so far as it bears upon identity and represents a cross reference, to satisfy the demands of a spiritistic hypothesis.

The fourth series of experiments gave even better evidence of spiritistic phenomena. The manner of giving the name of Mr. Frederick W. H. Myers, which probably Miss Burton did not know was very suggestive and had she gotten Eveleen instead of "Ellen" I should have been quite assured of a very evidential name. The manner also of giving the name Henry James in connection with the circumstance that neither she nor Mrs. Milton had ever heard of Henry James and thought when it came that it was the Christian name of Prof. James was very suggestive of the spiritistic. The name Newbold, however, as I interpret that of "Newballd," in connection with the initials of Dr. Hodgson is undoubtedly evidential and represents a very striking incident, as he was a special and intimate friend of Dr. Hodgson not known to either Miss Burton or Mrs. Milton.

But the most striking evidence of the supernormal were the names of Emperor and Rector. The first of these came orally. Rector's was evidently started at the second sitting where I got the first three letters, as later developments showed this was the intention. At the last sitting the letters were repeated and the "or" given with the statement that there was "something before" them. Mrs. Milton got the letter but would not utter it and Miss Burton suddenly exclaimed that it was "t" and on my saying that I had gotten "Rec" "or" and "t," she remarked that she would not put it that way, and then wrote "Recort" twice and "Recotr."

Then I said I understood what was meant and read the words as written, when she suddenly seized the pencil and wrote "Rector," which was what I had in mind after and not before the name "Recort" was written. In the course of further automatic writing Rector used the word "Light" with the capital "L," which he always uses in the automatic writing of Mrs. Piper and which is usually used in the automatic writing of Mrs. Smead and Mrs. Chenoweth.

The dramatic manner in which all this came with the entire ignorance of both Mrs. Milton and Miss Burton as to both Imperator and Rector makes this an excellent piece of evidence for the spiritistic interpretation.

There is another type of fact, psychological in its nature and pervading the entire record where automatic writing is concerned, and that may be called the play of personality which exemplifies what we should expect of spiritistic agency whether it had difficulties in penetrating the veil or not, and is entitled to considerable weight in estimating its claims to admission into the explanation of the phenomena. It is not easy to define exactly what we mean by this play of personality, but we may perhaps best describe it as the consistent intrusion of other apparent communicators into the situation which requires a change or some explanation of the successful or unsuccessful course of things. This, however, is best defined by illustrations.

One instance is that in which Lenore explained why my wife did not communicate tho wishing to do so. From every point of view in which we can treat secondary personality or the subconscious there was no reason for its admission of failure here. It could as well and as easily have fabricated some message to put into my wife's mouth as to have done so for Dr. Hodgson, or to have put into her mouth what was expressed through Lenore. But the perfectly clear difficulties in his and the communications of others give reason for failure in any case and it would not have surprised or disappointed me at the time not to have had an allusion to my wife, as I had no reason to believe that she was present or trying, or that there were any greater difficulties for her than for others. But this dramatic allusion to her and frank con-

fession of inability to do anything at this time is exactly correct for any theory of the difficulties in communicating at all, while it is not easily consistent with the enormous powers we assume or ascribe to the subconscious. These dramatic intrusions are hardly consistent with the lethargic condition of the psychic, if we use them to show what the subliminal can do, as the one limits it while the other enlarges its powers. But the hypothesis of a personal equation in the communicators which enables one to communicate and which prevents the other from doing it, gives perfect unity to the supposition that the medium is really a medium and not a combination of absolute inability to do anything and of infinite resources for fabrication and dramatization.

The same general principle is manifest when we compare the work of Dan with that of the alleged Dr. Hodgson. Dan admits difficulties for himself, but they are as nothing compared with those of the Hodgson control. When he writes he does so rapidly and with ease. He does not stumble in his work and there is no evidence of any kind of agitation. But the Hodgson control exhibited the same sort of motor excitement in the action of the hands, the pauses and the struggles to manage the result, that are noticeable in the same control in other psychics. This is actually observed and told us by Dan, so that we have the correct dramatization for the real as distinguished from the unreal and fabricative.

I must, however, leave the reader to a minute study of the detailed record for the many other, and perhaps even better illustrations of this play of personality. It would require repeating much of that record to bring out in full the instances of it and that is not necessary. To understand it in any case requires the careful study of that record, as it gets its full meaning in the complex relations involved in the various difficulties of the work. The record itself is but a poor account of it, as it can neither convey to the reader the time involved, the pauses, the motor action, the physiological accompaniments generally, and the fitness of the connections in which the phenomena occurred that may be called this play. Hence I can but call attention to the phenomenon here and leave its study to the reader. It suffices to indicate



what the material is and its relevance to the issue. It cannot be made an argument of the first magnitude in this connection, if in the present state of belief about the powers of the subconscious it can be regarded as anything more than consistent with a spiritistic view, and it is not necessary to imply anything more of it. I therefore call attention to it only as an additional characteristic natural to that point of view and leave its importance to that time when we understand better the limits of subliminal impersonation. The other facts of a supernormal type, or at least more apparently this will suffice to show where and to what extent foreign influences have availed to break through the obstacles to transcendental communication and to justify the consideration of the case as at least on the borderline of such cases as perplex the sceptic more gravely. If we can grant that occasional intrusion from the discarnate has manifested itself in this instance, after accepting the existence of such agencies in the phenomena of much better cases, we may well regard this instance as one of exceptional value for studying the difficulties and intervening obstacles to the kind of communication that is more impressive, while we get some conception of the limitations of it.

In the last sentence I have indicated the real value of the present record. It is not that it offers evidence in the primary conception of the problem, but that after it has been justified in other cases we may study these phenomena for the light they throw upon the limitations which afflict the progress of investigation in this subject. I do not know a better instance for teaching important lessons to the psychic researcher. He too often disregards the most important psychological phenomena explaining his difficulties in getting evidence while he runs after the evidence for the supernormal. The really scientific man will seek to understand the psychological difficulties and obstacles to his suit as well as the significance of the facts which transcends ordinary explanations. The real trouble with much of our psychical research has been that it has been governed too much by the search after miracles of some kind, whether physical or mental, for a solution of the problem, when the fact is that the problem just arises when



we have convinced ourselves of the supernatural and its real or apparent significance. While it is not true that we must first understand a fact in order to be convinced of what it proves, it is true that we shall never understand its full meaning until we appreciate its articulation with the environment in which it appears. We have been in the habit of ignoring the environment while we estimated the incidents that were not a naturally classifiable part of it and this policy has made us forget that its meaning is quite as much dependent upon the environment as upon the fact of its not lying wholly within it. We will not understand the limitations of our facts until we take proper account of the facts which determine those limitations, and the spiritistic point of view is not the one for ascertaining and understanding those limitations. It has the habit of making us estimate the value of the facts from certain *a priori* ideas that we entertain about spirits. But if we can once learn the all important lesson that the supernatural is cast in the mold of the subconscious with all its liabilities to dissociation in incalculable forms we shall find the theory a very simple one and thoroughly understand why the phenomena exhibit the limitations that have so generally perplexed us.

The sceptic who is asked to believe in transcendental influences in this and similar cases of hysteria will caution the believer against confusing facts due to suggestibility with spiritistic agencies. That point of view is fully recognized here. I do not question the existence of suggestibility in the case. In fact I have recognized it from the outset and have not made any effort whatever to eliminate it. In the first place I did not care if the whole set of phenomena was due to suggestion. I was quite as willing to study it as a case of hysterical simulation and suggestibility alone as from any other assumable point of view. There is in the record unmistakable evidence of suggestion and suggestibility in the case. I shall not take the trouble here to enumerate the incidents which prove and illustrate it. The reader may note them for himself or take for granted that I recognize the fact to any extent that it may be desirable to suppose or assert it. What I want to emphasize in the study of the case

is the important distinction between suggestibility and actual suggestion in this and all such cases. Suggestibility is a condition of the subject which it may be desirable to have as a requisite for anything at all, secondary or supernormal. Suggestion is a name for the influence of the operator or experimenter and the contents of what he puts into this subject. Suggestibility is a name for the conditions which make this influence of the experimenter possible.

Now I have no doubt that the experimenter can use this suggestibility to build up any system of secondary personalities by supplying the ideas which form them. But what the experimenter, who seeks transcendental data, desires is this same suggestibility to transcendental agencies. If he deliberately experiments to make his own ideas the dominant ones in the life of the subconscious he will eliminate the ideas of external intelligence other than his own and have nothing as his product but what he can explain by his own production. His course of keeping the attention of the subconscious upon himself and plans will only establish and limit the rapport to himself and outside agencies will not even have a chance to exert their influence by any methods accessible to them. What intelligent experimenters ought to do is to deliberately sustain suggestibility and by their own suggestions keep in the mind of the psychic the idea that it is dealing with spirits. The very thing which the ordinary sceptic deplores is precisely the condition of that which his own policy prevents and which he pretends to be seeking. What a sane person wants to do is to sustain the conditions which will test the capacity for supernormal information, not to destroy them. Rapport with the transcendental is the *quæsitum* and unless this be established either by suggestion or other methods it is hopeless to expect or obtain what we pretend to seek. The suggestibility which enables us to determine the personalities of the subconscious is the condition of the similar influence from other foreign agencies besides ourselves, and every effort to eliminate it only succeeds in destroying the machinery with which the intelligent man must work.

Let me illustrate. Moll in his work, "*Der Rapport in der*

*Hypnose*," (Rapport in Hypnosis) shows incontrovertibly that this relation between a hypnotized subject and other persons present varies with or without suggestion. He experimented on subjects and found that he could establish or remove this rapport at will by suggestion. He could say to a subject: "Now you will hear what A says and obey his directions," and he himself would lose the rapport or sensibility of the subject to his own suggestions until he desired to resume it. The subject would respond only to the suggestions of the person with whom the rapport had been suggested. On the other hand the same suggestion could disestablish rapport at any time with any person in the room and the subject would be absolutely irresponsive to anything said or done by this person. The same phenomenon occurs in normal life, tho it is not so mechanical as hypnotic phenomena. In a social company a man may at any time, through will and attention establish his greater or less degree of sensibility to what is going on around him. It all depends on the concentration of attention. His likes and dislikes may actually affect either the tendency to this concentration or the relationship to others. He will not be sensible to the conversation which is going on about him. But at any moment that he becomes interested, that is, whenever he chooses to *listen* or to put himself into rapport with the stimuli about him, he gets the proper impressions. He is in rapport with other agencies than those which have previously claimed his attention.

Now if experimenters deliberately occupy the hysteric's or the psychic's mind with their ideas and make every effort to deprive it of the apperception mass by which the rapport with other foreign influences is sustained they can only expect negative results for all but their own suggestions. If they are wise they will do all they can to cultivate both delicate suggestibility and rapport, or the mental state which believes or produces this rapport with spiritistic agencies, as a primary condition, whatever other conditions are necessary for the penetration of foreign influences. These are part of the indispensables in the case and without them it is conceivable that no supernormal is possible. Here it is where the busi-

ness of the experimenter is not to make suggestions whose content involves constant rapport with himself and distraction from foreign action, but to keep up the suggestible condition of the subject's mind and the idea that it is to attend to other stimuli than those of the experimenter on this side. We may hope in this way to establish a condition similar to the illustration which I have borrowed from the incident of a social company. All that a man has to do in such cases when estimating his results is to distinguish between the contents that his own actions may have suggested and those which they could not.

There is no doubt that we are exposed to all sorts of limitations in estimating the results in any case. I think it probable, as well as conceivable, that the subconscious becomes educated by both forms of suggestion in the information which it may at various times deal out to us as from spirits. This dream like condition of the psychic can hardly distinguish between the ideas which the experimenter's suggestions have inspired and those which have come from transcendental agencies and it may constantly deliver them to sitters as the result of this experience and education while spirits or living persons are trying to get other facts or ideas into its stream. There is plenty of evidence in the Piper case that past incidents or ideas transmitted into the subconscious, whether from the living or the dead, come out as if from persons who are not present and claim to be from alleged spirits present when we know they cannot be such. All this is an obstacle to the purity of the contents. But we have to accept that risk in the work of sustaining the conditions which make any transcendental influences possible at all.

If there were no phenomena in the case of Miss Burton that would connect it with such as Mrs. Piper, Mrs. Smead and Mrs. Chenoweth it would not offer us so important a field of study, but the fact of automatic writing with its play of personality and the existence of some supernormal incidents give us the opportunity for fruitful comparison with those cases. It will thus help to bridge the chasm between the normal type of mind and that which we denominate as psychic or capable of manifesting the supernormal. Connect-

ing those two extremes is as important a part of the problem as establishing the fact of outside influence upon the human mind. The problem comes up in connection with telepathy as well as that of spirits and is much the same in both. What we require to make intelligible is the complex conditions which explain the unity of the whole system of phenomena and the manner of their articulation, whether they contain evidential or non-evidential facts or not. This case offers one of the rarest illustrations that I know of the extent and complexity of the conditions affecting the possibility of obtaining the supernormal and its various types. It is much richer in such material than Mrs. Piper's phenomena and will throw light upon the adjustments necessary to make hers what they are. The obstacles and limitations which it offers to the production of the supernormal and thus make it invaluable to all who demand kinds and amount of evidence of which the average case does not superficially present the complicated conditions determining its possibility. Let me make these general remarks clear by concrete illustrations.

I take first the incidents connected with the name of Whirlwind. As Miss Burton does automatic writing, one of the simplest things that we should imagine possible would be the prompt giving of that name. Dan, whatever we regard him, whether a secondary personality of Miss Burton or what he claims to be, might be supposed capable of giving it at once after obtaining it from Jennie P——. But he apparently does not attempt it. The same procedure is adopted here as in the case of Mrs. Piper, each subject is expected to give his own message. Jennie P—— is not accustomed to this "machine" and apparently cannot or will not resort to the direct process of writing it at once in a manner that would obtain instant recognition. But she resorts to indirect and symbolic methods and Miss Burton, tho she describes the symbol in outline sufficiently to make its meaning clear to the observer after it has once been recognized and tho she is in the favorable position of having the visual image of it, cannot name it. Here the dissociation of functions comes in to explain one of the difficulties involved in getting the message through to the experimenter. The

aphasic or amnesic condition created by the semi-trance prevents the naming of the object seen, tho it is clear in the recognition of it by the writing of its name instead of the utterance of it that the amnesia, if it exist at all, is limited to the auditory functions while the memory seems more or less intact for the motor centers. Yet the mind is so lethargic and the functions so dissociated that the subconscious does not spontaneously think of the device of writing until the course is suggested to it. Then it labors under great difficulty more noticeable than with the usual control, Dan, tho he has his troubles in any situation of this or any other kind. The influence of the anæsthesia and trance upon the auditory functions, whether they were partial or not makes no difference, had rendered them wholly inefficient in getting the name through, perhaps because there were no reflexes affecting the motor system for the purpose, and the visual functions had to be resorted to for achieving the result. But they too were handicapped by something like aphasia or amnesia and the reflexes from association were too weak to mediate the motor agencies for making the message clear. Tho the sensory centers were capable of receiving the impression sent by the communicator the natural associations which the picture should arouse were either inhibited or prevented from expression through the proper and associated motor reflexes. A whirlwind could not be represented so easily to the limited field in which the mind of Miss Burton would act under the conditions of dissociation in which her mind is and the communicator had to choose the nearest symbolic representative and run the risks of having some association arise, in spite of the dissociation involved in her trance, and in which the meaning of the message could be divined by the experimenter. The motor machinery was not adapted to the induced automatisms of a stranger and did not act readily to visual reflexes. If the trance had been the same as that for the physical phenomena there would have been no hope for even as much as the picture, and perhaps much less for incidents of an evidential nature.

It is precisely here that the whole scientific interest of the case lies, not in the evidence for the supernormal or for



spirits, but in the conditions which make such evidence or phenomena abortive. The hysteria which manifests itself so clearly serves both as the promise and as the preventive of communication. It comprises a complex of ill adjusted functions and their dissociation which keeps Miss Burton on the borderland, apparently, of something important, and just at its dawn shuts it off. We can perhaps observe only a few of those whose adjustment is necessary for bringing about the desired result, and even when we observe these our knowledge is very imperfect. They are under no control by us and are certainly much less under any management by Miss Burton. Just at this point an interesting possibility suggests itself. The whole behavior of the subconscious is affected more or less by the measure of its automatism and yet it would appear that the adjustment of conditions is teleological, a fact which would apparently contradict the assumption of automatism or its influence on the phenomena. The hypothesis that Miss Burton is unconscious would seem to exempt her from responsibility for the results, whether we suppose them genuine or not. But if they are manifestly intelligent we must either give up the unconscious character of the acts or refer them to the consciousness of the transcendental agents which are supposedly the causes, on the hypothesis of spirits. If they can be assumed to know the situation correctly they must bear the responsibility for the deception or fraudulent character of the conduct. Both the appearance and the reality of the deception could thus be easily accounted for. That Black Cloud or Dan should play tricks is perfectly conceivable and it would consist easily with the unconscious condition of Miss Burton as it appears to exist, as well also as the automatic condition of her mind responding to outside influences while her subconscious processes try to prevent her own organism from performing questionable acts. All this makes a perfectly clear explanation of the complex set of phenomena without attributing any fraud, conscious or unconscious, to Miss Burton. But I think it quite as possible that the same effects might take place without ascribing conscious purpose to deceive to even the transcendental agencies. Suppose Miss Burton's trance



is more like an active dream than in most mediums and that she is automatic instead of lethargic, as in sleep, and that also the anæsthesia makes her unable to directly detect the motor part she takes in the unconscious execution of the ideas that occur in her mind, transmitted from the outside. As in sleep, then, the mental states which constitute the dream, transmitted from spirits and actually appearing as realities to those who transmit them, automatically get executed by the organism, as they do in the case of Mrs. Piper, only they are thoughts merely written in Mrs. Piper's instance instead of being physical phenomena performed. The transcendental agencies may be wholly ignorant of the physical world and see only the mental, but know from the minds of the living that the physical effect takes place and falsely suppose that the miraculous has occurred. This is a rather complex explanation, but it exempts the other world from practicing deception as well as Miss Burton. I do not know that any such explanation is true, but this mixture of dissociated functions and the well known fact that the communicators in the Piper case do not seem to know anything about the occurrence of the physical aspect of the messages would make the hypothesis perfectly conceivable, tho I do not present it here as necessarily true, but only as an alternative which is entitled to consideration in the complex conditions which we have to unravel in this problem.

But whatever we make the results to be there is an interesting appearance of purpose in the control of the conditions for separate phenomena. This is a circumstance wholly in favor of subconscious "honesty" in the phenomena and illustrative of the difficulty of achieving different results without a different combination of functions, and the instability of their association, or their liability to dissociation, which is only another form of expression for the same thing, indicates how this difficulty may arise. A collapse into the lethargic condition puts an end to a performance. Any display of obstinacy on the part of Miss Burton's subconscious is equally effective in terminating events. She will, in this mood, resent Black Cloud's efforts to do something and what takes place to reduce her to submission no one knows. But at

times the impossibility of doing something is such that a roundabout process is necessary to restore the conditions for successful execution.

Let me take an illustration. Apparently the control which Black Cloud gets is not always a voluntary affair. He seems necessary for the production of all the physical phenomena. The fact that points toward this is the hyperæsthesia that marks their occurrence. Miss Burton's sensitiveness when they are going on resembles that which she manifests when it is necessary to exorcise Black Cloud. But he gets tied up in his "earth bound" condition by the accident of his own determination to achieve his object against the difficulties or resistance of Miss Burton. Then he can't let go or "get out" until forced out by holding her hands. All this is true on any theory of what he is. It is exceedingly interesting here to watch the desire of Miss Burton's subconscious to escape his toils and the determination of Black Cloud to maintain his position, tho it is possible that he does not know what has disqualified him for escape. As Dan remarked in the automatic writing his old earthly conditions seize him and he cannot help doing as he does. This tends to confirm the idea of a trance in the control as necessary to enable the communicator to manage the situation and he may get so deep as to be incapable of voluntarily adapting himself to the situation. The self-control that might exist in his normal condition is lost in the trance and earthly memories and disposition dominate. At this contingency it is remarkably interesting to find that Dan can, in spite of the possession by Black Cloud, control the automatic writing and give directions for exorcising Black Cloud. Many a time, when we do not suspect the situation, Dan comes in to tell us of it and insist that the medium's hands must be held. This is a process of restoration of conditions necessary for accomplishing anything whatever. The whole process seems distinctly teleological and rational, wholly unnatural to any normal knowledge which Miss Burton can be supposed to have either from the point of view of psychology or of spirits.

Another illustration is quite as interesting. I have already remarked the unstable condition necessary for the clairvoyant

visions. The other mental conditions and the trance make sensory automatisms impossible, so far as we can determine. Hence the control has apparently to hold the psychic in this unstable condition to enable other communicators to transmit their pictorial imagery. The circumstance that makes this appear to be a fact or a designed result is the constant accident of suddenly falling into the deeper trance and having to be recalled from it by holding the medium's hands. This device would not have been thought of by me but for the actual statements of Dan, the control, and his directions to follow that course. On any theory of Dan this is teleological. On one occasion he states that he is in control to enable others to work. In the unstable condition of the medium any accident on the other side precipitates her into the trance and nothing can be done until she is restored to the normal condition for the clairvoyance, and Dan cannot do this of himself. He must seek my aid. He can control the situation sufficiently to write automatically and direct that I hold her hands. I do so and in a moment she awakens as suddenly as she had fallen into the trance. There is no resistance as in the Black Cloud possession and there is no retention of the trance as in the exorcism of him. The combination of functions is wholly different and the limitations of the control are equally manifest, tho not in the same way. The intelligence and its action to arrange the situation is evident and so also is its limited power in establishing and maintaining it.

Its limitations are manifest more decidedly in the lethargic and cataleptic states. Here we can obtain no directions how to proceed. Indeed, as already remarked, the controls do not seem to know that the catalepsy exists or has existed. They make no reference to it. During this and the lethargic states, which are probably natural sleep, they cannot even rap to indicate their knowledge of the condition of things. In that inactive state when the subconscious rests and will do nothing they may be able to rap, and at times on the borderland of the lethargic sleep very light raps will signify consciousness of the situation but the controls can do nothing either to overcome the obstacles to their action or to give us directions for doing so. Indeed, their silence often about

such intervals might lead us to think that they did not know there were any lapses in the phenomena.

The whole detailed record can be studied in this manner. That the superficial interpretation of it as either conscious or unconscious fraud cannot be made is evident in the systematic character of the phenomena in connection with the anæsthesia, trance, automatic conditions and insistent play of personality and occasional illustrations of the supernormal indicating a transcendental source. That telepathy can cut no figure in it is so manifest that only the most stupid intellect would ever mention it. This is even true in the supernormal phenomena which I have quoted in behalf of a possibly spiritistic explanation. The symbolic complicity of the phenomenon and the teleological indirections necessary for getting the result through make telepathy so absurd that a man should be ashamed to think of it, especially when that phenomenon is never a resort for detecting the sitters' endeavors to discover trickery. It would be far better to deny the evidence for the supernormal in them. Fraud and secondary personality are far simpler than telepathy in this case and insistent sceptics can claim that the evidence for the supernormal is too small to indulge in theories founded upon it. So I dismiss telepathy from view as simply preposterous, even on the hypothesis that the supernormal is present. It is far simpler to suppose spirits thwarted by the hysterical conditions from effecting their purposes, or using them for deception. The fact is that the supernormal is at least distinctly approximated, supposing that it has not been reached, and that the physiological and psychological conditions are clearly illustrative of dissociation, indicate that no simple hypothesis will exhibit the actual unity of the phenomena. The complicated conditions which are implied in the term hysteria exactly express the subjective side of the case and a mixture of successful and abortive efforts describes the objective agencies involved, with the probability that there are many subjective and objective conditions which do not betray either their existence or their character in the phenomena as yet. It is precisely in this mixture that the priceless value of the case lies. It throws more light upon the

necessary conditions for success than any amount of actual success would betray.

In Mrs. Piper under Imperator and in Mrs. Smead there are very few and slight evidences of hysteria. In the Phinuit régime there were many indications of it, as observers of the oncoming trance could remark. It was manifested in the conditions associated with the efforts to hypnotize her, as indicated by the echolalia that Prof. James remarked (*Proceedings Am. S. P. R.*, Vol. IV, p. 380). In Mrs. Smead it is evident in the tendencies to catalepsy in the arm and occasionally in other parts of the body, more particularly sympathetically in the left arm. Otherwise it is not manifested in that case. Now possibly it is their freedom from hysterical dissociations that qualifies them for the organization of functions necessary for the coördinated action of the subconscious, the nerves and the muscles for effecting the necessary result. In Miss Burton the instability of her condition, physiological and psychological, the maladjustment of the anæsthesia, automatism, sensory or motor or both, and the apparent presence of an appreciative consciousness, subliminal in character, are all indications of that dissociation of the proper functions whose harmonious action is so important in producing the desired result. Take the imperfect rapport with the discarnate indicated in her mistaking the "voice" of the communicator for that of the living spectator, a condition never noticeable in the deeper trance where the rapport seems to be better established. But then in this better condition we seem to have a state more like the normal dream life when there appears to be a consciousness of something present and taken for a transcendental reality until a touch reveals the material world and the medium collapses. As long as the illusion can be taken for reality there is no trouble, but the moment that it is discovered to be an illusion the phenomenon dissolves in a fit of lethargy or catalepsy. Statements are made through automatic writing, in which her apperceptive subconsciousness does not seem to share, that her soul is out of the body in the trance, just as we are told by the controls in the Piper and other cases, but the moment that an auditory intimation of the fact is given she collapses as in the discovery of a trick,

the illusion of her dream consciousness being disturbed by the suspicion that she had a part in the result, and her mind being subconsciously possessed of the transcendental source of the facts until thus rudely disillusioned. What a play of half active and half thwarted functions is apparent in this conception of the case!

There is another conception of the case involving the participation of the subconscious and the automatic functions of the organism in the results. It assumes that Miss Burton is subconsciously aware of her own participation in the production of the phenomena, whether bodily or mentally, but is aware that it is not voluntary on her part. That is to say, she is simultaneously aware of the automatism and of the foreign source of it. The influence which instigates the effect also transmits knowledge of it to the subconscious. I have witnessed similar phenomena in certain types of mediumship. The subject is normally conscious of the message while simultaneously conscious that she does not originate it and that the automatic functions are delivering it either by voice or writing. The peripheral sensations reveal to the subject what is going on without the intervention of the will to effect the result, and the mind gets the message at the same time. There is no fixed set of conditions for these phenomena. They are as various as can be conceived. If voluntary activity can be dissociated from consciousness and suspended there is no reason why the subject should not remain normally conscious of the whole process. But usually the will and consciousness are so closely associated that the trance may be necessary for eliminating the influence of both on the result.

Then there is another possibility. As Miss Burton's trance is not deep and the anæsthesia is variable and consistent with subliminal hyperæsthesia we may have a condition in which stimuli from the sitter may be annoying and act as a prevention of spiritistic influence, while the admission of this influence may be felt on the subconsciousness not properly dissociated from the voluntary activities, while it simultaneously affects the automatic functions and Miss Burton may represent a combination of foreign and subjective agencies in the result, all the while being subconsciously aware that she



does not initiate them, tho participating in the total phenomenon. Whether all these are proved facts is not at all assured. Indeed it is merely conjecturable as possible in the present stage of the investigation. What we know, however, of abnormal psychology justifies the hypothesis as one to be seriously considered. The evidence of it would be found more readily in such cases of hysteria as Miss Burton presents. It would be less apparent where hysteria is not manifested.

Mrs. Chenoweth does not show the slightest evidence of hysteria. There are no dissociations of function or symptoms of it. Everything proceeds in a perfectly normal manner. Her own controls have insisted that they developed her so as to keep the communications consistent with the exercise of normal physical and mental functions. Hence probably the very large contributions from her subconscious to the coloring of the messages, which I have remarked regarding her phenomena (*Proceedings*, Am. S. P. R., Vol. III, pp. 593-613, and Vol. IV, p. 185). The organization and association of her natural functions thus qualify her for the automatic actions that put through 'transcendental messages. In Mrs. Piper the same association is kept up minus the influence of subliminal agencies to the same extent. Circulation, respiration, automatic functions, suspense of normal and subconscious habits or experiences and other adjusted functions conspire to the result. In Miss Burton the lethargic temperament of her mind, the absence of organized intellectual experience with its neural habits, put her mind at the mercy of dissociation when anæsthesia occurs. The retention of their normal synthesis is prevented by the want of that cohesiveness which well trained habits establish and the dissociation becomes easy. Once that occurs all imaginable difficulties occur to restrict the influence of extraneous agencies which depend so absolutely upon organized automatism for producing their results. If Miss Burton had exhibited more active physical and mental interests, the association of functions might have had more cohesiveness, so that the dissociation would be less general when the control of the discarnate undertook its task. But in the absence of these necessary



qualifications we find only their tendency to disintegration the moment that any attack is made upon the system which hangs together too loosely for coherent and synthetic action.

It is hardly necessary to pursue this analysis and explanation of the phenomena to any greater length. A critical and patient study of the detailed record will reveal quite as interesting, and perhaps more interesting, evidence of the complicated conditions necessary for the manifestation of the supernormal and the influences which interrupt it in special cases. Their complication is not superficially apparent in the Piper and other cases because they work so systematically and consistently toward a common end, with no apparent dissociations to reveal the analysis that exhibits the complexities of the problem. But in this unstable case of Miss Burton we have an ideal instance of the variable conditions which illustrate indirectly the rare cases in which the coördination is naturally established for other than unorganized automatisms. The successes and failures in it, with the adjustments and inadjustments associated with them, afford evidence of just what it is that determines one or the other, and if only we could develop the synthesis by artificial means we might overcome the difficulties to more effective communication with the transcendental. But the instability of the functions involved, or of the associations involved, is apparently an insurmountable difficulty to both incarnate and discarnate in the efforts to produce the desired phenomena or to make a good medium. The hysteria is just the name for this disorganized system of conditions and serves equally as an obstacle to desirable results and as an index of what is possible where the dissociation is not so marked and uncontrollable. It is, in this form and instance, the symptom of abortive mediumship.

**PART I.****REPORT BY DR. W. H. HAMILTON AND DR. J. S.  
SMYTH.**

---

**INTRODUCTION.**

By James H. Hyslop.

The record made by Drs. Hamilton and Smyth which we here publish was reported to me at the time of the experiments or soon after them as they occurred. Dr. Hamilton stated in his letters to me that the notes were made rather for their own guidance in further experiments which they intended to perform if the phenomena promised to represent anything more than hysteria, and hence comments were made from time to time apparently indorsing the genuineness of some of the facts. It was not intended that the notes should be complete or represent an adequate account of the phenomena. It was expected to make experiments in which the conditions were proof against possible normal explanations. They were themselves new at experiments of the kind and had to learn by actual experience the nature of the situation and the kind of phenomena with which they had to reckon. It was certain that Mrs. Milton was honest and desirous of understanding the facts, tho strongly convinced that they were not to be normally explained. It was also equally certain that Miss Burton was normally honest, and these facts affected the natural assumptions of the experimenters tho they knew and acted upon the assumption that no facts would be evidential that did not exclude both conscious fraud and unconscious deception of some kind. As there had been no professional career behind the present phenomena and as both Mrs. Milton and Miss Burton were well known to Dr. Smyth as the family physician the assumption of normal honesty at first affected the notes in the record without fixing any con-

victions about the facts. When further investigation laid bare the processes in the phenomena it was necessary to eliminate the irrelevant comments from the record and I was asked by Dr. Hamilton to do this. With the help of explanatory notes I have done this and submitted the revised account to both Dr. Hamilton and Dr. Smyth and it has been approved by them with such notes and additions as they saw fit to make. No alterations were made in the records of the phenomena, as I revised them, except to add such words as would make any descriptive account more explicitly accurate. This has received the approval or correction of the two men and the record stands substantially as originally reported by them.

It has not been revised in any detail that would eliminate the evidence of changing opinion of the phenomena. The primary importance of the early record is the distinct appearance, so far as description goes, of inexplicable phenomena, with some apparently sanguine hope that they would be found provable. Both reporters were well aware that this appearance was deceptive and did not care to eradicate it from the record, as such appearances are a part of the history and development of the phenomena. For that reason the account stands, with the distinct knowledge and avowal on their part that the observation of the facts was imperfect and that, however conclusive the phenomena appeared to be in favor of the supernormal, the real explanation was much simpler than was superficially evident.

Some of the things, however, they grant still offer perplexities, tho this fact may be due to insufficient knowledge. But nothing has been shirked in the case, and whether they succeeded in obtaining what they sought or not, their patience and perseverance resulted in a large mass of important incidents in connection with hysteria that may be more important in the final issue of this problem than any amount of miracles.

The footnotes in connection with the Report of Dr. Hamilton and Smyth are by myself and embody the convictions of the reporters themselves as indicated in conversations and correspondence.

## INTRODUCTORY EXPLANATION OF THE CASE.

By Dr. Hamilton.

The medium, Miss Anna Burton, was aged 19 at the time the investigation began, weight 121 and height 5 feet and 4 inches. She resided with Mr. and Mrs. Milton.

As a child 12 years of age she was left with Mrs. Maude B. Galton, now dead, and sister of Mrs. Milton. At the age mentioned the child's father could not care for her, her mother was dead and she resided with Mrs. Galton for a year or so. Six years ago, dating from 1908, she was taken to Mrs. Milton's home and has lived with her since, the death of Mrs. Galton making this necessary.

Miss Burton is slender, has dark auburn hair, black eyebrows, aquiline nose, strongly marked features, is very quiet and reserved and not very strong. She has had recently a general adenitis of the neck and runs a slight temperature. She has frequently of late had headaches and examination showed an error of refraction (astigmatism).

Her heart has been rather irritable and irregular. At the beginning of the second test séance both physicians examined her and in five minutes her pulse ran from 78 to 112 per minute. The rhythm is irregular, the volume the same, and while there is no valvular trouble, there is apparent irritability so often found at this age.

Four years ago Mrs. Milton, who had attended many spiritualistic séances and who was not satisfied with the results, (as to genuineness) decided to see what results she and Miss Burton could get themselves. Mrs. Galton before her death thought that she had heard raps sometimes in connection with Miss Burton and attributed them to Miss Burton's mediumistic powers. Mrs. Milton and Miss Burton began to sit alone until in 1907, after some apparent development, they began to ask their friends in to try helping them to explain the phenomena that had occurred and were occurring.

Mr. Milton admits the physical facts but he does not say what the cause is. Mrs. Milton's father, as does Mrs. Milton, believes they are due to spirits. Mr. Galton, surviving husband of Mrs. Galton, is not satisfied regarding the cause and

this seems also to be the state of mind of several of Mrs. Milton's married sisters who have witnessed some of the phenomena.

Dr. Smyth is a graduate of both Medicine and Law. He has been in medical practice for 23 years in the state and city in which he lives. He is a professed sceptic in everything and especially so toward believing in a life hereafter. He has been active in testing mediums and usually with disastrous results and he said that, up to this test, he has always been able to satisfy himself that they were due to perfectly natural causes. He was Mrs. Galton's physician and so well known to Mrs. Milton above mentioned, and when they began to get results they desired him to be present. He went supposing it would be easy to expose the methods or at least to satisfy himself of the deception, but to his astonishment he could not account for some of the facts, even tho they had a perfectly natural explanation.

This girl had never sat publicly or for a fee. Hence I wish to say there has been an entire absence of the usual "pat-ter" of the public medium and the lack of iron-clad "conditions" usually asked for. Dr. Smyth was so non-plussed that he asked Dr. Hamilton to take part in the experiments, because he, Dr. Hamilton, had seen much of this kind of work, both from the standpoint of ordinary trickery in public entertainments and of the work of the supposed "spirits." There was no use in anyone seeing it who had not seen the usual work and knew the literature on this subject. Dr. Smyth had seen three or four séances, not under test conditions, when he called in the assistance of Dr. Hamilton. The latter saw one or two when both were asked by Mrs. Milton to test the medium. The result is the following Report.

Dr. Hamilton has had a practice of seventeen years in his medical profession. Since childhood he has understood and practiced sleight of hand at entertainments and is unable to believe in spirit return, and the more he has seen of mediums the less he believed that any of them were genuine. Whatever interest the present record may have the story will have to determine its own importance.

**DETAILED RECORD.**

June 1, 1908, 8.15 P. M.

Present: Mrs. Milton, Miss Burton, Dr. Smyth, Dr. Hamilton.

Temperature cool. Rising barometer, 29.62.

Dr. Smyth sealed the door leading to kitchen with two pieces of surgeon's adhesive plaster 3x2 inches. This door is a swinging one and leads from dining-room into kitchen and is marked on diagram (p. 657). One piece of plaster was put on top of the door and attached to casing, and the second piece was attached in the same position only about in the middle. He then drove under the door a wedge-shaped piece of wood, 3x1x1 inches, making it impossible to enter the door from the kitchen unless the door swung out into the kitchen; and when Dr. Hamilton, after the sitting, examined the plaster and wedge he was surprised to find that the door was raised  $\frac{1}{4}$  of an inch from its hinges by the wedge and that it took considerable force to get the wedge out, for Dr. Smyth had kicked it under. The sliding doors [see diagram] were not in apposition and in order to lock them, which was done, it was necessary to raise and hold them until the bolts could be approximated, which made a great deal of noise, both at the time of locking and of unlocking. The windows in the bow window were shaded by drawn shades of Holland on spring rollers and faced the medium and Dr. Hamilton. The latter noticed frequently that draughts of air from the top of the opened window would blow these shades so as to allow considerable light to enter the room.

The investigators relied upon personal contacts with the other two sitters for tests and did not forget the possibility of confederates, etc.

The floor is of hard wood stained in antique oak; with hard wood baseboard. The centre of the room was covered by a 9x12 foot rug.

It was requested of the control that at no time should the medium or table be allowed to approach possibly touching dis-

tance of the phonograph. This was assented to and the light turned up three times, to test if touching it were possible, and at the final test the medium was at least eighteen inches farther away from the lever of the machine than she could possibly reach. This distance was observed during the remainder of the evening, so that in the phenomena that follow, the table was not moved and the position of the table and the medium were verified at every lighting of the light and at the close of the sitting.

In the arrangement of the sitting, the medium always sits, as indicated in the diagram, with Dr. Hamilton by her side. Dr. Smyth has the control of the "hylo" light shaded with orange photographic paper. Mrs. Milton always sits by the phonograph and winds and runs it.

The lights were turned out. In a few minutes raps were heard. Dr. Smyth then requested that when the table was opened Mrs. Milton might touch it, and that the medium be not allowed to get near enough to touch in any way the phonograph. This was assented to and light called for twice before any other phenomena were allowed.

The medium and Dr. Hamilton usually just touched fingers at the beginning and a hand arranged the amount of contact.

At a previous test it was arranged that the singing should be tested before the medium was entranced and the first phenomenon was bells ringing in the air and against the wall; then a voice called Oma sang in the trumpet and Dr. Hamilton's handkerchief was tightly tied over the mouth of the medium. With his left hand, Dr. Hamilton held her right hand, and with his right hand placed the fingers on each side of the larynx. Oma then sang and there was no doubt that the larynx of the medium vibrated with each note as sung, although with Dr. Hamilton's ear only an inch or so from her mouth he could not hear the slightest sound and Oma's voice appeared to come from several parts of the region of the table. The controls have always insisted that this was exactly what happened in both singing and whistling, although in previous tests, with medium entranced, it has been most difficult to prove, especially with the whistling, but they kept at it one evening until Dr. Hamilton and Dr. Smyth were convinced that the vocal bands of the medium vibrated in exact accord with the voice from and in the



trumpet. Immediately after this, the medium suddenly went into a deeper trance, as indicated by a jerk of the hand.

During the development of this medium they have always insisted that Mrs. Milton must sit next the medium, but as they seemed most willing to make all tests asked, they were requested to allow Dr. Smyth to sit on her left side, between her chair and the phonograph. This they readily assented to; although stating that it would take some time to adjust themselves to the new conditions.

One candle power of orange light was turned on and Dr. Smyth seated himself between the medium and the phonograph. [Any light, and especially white light, will cause the heart to change its rate, when in the trance condition. Dr. Hamilton, while sitting by her, felt her pulse frequently and particularly noted the change in rate; fulness, and rhythm. Once or twice when the 16-candle power has been pulled on by mistake, she has fallen forward as from a blow on the head and the pulse wavered, lost fulness, and skipped beats. During the trance state her breathing was reduced to about 12-14, pulse 60, and complete anæsthesia to external objects occurred. The control during this anæsthesia had pushed a phonograph needle into her flesh until it stood alone and asked the sitter to examine it under the light.]

Drs. Hamilton and Smyth had been told that she was to have the utmost freedom of hands, as when she seemed to receive too much magnetism from the sitters, the control would cause her to drop her hands to cut the current.

Suddenly she grasped the hands of Drs. Hamilton and Smyth, and whistling began from the trumpet, which floated around the table. The whistling was not as loud nor as long continued as usual, but lasted two or three minutes and was loud enough to be heard in the adjoining rooms. She suddenly jerked her hands free, whereupon the trumpet fell and whistling ceased.\*

---

\* As described this instance of whistling while both hands were controlled has not been explained by any hypothesis. But the early stage of the experiments suggests that perhaps the description is not accurate or that mal-observation has affected the account of the facts. It is not easy to conceive Miss Burton holding the trumpet in her mouth and whistling into it and

[The two hands executed exactly the same movements with the hands of Drs. Hamilton and Smyth. They compared notes many times during the period they were in this process. There are many variations of the way one can touch or hold another's hands, and they found that she always had the two in exactly the same relative position. The younger of the two physicians had had seventeen years' experience in the practice of medicine and some sleight of hand, and both of them know whether a patient is in a feigned trance or a genuine one as recognized in medicine.]

In the last experiment, Dr. Smyth was sitting between the phonograph and Miss Burton, he being on her left side, while Dr. Hamilton sat on her right side. Miss Burton's hands were free, with those of Drs. Hamilton and Smyth where she could grasp them. In a few moments, and while the whistling went on, Miss Burton grasped Dr. Smyth's right hand with her left, and Dr. Hamilton's left hand with her right, and arranged their hands on each side of the larynx. This gave them a finger-tip on the table and still enabled them to control her hands perfectly. This touching of the throat while entranced always causes resistance and there is often a pause until the conditions become suitable for the occurrence of phenomena. They could apparently feel hands stroking her throat, "Treating her," as the controls put it, and she soon quieted down and the whistling began. It was not nearly as marked as the singing, but it was very evident, as even her controls insisted, that she took part in the act. To make the above clearer, Dr. Hamilton stated that they did not touch her throat with the hands they held her with, but with the other and free hand. She can stand only the slightest pressure on her throat at this time, and then only the tips of the fingers on the sides of the larynx. A voice was heard from the trumpet; in front, but while they felt vibrations, they could not hear the slightest sound from the lips.

It had been requested and arranged that Dr. Hamilton should keep a record of all that happened and in the order of its appearance. While he was doing this, a hand came and tried to

---

moving it about at the same time. Later developments suggest that the experimenters have given an adequate account of what really happened.

take the pencil away. Dr. Hamilton, the writer, held the medium with his left hand and Dr. Smyth held her with his right, so that, while each hand of the medium was held, hands apparently came to Dr. Hamilton's right hand and tried to take the pencil away, which they were allowed to do, and soon Dr. Smyth remarked that they were writing on the back of his hand. Very soon they came over and scribbled on the back of Dr. Hamilton's hand and tried to write something, but it was unintelligible. There may have been some escape of one of her hands on the occasion, but it was not detected at the time.

The medium now folded her two hands and their two in such a way in front of her that Dr. Hamilton touched her two hands with his left hand and Dr. Smyth's right hand. Her heels were then placed on our toes and in this position apparently hands or some object touched them, and especially on the right side of Dr. Hamilton.

Attempts were made to get singing and whistling but, while it would start, in a few seconds the trumpet would stop and Dr. Hamilton imagined he could hear the medium say something, but it was not distinct enough to be sure. Later both Dr. Hamilton and Dr. Smyth heard the sentence "You can't do it" repeated several times. This occurred with much writhing and twisting which they could not control, although the hands seemed to be stroking her all the time. They finally asked Dr. Smyth to resume his former seat and later they would try this again, as it was the first time that anyone had sat between Mrs. Milton and the medium or that two had touched her while entranced. Dr. Smyth moved away to his former seat and then the phenomena began very briskly. Hands and fingers ran up Dr. Hamilton's left side next the medium, over Dr. Hamilton's head, down his right arm, around the edge of the table, up Dr. Smyth's left arm and over his head and again around the table.

[It is probable that the medium could touch Dr. Smyth when standing, if the table was open, by placing her body in the opening between the leaves.]

Many similar physical phenomena occurred, but often they were loudest and strongest when the left hand of the medium was at liberty, and they are therefore not related.

Dr. Hamilton's handkerchief was tied tightly over the mouth

of the medium and each of the three in the circle was taken to inspect the mouth and see that it was firmly and tightly tied,—so much so, in fact, as to leave ridges in the face. The music was started and Dr. Hamilton held the right hand. Then the tambourine, two bells, and whistling were heard at the same time. Later, they played the bones, but to get good results Dr. Hamilton could only touch the hand at times. Apparently to Dr. Hamilton, she did not actually participate in the playing, but the circumstances did not permit of absolute assurance on this point.\*

The tambourine was then laid down at the front and the right of Dr. Hamilton and he was asked to catch the hands or the fingers that tapped the rim in time to music. He still held the right hand of the medium in his left, the medium being entranced in all this work, unless otherwise stated. Dr. Hamilton tried his best to touch or feel the fingers or hands that were touching the rim and heading of the tambourine. He found that he could not, all the while the time being kept perfectly. He finally gave it up; and was then asked to try again, when he found he could at times touch a finger. Dr. Smyth was very skeptical about it and desired very much to be allowed to try for himself. This was allowed, and they found that unless they wished it he could not touch them.

The next was whistling, with both hands of the medium held by the left hand of Dr. Hamilton and his right hand over the mouth of the medium.

They then tied the mouth of the medium; but her hands were released and two tried to whistle at the same time, but failed to do well, although they apparently did whistle a bar or so. This, however, was considered a failure because it was not repeated to make assurance.

They then moved the medium farther away from the phonograph and asked the controls to start and stop it with both hands and feet of the medium held by Dr. Hamilton while Dr. Smyth

---

\* The explanation of the whistling when the mouth was tied is not easy. The ringing of the bells and playing the tambourine are not perplexing, provided the left hand was free. We may suppose, however, that the handkerchief had been moved down temporarily from the mouth and put back after the whistling was done. The report says nothing on this point whether it was possible or not.

held both hands of Mrs. Milton. After half an hour's effort they succeeded in starting and stopping it, but this exhausted the medium to a very marked degree. They then rested and desired Dr. Hamilton to take the stethoscope and listen to her heart, which he did. He found it was about 80, when it had been about 68 before, besides being very irregular and uneven. She writhed and twisted his hands during the experiment and made the greatest possible efforts to start and stop the machine. When Dr. Hamilton finally said "I will release her right hand," they replied "No;" and she took such a firm hold he could not have released them without a struggle with her.

During all this time, Dr. Smyth held firmly the hands of Mrs. Milton.

In the opinion of the investigators, neither of the other two could possibly have turned off or on this machine by the use of hands or feet, whatever other methods may be supposed.

The medium was released from control by joining the hands of Dr. Hamilton and Mrs. Milton. The light was turned on by Dr. Smyth and both examined the doors and seals and found them intact and unbroken. Séance closed 11.45 p. m. Medium was much exhausted and had sick headache all the next day.\*

January 20th, 1911.

Present, Dr. Hamilton and Mrs. Milton.

The incident here reported took place at a sitting which was not made a matter of record at the time. It occurred during the progress of the séance with the ordinary phenomena usually occurring under Miss Burton's influence. During the evening, with the room in total darkness, and while sitting at the right of the medium I was made aware of the presence of a foreign body, in my left eye which began paining me very much and caused me to speak about it. Immediately a hand came out of the darkness

---

\* It is impossible to recover the date of the following incident, but as it occurred early in the experiments of Drs. Hamilton and Smyth I shall place it at a convenient place and mark the date of the written record which the reader will see is long after the original event. Its chief interest lies in its being unusual without superficially proving or illustrating the supernormal. It does not offer any evidence of the claims which many would make for it, even tho explicable by such a source, but it does illustrate a difficulty for the theory of naturally acquired skill.

and began stroking my eye in a very unusual manner and with unusual delicacy of touch. The invisible hand placed the tips of the index and middle finger on the upper eyelid at the outer canthus and by a delicate stroke with an inward and rolling motion carried the finger tips to the inner canthus and then beginning over repeated the act several times until the foreign body was removed. The hand that carried out the operation seemed to know the moment that the object was removed from the eye. The skill in handling the eye was very striking and impressed me very much. I had years before made a practice of eye-surgery and my impressions about the skill used were based upon considerable experience with manipulations of the eye.

At another sitting with Miss Burton the experiment was repeated while several friends were present. This time a small cinder or other object, having gotten into the eye while riding on a railroad train, was removed in a similarly dexterous manner. The object was very small and had been in the eye for several hours. My wife tried hard to remove it and failing my next impulse was to go to an oculist but as I was due at the house of Miss Burton to witness a séance with the intention of securing a retrial of the experiment of removing the object under mediumistic direction. As soon as I was seated at the side of Miss Burton and she was entranced the hand as before made a number of efforts to remove the mote and failed but continued at intervals, and lastly instructed me to put both hands on the table, which I did, and without my being able to hear the medium leave the chair I found myself being handled as tho by an expert. My head was seized between the two hands, a handkerchief was placed upon my forehead folded carefully, the eyelashes were delicately seized, a lead pencil was slipped under the eyelid, the eyelid being drawn down over the pencil, the pencil was moved inward toward the inner canthus, and after repeating the operation a second time a loud rap was made upon the table several times to indicate that the object had been removed. At the conclusion, owing to the irritation of the eye, it was impossible to confirm or deny the statement that the object had been removed, but to my surprise a few minutes were sufficient to prove to me that the operation had been successful. This was done in absolute darkness and the delicate handling of the eye gave

me confidence in the hand that was directing the movements. It created a profound impression upon my mind.

JOHN S. SMYTH.

June 3, 1908, 8.20 P. M.

Present: Mrs. Milton, Miss Burton, Dr. Smyth, Dr. Hamilton.

Temperature cool, 65 degrees. Barometer, 29.58.

Adhesive wafers,  $3 \times 1\frac{1}{2}$  inches, signed by both observers, were pasted three on each door. The kitchen door had the wedge before described driven in from the dining-room side, in which the sitting was held, and the folding-doors were raised until the bolt would pass through. They were also sealed and the windows locked.

It was again requested that the medium be not allowed to get close to either the phonograph or Mrs. Milton.

Bells were rung and toy drum played, but not in test conditions.

[Best results were obtained when they (the investigators) did not insist on holding or touching the medium all the time but allowed the controls to "get strong," as they term it, and then asked for some test on the investigators' conditions.]

Mrs. Milton said that early in this work and before any tests were begun, Miss Burton had much trouble in answering questions and could not talk if there had just been singing or whistling. On questioning Miss Burton, she did not know whether she could speak or not when the singing was going on, but thought it would be very hard to do so. The controls said that ordinarily she could not, but that they would not entrance her until they had some singing and would see if she could speak.

Oma sang and finally, when Miss Burton was about to speak, the effort interrupted the singing, the trumpet fell, and she felt as though she would choke but finally succeeded in saying something. The investigators noticed many times that she did not answer promptly, especially if singing or whistling was going on.

The medium suddenly went into a deeper trance while the whistling occurred, which was indicated by a sudden jerk of her hands. It is only in the superficial trance that she is able to answer questions. In the deeper trance she is wholly unable to



do so. In this deeper trance which followed, the whistling became louder and was rendered very skilfully. Without her knowledge of what he was doing or intended to do, Dr. Hamilton suddenly touched her lips when, at the instant, the trumpet fell down.

Another experiment followed: While Dr. Hamilton was holding the right hand of the medium, the toy drum was placed on the front between the opening of the table; whether by Dr. Hamilton or by Dr. Smyth was not recorded at the time, but it was one of the two. Drum-sticks were used to rub the legs of Dr. Hamilton and Dr. Smyth, one at each leg at the same time. The drum playing was poor. There were, of course, no test conditions.

There followed loud whistling, which was well done. A hand took Dr. Hamilton's right hand to the medium's mouth which he found pursed not in the ordinary manner of whistlers but in one that is sometimes adopted.

The controls asked for light to examine the mouth, but when examined it was found greatly relaxed, so that it was not just exactly as it was when Dr. Hamilton examined it before the light was turned on.

The controls now took Dr. Hamilton's handkerchief and tightly bandaged the mouth of the medium. Singing began, very strong and well done. During the singing the hand of Dr. Hamilton was taken to her mouth, to show that she could not have made the sounds. Dr. Hamilton remarked that the phenomenon seemed stronger with her mouth bandaged than without this condition, and immediately the answer was made through the trumpet: "It is because your thoughts act as a physical force, and if you feel certain her mouth is bandaged you do not dwell on it, and thus we can do better."

Silence now ensued for a long time, with some abortive attempts to do something. Finally Mrs. Galton, deceased sister of Mrs. Milton, said through the trumpet: "You two are each willing us to do different things. This prevents us doing anything, and you must agree as to the things desired as tests or we cannot get results. When your mind is at rest, or a whole, we can do anything."

This was true, as Dr. Hamilton and Dr. Smyth each was

thinking of different ways in which they wanted things done and had been unwilling to give in each to the other.

The medium then went into a deeper trance again, Dr. Hamilton holding the right hand in his left. Frequently her left hand was brought over to the right during the various phenomena, to allow Dr. Hamilton to judge as to whether she was herself responsible for them. Her mouth was then bandaged. Mrs. Galton,—who was a frequent spirit attendant of the circle and, as above remarked, was Mrs. Milton's deceased sister,—apparently being the control, took the small pad from the right hand of Dr. Hamilton, followed the edge of the table around to the left hand of Dr. Smyth, ran up his arm, over his head and down the right arm to Mrs. Milton; then to the medium and up over Dr. Hamilton the same way, and went around the circle several times in this manner. On request, she came to the right side of Dr. Hamilton, and with her hand enfolding his, she guided the pencil to write her name, the writing being very legible, but much run together.

Dr. Hamilton now asked Mrs. Galton to touch the extended tip of his right forefinger pointed straight up in the air, and this she did several times with unerring accuracy, even when he placed his other fingers and thumb around it with the purpose of seeing whether she would touch around or feel for the finger. This was tried three times with the hand pointed in various positions, and always with the same result. Dr. Smyth now tried the same experiment with less accurate results at first. Finally they succeeded as well as with Dr. Hamilton.

[They tried to accomplish this test with each other, but found that, when the forefinger which was to be touched was moved a number of inches from where it had been located before, it was impossible to touch the forefinger without touching some of the other fingers surrounding it. Each would feel the other fingers at various parts of the hand before the tip of the forefinger was touched. But in the experiments with Mrs. Galton you had but to extend your forefinger guarded by the others and thumb, and say "Touch me!" When as lightly as a butterfly a touch would come exactly on the tip. Remember that this was all done in darkness no eye could penetrate.] \*

\* Apparently some form of clairvoyance or perception without light

In the next experiment, various lights were manifested around the medium, and when they were asked what the light was they threw one at Dr. Hamilton, who at once smelled phosphorus, and they say that this is what the light is. They told Dr. Smyth, before any test sittings were made, that the lights they used were phosphorus. He asked if it was from matches, and they replied that it was not. When these lights touch you they seem as though some luminous point was on the end of a finger, and there is no doubt that this is the case, because a light is sometimes visible to Mrs. Milton and Dr. Smyth which Dr. Hamilton cannot see until it turns around.

Dr. Hamilton thinks he cannot exactly produce these lights, unless some new formula is on the market. There is quite a difference between the lights magicians use and these lights. Many would not notice the difference.

They had been asking the control each night to allow them to feel the pulse of the arms and hands which were claimed to be materializations, and just before they closed the experiment Dr. Smyth asked again if they would try, and they said they would.

The medium was allowed to rest for a while and when the experiment was resumed a hand came to Dr. Smyth, but he was unable to satisfy himself assuredly that he felt the pulse. Dr. Hamilton had first been feeling the pulse of the alleged materialized hand with his left hand. But finally his right hand was placed on the medium's right wrist and his left hand lay on the top of the right one, crossing the arms, so that this left hand lay on the table fingers up. The supposed spirit arm and wrist tried to light, as it were, on his upturned fingers in such a way that he could feel both pulses at the same time and see if the beat were identical, but he found it impossible, with his arms crossed, to differentiate between the pulses and asked to resume the old position,—that is, with the left hand on the pulse of the right wrist of the medium, so that the spirit wrist would come to the

---

was involved in this experiment. It does not otherwise involve anything physically inexplicable. I noticed similar phenomena spontaneously occurring in some of my own experiments, tho not occurring at others where its occurrence would have revealed my desire to discover Miss Burton doing certain things

right hand in its accustomed place, resting on the table and in front and to the right of his own body. This was easier, inasmuch as the supposed spirit hand was a left one and the left hand of the medium was free. In the experiment, the fingers of the supposed spirit hand pointed directly toward the medium and not away from her, as one would naturally suppose in case her left hand was used. If she had turned her arm about in such a way as to point her fingers from her body, the phenomenon would be easily explained, and it is probable that this is what took place. Dr. Hamilton then got three or four beats, a distinct pulse more bounding and fuller than the medium's. He cannot describe it exactly, but thinks it was by no means the same pulse as the medium's. They promised that, as they grew stronger, any tests desired could be made and that afterwards they would answer any questions.\*

The control now began to disentrance the medium, when Dr. Smyth suggested that Mrs. Galton had not taken leave of the circle in her characteristic manner, which is to slip her fingers under the sitters' fingers no matter where sitting, and slowly raise him to a standing position with fingers extended to the highest possible point, and then slowly kiss the back of the fingers. Many times the investigators have asked them to repeat and apparently could feel the outline of a face very distinctly. With Dr. Smyth in this position no one in the room can touch his finger tips. It is quite possible that the feeling of a face is an illusion. Further experiment leading to the explanation of the phenomenon made this clear.

She came to Dr. Hamilton first and raised his hand with the evident intention of raising him from the chair, but at his chiding this poor performance she raised him standing, with arm raised as high as he could reach, and then there came a pull at the fingers

---

\*The point in this experiment is not that there were two separate pulses in space but in time, tho the real or apparent claim is that there were two separate pulses and organisms. The experiment does not establish this fact and does not claim to have evidence for it. But it is apparent that one set of pulse beats was as distinct in kind from the other as if they belonged to different people. This is the interesting feature of the result and involves a capacity to alter the pulse or heart action, whether it be due to auto-suggestion or to extraneous influence.

good and hard and the kiss. He seated himself, or attempted to do so, and his hand was seized again and the same performance repeated, and just as he touched the chair again it was repeated for the third time.

After this good-bye, the medium came out of the trance—eighteen minutes after twelve.

Drs Hamilton and Smyth examined the seals and found them all unbroken, doors locked, and wedge in its place.

June 8, 1908, 8.30 P. M.

Present: Mrs. Milton, Miss Burton, Dr. Smyth, Dr. Hamilton.

Temperature, 72 degrees. Barometer, 29.32.

Adhesive wafers, signed in aniline pencil by Drs. Hamilton and Smyth, were placed on the kitchen door and wedge driven in. The folding doors were locked and two wafers placed on the doors. The windows which faced Dr. Hamilton had been discussed, but careful notice had been taken that if any confederates had attempted to enter by this route Dr. Hamilton could have seen them, for the street lights shone on these windows, and when the windows were open from the top, as they used to have them for ventilation, draughts of air would blow the shades out and so much light would enter the room that they could discern where each was. And to-night finding the windows screened over the size of the entire opening and hooked on the inside, they decided not to seal them.

The usual positions were taken, when the control announced that the windows must be closed and sealed. After some discussion, they said that, so far as they were concerned, it did not matter, but they wanted no uncertainty about tests. On account of the heat and in view of the fact that the screens were locked on and that the slightest movement of the shades could be distinctly seen by Dr. Hamilton, it was decided to allow the windows to remain as they had been arranged.

The trumpet announced: "You can have and do anything you want, but we do not want an argument on any subject."

While Mrs. Milton was opening the windows the most violent movements of the table were felt; really "slamming it around"

is the only expression that does it justice. The light was bright enough to see everyone in the room and easily to recognize who each one was. Dr. Hamilton did not have any contact with the medium but could see her very plainly and she sat, as she always does, passively and quietly.

They heard a peculiar squeak to the table, and having heard it before wondered how it was produced. Dr. Hamilton was touching the medium's right hand, when a hand apparently from under the table pulled at his elbow. This meant that he should come down with his hand, which he did, and the supposed spirit hand placed Dr. Hamilton's hand on a lever which is used to lock the table together when all the leaves are out. This table has a single central pedestal and is called, Dr. Hamilton thinks, "a pedestal-lock table": when extended, the pedestal divides into two halves, one remaining with each end. This lever runs to a bolt in the center, which fastens the two halves when together. The hand showed Dr. Hamilton how ordinarily the lever swung back and forth and made no noise, but when pressing upward it would squeak by friction on the wood. Dr. Hamilton was holding the medium's right hand, as before stated, and as he swung the lever under the table he could feel the left hand of the medium. Those present were so closely seated at this time that it would take a great deal of practice for a confederate to do it, because of the difficulty of disposing of one's body. The control was asked to fully extend the table and leave the medium and Dr. Hamilton at one end and Mrs. Milton and Dr. Smyth at the other. This they did, and the lights were turned on. Mrs. Milton was compelled to change her seat because the table came up so far, and while in this position she rose and walked over to the machine to wind and replace it. The table is 4 feet 2 inches wide and 8 feet 3 inches long. Mrs. Milton was sitting at one end of the table at the corner opposite to where the medium sat. The phonograph was at the same end but on the opposite side of the table, that is, on the same side of the table as the medium and Dr. Hamilton. Dr. Smyth sat on the opposite side of the table but at the same end as the medium and Dr. Hamilton. In these conditions, bell ringing followed, and in answer to whether the sitters could pass anything to each other the bell was placed on Dr. Hamilton's right hand and he was forcibly pulled across the

table toward Mrs. Milton and Dr. Smyth, but at the farthest stretch he could not touch them. Lights were called for to allow examination.

The medium had not been deeply entranced and, as she had resisted somewhat and had removed her hands from the table several times when about to go under, she with a sudden jerk went into the deeper trance.

The investigators then asked the control to stop the phonograph under these conditions, that is, the medium six feet away from the phonograph and both hands held by Dr. Hamilton. Mrs. Milton was not in her usual position,—that is, very near the phonograph—but as described above, at the other corner of the table and both hands were held by Dr. Smyth. The controls said their usual modest “We will try” and made efforts for forty-five minutes and finally succeeded in stopping the phonograph, but tired the medium greatly. When asked if they could do it, they replied, “We will do it before we stop.” At no other time had the medium been as far away from the phonograph when phenomena of the kind were produced.\*

After this the hands were released, the usual whistling, ringing of bell, tambourine, etc., were done, but not under test conditions.

Dr. Hamilton asked them to allow him to place the trumpet across the table toward Dr. Smyth, to hold both hands of the medium, and to have them whistle in it. This they did and Dr. Hamilton was confirmed in what he had thought took place at a previous test exactly like this, namely smelling the breath of the medium. She has a slight catarrhal odor to her breath and, while Dr. Hamilton could not differentiate it from others with the same trouble, he can tell her breath from anyone's else in the room. Any specialist in ear work or doing nose and throat work will appreciate the odor so frequently observed in similar cases.

---

\* The description of details is probably not as complete in this experiment as is desirable, and considering that the account was intended only to be a tentative one until better conditions were obtained, it is not to be regarded as implying satisfactory results. Inquiry of Dr. Hamilton resulted in the statement that the time involved in the experiment, with free moments in it, made possible the employment of methods like those used in my own similar experiments.



Now Dr. Hamilton was holding both hands of the medium at the time and the trumpet was lying on the table in front of him with the small end toward Dr. Smyth and the larger end toward himself. He does not see how Miss Burton could have done this in the ordinary way but he is sure of the breath as described, having suspected this before he asked for the test to confirm it. They asked Mrs. Galton, one of the controls, if it was true that Dr. Hamilton smelled the breath, and she said "Yes," and also that if the medium had odor on her breath it would be possible to smell it in the voices, et cetera. Dr. Smyth wanted to try the experiment to see if he could identify the breath, but he could not indentify it. Dr. Hamilton tried again with a negative result.

Dr. Smyth asked the control to materialize a face for him so that he could feel it. This they did on the stringer nearest him in the table, which was on the side opposite to that where the medium sat. Dr. Hamilton was taken to feel it and identified the face as a face and thought he felt a mole on the left side near the angle of the mouth. Dr. Smyth kept trying to feel a carotid pulse, but could not be certain that he did so. Dr. Hamilton was then allowed to touch the right side of the face, forehead and part of the left side. From his sense of touch he described a face which Mrs. Milton thought she recognized. Both hands of the medium were held during much of the time, but the hands were not held while the description of the face was being made. They were held both before and after. Dr. Smyth also felt the mole, by the direction of an apparent spirit hand which of course may have been Miss Burton's. They felt the radial pulse and the arm from elbow to wrist. The reason for feeling the radial pulse was simply that it gave an opportunity to manipulate the hands more and to act as a blind to our real purpose.

Dr. Hamilton was holding the pulse of the medium and thought the spirit pulse was not as strong as the night before, and Dr. Smyth thought it better than the one he felt in the previous experiment. Apparently the pulse may vary in different sides of the body.

Mrs. Milton was very tired and the phenomena were slow in coming, although they were good, such as they were. Sitting closed at 12.38. Doors and seals were examined and found unbroken.

June 10, 1908, 8.20 P. M.

Present: Mrs. Milton, Miss Burton, Dr. Smyth, Dr. Hamilton,  
Temperature 68. Barometer 29.40.

Doors locked and sealed as in previous tests. Medium held by the right hand by Dr. Hamilton. Trumpet went to the ceiling, etc., and attention was called to the rapidity of movement among the chandelier glassware without touching anything.

We had asked the privilege of tying the medium and we were told now to go ahead. The conditions were as follows: the table extended about 6 feet and the medium sitting about in the middle, with Dr. Hamilton at her side. Mrs. Milton was not quite so close to the phonograph, and Dr. Smyth was directly opposite the medium. White buttonhole twist "D" was used, and she was tied as shown in the diagram. One hand was tied under Dr. Smyth's right hand, in a hard knot around the girder of the table, and a signed paster placed over the knot. Then the thread was carried to the opposite girder and tied in a secure knot around the girder, and then the medium's wrist was tied securely to the girder half a dozen times, each being tied snugly and knots pulled hard. The thread was then carried to the right hand and the knots repeated, and then carried back to Dr. Smyth's left and tied in a hard knot and sealed, as the hands were sealed on the right side. Especial thought was given to any possibility of gaining space for one hand by stealing slack from the other, and this was not possible. Nor could she lift on the girder with her finger-tips, as the wrist was tied flat on a two-inch surface. While she could push down without breaking knots, she could not pull or lift. After this, the medium became entranced.

The table lifted up or tipped away from the medium and the portion that did this was raised to a height of one foot. Dr. Smyth's handkerchief was taken, apparently by a spirit hand, and tied over the medium's mouth in a knot at the back of the head. Dr. Hamilton was touched with hands while this was going on. Light was asked for and the medium was examined and found to be safely tied as described. Lenore sang through the trumpet very well and louder than she usually does. Then whistling followed and the control said very frequently, "Put your hands up to her mouth," which Dr. Hamilton did and found everything intact. They now said, "Tie feet." Asked

whether it should be rope or silk, they replied "Either." Dr. Hamilton felt that silk was the better, because if she made any effort to use her feet or hands or if force were used, the silk would snap and they understood that broken silk would be no test. They said the investigators could have one light, but only the one-candle power orange. But as Dr. Hamilton wished to do it thoroughly, he told Dr. Smyth that he could put out the light and that he himself would sit on the floor and tie with silk. He began with the right ankle and tied the loop with a hard knot and two or three knots on top of this around the ankle, and then, with only two strands of silk, to the leg of the chair, thinking she might break them if she attempted to use her feet. Dr. Hamilton found her skirt in the way and mentally or orally said to himself "I wish I had someone to hold up her skirt," when down came a hand from somewhere and raised it whilst he tied her, all in the dark. He then repeated the tying on the left side, and again the assistance came and raised the skirt, and he was surprised that at the second he cut the thread they allowed the skirt to drop. [Any such little points, while they do not seem very evidential, are very convincing to the sitter, as no confederate could possibly have known the instant when Dr. Hamilton was ready to have the skirt drop, and it surprised him so on the right side he was prepared to watch very carefully for the same result on the left.]

The tapping, which had been all over the table, was now confined to the chair of the medium and never moved during the time she was tied. The whistling, singing, and movement of the trumpet took place, but the sphere and amount of the manifestations were much lessened. The trumpet finally said to Dr. Hamilton, "We are losing control of our medium; please hold her hand." He found her writhing, shivering, and cold, and pulse not good. The explanation of the investigators, aided by the statements of the controls, is that she ordinarily moves considerably and raises herself and frequently shakes and gives sudden jerks. This they dared not allow her to do under the present conditions for fear of breaking the silk, and the main control, who rapped always on the chair, was holding her all the time to prevent a sudden jerk from breaking the twist. This tired her greatly and she got very restless and nervous when restrained.

But she soon improved, quieted down, the hands warmed up, and the pulse became better. They then tried to touch Dr. Smyth's hands, but at first were unable to do it, and after many attempts they succeeded.

Drs. Hamilton and Smyth told them they were satisfied for the first tying test and asked for light to examine the knots, as she was jerking again and they feared the breaking of the thread and loss of test conditions up to that point. The controls permitted light, which was turned on and the investigators carefully examined and found each knot intact and some deep cuts in the skin from the thread. When they put the light out they asked for the knife of Dr. Hamilton with which to cut her loose. They dropped the knife when given and Dr. Smyth picked it up and wanted them to take it from him. This was before they had cut any of the cords. They were again very slow in taking the knife from him, and later Dr. Smyth said he was holding the strings taut that ran under his hands. They asked for light to show that she was still tied. Upon examination she was found to be still tied. They then took the knife from Dr. Smyth and cut her loose and the investigators did not ask for any more tests by holding the medium.

They then attempted to let Dr. Smyth examine with his fingers a materialized face that was familiar to him in life, and they desired Dr. Hamilton to hold the medium's right hand with his left hand and to place his right hand on the table firmly. Dr. Smyth taking much time, Dr. Hamilton jokingly said that he would let go and spoil everything if he did not hurry. At once a hand came and placed Dr. Hamilton's left hand four inches from the medium's and, after allowing Dr. Smyth to examine the materialized face and special features—hair, lips, forehead, and ears,—it touched Dr. Hamilton tauntingly and said, "We put your hand on her hand as a test, as well as for strength;" and then later, "We can do it without you, but you give us strength." The pulse was much as before, only it was much easier and better. There was very great similarity of the two pulses. Mrs. Galton, one of the controls, was asked to write her name and began leaning over Dr. Hamilton's right hand. He mentally thought, "She's going to write the name Maude," which was her name, and tried to influence her mentally to do so. The trumpet was picked

up and the control said "Don't make me write Maude! I want to write, and you won't let me. You make me write what you want to." Dr. Hamilton promised to do better and she wrote something, using his hand, but in the dim light he could not read it, and asked her to write it alone. The table, during the sitting, was pushed more toward Dr. Smyth and the sideboard, and the chandelier was nearly over Dr. Hamilton's head. The hand took the pad and pencil presumably up toward the chandelier, as the tapping was apparently on the fixture, and wrote something and dropped the pad on Dr. Hamilton's hand. The light was turned up, but Dr. Hamilton could not read the writing and asked her to tell him through the trumpet what she wrote. Her reply was: "If you cannot read it, I shall never tell you."

She then gave the characteristic good-bye and spoke independently in the trumpet: "Have we given you good tests tonight?" The voice was emitted about six inches from the sitters. The sitting closed at 12 midnight. The light was turned up, and the word written by Mrs. Galton was "Frank," her sister's name. The pasters were unbroken.

This was the most perplexing experiment we had and I cannot explain it now. We could never get it reproduced, a fact that lessens its value and increases the possibility of mal-observation.

June 15, 1908.

Present: Miss Burton, Mrs Milton, Dr. Smyth, Dr. Hamilton. Temperature, 57 degrees. Barometer, 29.60.

Usual sealing of the doors, etc. Began the sitting with a ruby "hylo" of one-candle power. Table was moved around, closed, and extended while every one of the sitters could plainly be seen, and raps were heard under the table. To get stronger phenomena, they turned out the light, and very soon the table was extended in the usual position, as in the earlier sittings.

Whistling occurred, as reported before, but only preparatory to further experiment. As Dr. Smyth had been present at a sitting on the previous Saturday evening alone and not under test conditions, he wished now to try something he had done at the

Saturday sitting above mentioned. He sat in his usual place and took the smaller half of the trumpet and placed it with the smaller end in the opening of his ear on the left side. He then asked for someone to whistle in the big end while he held it. This the controls did, and measurement showed the ends to be four feet from any possible contact with the medium.

Dr. Hamilton, then sitting at his usual place, put the small end of the trumpet in his right ear, the medium sitting on his left hand, and asked the controls to come and hold the trumpet to his ear and whistle in it, which they did while Dr. Hamilton held both hands of the medium, as he had done during the same test for Dr. Smyth.

Lenore, one of the trance personalities, raised the tambourine from the floor, but said that Dr. Hamilton was not holding the medium's hands. She repeated the experiment and played over the sitter's heads and touched Drs. Hamilton and Smyth on the right and left shoulders respectively.

Dr. Hamilton found the hands of the medium very cold, as well as her arms, and asked the control to touch the observers with a very warm hand, which was apparently done, although the touch was so fleeting that it is difficult to say how warm it was.

Drs. Hamilton and Smyth felt the hands of the medium both before and after this and they were still cold. Mrs. Milton got a big napkin to put over her shoulders. [The room was sealed and no one could get out without breaking the seals.] The control took away the napkin and for some reason would not allow it to stay on the medium's shoulders.

Dr. Hamilton was promptly pushed back whenever he leaned very far forward, as was necessary to hear talking when the phonograph was playing. It is difficult to understand how the medium could become aware of this unless hyperæsthetic in hearing, as it was all done in complete darkness. He asked her now if it made any difference and the controls said "No," and then shoved him forward. For ten minutes, whenever he tried to straighten up they pushed him forward on the back and the back of the head, until he finally said that he did not wish any position all of the time. They then desisted.

Dr. Smyth now took the trumpet and held it in both hands parallel with the long axis of the table and three feet from the

medium's face. The controls then tried to sing and to allow Dr. Hamilton to hold the medium whilst Dr. Smyth held the trumpet and felt the larynx of the singer, presumably a materialized one. They could sing and he could feel a little of the face but they could not allow him to feel the larynx, although they promised to do their best some time later.

The medium had been working very hard all day at housework, and so also had Mrs. Milton. This had the effect of reducing the phenomena very much and the meeting was brought to a close at 11.30 P. M. Seals were found as they were when put on.

June 19, 1909, 8.20 P. M.

Present: Miss Burton, Mrs. Milton, Dr. Hamilton, Dr. Smyth.

Warm all day, suddenly cooled off at sundown. Southwest storm and winds. Barometer, 29.40. Temperature, 75 degrees.

Medium's pulse, 84, temperature, 98.8.

The table was suddenly extended to its full length, 11 feet, and then partially closed and opened. During this time someone has rung some bells and the table has been opened and shut.

Dr. Hamilton had taken the medium's temperature at the beginning of the sitting, and wished the controls now to bandage her mouth, to allow him to hold his hand over her bandaged mouth, to hold her hands, and take the temperature of the supposed materialized spirit. For accuracy, he washed the same thermometer used on the medium, and after the controls had bandaged her a hand came and placed the left hand of Dr. Hamilton over the handkerchief, and with his right hand he held both of her hands. [The manner of holding the hands is usually for her to lay both hands palm down and side by side, and then Dr. Hamilton puts his hand at right angles to her fingers and crossing the eight fingers. Sometimes the two hands of the medium are placed palms together, and then Dr. Hamilton clasps the two hands of the medium by encircling the two hands.] A hand came and took the thermometer, and instructions were asked for, which were as follows: Push the tube under the tongue and hold closely, breathe through the nose and retain for three minutes. Although it was a supposed one-minute thermometer, for ac-



curacy it was desirable to have it retained beyond a question of doubt. The controls answered that it would be very difficult, but that they would try to do it. Dr. Hamilton put his hand over the mouth of the medium, over the bandage, and held her two hands, and in a few minutes a hand brought the thermometer and gave it to Dr. Hamilton. The controls then rapped for light and the mercury was found to stand at 98.9, just a trifle higher than the medium's had been thirty minutes before.

For the benefit of the layman, Dr. Hamilton states that 98.6 under the tongue or closely held under the arm or axilla is the normal temperature, but usually the axilla will not read as high as the mouth. The rectum temperature is 100.4 degrees and the vagina 100.9 degrees.

The controls claimed it was held in the mouth and that, in accordance with their previous statements and with the investigators' experiments, it was identical with the temperature of the medium they were using. And as these instruments are only marked in .1 degrees, one cannot read closer than that accurately. But that last reading was a shade more than the medium's temperature had been, so Dr. Hamilton marked it 98.9 and the medium's as 98.8.\*

After a short rest and singing, etc., it was requested that Oma sing in the trumpet and Dr. Hamilton be allowed to feel both hands of the medium and the larynx of the singer. Dr. Hamilton took both hands of the medium under his left hand, and the larger half of the trumpet was brought and placed over his right ear, on the side opposite from the medium; where the control held it while the right hand of Dr. Hamilton was taken and placed on the larynx of a singer, which vibrated exactly as though it were ordinary singing in a human body. During this test, remember, the medium's mouth was tightly bandaged with a handkerchief which was constantly examined by Dr. Hamilton and at his pleasure. Both observers had made this rule: "Nothing will be considered as evidence, unless observed more than once," because no one can accurately judge or observe something

---

\*If the description of this experiment be accurate there is more in it than the apparent rise of temperature. The inexplicable features of it will depend on the assurance that both hands were held and that there was no possible opportunity to use the mouth for the thermometer.

which he does not know is going to happen. Consequently, this feeling of the larynx was observed by Dr. Hamilton twice; once, the fingers with palm down, and the second time with palms up. It suddenly occurred to Dr. Hamilton that the medium had under her chin an enlarged gland, called the sublingual, which could easily be felt or palpated. This he desired to feel on the alleged spirit chin. This gland is three-quarters of an inch in diameter and a half-inch in thickness and can be found, when enlarged, in the center of the acute triangle formed by the jaw bones and about one inch back from the point of the chin. He thought he could not feel it, but as the rule was to feel and feel again until they knew, he asked that Dr. Smyth be allowed to feel and examine it. This the controls said they would allow later. Whistling then came on in the usual manner, with a shaking of floor and chairs. This whistling was very well executed.

The investigators had been asking for flash-lights of the physical manifestations and they said "We will try and let you photograph and try and get the trumpet suspended in the air, but cannot give you a form as it might hurt the medium." We had considerable conversation about this and they thought that if the medium were covered up with some black cloth the light might not shock her. They said bandaging the eyes alone would do no good, as the white light alone would hurt her, but not through the eyes. They said they did not know just what effect the light would have; would like to try one flash, at least, and they thought they would be able to control her.

Dr. Hamilton was now put in charge of her two hands, and Dr. Smyth's hand was placed under the chin of a head over on his side of the table (which was four feet in width). He first said, "Doctor, this chin has no enlarged gland." Then he suddenly exclaimed, "Why, an enlarged gland suddenly came up under my fingers!" Of course he must try it again and again and then Dr. Hamilton was allowed to try, and much to his surprise it was so plainly felt that any mistake was impossible. Dr. Hamilton had felt that Dr. Smyth must have been mistaken and that the supposed gland could be accounted for on other grounds, but to his utter surprise he first felt an ordinary chin of a young person. The whole four fingers of his hand, palm up, covered the under part of the chin, and careful palpation failed to discover the slight-

est evidence of an enlarged gland which, it may be said, is very easy and positive of discovery when it exists. Suddenly, the fingers detected a swelling and in a second or two one could feel an enlarged gland, the exact duplicate of that in the medium. This was not felt once only, and not merely repeated, but was done time and again for all. They first felt the medium's gland, and then the phenomena were repeated until every doubt was satisfied. Dr. Hamilton confessed that he thought it could be done by rolling the tongue around, but found that he could not do it in that manner. Mrs. Milton said she could come the nearest to it in a hard swallow but it only lasted for the fraction of a second, while in the act described it could be clearly felt and pinched up, lasting for some moments. Both observers consider this the most remarkable fact they have recorded and can hardly believe that it occurred. Had they only once had a chance to feel it, they would not have thought it worth while to make a note of it, but they confess that they were allowed to feel it so often and freely that they must record it as a fact. The explanation was not the important thing to be considered at the time; or perhaps at any time. The least that could be said is: a remarkable control of the glands and muscles of the throat.

Immediately following this experiment, the medium's mother, who is dead and claims to be among the number of spirits controlling her, said, "We want to develop Anna so she can give these tests to anyone and prove the truth of the tests, and if they give us half a chance we will do it." Later she said, "Unless we were honest we could not do this, and some people are very hard to convince, but we will do it."

The medium was very tired and rested her head on her arms without being touched. Later, while being held by both hands and her mouth unbandaged, Dr. Smyth held the trumpet over his left shoulder and the voice whistled in it for him.

Dr. Hamilton was told to feel the pulse of the medium and of a spirit at the same time, and again they were very nearly the same if not exactly so.

With the medium 44 inches from the phonograph and Mrs. Milton between Dr. Smyth and Dr. Hamilton [see diagram] the control turned off the machine, but could not start it. Some discussion arose as to how nearly the medium could come to the

machine by stretching her hand. The distance measured was 21 inches by steel tape.

June 23, 1908.

Present: Mrs. Milton, Miss Burton, Dr. Hamilton, Dr. Smyth.  
Temperature, 85 degrees. Barometer, 29.40.

Dr. Smyth was writing a popular account of some of the work and desired a photograph, which Dr. Hamilton was to take. They began at 8.10 P. M. and took two flash-lights in which the people were arranged as they had been during some of the phenomena, without actually having a sitting. Dr. Smyth then suggested a sitting for a short time; without sealing doors and windows. This was assented to and began at 9 P. M.

After some movements of the table, we began to ask about taking photographs of the trumpet suspended in the air, and the controls said, "We will take one picture with the medium uncovered and we want both hands to show, but we will have to entrance her. After that you must cover her up with some black cloth, and as soon as the balance of the photographs are taken you must help us to bring her out quickly."

Dr. Smyth was called to the telephone and told to call up the hospital, but as the telephone was working badly he was unable to get central. Mrs. Milton left the room to see if she could aid him. The one-candle power ruby "hylo" was turned on and the open doors between the dining-room and the front room admitted enough light to identify anyone and even to read headlines in a newspaper. The medium was entranced, with Dr. Hamilton by her side in the usual position, and Dr. Hamilton asked for raps, hardly thinking he could get them, with such disturbed conditions. But they were rapped out clearly and on any part of the table asked for, apparently coming from the position occupied by Dr. Smith or anywhere that they were asked for.

On the return of Dr. Smyth the sitting was resumed, but without manifestations of any moment. Dr. Hamilton noticed that he was pushed back whenever he leaned farther on the table than pleased the controls. They had fixed his hands where they wished them to be, and in this manner resented his movements

which displaced the hands. Dr. Hamilton tried the experiment several times without commenting on it. He had been placed with one hand touching the finger of the medium on the left hand, with the base of the palm about one inch from the free border of the table. And also the same position for his right hand. In explanation it might be said that before an attempt is made to do anything special, something hard with which the controls are not familiar, a hand goes around and arranges the contacts of sitter and medium, especially of Mrs. Milton and Dr. Hamilton, exactly as an electrician would inspect all his connections before an experiment, and Dr. Hamilton has frequently noted that he can spoil an experiment by raising his right hand from the table, even though it is but half an inch. He confesses he has done this many times to satisfy himself that it does have an effect, and in the great majority of instances a hand will replace his where it should be and at the same time more or less promptly slap the back of his hand, sometimes slamming his hand with great force down upon the table.

The interesting and perplexing feature of these experiments is the fact that it would seem to be beyond the possibility of the medium to know normally that the hand was moved, since the hand which she touches is not moved. Dr. Hamilton tested this so many times that he felt that in raising this hand he was breaking some kind of a necessary contact or current, and that the controls were aware at once of it, as an electrician would be of the failure of his apparatus to work. As he moved but one hand the medium could not know, nor could any confederate know when Dr. Hamilton raised or moved his hand two inches from the selected position, and this has been strong proof to him of the honesty of the sittings, and evidence of some unusual powers of perception.

Another curious thing to be noted was that if they are depending on his hand it makes a difference, but if they are not so depending, they can go on no matter how he moves his hands.

It is really tiresome at times to have to refrain from resting the wrists and arms on the table, but this evening, when nothing else could be done, they never failed to replace his hands at once, with unerring accuracy, when he misplaced them. Dr.

Hamilton is certain that no human confederate could, by any possibility, have known the instant he moved his hands.

The telephone rang again and Dr. Smyth and Mrs. Milton left the room without turning on the red light, but they opened the folding doors which allowed considerable light to enter the room from the hall. At the request of Dr. Hamilton, the trumpet was taken and the controls whistled very clearly. When the phonograph was at the end of the record they turned off the machine and started it again. This seemed to be a very good test, as Dr. Hamilton could see the arms of the medium and he watched the room very closely by the aid of light from the hall.

Dr. Smyth and Mrs. Milton were unable to call up "central" and returned, but the manifestations were poor after that.

We suspected that our frequent interruptions disturbed conditions, as the controls dislike very much to have anyone leave the room, although Mrs. Milton does not pay much attention to any of their suggestions. When the family is sitting, they very frequently leave the room.

Dr. Smyth had a very sick patient at the hospital and was unable to get the nurse on the telephone and hence he began to quiz the control regarding the conditions there; but the chief control, called Dan, is very cautious and will never say "Yes" unless he is certain, his usual answer being "I don't know." Dr. Smyth questioned him and asked him to go to the hospital and to find out what the condition was there. As we were unable to get another response from him, he apparently tried to go, but Dr. Smyth felt that he would have to leave, and abandoned the circle at 11 o'clock.

Mrs. Milton tried to find out from her sister, Mrs. Galton, what the cause of the failure was, but was unable even to get her sister to answer. While Mrs. Milton was talking with her sister and was unable to find out what had caused the failure someone came and said, speaking through the trumpet, "The conditions are so bad we are unable to do anything and we are going to try and bring out the medium." Dr. Hamilton wondered very much at this statement, as the controls had never had any doubt before of their ability to bring her out, and he was very much interested in the struggle to bring her out, as Mrs. Milton did not seem to hear or understand the significance of the controls' wording of

their statement. Mrs. Milton and Dr. Hamilton tried to bring the medium out of the trance condition, which, before this occasion, had never taken fifteen minutes as a maximum, and usually five to nine minutes. Mrs. Milton was unable to obtain any response from Dan, except at long intervals, and then the replies did not seem at all like his. [There is a very marked personality in the different communicators who appear, and one can soon tell from the rap who is present.] Dr. Hamilton noted that the pulse and respiration of the medium were very slow and full, indicating a deep trance state, and that there was not the usual change indicating the termination of the state.

Usually the control could bring her out in five minutes at least, and usually he would ask Mrs. Milton and whoever sat by the medium to join hands, when, after a few jerks, she would be released. Now, however, they were told to keep the phonograph running and not to touch her and Dr. Hamilton became very suspicious that she was controlled by some one else with whom they had had trouble before the test sittings began. The chief control had told them that when he was about to release the medium he had to use great care to prevent this other spirit from occupying her just as the control let go of her, and Mrs. Milton, knowing that this control would be undesirable, had refused to allow it. From the actions of the medium, both Mrs. Milton and Dr. Hamilton thought this control was imitating the control of Dan, who had left and allowed this one to get in. Finally, they opened the windows, Mrs. Milton and Dr. Hamilton joined hands and turned on the small red light, and after one hour's time she was released but had been so deeply in that, until she could talk, she would slip back into the trance if not slapped on the hands and arms. It was most interesting to see the left hand of the entranced medium, with her eyes closed, fight off the touch of restraint of Mrs. Milton. Knowing that she does not desire or wish his control, the medium can apparently repulse with great strength anyone whose influence this control knows is antagonistic to his own. But finally they overcame the influence and the medium was awakened. Sitting closed at 12 P. M.



June 24, 1908, 8.40 P. M.

Present: Miss Burton, Mr. and Mrs. Milton, Dr. Smyth, Dr. Hamilton. In the office of Dr. Smyth.

Temperature, 70 degrees. Barometer, 24.60.

The sitting was held on the ground floor of Dr. Smyth's house and the medium had been prepared by the Doctor for this sitting. We sat around a small, light table 24 inches in diameter in the same relative positions we had always had and put Mr. Milton between Dr. Smyth and Dr. Hamilton. The medium was soon entranced. Dr. Hamilton held both hands of the medium and put his foot on both of hers; Dr. Smyth held both hands of Mrs. and Mr. Milton, and the phonograph was started and stopped many times,— at least twenty. They changed the record, raised and lowered the needle, started and stopped the machine, and brought the needle from the end of the record to the beginning without stopping the machine. During all this time, Dr. Hamilton held the medium by both hands and either hand, her feet on his or his foot across her two. Dr. Smyth held the hands of the other two present and accounted for their feet by having them place them against his feet. It is recognized that this does not fully account for their feet, but the investigators knew that it prevented changing the records with the feet, and they were so closely packed together that the slightest movement was known to everyone present and could be felt.\*

The controls now took a regulation clothes-line about thirty feet in length, which had been cut into parts, and began to tie the medium by the ankles to the chair. This was done rapidly and yet took considerable time, perhaps thirty minutes. They

---

\*This phenomenon is not easily explicable by any ordinary hypothesis. If it concerned only stopping the phonograph it might be explained by the methods discovered in my own experiments. But no such means can be employed to change the records and to change the place of the needle. We should have to suppose either that Dr. Hamilton is mistaken in the statement that he was holding both hands all the while or that a confederate was concerned. The only confederate supposable in the case would be Mrs. Milton and from what I know of holding Miss Burton's hands it is not easy to be deceived about holding them. Their action in my experiments was never of a kind that it was not easy to determine its nature. It may be that the account is not accurate enough to discover the weak point in the experiment.

then tied her left hand, which was close to the machine, tightly to her waist. Both arms and waist were tied tightly to the back of the chair, and Dr. Hamilton's left arm, from the wrist to the elbow, tightly tied to the medium's right arm. The knots were drawn uncomfortably tight, and no doubt an experienced cabinet operator, such as are known, could have loosened the left hand enough to have stopped the machine, but Dr. Hamilton does not think he could have done it without bending the body, and as he suspected this presently he watched carefully for movements, but there were none that were detectible. The medium was deeply entranced, without any doubt, as her respiration and pulse showed. A handkerchief was then tightly tied over her mouth, and then Dr. Smyth held Mr. and Mrs. Milton as he did nearly all the evening. The controls were able to start and stop the machine, and take up the trumpet and whistle, which was very well done and perhaps better than at almost any sitting since they began. The intimate contact with the medium seemed to irritate her and it certainly did Dr. Hamilton, so that after some singing and trumpet movements they began to untie her.

Then another experiment: Dr. Hamilton held both hands of the medium, Dr. Smyth held the hands of the two other persons present, and Oma sang more distinctly and loudly than she had ever done before. Mr. Milton asked if she had her mouth tied, which they had untied at the time of untying the rope, and Dr. Hamilton said "No," at which they took the handkerchief and tied her, after which Oma sang again and still louder. Dr. Smyth wished to feel the larynx of the singer and did so, clearly, several times.

They were manifesting their distrust of our grabbing the medium's hands. Dr. Smyth sat opposite the medium, and on this small table the larger half of the trumpet reached nearly to the face of Dr. Hamilton and the medium. Now when Dr. Smyth felt the larynx the trumpet was hooked over his left ear and pointed to the medium. Dr. Hamilton heard two voices, the one of Oma coming through the trumpet, and the sound of a voice at the end of the trumpet which was not over eight inches from the face. Please to remember that Dr. Smyth felt a face and vibrating throat eighteen inches or less above a table, and the body, if continued, would seem to be in the lap of Dr. Hamilton. Here

the controls came around and adjusted the hands of Dr. Hamilton and the medium; with many pats and slaps on the hands of Dr. Hamilton, which he had learned to interpret as meaning "Don't move them! Hold your hands just so!" and which he has found to be true as to their intention, since, if he moves them, they slap him and put them back with many evidences of disgust. But here is a crucial test. "Will this awful Dr. Hamilton keep his hands where we put them, or will he do as he has done so many times, go feeling around? Well, we'll just hold his hands and relieve him from temptation of knowing there is a spirit face just in front of him to touch." And so they did. They held both hands, the right on the table and the left holding the medium, and what a desire came to reach out and see if it was only a head, or a whole body!

The trumpet now whistled and went back of Dr. Hamilton and touched the table and patted him on the back of the head. This was done while he was holding the hands of the medium. Apparently the trumpet went over and tapped on the windows, shades, and toward the ceiling and tapped on the wall, a distance probably of ten feet.

The table was raised about one foot from the floor while both hands of the medium were held by Dr. Hamilton and Mr. and Mrs. Milton were held by Dr. Smyth. The medium raised her hands until only the tips of the fingers touched the table. She drew these away and the table seemed to follow her, exactly as a needle would jump and follow a magnet when at the edge of the field of its influence. She raised her hands six inches from the table. The table followed, swaying and tipping as on the sea. She raised her hands twice the distance, and the table dropped with a crash. To Dr. Hamilton who held both her hands, palms together, and of course followed every motion she made without restraining her in the least, while his right hand followed the table, it was very interesting to see how she played with the table as a child plays with a nail and a magnet. She finally sweeps across the table, hardly touching it, with her finger-tips extended like a fan.

A voice came and told Mrs. Milton that they had given all they could that night and that to give any more would let the medium get too deeply under influence, as she was already very

far under. Dr. Hamilton had noticed that she gets farther and farther under the more things they do, and the first thing to restore her is to allow her to rest. Rest alone will bring her partially out, exactly as in hypnotism, and then external stimulation seems necessary, if she has been fully entranced, since in a few minutes a voice said "Help us. Talk to her and wake her up."

We turned on the low lamp, rubbed her arms, and talked to her, and she finally wanted us to rub her eyes, which usually ends the trance condition, unless deeply entranced. Unless talked to at this time she will lapse again into the trance. Dr. Hamilton believes that, if not aroused, she would sleep it off, as they have entranced her during severe headaches, which have been lessened since wearing glasses, and they have allowed her to wear or sleep it off, but Mrs. Milton is afraid to let her do so. Dr. Hamilton has allowed subjects in hypnotism to sleep off the state without harm and evidently the medium has done this with her headaches.

Sitting over at 11 P. M.

July 3, 1908.

Present: Mr. and Mrs. Milton, Miss Burton, Dr. Hamilton, Dr. and Mrs. Smyth.

The experiments on this occasion were for testing the muscular strength of the medium. A Collins Dynamometer was used, and it was not explained what the object of the test was, and only Drs. Hamilton and Smyth knew what the experiments were for. All the others were kept in entire ignorance of their object. The results are expressed in numbers, as found in Collins's dynamometer. All tests, so far as known, were made with her right hand. The first experiments were made with each person present in the normal state. Afterward Miss Burton went into the trance, and they were tried with her again, with the results as recorded below and in the proper place. Three trials were given each person.

#### EXPERIMENTS IN NORMAL STATE.

Dr. Smyth, 48, 50, 40.

Dr. Hamilton, 45, 43, 44.

Mr. Milton, 23, 24, 22.

Mrs. Milton, 22, 21, 20.

Mrs. Smyth, 20, 19, 17.

Miss Burton, 12, 12, 20.

Miss Burton, forty-five minutes later, 17.

[Mr. Milton's results were much below the normal of a man's strength but he had had neuritis and writer's cramp and had a very weak arm.] Mr. and Mrs. Milton and Mrs. Smyth were simply handed a metal oval and told to squeeze it as hard as they could, and then the amount was read off by Dr. Hamilton. They did not know that it registered the grip of the hand when so squeezed nor did they examine it itself until all these experiments had been completed.

#### **EXPERIMENTS WITH THE TRANCE PERSONALITIES.**

Dr. Hamilton had thought it would be a good experiment to have the various hands that appeared in the séances in darkness to register their strength and to see what relation it bore to those who sat in the circle, but on examining the machine he found that it was possible to take the finger and push the needle on the scale even to the maximum without squeezing the oval machine at all. While the investigators do not believe that anyone but Dr. Hamilton knew this could be done at this time, scientific accuracy does not allow of great weight being given to this experiment, unless the reader is aware of the possibility that the sitters were not possessed of this same knowledge, however unlikely it may be, as even Dr. Smyth did not know it could be done until later. The experiment was made as follows: The above named persons were seated at a table and the previous experiments had been made and recorded. The sitters knew it was desired that the supposed spirits should come and register and squeeze on the machine and then that the investigators would compare the results. The lights were extinguished and Dr. Hamilton simply held the dynamometer by one hand out in front of him in the darkness, and the voices purporting to be those of spirits said who was operating. Dr. Hamilton held it, except when Black Cloud was operating. No great attempt to see who squeezed it was made, because Dr. Hamilton knew how its value was lessened

by the knowledge that it could be manipulated. When any one of the personalities squeezed the dynamometer Dr. Hamilton went to the light to read the record. Following are the results with the names of the personalities as they squeezed the dynamometer.

Dan, who is the chief control, registered 31, 37, 37, 35, 37.5, 47.5, 47.5, 42, 40, 35.

Lenore then came and said she wanted to squeeze it. Her record was 22, 18. This was a very interesting result, because with a change in the trance personality to a female, we get at once the proper grip for a female. Lenore then said if Anna, the medium, would hold it instead of Dr. Hamilton, she could do better. Miss Burton held it, and the result was 32. Miss Burton was alternating between trance and consciousness, so her condition at each record cannot be given, but up to this time, the investigators think, she was not in trance, but in view of later knowledge she may have been. Some woman, and they could not ascertain whether it was Lenore or Mrs. Galton, then tried it with the result of 19, 22. Dan was teased as being weak, and he tried it again, as follows: 39, 39. Please to note how many times he gets exactly the same record. It is very unusual in using the dynamometer on sick or paralyzed patients to get two records exactly alike. Black Cloud then said "Me try" and grasped the instrument from Dr. Hamilton's hands. Presently it was handed back with the index finger at 50, or farther than the reading scale goes. This is what happens when a very strong man uses all his strength. [See Dr. Smyth's record when he made an extra effort.] As the instrument is intended for weak and paralyzed muscles and is not an indicator for strong men. However, it must be remembered that the needle could be placed in this position without the expenditure of an ounce of strength, by pushing it around with the finger.

#### NOTES AND RECAPITULATIONS.

The usual gauge of three tests is shown in the Smyth test, a fair grip; then an effort to make a big showing, and then a decided falling off far below what the person can usually do. It should be noted that the first four tests show this condition very nicely. Dan also seems subject to this law, as his tests show

this same wave, but are remarkable in that, from the investigators' point of view, it was no doubt Miss Burton [entranced] who did the squeezing, and the result is so much higher than she could ordinarily do, as shown by her earlier tests. But a very interesting point is that, with the change of trance personality from male to female, there is a corresponding change in the amount registered, so that it agrees with what we would expect a woman or girl to register. Lenore, Mrs. Galton and Miss Burton are close enough together to agree very well. But Dan and Black Cloud, as the readers will see, are very high, and especially the latter's, as it is all the average man could do to grip 50 unless he made a special effort. The investigators do not believe that Miss Burton knew she could fraudulently register higher than she could squeeze normally, or that when she is controlled by a male trance personality her strength is increased more nearly to what a man would show. This experiment is offered as showing certain interesting features and the care used, rather than as possessing great merit.

June 24, 1908.

Present: Mrs. and Mr. Milton, Miss Burton, Drs. Hamilton and Smyth.

Sittings were for photographing objects held in the air.

The investigators began this series of experiments on June 24th, and because of not having the right apparatus for the purpose they decided to experiment a while, and therefore these experiments are not related as tests but merely as a journal of the happenings not kept with the accuracy heretofore used.

The work was something like the following: they sat in the circle and the medium was entranced while Drs. Hamilton and Smyth talked over the matter and finally determined to try a photograph, even though they might have to get it over again under test conditions, because Mr. Milton was present.

They felt that their means of burning the flash powder were very poor because too slow, since they had to force a "parlor match" through a crown of projecting points which ignited it and then ignited a magnesium powder such as is in common use. To do this they needed a helper and they decided to ask Mr.



Milton to pull the trigger, and when they found they could get pictures they would arrange some other plan. If they could only get one picture, they would not consider their attempts as successful and would demand that they be able to get them under the most rigid test conditions. But they resolved to start the affair and experiment a while, having Mr. Milton as a helper. The plan was to be as follows: The control was to rap on the table; Dr. Hamilton was to rap loudly to Mr. Milton, who was sitting eighteen feet away, and he was to pull the trigger. At times this would fail to ignite the powder, besides taking too long a time. It should be instantaneous. The conditions they had here would do for much flash-light work, but not such as they were doing. They made seven attempts before they gave it up. Mr. Milton was not present after the change of plan and use of torch.

Some of the photographs were fair, but none showed what they wanted. Whether the trumpet fell too soon or too fast, or they failed to rap soon enough to Dr. Hamilton who would rap to Mr. Milton there were, in a word, too many links in the chain. They abandoned all this and started over again. They installed a Prosch Smokeless Flashbag with electrical attachments by which they operated the cartridge by the straight current of 110 volts, see photograph No. 4. The report was like a cannon and the flash too long for the falling object failed to be caught sharply and clearly on the plate. The duration of the light must have been a full second, and the plates were over-exposed. Dr. Hamilton, who had his back to the flash, watched the medium closely during the flash and saw her rise from the chair, either apparently at the end of the flash or saw her standing up when the flash came. When she is sitting she is a half-head shorter than Dr. Smyth, who is a six-footer. In the photograph she is a half-head taller, and Dr. Hamilton immediately remarked that the medium was standing up. Dr. Smyth said that just before the flash they removed his hands from the medium's, so that he did not know what was going on.

Miss Burton fell over in a heap on Dr. Smyth and shivered exactly like a rabbit which has been hit by a hammer. Anyone who has killed rabbits in the laboratory by stunning them can imagine exactly what she went through. She moaned and tried

to talk, in an inarticulate manner. Both arms were drawn in flexed on the forearm, her hands turned in on the wrists and the fingers also turned in as though trying to touch the wrists, with a marked tremor occurring, possibly 40 or 50 to the minute. Her pulse was uncountable and the respiration shallow and rapid. In a medical sense she was very badly shocked and if it had occurred during an operation it would have been a serious condition to combat. She was one hour coming out, and Dr. Hamilton and Dr. Smyth left her in another room in care of Mrs. Milton, who said she spoke to her when controlled by her mother, who is her personal guide and watcher.

The photograph is blurred where the trumpet was, owing to the trumpet's falling and the light persisting too long. The medium presents a blurred outline, owing to the fact of her moving as has been related. Drs. Hamilton and Smyth thought that the loud explosion and the intense light had caused her to start involuntarily, as one might easily do under the circumstances.

The earlier experiments had failed sometimes to show the trumpet at all. Hence, photograph No. 3 shows the camera, the floor, etc., and No. 4 largely the ceiling. This also acted as a control on any defect in the plates.

June 26, 1908.

Present: Mr. and Mrs. Milton, Miss Burton, Dr. Hamilton and Dr. Smyth.

Temperature, 78 degrees. Barometer, 29.55.

At this sitting we intended to take flash-light photographs only.

First, two pictures were taken showing the position of the trumpet when they had got whistling and singing in it. But the medium was not entranced. Second, the control had promised to allow them, with the medium entranced, to photograph the trumpet suspended in mid-air, and they prepared to do this.

Dr. Smyth sat by the medium and held her hands. Dr. Hamilton sat in the usual seat of Dr. Smyth and held Mrs. Milton's hands. Mr. Milton was put in charge of the flash-gun to fire the powder, about fifteen feet away. The medium became entranced at once. The controls tied a handkerchief over her

mouth and asked for light. Here they had trouble, as the camera had been left with the shutter open in the absolute darkness, and Dr. Hamilton had to close this before he could turn on the light. In opening the camera after the light was turned off, the bulb split and Dr. Hamilton was uncertain whether the shutter was open or not. It afterwards proved to have been closed and a blank resulted, for the first attempt.

We naturally talked of how they would inform us, and finally a voice came and said in a whisper, "It is going to be very hard to do this and you must not expect us to sing or whistle, as we must save the forces. We will give three raps on the chandelier to say we are ready, and three raps on the table to pull the flash, and at the last rap, pull. They treated her by rubbing and stroking in the customary way and finally arranged everything and gave the signal as agreed. A blinding flash blinded all of the sitters. The medium collapsed and fell over in a heap on Dr. Smyth, groaning and moaning much as before. He felt her pulse and found it very weak, rapid, and as though she were suffering from shock. [Dr. Smyth limits his practice now to surgery, and no one is better qualified to give an opinion as to shock than he.] He held her a while and it was suggested that Dan remove her to the kitchen while they aired the room. Dan approved and the medium arose and with eyes shut started through the swinging-door into the kitchen, which contained no light. Dr. Smyth, who followed, knew where the window was and tried to steer her to that region, but found she repulsed him and went over to a corner near the range where usually they do not keep a chair but where, unknown to Dr. Smyth, they had put a chair when the dining-room was arranged. Here she sat down and rested. Her manner in walking in a trance condition is very different from that ordinarily employed by her. Ordinarily she walks with a slight stoop, with eyes and head cast down slightly, but in this trance condition she walks very rapidly, so that one can hardly keep up with her in going from one room to another. Her head is up and her arms drawn together and she acts and seems like another person. What she does would be nothing for a person not in the trance condition because, apparently, however tightly closed the eyes may be you can always manage to see, even if pretty thoroughly bandaged, but in this condition

the eyes are rolled back and Dr. Hamilton and Dr. Smyth do not think she could see.

Thinking the one attempt ended, they put the camera away. Suddenly the medium started up and walked rapidly past them all and took her place at the table. Dan announcing by impatient raps that he wanted something which later proved to be another attempt at taking a picture. Whether he knew we thought the other was blank we do not know, but it was talked of and anyone would have had only to listen to know we thought the shutter had failed to act. The medium was again taken out into the kitchen, because we had to have white light to arrange the apparatus, and we got ready for another experiment, when she came in as before.

The control was evidently nervous and finally gave the signal, but the flash failed to work and the medium was again taken out into the kitchen, while we arranged the flash, and then returned. In the last two attempts the control did not take the pains to quiet down the medium and prepare her, as they did at first. Whether they found it unnecessary or not, the investigators do not know.

The control now had Dr. Hamilton hold both hands of Mrs. Milton. [See photograph No. 2.] Whoever was holding the trumpet was manifestly nervous and said he would rap but once on the table, and at the first rap on the table, after the chandelier raps, the flash was to be fired off. The controls fussed around considerably, but finally gave the signal, but it was thought by all of the sitters that the trumpet hit the table before the flash went off, and Dan thought so too. The photograph, while not good, shows the trumpet nearly on the table, too near to attempt the use of it for the purpose designed. The medium suffered very little from the second flash, whether because the control found it not so bad after all, or because the force holding the trumpet was not exposed to the flash, for the reason that the trumpet was dropped before the flash came, the investigators do not know. But certainly there was no comparison between the two effects.

Dan again lost control of the medium and Dr. Smyth and Mrs. Milton had a lot of trouble to bring her out. Any influence but that of Dan's seems to oppose them. With him she is gentle

and never gets rigid and never resists the investigators. He finally got back in control and when chided for not answering he said he had been so far out he could not even knock in answer. Sitting over at 11 P. M.

July 6, 1908.

Present: Miss Burton, Mrs. Milton, Dr. Smyth, Dr. Hamilton.

Temperature, 82 degrees. Barometer, 29.40. Very humid, some lightning, and thunderstorm coming.

In this experiment they tried arranging a shutter that would open and close in the interim of the flash, but this seemed so difficult that they installed a different flash machine and a quicker powder. This method was first tried on the present evening.

For persons present see photographs Nos. 3, 4, 5, and 6. Dr. Hamilton and the medium sat with their backs to the flash and camera, hoping that it would save her from the extreme shock of the light in her face. Dr. Hamilton felt that he wanted to be near her and if possible have her tied, because in pictures Nos. 3 and 4, without being held by anyone, it was easily possible for her to have tossed the trumpet into the air and rapped. She was entranced, it is true, but cases have been known where the actual physical body of the medium was used to do things which were supposed to have been done without contact from her. The control, Dan, objected at first but finally submitted and was told that they wanted her to be tied with the big rope, so that they could eliminate any possible contact of the medium. The controls began to tie her, using the big clothes-line previously mentioned. They also played and whistled and sang, but never simultaneously. The tying stopped when the other things were done. This is usual and customary with her.

The controls finally came with the trumpet and said to Dr. Hamilton "We want you to examine her and see that she is tied and then do not touch her again until after the flash." Dr. Hamilton in total darkness ran his hands over the knots and reported that her hands were close together and tied. Two strands of rope ran from her hands to a double strand around her waist

and her waist was tied to the chair. It was merely a perfunctory examination, as no one could examine her well in the dark, but they asked that she be tied, even though grossly, to prevent her from having contact with the objects used. The controls then said through the trumpet, "We will show you that she cannot rise up in the chair this time," evidently referring to the time when she did rise up.

The controls said that they would rap on the table and that at once Dr. Hamilton should fire the flash. In a few minutes they came to him and said "Get ready." He was ready and at the tap fired the flash. The medium, as usual, fell over on him and shivered, as has been explained. The two men carried her out of the room in her chair, still tied in it, and Dr. Hamilton began to develop the plate. This is photograph No. 3 and shows the edge of the trumpet nearly upright and approximately over Dr. Smyth's head, but very high. Naturally they were very much elated by this success after their failures, and determined to try for the tambourine in the air. Everything was prepared for it and they carried her back into the room still tied in her chair, and began the sitting. The controls readily agreed to try this and began to get ready, but were extremely nervous. They told Dr. Hamilton, in answer to his inquiry, that Dan held up the trumpet and that the medium's mother had her in control. After half a dozen attempts, during which Dr. Hamilton refused to fire the flash as he was certain they were merely throwing it across the table, he finally fired it and again the medium fell over and was carried out into the front room away from the smoke, still tied to the chair.

They then set about developing the negative and it can be seen in this report, photograph No. 6. It shows the tambourine in mid-air and the hands of the medium widely separated, and without doubt she had just thrown the tambourine, although in a trance. Dr. Hamilton then went out to see how she was tied, as they had told Mrs. Milton not to untie her until she had been inspected carefully. Dr. Hamilton found what is termed "a fake tie"; the rope was tied tightly around one wrist with about a foot of loose rope and then another tight tie. By turning both hands in two or three times and straining the wrists it gives the idea to a green person in this work that they are tied so

tightly that they are in great pain, and Dr. Hamilton can say from personal experience that, with slight effort, the person so tied can sink the ropes deeply and painfully into his wrists and it is really wonderful to see how many people would consider this tying as confining a person's hands absolutely. We must remember that Miss Burton has had no previous training or experience with jugglers' tying, so far as any information whatever can be obtained. When Dr. Hamilton was asked to examine the tie in the dark he felt that it was very poor, but could not make any positive statements and hence let it go.

While asking the medium about the tie, etc., he was trying to get her to unwind her hands and to gain slack, but she claimed it hurt and was backed up in this by Mrs. Smyth and Mrs. Milton to such an extent that Dr. Hamilton went out and told Dr. Smyth to come in and help unwind her. Drs. Hamilton and Smyth were able, by very simple unwinding, to allow her to put her hands at least twelve inches apart without effort and without untying her hands, simply unwinding them. This, it must be mentioned, was the first thing and the only thing in which any suspicion could be cast on the medium. Dr. Hamilton detected a previous tie like this and thought she seemed to "put on the agony" and to be unwilling to allow him to try to get slack. But as she said it hurt he was forced for the time to believe her, but he has not forgotten the incident.

Mrs. Smyth, who was not present at the flash, came into the outer room where they had carried the medium and sat there. The medium said it hurt and of course Mrs. Smyth and Mrs. Milton thought it brutal to hurt a young girl when she was tied with a rope that apparently cut deeply into her flesh. There is no doubt that she was in a deep trance at the time of the tying. Dr. Smyth could hardly believe his own eyes when the hands of the medium separated at least twelve inches. Dr. Hamilton then went into the room where the flash was made, tied his own hands even closer than the medium's were, tossed up the trumpet, and rapped for the flash. It was, of course, an easy trick to toss up the tambourine and it was only necessary to do it just as the picture shows the medium did it. Mrs. Milton was shown the negative, but she did not grasp the significance of the hands, being unaccustomed to examining negatives.



The sitting was over at 12.15 A. M.

July 8, 1908.

Present: Miss Burton, Mrs. Milton, Dr. Hamilton, Dr. Smyth.

[They had discussed very thoroughly the picture, No. 6, and how it was produced, and came to the following decision. Mrs. Milton was absolutely innocent of any attempt to deceive and Dr. Smyth sent for her to come down the next day and showed her the picture. She naturally felt very badly and said that she had noticed that neither her mother nor her sister had been present as controls at the sitting, which was true, and that Dan had acted dishonestly in the matter, as he knew perfectly what was wanted and then gave these attempts to use the contact with the medium to get phenomena caused by forces other than actual contact.

They decided to go on with the sittings, and so came together on the date above mentioned. Dr. Hamilton again states that the medium, Miss Burton, who was entranced during the tying and the actual acts shown in the photograph, does not know that anything was wrong with the photograph.

Very soon after they were seated, perhaps ten minutes, the trumpet came and said to Dr. Hamilton, "Dan is not to be here in control to-night, but the medium's mother and Mrs. Milton's mother and sister and Lenore will control her and be responsible for the honesty of all that occurs. We know that Dan deceived you the other night and regret it, as we want you to know and believe that all this can be done without any physical aid from the medium." We discussed the matter and they finally came and said "The trumpet [photograph No. 5] was held by Dan fairly and the medium did not touch it, but of course we know how you feel and are going to do this right. Be patient. The trouble is, Dan is like many people on your side of life: he gets so hurried to get results that he is not particular how he gets them and does not prepare the medium properly between the tests to get the best results. But we shall take lots of time and get her quiet and at her best."

They asked exactly how the investigators wanted things to be tested and the reply was that Dr. Hamilton should hold both hands of the medium and work the flash, and Dr. Smyth was to

hold both hands of Mrs. Milton. They willingly assented to this and said that they would rap on the table when ready. The stroking and preparation of the medium must have lasted fully thirty minutes, and when she was prepared they gave notice and Dr. Smyth held both hands of Mrs. Milton and Dr. Hamilton held both hands of the medium by placing them down on table and laying his hand over her eight fingers. To offset any charge of mal-observation, Dr. Hamilton with both hands felt her hands and arms and connected the hands with the arms and the arms with the body and identified the body as that of the medium.

The control, Mrs. Burton, had been asked if we could not fire the flash while Lenore was playing on the tambourine, as she raises it two or three feet from the table and it would be a splendid chance to get the photograph. Her reply was, "We are very much afraid Lenore cannot play the tambourine and hold it at the same time."

They finally announced that they were nearly ready and said Mrs. Milton should wind up the phonograph and then let Dr. Smyth hold her hands while Dr. Hamilton was to fire the flash and hold the hands of the medium by placing her hands on the table side by side, palm down, and placing his right hand on top of hers. Then, with his left hand, after the signal, which was to be a tap on the table, he was to push in the button of the bulb and explode the flash. After some few minutes' waiting, the controls signalled, but the tambourine fell before the flash worked and the result was a failure. This was due partly to their hurry to drop the tambourine before the flash, and also to the fact that a thin film of oxidation had formed on the metal contacts of the torch and this, with a weak dry cell, gave slow ignition. They have been very insistent that the flash hurts the medium very much anyway, and doubly so when it touches them. It is inferred that the rapid return of the particles or atoms to the medium when they are dematerialized, acts as a profound shock, possibly similar to the return and flow of electricity from the clouds to the earth causing a concussion or physical detonation, to the heart, which acts as a conductor. They developed the photograph, but it shows the tambourine practically on the table, and, while they submit one, [Photograph No. 7] it is only to make the series complete. The arrow points to the tambourine.

It should be noted that after developing photograph No. 7 at the continuation of this sitting, Dr. Smyth objected to the medium standing up, "Because," he said, "it can be truthfully said that it was possible for the medium to have placed the tambourine on her head, given her hands to Dr. Hamilton, stood up and given the tambourine a toss, and it would have fallen where it did."

The control, Mrs. Burton, said, "We see that what you say is very true, and we will do as follows: put the tambourine on Dr. Hamilton's hands until we have given him both hands of the medium. We will then raise it up in the air and drop it." Dr. Hamilton was careful after this to note each occurrence, as follows: "The controls have placed the tambourine on my hand; they have given me both hands of the medium and I have my hand holding both of hers. They now take the tambourine away." These remarks were made audibly for the benefit of Dr. Smyth and Mrs. Milton.

The control was earnestly asked to keep the medium in her chair, but they said they could not promise but would try, as she would jump up at the instant of the flash and they could not always control her. No later photograph shows her standing, nor did any one of the sitters observe her to do so. The above restriction of placing the tambourine on Dr. Hamilton's hands was carried out during all the remainder of the experiments, although this may not be stated in the record at the time.

Lest the reader may think it mal-observation, that the tambourine never left the table, it fell sometimes as though thrown from a height and hurts the person it hits, as Dr. Hamilton can testify, since it has hit him many times on the arm and head. It is explained, no doubt, by the fact which we ascertained later, that it did not drop, but was pitched into the air, thus causing an apparent curve in falling. It did curve and the observation was correct, but the explanation was simpler than we thought. Falling objects swerve from a direct line to fall nearer to the medium than simple gravity would cause them to do. Imagine a companion in whom you have the utmost confidence regarding his good sense, truthfulness and judgment; have two women come to your office, and in a series of tests the following occurs: They are seated. One goes into a trance. You hold her two

hands and your friend holds the hands of the other woman. You are all closely grouped around a thirty-inch table and can feel instantly every movement of the feet. Besides, they crowded Mrs. Milton up in a corner [see photograph 7] where she could not move without their knowing it. You are holding the medium's hands and have your leg in front of her feet if you desire. Your companion is holding the other woman the same way, and you report to each other that you will hold them as agreed, and this is not done in a hurry or only once, but many times. Now the trumpet brushes your face and tells you that they will take the tambourine up as high as they can and drop it, which they do with an awful crash and pain if it hits you. They do this twenty times. What is the explanation? Apparently mal-observation will not do. Confederates will not do in our own office. We feel over the hands of the medium and Mrs. Milton and hold them, not with the tricky hand-hold of the professional mediums, but in a good honest grasp any way we want. If it had happened only once in an evening, we might think we had been taken unawares and so missed something in the trick, but we have seen this sixty times in the week.

Well, the medium fell over in a bad shock and according to orders, which were as follows: "After the flash do not turn on any light until we gain control; then we will rap, and then you can carry her out into the waiting-room in the dark and fan her,"—the investigators held her, she fell over as has been described, and soon they rapped twice. The two men picked her up and carried her out into the front room and let Mrs. Milton fan her. They did not develop the plate just then, as they knew it would not be of much account. In a few minutes Mrs. Milton came in and said that the controls asked them to prepare for another flash. She meant that the medium had said this in a low whisper and that presumably the controls had influenced the message. At one time she did considerable of this talking, but her family could not get over the idea that Miss Burton was making it up, so that they seldom get anything of the kind now.

They prepared for another flash and brought her back into the room. During all this time she had been in a trance. After seating themselves, they asked the control if she could not fire the flash off herself, since with the low music it was sometimes

hard to hear promptly, and the difference of the twentieth of a second means a failure. They said they thought they could do it if the sitters would show them how it ought to be done. So Dr. Hamilton took the hand of the control and put the bulb, an ordinary push-bulb, in it and showed them how to push in with the thumb. The medium was not held while this was going on. The sitters cautioned the controls that the spring was very stiff with such a bulb, and that a considerable amount of force was needed, and not to experiment until they were ready.

The controls asked the investigators not to touch the medium until they had her prepared, which they proceeded to do by stroking her and rubbing her gently. While this was going on Dr. Smyth said, "Doctor, where is the bulb?" to which Dr. Hamilton replied that he did not know, when he heard a tap on the central column of his chair, and a hand came up and pulled on his hand. He followed it down by putting his hand between his legs, when they tapped his hand with the bulb. Dr. Hamilton sat in an ordinary office chair [see photograph 7] which has a central screw to raise and lower it. It was on or near this that he heard or felt the tapping, and then the hand came up and touched him and he put his hand down. While his hand was there, he purposely leaned over toward the medium and touched her body to see if she was perfectly upright or whether she had her hand down at this central screw, and he found her some six inches away from him and upright in her chair. She would have to have an arm at least two and a half times the ordinary length to have been able to sit in her chair upright as she was and yet hold the bulb in her hands under the chair Dr. Hamilton occupied. Please notice the chair in photograph No. 5, which was the one. The medium sat where Mrs. Milton does in this photograph. The bulb was where the cross is on the chair, and the medium was farther away from Dr. Hamilton than Mrs. Milton is in the picture quoted so when Dr. Hamilton leaned over, his head was at least six inches, as estimated, from the medium, and he had felt for her with his hand. The sitters explain the phenomenon by supposing that the medium, with the dexterity and rapidity that characterize her in the trance, leaned far to one side and held the push-button herself. Finally the controls brought the medium's hands to Dr. Hamilton and said they were nearly

ready and to tell Mrs. Milton to wind up the phonograph and to turn it back to the beginning of the record, which she did. He then held the hands of the medium, palms down, side by side, with his right hand across the extended fingers of the medium. Do not think for a minute that he could be deceived by any rubber hands or any deception about its being the right and left hands of the medium. At the slightest thing to arouse suspicion,—jerking movements or any overlapping of the fingers which happened in her movements,—he would call out that things were not right, and many times has felt over the arms, etc., to satisfy the most critical objections that could be made by anyone. At these times he has always held her feet, but usually he felt her left leg against his right and did not think it necessary to hold her feet when, with the hands of both Mrs. Milton and the medium held as they were, apparently any number of hands, came to touch the investigators on the head, etc. Her feet had been held by Dr. Hamilton passing his leg in front of hers enough times and with phenomena just as clear and unmistakable, to convince the observers that it makes no difference at all whether they are held or not, so far as the appearance of the hands is concerned. What the illusion may have been was not discussed.

Dr. Smyth put his hand, a large one, over Mrs. Milton's hands and it completely covered up hers. Dr. Hamilton held her, as per Photograph No. 7 Dr. Smyth was perfectly certain that Mrs. Milton could not remove or withdraw a finger unless he knew it and that she had never made an attempt to do so.

The controls placed the hands of the medium under Dr. Hamilton's and after a second or so down came the tambourine with a crash, probably hit Dr. Hamilton on the head or arm, but no flash. Asked why, the controls said they were experimenting and had not pushed the button. In order to avoid endless repetition, because the above happened about forty times in the next two sittings, they wish to state here that in every case where the tambourine was dropped for the purpose of photographing it, they were holding the hands of the two women placed exactly as the description above gives it. So please do not imagine that, since they do not go through the same description again and again in the next two sittings, they neglected to observe every rule given above. Well, they dropped the tambourine again, and

no flash, and they were asked what was the matter. The controls replied, "We do not know. It may be because we are dividing the forces and have not the strength, or because the battery is not working. We'll try again."

They did try again and again, possibly five or six times, and they finally came and said, "The spring is so stiff, we cannot be sure we push it in. Can't you weaken it?" Dr. Hamilton said that he could, and turned on the small red light, and Dr. Smyth found that one of the connecting wires had become disconnected which he repaired. Dr. Hamilton weakened the spring in the bulb, and they started again. After a few more failures the controls came to Dr. Hamilton and said, "Push the button in yourself and see if it will go off. We have pushed it in properly and it will not go off."

Dr. Hamilton did try and found that no amount of pressure would set it off. The investigators estimated that the tambourine had been dropped at least twenty-five times under test conditions as above mentioned, though they could not keep an accurate record of the number of times.

The controls came to Dr. Hamilton and said, in such a pitiful tone, "O, we are so disappointed about this, because we did work so hard and now have nothing. But have everything ready for the next time and we'll try again."

Dr. Hamilton and Dr. Smyth admit that the honest way in which the controls told them that Dan had deceived them and that for this he had been deposed [and had not yet shown up again], and that they could hold or touch the medium at will, and that the results the controls obtained under what the investigators called very rigid conditions, did much to prove that, whatever they were,—discarnate spirits, secondary personality, hysteria, or what not,—they wanted to allow every latitude in investigating them and that Dan's methods were not what they wanted or meant to give.

They had another sitting, almost the counterpart of this one, except that at the second flash the medium was shocked very little. None of the pictures were satisfactory, but they are attached, Nos. 8 and 9. The arrow shows the tambourine under test conditions, in so far as the hands are concerned, but in No. 9 it is noticeable that Miss Burton's mouth is open.



September—December 16, 1908.

**GENERAL REPORT OF INVESTIGATION COVERING PERIOD MENTIONED.**

We began holding sittings in September, without any special precautions as to confederates, as we were satisfied that the only aid she receives is from her own body. Dr. Smyth was the first one to see anything of special import. Up to the time of his sittings, the phenomena were most trivial and much poorer in quality than customary, and we ignored a lot of it to get repeated the previous experiments, but we could not induce the controls to attempt it, as they failed in each attempt and ended each séance with something like this: "We intend the next time to give you these tests you ask for, but we cannot to-night, though it is all right and we will prove to you that all we have done is right and can be done again." No detailed report was kept, as we had blank after blank with the exception of a lot of trivial matter, whistling, singing, tambourine playing, etc. Of all this, the only thing of importance was that we once heard what appeared to be simultaneous singing and whistling, but not under any test conditions. Mrs. Milton said they frequently get the two at the same time, but we have got it only once.

One evening Dr. Smyth was there alone and asked for lights. There had been a change in the character of the lights seen: from being a clear phosphorescence, they had changed to the exact appearance you can obtain by taking an ordinary "parlor match," wetting it and rubbing on your fingers. In the case of the previous lights there had been no smoke, but there was an odor of the chemical phosphorus which could easily be detected by us. These lights now streamed and smoked and we thought them identical with the lights we made by rubbing a dampened match. Hence, when Dr. Smyth asked for lights and they streamed over her fingers and then over her lips and mouth, he forced open her mouth and the saliva ran over her dress and caused on her gown the same lights he had seen on her fingers. He was so certain he had detected her with matches in her mouth that he forced her mouth, but he could not find any other proof than the strong odor of the chemical and its appearance. She came out of the trance and the sitting was broken up. We

had never seen anything before or since like this, and Mrs. Milton has been unable to explain to us how it happened or why. The usual thing, of course, however: a new guide appeared who said they would explain everything and show us she was all right. This guide was said to be Hattie, Miss Burton's deceased sister.

This, however, has occurred: Dr. Smyth cannot get anything new and her secondary personality scorns and shrinks from him. Miss Burton, in her primary personality, does not seem to treat him any differently nor to be conscious of the treatment he accorded her when he forced her mouth open. But her secondary personality is conscious of him and refuses to allow him to get near her, and hence the phenomena have dwindled to almost nothing since then.

Some days after the above occurrence, we had a sitting at which Dr. Hamilton was present, and he told Dr. Smyth we would have to adopt different tactics if we got anything more, and that nothing must be said or done before her in the trance condition, as she is brighter, quicker, smarter, than in the primary one.

We began about 8 o'clock, all of us in the usual positions, and after about two hours of nothing, Dr. Hamilton finally induced the control to allow us to feel the pulse of the medium and a spirit hand. The first thing the control does at each sitting is to open the dining-room table, as shown in the sketch of sitting No. 1. The medium sat in front of this, with her hands on either side of the opening, and, as anyone can see, she could slip her body into this opening, which would render it easy for her to touch Dr. Smyth who sat opposite, almost facing Dr. Hamilton. Now Dr. Hamilton was holding with his left hand the medium's right hand, and a supposedly supernumerary hand came and raised Dr. Hamilton's right hand and placed the supposed extra hand in his in order that he might feel the pulse. Never before had the conditions been exactly the same, as he was allowed this time to take hold of the spirit hand, and when he pulled gently he noticed a corresponding movement on the part of the right hand of the medium, which he held. He had worked out the fact that this could be done, but now for the proof. He held her so long feeling the pulse that she was forced to breathe

and he could detect the faintest odor of onions. Dr. Hamilton is cursed with a nose that can smell every odor for miles around and, as you can see by the diagram, she was exactly in front of him, so that he could easily detect how the act of the medium was done. He then induced the control to allow Dr. Smyth to take his seat and to experience the same sensation, which Dr. Smyth did and later gave the same explanation that Dr. Hamilton gave. In previous pulse experiments we had been allowed only to touch the wrist lightly, but strange to say our remembrance of the previous experiments and this one is that we knew at once that she was doing it. How? Well, the arm and hand that came to have its pulse felt seemed to come from her body's direction and move her more than in the other cases they had seemed to do. And then we felt a slight, intangible difference in the feeling of the skin. Imagination? Mal-observation? Possibly both. And we admit we are more expert now, and yet, taking into account all the above, we feel that the same experiment is not performed with the address or skill that was manifest in the spring. If it was the medium then, she was much more adept than she was on this occasion. She was clumsy and did not show the finesse she did then. At times the controls hit Dr. Hamilton with the trumpet carelessly in swinging it around. They never did that before. They could not locate the hands of the sitters, as they did previously. They could not play the tambourine as they had done previously, except rarely. They seldom whistled as they did in the spring. All the ginger, snap, and precision seemed lost except for a few minutes, and that rarely.

At another sitting a week or so later, with the same positions as previously described, the folding doors were not completely closed, but from his position at the side of the medium Dr. Hamilton could see her silhouette outlined by the inch-wide crack, the front hall being quite brightly lighted. From where he sat, her nose just touched the crack-line and Dr. Hamilton was delighted to have such an aid to observation. Finally he saw her head turn and soon felt the dancing fingers of Lenore on his hand, which touched her right hand. The marvelous thing is the absolute immobility of the right side of her body while the left is in action. He suggested that she go over and touch Dr.

Smyth, and he felt that she would slide between the open space left by pushing the table apart. This, you can see, would give her the chance to touch him on the shoulder and arm easily. Without this knowledge, one would be very doubtful that she did it, sitting as she did, with an average length of arm. But as he watched her, she advanced her profile until the crack was back of her head instead of in front of her nose. And then he heard Dr. Smyth talking to Lenore. She did this by the slightest possible movement of the right arm or hand which Dr. Hamilton was holding, and while he could feel her body move away from his elbow, it was the minimum of movement, considering that she was moving her body, and could easily have escaped notice. For some time, besides the touching of the hand, Dr. Hamilton established a touch of the forearm and elbow with his arm, and this gave him a great deal of information as to the medium's slightest movements.

Later in the evening he saw the trumpet up to her face and moving around, and while he did not see her hand hold it he was convinced that she was holding it, and also that in the trance state she is a splendid whistler. This last statement he makes advisedly, as he has seen several times things that were suspicious; and on this night he boldly put his hand to her mouth and the trumpet was touching her. Immediately she fell forward and dropped her head on the table as she does so frequently, especially when detected in any little thing. But Dr. Hamilton began talking encouragingly, explaining how fine the whole thing was. She braced up and was much more willing to allow him to touch her afterward.

For some time Dr. Hamilton had been putting his right hand on her right hand and allowed his left arm to hang down, his object being to work this arm around and find out what the medium's left hand was doing. He now began putting his left hand on her neck and back without the remonstrance that even changing the hands would have caused in the spring. She is, like all hysterics, easily accustomed to set stimuli and needs new stimuli to get big results, namely new music, etc. This will cause her to attempt new feats, and the controls say they can do better when they have new music and new sitters. Finally she allowed Dr. Hamilton to put his left hand on the point of her

left elbow and he could easily feel more movement than was going on in the right arm and more than was necessary unless she was participating in the physical acts.

Now, here is the strange part of it: every once in a while something will come up and be done when Dr. Hamilton is actually holding both hands, and cannot, for the life of him, explain how she does it, as she did later this evening, by rattling the tambourine while he was holding both her hands.

She made an attempt to raise herself up in the chair which was so patent a trick that he could hardly restrain his contempt for her. Once she pressed so hard with her forearms on the table that it creaked and groaned, showing plainly the amount of pressure she was exerting and how strong she is in this condition. But she soon tired, which is characteristic of her mental condition, and slid her chair back against the wall, fixing her feet firmly on the floor, sliding forward as if rising. She was partly aided by the forearms on the table and partly by the upward plane she was bracing on, and even this tired her very much. Later she tried it again, but without wishing Dr. Smyth to assist in testing her. Here she boldly stood up and then, swinging herself on her hands, braced on the table. Dr. Smyth was so impulsive that he was about to warn the secondary personality that he suspected fraud, while Dr. Hamilton tried to lull the suspicions and to appear careless by apparently not noticing the most patent tricks, and thus to get more information than he otherwise could.

This is all the really interesting phenomena they got in a number of tiresome sittings, and the reader will note the absence of precautions which they formerly took and which they now considered to have been unnecessary, as there had never been the slightest proof of confederates. They found her involved so often that they believe the solution of the problem lies here.

Very early in the experiments, they had the medium sit in the cabinet for materialization, but beyond the fact that Dr. Hamilton saw a monstrously long arm and a terribly misshapen hand, they got nothing tangible. He says "I think I saw," because he did not report things that flashed out but once as they would not be worthy of any credence. The investigator is not prepared for what he sees and is most likely to imagine, and unless very

careful he would most likely say he saw what he has read of someone else seeing, which is buried in his consciousness. For instance, he saw this arm twice, but both times under conditions that made him very uncertain as to what he did see. The crabbed and twisted hand he saw but once, and when he later read of the same thing having been seen in the Palladino sittings he said at once, "Why, that is exactly what I saw." On this occasion he felt that he might have read it before he saw Miss Burton, and hence might have forgotten it, but he could not recall or find the reference. One additional proof of there actually being a long arm is that Mrs. Milton's brother-in-law, a newspaper man and Christian Scientist, who does not approve of the sittings at all, was convinced that Miss Burton was not doing the thing at all, by seeing what he describes as exactly this long arm when he suddenly turned up the electric light to expose her. He, too, may have read of it, but this is more questionable than in Dr. Hamilton's case, and he does not know that Dr. Hamilton ever saw it. Mrs. Milton wanted Miss Burton to sit in the cabinet, and the meeting was held there. It was nearly a blank, as for two hours they could not get a rap, even, and they are usually very plentiful. Then Mrs. Milton came in with a new record for the phonograph and they got raps but not with the usual vigor. No one has ever been allowed to sit in the cabinet with her, and Miss Burton does not like to go into it as she is very timid and is afraid when alone. Finally, after a few confused raps, a hand came out and touched Dr. Hamilton and pulled him into the cabinet, where he sat on the chair facing the medium, who was entranced and not bound in any way, in complete darkness. They got nothing, and thinking it would arouse them, which it always does, Dr. Hamilton said "Shall I play on the bell?" (to which they usually reply strongly: "No, no!" by a single rap) the controls much to his astonishment rapped very weakly "Yes"; and he played the bell until a hand came and took it out of his hand. But they could retain the bell only for a few minutes, when it dropped to the floor and he was asked, by impatient raps, to repeat what he had done. Again the controls took the bell, but only with the same result. He then tried the tambourine and a hand took hold of the rim near his hand, but he could not even venture an opinion as to whether the medium

was doing it or not, fearing that he might scare off the controls, and preferring to accept anything to get them started and test them later.

Finally it got so late they decided to end the sitting, and here Dr. Hamilton took advantage of the absence of Dr. Smyth and Mrs. Milton to test the power of suggestion on the medium. In his opinion she is hypnotized by auto-suggestion, and he wanted to see what his own suggestion could do with her. Usually, and one might say always, the control tells them when to end the sitting, and no one dares to suggest it until they are ready. When he took her by the hand and suggested going into the other room, she pushed him away and refused to move. He did what he had wanted to do many times, namely, to see if any suggestions made by him would override her own. He began very slowly and sternly to say that she must follow him and that when he touched her hands she must not resist, but get up and walk into the other room slowly and after him, changing purposely the usual order of things. This he repeated while alone in the cabinet and while Dr. Smyth and Mrs. Milton were carrying out the phonograph, etc. Then, when they said to bring her out, Dr. Hamilton extended his hand to her and she got up and walked in as mildly and slowly as he could ask. In one sitting that they had had, and in sittings where the family are alone, if they give up the cabinet for the table in the other room, the control always walks her in when he is ready and she almost runs in, no matter how dark it is, and never hits anything nor fails to go just where he wants her to go.

Mrs. Milton had to go upstairs and see after one of the children. Dr. Hamilton said he would run the phonograph, and meanwhile he was encouraging the controls and trying to get them to do just one thing before the sitting ended. When he put on "The Storm," a piece that was used when they lifted the table, he said very firmly, "Now you will raise the table." Finally it tipped away from the medium, but not at all in the old way they lifted it. Dr. Hamilton ran his hand over Miss Burton and found her hands under the cross-piece of stringer and raising away as hard as she could. She fell forward, as she always does when detected in anything, but Dr. Hamilton did not say a word except of praise, and the controls finally rapped that he must not



touch her. During much of this séance they would say, "Is Black Cloud here?" and a faint three raps signifying "Yes" would come, not at all like his, and in the end or middle of the tapping a loud rap "No," meaning that Black Cloud was there and could rap but could not control the medium and some other control was counterfeiting the regular control.

They noticed that the medium's old "band," so called, had not appeared for a long time. The medium's mother, Mrs. Milton's mother and sister, namely Mrs. Galton, and the medium's sister were not present in as distinct personality as they used to be, although they rapped "Yes," and that without any feeling, when asked if they were there. To Dr. Hamilton this was in line with the changing phases of hysteria as shown in this case by wanting new music, new sitters, and to try new things. The last sitting up to date of this report was an attempt to have a cabinet sitting with the medium sitting outside the cabinet and between Drs. Hamilton and Smyth. Mrs. Milton reported that she had tried it and the medium had not been controlled but knew all that was going on, with Mrs. Milton holding her hands, etc. They got raps, table moving, etc. On the present occasion, they sat for two hours without a rap and then began to change around and get Dr. Smyth away from her. Finally, Dr. Hamilton sat by her alone and felt the trumpet touch him on the knee. He took it up with the mouthpiece pointing away from both him and Dr. Smyth, but Dr. Hamilton heard nothing until the mouthpiece swung around toward her mouth, and a faint whisper was heard, but not articulate speech. He slipped his hand along the trumpet and she had it up to her mouth. As he touched her face, she fell forward as usual but he did not remark the fact and kept encouraging her until finally she tried again and whistled very poorly, but there was no doubt it was she who was doing it. And then, while he was holding both hands, he heard a faint tapping on the horn that he could not explain. Remember, they were sitting outside the cabinet with the curtain back of them. In the cabinet was a small stand with a few bells, tambourine, etc., on it. As they sat there Dr. Hamilton heard this stand being dragged across the floor just a few inches and immediately gripped her hands, and to his astonishment found them both on her lap, relaxed, and he cannot see how she could have touched

the table. It would not seem to have been possible for her to have touched it and not to have been discovered, as it was back of both of them and she would have had to strain much to do it, while he touched her in less than a second after he heard the noise. They left her still entranced, as it was late.

- [The following letters from Dr. Hamilton to Dr. Hyslop regarding the events connected with the reports extending from September to December will explain certain features of them.]

October 7th, 1908.

My dear Dr. Hyslop:—

Yours rec'd under date of Sept. 30th and I waited to show it to Dr. Smyth before answering.

The last report you received was just before I went to Colorado and after that Dr. Smyth tried several times and could not get a thing.

We decided the girl was tired out and sent her out in the country for a while and did not annoy her at all or talk about the work as she feels badly to think it has turned out as it has and cannot talk much without showing her feelings.

There is an enormous element of the hysterical in this and it is no doubt a secondary personality that has done most of this and yet—when we go over it all again we cannot allow that that explains it all, and we wish to go over again everything we have done.

Since her exposure she cannot even get good results when they are alone and in a talk between Dr. Smyth and myself yesterday we decided that we must gain the goodwill of the secondary personality by not asking for anything very difficult and swallowing everything they say (by "they" I mean her supposed controls) and gradually get them to try again the things they did last winter.

We start in to-night to have real sittings and we shall be very careful not to show any signs of unbelief and trust her controls will gain courage and try again what they did last winter.

We should be delighted to have you come out later but at present they would be blanks, and blanks even to themselves, i. e., when the girl and her foster-mother sit only alone.

They would be delighted to have you come and would welcome very strict investigation and just as soon as we succeed in deluding her controls to go ahead I shall let you know.

One thing we are certain of—the people are honest and cannot for themselves decide whether it's all bosh or 99% bosh and possibly a trifle of the real thing, nor can we decide as yet.

We have decided though that the majority of physical results are probably just about such stuff as this and the explanation of one would probably unravel the whole class.

Please return to me all the report as Dr. Smyth has lost some and we want to have it for comparison, but when we get through or stop at any stage we will give you all the documents to file away if you want them.

I shall keep you informed from time to time as to what we are doing but we shall have to wait patiently for some time before they will start in doing wonders (?) again.

Very cordially,

Hamilton.

November 15th, 1908.

My dear Dr. Hyslop,—

I am just about to answer yours under date of October 8th.

I have delayed answering because I wanted to have something to report but have not much now. We have caught her with phosphorus in her mouth which we must admit made a very different appearing light than any she has caused to appear and which aroused our suspicions because it resembled the results of our experiments with phosphorus and Dr. Smyth caught her and satisfied himself that she had the chemical in her mouth! Still the light this time did not look at all like previous lights and we cannot produce the lights as they sometimes appear.

They do not entirely trust us and every time they are exposed they change the "guide," for instance the medium's sister Hattie is now her guide since the phosphorus exposé by Smyth and they do not want him very close to her, but in allowing me to feel a supposed spirit's pulse the other day I satisfied myself and later Dr. Smyth that she had given me her left arm. All this in trance and very well and ingeniously done. Far above her in her ordinary state.

You can come out any time now it will suit you and Dr. Smyth and I shall be glad to entertain you during your visit here.

We want to make an arrangement some days ahead that we can have her entire time during your visit here, so let us know as early as you can decide the date.

We have gotten whistling and singing at the same time and as yet have not ferreted out how it is done. Mrs. Milton, the foster-mother, believes now implicitly in the Spirits but thinks Bad (?) spirits put Miss Burton in compromising positions because they are wicked spirits (?).

To me at least it is a simple case of hysteria and I am much interested to know how she does these things because many of the alleged exposés are perfect rot and cannot be done the way the author imagined the medium did them.

I am perfectly frank to say that I cannot explain how she does all the things, but I do not believe in a supernormal explanation for them.

We are as anxious to keep it from the newspapers as you are and do not speak of it to our most intimate friends.

We have proven that her secondary personality uses her body in many of the physical manifestations and so many that I am led to judge that they are all of this character but the limits of senses prevent us from proving the facts until we have seen it a great number of times when the imperfection of technic allows us to see her errors and by carefully watching and feeling and guessing we soon patch up a theory that has proven to be very accurate.

Smyth still insists that there are manifestations that we cannot say are not supernormal.

We shall be glad to hear again from you and better still when you can make us a visit.

Very cordially,  
Hamilton.

**ADDENDA.**

November 23d, 1909.

In report of sitting Number 3, June 8, 1908, on the second sheet, three-quarters down, will be found the following: "We asked the control to stop the phonograph under these conditions, i. e., with the medium 8 feet away and both hands held by Dr. Hamilton. Mrs. Milton was not in her usual position but on the right side of Dr. Smyth and altogether on the opposite side of the table, not being at the end as is usual, and both hands held by Dr. Smyth. This was the largest distance the medium had been away from the machine and at the same time get phenomena, which they succeeded in doing."

In report of sitting, June 19th, 1908, on the third sheet three-quarters down, occurs the following: "With the medium 44 inches from the talking machine and Mrs. Milton between Drs. Hamilton and Smyth [see diagram] the control turned off the machine but could not start it. Some discussion arose as to how nearly the medium could come to the machine by stretching her hand and this was done and measured, the distance being 21 inches by steel tape." Dr. Hamilton leaned over and pulled on her hand toward the machine, and then measured the interval.

Sitting in Dr. Smyth's office, June 24th, 1908:

Dr. Hamilton held both hands of the medium by placing her hands with palms together and encircling them with his left hand. His left leg was placed in front of her two with his inner ankle in contact with her outer left ankle or his leg passed in front of hers and hooked in the left front leg of her chair, holding her securely. Dr. Smyth sat between Mr. and Mrs. Milton and held both hands of Mr. Milton in his hands, [Mr. Milton has small hands and Dr. Smyth has very large ones] as Dr. Hamilton did those of the medium, i. e., the palms together, and placed his foot on both of Mr. Milton's. Mrs. Milton was held by the hands in the same manner and she put both of her feet on Dr. Smyth's foot. With Dr. Smyth's left hand and foot he held Mr. Milton, and with his right hand and foot he held Mrs. Milton.

Distance from talking machine:

This distance was not measured, but Dr. Hamilton estimated that if the medium leaned forward all she could without reference to being discovered, she could have touched the brake with her left hand if fully extended. Mrs. Milton, by turning in her chair and stretching her right hand, could have stopped it easily.

All, especially the Miltons, exclaimed when they saw how closely they would have to sit in this circle and decided, because of this, that Dr. Hamilton and Dr. Smyth would have to hold both feet and hands to make the test of any value. The report states as follows: Dr. Smyth held both hands of Mrs. and Mr. Milton, and the phonograph was stopped, started, and stopped many times. During all this period Dr. Hamilton held the medium by both hands and either had her feet on his or his feet across her two. Dr. Smyth held the hands of the other two present and accounted for their feet by having them placed against his."

November 23d, 1909.

Present: Miss Burton, Mrs. Milton, Dr. Hamilton, Dr. Smyth.

The only unusual thing was the following incident—all the rest was whistling, which is improving, singing, tambourine playing, etc., in all of which Dr. Hamilton thought there was less attempt on the part of Miss Burton to hide her own personality. He was surprised at times by the marked resemblance of the voices to hers, and they all seemed to emanate from her locality.

Dr. Smyth was tired and rather anxious to leave and asked Black Cloud to let him go and to close the séance early. Finally he asked what time it was. When this request was seconded by Mrs. Milton they rapped ten times on the table. There was a pause and they rapped again, twenty-three times, which was interpreted as 10.23 P. M. We were told to turn up the red light and to consult our watches, which we did. Dr. Smyth's watch was 10.10, Dr. Hamilton's was 10.18, and just then the clock struck the half-hour, or 10.30. Dr. Hamilton was certain his watch was not more than 15 seconds off and had had it set and regulated only two days before. Dr. Smyth knew he was

slow, and the control told Dr. Hamilton to call up on the telephone and ask "central" the time. [A common method in — and accurate within a minute usually.]

Mrs. Milton started for the telephone, which was a Bell, when they rapped a great many times and some arm pushed Dr. Hamilton nearly off the chair, and he was told to go himself and not to allow Mrs. Milton to ask. She told him where the telephone was and he called up "central." He was answered at once and said to central, "Time, please?" And to his utter amazement the operator answered, "10.23." The control was unusually pleased and said in the baby voice assumed by Lenore, "We didn't tell you time by any old watch, but the right time."

Three things surprised Dr. Hamilton, and he mentions them: (a) Central responding to my call so soon. This might easily occur, but usually one has to wait at that time of night. (b) That she could answer the time so quickly, since usually they have to turn their heads and call out the time from a clock on the wall, but she was instantaneous in her answer. (c) That she was five minutes wrong or a trifle less, as according to my watch it was 10.20 and she said 10.23." All this occurred in less time than it takes to tell it.

The séance closed at 10.40 and on going home Dr. Smyth was much surprised at the accuracy of the statement that the operator made, as it was not 10.23 either when it was rapped or when the operator said it was. So Dr. Smyth was asked to set his watch with Dr. Hamilton's and call up the Bell branch and ask the exact time, which they gave, and which was exactly what his watch was after setting it, thus verifying Dr. Hamilton's statement that his watch was practically correct. They said that the Miltons had a Bell telephone, and gave the number. The strange part of it all is that the telephone operator's mistake should bolster up the supposed supernormal effort to tell time. In reality, they were five minutes out of the way when they rapped, but if the controls could know what the operator would say if asked two minutes later, they were correct.

This was the first time Dr. Hamilton was ever present when they told time, but Mrs. Milton said that they frequently do so, and Dr. Smyth thinks he remembers their having done so correctly once before when he was there.



The hall clock of the Miltons strikes the hours and half-hours, but the medium was not depending on that, as she was twelve minutes faster out of the way.

# **REPORT OF SITTING BY G. B. CANWILL (pseudonym).**

December 23, 1908.

Last evening I attended a séance at the home of Mr. and Mrs. Milton of ———, where their adopted daughter Anna [Miss Burton] was the medium. We were seated around an oak dining table weighing at least 100 lbs. I was placed at the right of the medium, holding her right hand, and except for a fraction of a second when by a convulsive movement it was jerked away, I held this hand, fingers and thumb, for the entire evening. No phenomena took place while the hand was out of my control on this single occasion. Opposite me, over three feet away, was Dr. Smyth, and opposite the medium at the same distance was Dr. Hamilton. Mrs. Milton sat between the medium and Dr. Hamilton, and during the entire evening she arranged the music and attended to the Victor phonograph which played constantly except when the records were being changed. On the table were a paper trumpet, two bells, a tambourine, a pair of clapper bones, and a lot of small rope (said to be 40 ft.). The light was extinguished, and nothing could be seen.

Immediately on sitting down the table began to roll on its castors nearer the phonograph which was placed in a corner. I started to hold the medium's hand before she became entranced. The trance appeared and then the phenomena began consisting of the following:

1. RAPS. These were made as by striking the end of the finger on the top of the table, and with two exceptions occurred in front and a little to the left of the medium, within easy reach of her free (left) hand. Once the knocks were directly in front of me, and once between Dr. Smyth and me, but never out of reach of the medium's hand. Questions were asked of "Black Cloud" and other spirits, and were answered in the usual manner. These questions had to do with the arrangements.

2. TOUCHINGS. From the beginning, fingers would frequently come and touch mine, especially my hand which was

holding hers. Sometimes they would move my hand so as simply to cover the fingers of her hand, but I always shifted so as to retain her thumb. Sometimes my right hand was moved or touched. Dr. Smyth called for the pulse. Soon my right hand was placed palm up, and a wrist placed in my fingers. I felt both wrist and hand in the arrangement. In warmth and other similar characteristics they felt like the right hand which I continually held, but they were a left hand and wrist. I felt a pulse which corresponded to the right pulse. The wrist was straight and pointed to a position about a third of the way from Dr. Smyth to me—an impossible position for the medium's left hand, it seems to me. Once fingers tapped on my left hand in time to the music, very rapidly and accurately. At the close of the séance there was the "good night." My right hand was taken by the finger tips and raised high in the air while I was sitting, the fingers removed from mine, and what purported to be a kiss placed on the back of the hand; the kiss seemed to be the light touch of three fingers. I requested that I might have my hand taken as far up as it would go while I stood. It was taken up a good way and when the fingers left mine I reached my whole height—about six inches further, but got no "kiss." Twice more at my request this was repeated, but without a kiss. Finally I had my hand taken by the finger tips over in the direction of Dr. Hamilton, as far and high as I could reach and then got the kiss. The medium's right hand was continually held by my left. This seemed a practically impossible position for the left hand of the medium, who is much shorter than I; I am sure that I can reach at least one foot higher than she, and I should judge probably more. To take my hand by the finger tips with the palm turned down, with the tips of her fingers with the palm turned up, meant the turning of her hand so that the ends of the fingers faced us both, and also that her hand must be further away than mine by the length of her hand. It was a left hand, however, as near as I could tell.

3. WHISTLING. While certain pieces were being played on the phonograph, the most correct and musical whistling took place, usually sounding in the air about four feet above the table, and a little to the right of a direct line from me to Dr. Smyth. This was evidently performed through the trumpet, for the

trumpet would fall on the table after it was all over. Sometimes it would sound in other places, and once the two parts of the trumpet were placed on Dr. Smyth's and my hands respectively, and the whistling performed (independently). It then sounded near the medium. The whistling was of a very superior quality, loud, full, and sweet.

4. SINGING. Through the trumpet singing took place. Sometimes it was purely guttural, at other times the words were pronounced. Different quality of voice was used at different times. Sometimes it would be falsetto, sometimes more natural, or again an alto, or an attempted male voice. The singing was invariably of an inferior quality.

5. COMBINED WHISTLING AND SINGING. During the whistling which would sound in the air as aforesaid, a guttural singing, of about an equal quality of the singing when there was no whistling, would take place, sounding near the medium, and showing the same breathing as the whistling. Once the breathing as by the medium was felt on my hand when these were going on, and the breathing felt corresponded to that of the whistling and singing. There was never any articulate singing during the whistling. It seemed to me at first that this combined whistling and singing were a physiological impossibility, but I find on trial this morning that I can make guttural sounds while whistling, although neither the whistling nor the sounds are very good, or in any respect comparable to hers.

6. WHISPERING. Sometimes the trumpet would be placed near the ear of some of the sitters, and hoarse whispers were given. The messages were concerning some of the arrangements. Once the trumpet was placed near my ear with a message for me, but on account of the proximity of the phonograph horn I could not understand it; it was repeated to others and I got it. I heard the whispering at other times but could not understand it.

7. TAMBOURINE PLAYING. Tambourine playing in time to the music was frequent. Sometimes the tambourine was banged against my left hand, and once against the top of my head. Once the bells were rung, and one bell was rung at the same time that the tambourine was played.

8. ROPE TYING. The rope which was on the table was

taken and tying was begun. I felt the rope strike my left leg once. The tying continued, with intermission for whistling and other things, for at least fifteen minutes. I could hear the rope being drawn around, and finally my left hand was lifted by her right hand and it was passed around my wrist three times. I held her right fingers and thumb all the time. We turned on the light at permission from the raps and found the medium's ankles tied to the legs of the chair, her thighs tied to the seat of the chair, the rope several times around her waist, my hand tied to her right, and her left tied to the rope around her waist in a knot that would slip. After the light was turned off she was untied in not more than five minutes and the rope replaced on the table. While holding her hand I could feel movements which indicated that the arm and body were moving.

9. TABLE LEVITATION. On request, the table was raised. The whispered message for me was that I should press on the medium's hand for this. I pressed hard, holding her hand flat on the table, and having her thumb also. I judge I pressed at least 25 lbs. Only the tips of the fingers of my other hand were on the table. The table moved backward and forward on the castors once or twice, and then was raised up off the floor about seven inches, my feet feeling two of the legs off the floor, and Dr. Hamilton said that he knew two of the legs were off by feeling with his feet. I think Dr. Hamilton said that he held the mother's two hands at this time but of this I cannot be sure.\* My knee was against the medium's chair at the beginning of the trial and a hand took it and moved it away.

10. OTHER PHENOMENA. The door of the music cabinet of the phonograph was slammed several times, which Mrs. Milton said was not her work.\*\* Needles were run into the right arm of the medium, and my hand was taken and placed on the needle, to show, Dr. Smyth said, that the medium was anæsthetic. The medium's arm (and my hand) was rubbed and

---

\* Dr. Canwill knew practically our conclusions before he went to this séance and was aware of the possibility of the medium helping the phenomena.

\*\* I did not hold Mrs. Milton's hands during the table levitation but did hold them during the opening and closing of the door to the cabinet and changing and stopping and starting the phonograph. See note p. 252.

a snapping of the fingers heard at the end of each stroke, which Mrs. Milton said was done by the spirit of her mother who was a mediumistic healer. The phonograph was stopped and raps indicated that other music was wanted, on two occasions.

CONCLUSION. All the phenomena seem explicable by remembering that the left hand of the medium was free, except three: 1. The position of the wrist when I felt the pulse in the left hand. 2. The position of the hand when the good night kiss was given. 3. The table levitation.

George B. Canwill.

P.S. I find I have omitted an account of the lights which appeared on two or three different occasions. They varied in size from a diameter of  $\frac{1}{8}$  to  $\frac{1}{2}$  inch, and one first appeared waving through the air keeping time to the music. Afterwards the medium's face was lighted up by the light moving in front of it so that the features could be clearly distinguished. They usually disappeared by running down the front of the dress, as if it were on the point of the finger and were being wiped off on the dress. There was no light left on the dress however. They appeared as though they might be on the point of the finger. I never saw more than one light at a time, but others claimed that they saw as many as four at one time, corresponding to the points of the four fingers.\*

Addenda and explanatory to above, December 28th, 1908, are by W. H. Hamilton.

#### REPORTS OF SITTINGS BY DR. SMYTH.

January 28th, 1909.

Present Drs. Milne, Bertram and Smyth, and Mrs. Milton.

Materializing séance, held in kitchen, medium in cabinet, sitters seated around the entrance to the cabinet.

---

\* From where I sat I could see that the left thumb of the medium still retained a luminous patch and I leaned forward and pulled Smyth with me and asked him to remember just what he saw and touched her thumb, which was on the table by her side; she withdrew the thumb and flexing the arm on forearm rubbed the tips of the four fingers with her thumb and the luminous patch seemed to rub off on her finger-tips. It was here that I called

The séance had been in progress for about an hour, the atmosphere of the place was very harmonious and encouraging to the medium who seemed to be fulfilling her part to the delight and satisfaction of those present, as evidenced by exclamations of how wonderful! How lifelike! How much it looked like so and so!

Dr. Smyth entered at this time without interruption of the phenomena. The additional presence did not seem to disturb the medium: she seemed to be full of confidence and was trying to please. Her audience had been very sympathetic. Forms were appearing at the entrance to the cabinet and Dr. Smyth was called to view one of them supposed to be Lenore. The light was very dim and he complained of not being able to see the form and this caused the medium to put forth great effort to make the form visible. The reiteration of not being able to see it gave the medium confidence and Dr. Smyth was enabled to see the medium well and to study her actions in palming herself off as the materialized forms of different discarnate spirits. In taking the form of Lenore, she appeared with a folded cloth tied around her forehead, imitating a Spanish dancing and tambourine girl in everything except the color of the cloth which was white. The form gave a demonstration in tambourine playing and dancing which were well executed. The form was clothed in white, while the medium was wearing a white waist and a dark skirt. The form was without question the body of the medium who had with a simple change of the skirt and the white fold around the forehead converted herself into a Spanish dancing girl.

The next demonstration took the form of trying to impersonate a Mrs. Galton, a deceased sister of Mrs. Milton and a familiar "spirit" in the circle. Mrs. Milton thought the figure was ideal and the perfect image of her dead sister. Dr. Smyth was well acquainted with Mrs. Galton in life and could see no resemblance whatever to her but could detect without difficulty the face and form of the medium. It was a very poor impersonation.

The strange part of the demonstrations was the fact that

---

Smyth's attention to the four points; she then dropped her hand by her side and did something as when it came up the hand was entirely dark and no luminous points appeared.

neither Mrs. Milton nor Drs. Milne and Bertram saw any resemblance to the medium. Dr. Smyth said nothing about detecting the impersonation and did everything to encourage the medium to go on with the demonstration. The control was requested to show two forms at one time and this was tried. The medium again impersonating one of them and for the second taking a white cloth and making it into a bunch for the head. From the head down it consisted of apparently flowing cheese cloth, a very poor imitation of a discarnate spirit.

The control was asked to dematerialize a spirit form and this was undertaken three or four different times to the satisfaction of most of the sitters. The *modus operandi* changed several times, showing a resourcefulness that would imply great knowledge of the means for producing illusions in onlookers. The first effort which was more or less successful from the standpoint of creating an illusion was made by the medium standing at the parting of the curtains, but in the shadow and gradually assuming a crouching attitude and then going down on the knees with the head thrust farther into the shadow to be followed by a closure of the curtains with the white dress showing at the lower part. It was skillfully done.

The next effort was very simple. A large fold of cloth, made again so as to represent some outline of a human form, was held in front of the medium whose body standing back made the illusion complete when the curtains parted. As soon as the curtains began to close the medium was in the shadow and the little cheese cloth imitation of a form by crowding it down did service in "going through the floor." Whistling and singing were interspersed. There was no time that Dr. Smyth could not see and understand the simple trickery of the medium. Is it unconscious? Is it subconscious?

JOHN S. SMYTH, M. D.

May 13th, 1909.

Present Dr. Smyth, Mrs. Milton and Miss Burton.

The séance was arranged to secure special phenomena reported to Dr. Smyth by Dr. Milne, the latter having witnessed the levitation of the large oak dining table in sufficient light to see



the outline of objects distinctly, and observed a human form, presumably a man, grasp the frame of the table and lift it. The medium Miss Burton was so held that it was thought impossible that she could have participated in the phenomena.

The repetition of this phenomena was requested. Miss Burton and Dr. Smyth sat facing the window which was arranged with the shades raised so that light would fall on the table and illuminate the table sufficiently to see any object that would interpose itself between Dr. Smyth and the window. Singing, whistling and trumpet talking occurred at intervals but repeated efforts to raise the table all failed. One very pretty experiment took place which to the student of psychic phenomena is valuable. In much that has been offered by the trance personality of Miss Burton, as genuine supernormal phenomena, there has been much ground to question the honesty of Miss Burton's waking intelligence. Here is what occurred to strengthen one's confidence in the honesty of her waking self.

Miss Burton was sitting facing the window in the attempt to raise the table. The light was sufficient to illuminate the place where she was seated so that her body could be seen distinctly. During the progress of the test she recovered normal consciousness and conversed with Dr. Smyth seated at her right. Suddenly she remarked that a hand was stroking her right cheek and indicated by her tone of voice her surprise and amusement. Dr. Smyth could see every movement of Miss Burton's body. When she stated that she felt a hand, Dr. Smyth observed her right hand move from the table and to her face. While the operation was in progress Dr. Smyth conversed with Miss Burton and satisfied himself that her primary or waking intelligence knew nothing about what the trance personality was doing. Miss Burton was not acquainted with the "fraud" of her trance self. Dr. Smyth made no communication of what he was observing. An interesting fact was the frequency the trance self would partly lose control over the moving arm. At times the trance self could not lower Miss Burton's right arm and then the trance self, without the knowledge of Miss Burton's waking self, would reach across with the left hand and take Dr. Smyth's hand and put it on Miss Burton's right and force it to the table. Dr. Smyth tried to get the controls to indicate, when asked, whose

discarnate hand was stroking Miss Burton's face. The control, or trance personality, evidently knew that Dr. Smyth had discovered the—shall I say—deception and would not answer.

This experiment was repeated many times with Miss Burton conversing normally, while her own hands, without her waking intelligence being aware of it, were playing the "trick." Have we a shrewd improvising tricky trance personality to deal with?

John S. Smyth.

June 26th, 1909.

My dear Dr. Hyslop:—

I have some new light on the table raising phenomenon, but I am unable to satisfy myself of its import. It looks as if we might in time be able to offer a simple explanation without having to resort to the supernormal. The case is full of suggestiveness. It may be that we will find with it a tricky dissociated trance personality. I have had this idea in mind ever since the discovery of trickery.

Dr. Milne, of W——, reported to me that he had, during the table raising experiment, seen a form, presumably a man about six feet in height, emerge from the corner of the darkened room between the medium and Mrs. Milton, seated as usual at the table. The form bent over the table and at the point about its center where the table is extended or separated, took hold of the frame and lifted the table from the floor. This happened as the result of light getting into the room from a window opposite to the spot where the spectator was seated. It was not intended and the revelation was all a mere accident incident upon the admission of light.

I took up the investigation but could get nothing. "Black Cloud" repeatedly tried to produce the phenomena for me, but failed. He never could say why he failed, but he would insist each time that I return again when he would try to satisfy me. I made repeated efforts with as many failures and at last I was requested to come with Dr. Milne when "they" would be able to do the work with the help Dr. Milne's strength would lend to the circle. In the meantime Dr. Milne was attending séances independently in company with other parties, and he was having the experience repeated without failure. He reported to me

that, instead of the form being a man as he had at first witnessed, it had changed to a woman and looked very much like the medium. It was possible only to see the silhouette and one could not always see it in a way to make out resemblances. However, I accompanied Dr. Milne with the doctor's son and got a chance at last to study the phenomenon. The medium was given her usual seat. Dr. Milne sat at her right and I at his right. He held the medium's right hand during the entire performance. The window shade opposite was raised so as to admit sufficient light to see a form in the room between ourselves and the window. Dr. Milne held the medium's right hand with his left and paralleled her forearm with his to her elbow. I placed my head in front of Dr. Milne's body in the line with the light from the window. When the experiment proceeded, to my surprise, I saw the medium's silhouette perfectly about the center of the table crossing my line of vision at right angles. The table was lifted in this position without Dr. Milne being able to detect that the medium had left her seat at the table. The experiment was repeated a half dozen times with similar results, with a single additional discovery.

Toward the end of the repeated trials, Dr. Milne slipped his knee over and found that the medium was standing. She, as soon as discovered, as usual collapsed in her chair.

I made a second visit with Dr. Milne to investigate the phenomena further. We took the same positions at the table, but I kept my left hand free. I placed my head in front of Dr. Milne in line with the light admitted through the window: my left hand was free to examine the chair where the medium sat. As soon as the phenomenon appeared and the form could be seen in the usual place, I reached out and discovered that the medium was standing up leaning over the table. As soon as contact was made with her body, she again collapsed and we were unable to complete the experiment. She did not lift the table on this occasion.

Admitting that the medium stands when the table is lifted, I still cannot account for her position and her ability in this position to lift such a heavy table. She cannot herself get into the frame of the table and I, a strong man, can lift the table only with difficulty and with the use of both hands. With the me-

dium's left knee under one side and her left hand grasping the opposite side of the frame of the table it is possible with extraordinary strength which she does not possess and a fine knowledge of equilibration to lift the table. I cannot perform the feat with open eyes and both hands in use.

Sincerely,

John S. Smyth.

### REPORT OF SITTING FEB. 26, 1909.

Miss Burton medium:

Present Mrs. Milton, Miss Burton and Smyth—sitting opened as usual with phonograph reeling off popular music—medium soon entranced with Smyth holding her right hand. After some trumpet work—whistling and singing—the medium regains normal consciousness and speaks in a normal voice as follows: "I do not know what this means but I seem to be shown into a large room—a library—there is a table in the center of the room and round about are chairs covered with something black—a man is standing by the table and indicates that he has something to show me"—here speaking was interrupted although the medium afterward stated that she was conscious of everything said but could not reply. Soon the lost voice was recovered and she continued to see the view of the room but could add nothing new—the medium then dropped into a deep trance, indicated by hypersensitiveness to contact. During the clairvoyance and normal speaking Smyth had a very good opportunity to study functional anæsthesia confined to the trunk of the body and extremities—arms and lower limbs. The anæsthesia embraced the entire body below the root of the neck on a line with the clavicles. The face and neck showed normal sensation but the rest of the body could be pricked, pinched and squeezed without conscious sensation being recorded. The medium complained of feeling as though the body was subjected to a crushing weight. The contrast between conscious anæsthesia and subconscious hyperæsthesia was very striking as the medium several times alternated between the waking and the trance state during the experiment.

The rest of the evening was spent in securing routine phenomena without anything new taking place. An effort was made

by the medium to demonstrate the supernormal kissing of the hand while the medium's mouth was closed and located by the hand of the sitter. This was the proceeding—Smyth's left hand was placed over the mouth of the medium and his right was very deftly raised and carried to the left of the medium by a hand and while his hand was nervously held at the tips of the fingers, the upper side of it was touched in several places imitating the kissing of the hand. It was well done and would have passed ordinarily for a kiss but the effort and the preparation of the hand that supported Smyth's fingers was too transparent to pass without a proper interpretation of the trick. There was no doubt about the subconscious trickery and there was no doubt that the waking consciousness was not aware of what was transpiring. This could be readily made out by the clear evidence of subconscious operation of the body of the medium as witnessed by extreme hypersensitiveness and a lightning like movement which conscious muscular action cannot simulate.

John S. Smyth.

March 23d, 1909.

Present Miss Burton, Mrs. Milton and Smyth.—Meeting began in usual manner—Smyth seated at the right of the medium with the medium's right hand held during the séance. Request by Smyth at the beginning of the séance to operate in sufficient light, so that any materialized form, that might be present, could be seen. Request granted—séance continued—singing and whistling alternated—the trumpet could be easily seen moving about and appeared to be moved by the medium but on account of medium being in the shaded part of the room she could not be seen handling the trumpet. Request to have table levitated failed after many efforts were made to comply. Singing and whistling were repeated—Smyth placed his head against the chest of the medium and there were distinct vocal sounds heard over the chest while the singing was in progress. The vocal vibrations were easily detected. (This phenomenon should be connected with the vibration of the larynx heard at an earlier period.) One very striking feature noticed in the auscultation of the chest was the remarkable control of the breathing by the medium. In the singing, there seemed to be no loss of breath

control and the breathing appeared as regular as though the vocal cords were not in use.

Continued—nothing of importance took place—the table was not levitated and the control insisting on trying again at a future time bade the usual good night and meeting closed.

John S. Smyth.

**DETAILED RECORDS.****PART II.****By James H. Hyslop.****Introduction.**

The following records were made the next day after the sittings and are largely dependent on memory. I usually sat down after returning to my room from the sittings and made brief notes of the incidents and details which it was important to have in their chronological order, so that my memory would not be weakened when I came to write out the details. Sometimes these notes were rather full. At other times I made notes at the sittings, in the dark which would suffice to remind me of the proper order and details to be remembered. Often, however, I had to rely upon my memory alone for the record. Dr. Hamilton read over the records after they were written out and confirmed their accuracy in so far as his observations affected incidents that came under his notice. But it was impossible to make such a record as is desired in such experiments, as we did not have the financial means to prepare either for the laboratory needed or for methods of making notes. As the supernormal is not much in question this makes less difference than would otherwise be the case. But if the reader could have been in my place he would have observed that the account is more nearly what it ought to be than would be expected from the circumstances. It was not at all difficult to remember the little things that threw light upon the mental processes of Miss Burton and as they were the chief object of attention they easily found a place in my memory. At the same time it is desirable to have means of studying such cases in a manner impossible to us at the time. We might have had mechanical records of certain phenomena had we the means of arranging a laboratory for the purpose and apparatus that would do its work without embarrassing the



delicate subconscious machinery of Miss Burton. But in spite of this want we were able to remark facts which throw much light upon cases of the kind. It was perhaps well that we had to work under limitations, as these imposed the duty of patience and slow accumulation of facts.

I have to confess that had it not been for the slow work conditioned by darkness and Miss Burton's sensitiveness to light, we should probably have not found out the best facts of the record. The principal incidents bearing on the existence of hysteria and its many manifestations would never have been discovered had we attempted to apply tests for miracles instead of letting the case have its own way and simply observing the events as they occurred. The limitations under which we had to work were thus a blessing instead of an obstacle. More accuracy might have been obtained by laboratory methods, but it would have been easy to have destroyed our chances for the discovery of many important phenomena had we employed the rough methods of the usual scientist. But accepting our situation we discovered facts which would never have manifested themselves but for the tact and delicacy of our methods.

The personalities involved were mentioned in the articles published in the *Journal*, with their history and characteristics (Vol. III, pp. 689-710). The only ones of these concerned in this Report are Dan, Pietra, Oma, Black Cloud, and Lenore. In the singing one or two unnamed personalities occasionally took part, but not frequently enough to make any special point of them as personalities.

Pietra is supposed to be the agent in the expert whistling. He claimed to be a Spaniard and gave his full name as Seignior Pietra Domuria. He took no important part in the phenomena except the whistling. The chief control was Dan, or Dan Rulland, who claimed to be an American soldier in the Spanish war. Black Cloud is, as the name suggests, an Indian and one of the controls, especially connected with certain of the physical phenomena, rarely with the automatic writing. Oma is the name of a deceased friend of Miss Burton and sings, and Lenore claims to have been a Spanish dancer. There is no adequate evidence of their reality and hence they

may be assumed here to be secondary personalities of Miss Burton. It was not possible to investigate their claims and identity and the case had to have its character determined independently of all such questions.

The dates of each sitting are of the day previous to the time of the records, so that the dates mentioned are those of making the records. The reader will thus be reminded always of the place which memory has in them.

### **First Series.**

Jan. 15th, 1909.

The following experiences were had on the date mentioned, but were written out the next morning from memory. The phenomena were in the dark and no notes could be taken.

The reports by Dr. Hamilton and Dr. Smyth stimulated an interest in the case of Miss Anna Burton only as an hysteric who was perfectly honest normally, but who apparently did many things that would be regarded as fraud if done in a normal state. Arrangements were made by the doctors for some sittings. No concealment of my identity was made, as it was not necessary and not the intention to try for super-normal information.

Miss Burton is a demure modest and naive girl just coming into mature life and her conduct normally would not betray any indications of the ordinary fraud. The previous investigation by the two physicians named seems to show that there is no reason to suspect any conscious fraud in the case and my observations would confirm the absence of apparent disposition normally to play tricks. But the first sitting is no criterion of this and I record what I do as showing no evidence so far of what must first be decided.

The phenomena purport to be movement of physical objects without contact, independent whistling and singing, lights, levitation, raps, etc. Darkness and the music of a phonograph are the necessary accompaniments of the phenomena and so nothing can be treated as evidential under such conditions. But the phenomena as they occur are well

worthy of observation and study. I went with no intention of trying tests, but only to let things take their own course and to see what could be observed and what not. The following were the incidents of the evening as reported from memory and perhaps affected in many instances by the result of inference as to the whole, tho not in specific instances.

The table used was a large extension table. It probably weighs at least 100 pounds and may be as much as alleged by Drs. Hamilton and Smyth. The phonograph was situated in the corner of the room as much as four feet from the table. Mrs. Milton sat next to this instrument for regulating its music, placing and changing the pieces and winding the machine. Miss Burton sat on the other side of the phonograph and next to me at my left. I sat close to her for holding her hands and to use other means of watching her actions. Drs. Smyth and Hamilton sat on the opposite side of the table which was a little over four feet wide.

When the music was started and the light put out there was complete darkness, except for some light that came through the door of the kitchen and fell on the floor and made a dim stream of light from the door to the wall at my right and all the way to the ceiling. No importance attaches to the fact except to mark it, as it would have been prevented if it had been noticed when we sat down, as complete darkness is usually asked or required. The light was too dim to affect the general darkness in the room and did not help visual observations any more than absolute darkness. It did, however, prevent any accomplice from entering the room from that side. Mr. Milton left the room and went upstairs to take charge of a child for the evening, tho saying that he would be with us if desired. Dr. Hamilton sat next to the parlor door which was closed so that no light would enter from the parlor and was able to protect us against the admission of Mr. Milton or any one else. He saw that the sliding doors were closed in a manner to prevent or make it very difficult for any one to enter.

The table, some four feet from the phonograph, was opened so that the two parts were about four inches apart. In a few minutes, say about five or ten, there was a convulsive shake of

the right hand of Miss Burton which I was holding and the table gave a jerky movement toward the phonograph. This action was continued, tho without repeated convulsive movements of the right hand, until the table was within a foot or eighteen inches of the phonograph. This was determined only at the end of the experiment. Once the light was turned up to tie a shawl on the support of the leaves of the extension, as Miss Burton, when resting during the trance, places her head down on the table or on this support between the two parts of it.

Before she went into the trance her right hand was placed on the table near me and I was allowed to place my left hand on it. I held it so that I could determine at all times that it was her right hand. I first examined its position, the palm and upper part and the thumb, counting the fingers so that there could be no mistake about its being her right hand. This was all in the dark, tho I had seen that it was the right hand before the lights were turned out. But I assumed that it might have been changed without my knowing it, tho I had no reason to believe from the circumstances that such a thing either had been done or was possible. Now during the evening this right hand of Miss Burton was never away from my touch by one hand or the other except twice. Once there was a sudden removal of it and once my left hand was raised by some other hand and placed on her chin and my right hand raised in the air by some other hand and "kissed" high in the air while I was holding the chin, my right hand being possibly two feet from her face. Where the right hand was during this performance I do not know. The left hand of Miss Burton was free during the entire experiment. On the first occasion when her right hand was free from mine it was apparently placed on her face. I ascertained this by touching her elbow with mine and the evidence was that her hand was pressed against her face, as it had been once before when I followed up her movement with mine, and her hand was on her face, with her elbow in the position in which I found it at this time when her right hand was free from mine. Nothing occurred during this period when her hand was free. She soon replaced it on the table where I covered it by mine again.

The important object which I had during the evening was to discover whether I could detect sympathetic and synchronous

muscular movements in the right hand and arm while her free left hand was performing the "tricks." To aid in this I not only covered her right hand with my left—a few times for special purposes with my right,—but I allowed my arm and elbow to rest against her right arm and elbow, so that the slightest movement of the arm could be detected. I also constantly—not with absolute uniformity, but for many and long periods of time during the evening—placed my left knee against her right knee and often reached under the edge of the table with my right hand and across my knees to touch or hold her dress while various things were going on. The object was to detect, if possible, any changes in the position of her body to facilitate the use of the left and free hand. I was not able to detect during the entire evening any other change of her position than the one that was necessary at the outset when the table was moved up near the phonograph. The right arm which I watched was straightened somewhat after awhile, as if to prevent my touching it with my arm and elbow. But I simply bent my arm a little more and could and did hold it against hers all evening. No evidence of changing her position was discovered and when the evening was over I saw no indications of her having changed her position suspiciously. I did not discover but once any apparent movement of the whole body and that was during the attempt to levitate the table which did not succeed. During this there was considerable movement of her body, but not her legs, except muscular movement in the one I was touching with my knee. It did not change its position. She, however, apparently tried to rise and I suspected that she was trying to get into the crevice between the two parts of the table to get secure hold of the supports for the extension leaves. I put out my right hand, however, to see if she was in this crevice and she was not. Other incidents in connection with the phenomena I shall notice in special cases.

After the table was shoved into its desired position there was an interval of waiting for events to occur. There were lying on the table two tambourines, a trumpet, two bells and rattle bones. After a time Mrs. Milton announced that "Dan Rulland" was to be present, having gotten this promise from him before, apparently, and after he had seemed to have disappeared from the séances of Drs. Hamilton and Smyth. Soon raps occurred and

he answered by three raps that he was present. When it was asked if "Black Cloud" were present three raps came and when asked if it was he that rapped the answer, one rap, was "No." When further interrogated it was made clear by raps that "Black Cloud" was present, but was not making the raps, but it was "Dan Rulland" that was doing this. Various directions regarding the music, the pieces of it to be played, the loudness of the music, etc., were given by raps in answer to questions.

The first thing that occurred was independent whistling. It was not very distinct and was both more or less synchronous and identical with the music. That is, the melody of the whistling was exactly that of the musical instrument and kept time with it, tho not exactly good time. It was apparently a little belated in its notes. But it was not always distinct and sometimes was so buried up in the music of the phonograph, especially when this was loud and the sound exactly like the whistling that no apparent difference was detectible. The only thing that I could be sure of, and this only at times, was that the whistling did not seem to be where the music was. It seemed to be off toward Dr. Hamilton and Dr. Smyth fully five feet from the instrument, tho apparently fluctuating in its position, but at no time either toward the phonograph or near Miss Burton. But as the whistling was not loud and distinct and I could distinguish it only at times from the melody of the phonograph I need not dwell on the facts or my apparent localization of the sound, as later and better illustrations occurred for notice. But I gave the most of my attention to detect muscular movements in Miss Burton to indicate that she was whistling through the trumpet held in her left hand. I had no evidence that she was holding it. But as she was in a position to pick it up, if she desired, tho it lay in about the center of the table when we sat down, I had to assume that she was using it. But, tho I gave far more attention and effort to discover sympathetic muscular movements in her right arm and elbow and her leg, I detected none.

The second phenomena was whistling by Pietra and this was remarkably clear and distinct. There was no mistake in both distinguishing it from the phonograph or in localizing it. The whistling was as clear as that of an expert whistler on the

stage and was quite musical. It was the same tune as that played, but the notes followed so that we could distinguish the whistling from the tone of the instrument at the time, tho in a later instance, where the music had been very familiar to the medium the whistling was more distinctly synchronous. Here, however, it was a new piece and the tones in the whistling followed the instrument slightly. This I remarked during every instance of Pietra's work except the one mentioned. One whistling tune was played and here it was difficult to distinguish and locate the notes of the whistling. But in all other instances it was very easy. The location seemed to be in front of me at the distance of Drs. Hamilton and Smyth, tho moving about from place to place, but never seeming to be toward the instrument at my left or near Miss Burton. In many of the experiments involving this whistling it was at my right as distinctly as any sound could possibly be located and apparently a foot or eighteen inches from my ear. The trumpet several times touched my right hand resting on the table, the mouthpiece being toward Miss Burton and on my hand, but no trace of Miss Burton's head was discoverable, and she could not have had her head or face where the trumpet mouthpiece was without resting on my left hand holding her right. She might have held it so with her left hand and done the whistling with her mouth and I have been subject to an illusion of localization, but it was not discoverable that it was done any other way.

The most striking and impressive phenomenon during the evening was independent whistling and singing simultaneously. Pietra whistled and some one else sang. Several different persons sang as marked by different voices. That is, the representation was of different persons. The localization of both singing and whistling was at the apparent distance of four feet from Miss Burton and varied only in locality by apparent movements from side to side and often at my right, apparently situated two feet from me and apparently out of reach of Miss Burton's hand, assuming that she was doing it through a trumpet. Sometimes the whistling and singing did not seem to be in the same exact direction or place. That is, the whistling would appear to be in front of me or slightly at the right and the singing to the left of this point by as much as sixty degrees. As if to impress me



with the genuineness of it, the whistling and singing often came to my right and appeared to be located about two feet or eighteen inches from me and perhaps a foot from each other, so far as I could judge. But they did not seem to be at the same spot. Once while the whistling and singing were simultaneous, while I was holding the right hand of the medium with my left as described, her left hand raised up and mine remained on it and it pointed to the right of myself and came back. In a few seconds, perhaps three or four, the whistling and singing were on my right, apparently out of the reach of Miss Burton unless she could be said to have been holding the trumpet with an instrument, extension tongs, in her left hand which was free. But I was not able to discover any ordinary method by which she could do the singing and whistling simultaneously. I had two things to watch for: the localization of the whistling and singing, and their relation to each other. I gave my most scrutinizing examination to the sympathetic muscular action of her arm and body and could never find any evidence of their movement to explain her part in the phenomenon. But I varied my attention to the localization and relation of the two phenomena, and while I have to recognize my liability to illusion under the circumstances, I endeavored with all my might to discover traces of their occurrence at my left and near Miss Burton but never found the slightest trace of such. Of course assuming that she used the trumpet I would not find any such traces. But it is not so easy to explain the simultaneous singing and whistling. I carefully watched for succession between the notes of whistling and singing and found no trace of it whatever, save occasionally such relation as we observe often between two singers with the same note. But this was apparently too short a time to imagine that Miss Burton could shift her vocal efforts from whistling to singing and *vice versa*. Often the notes were as exactly synchronous as bass and soprano in music, at least so far as I could discover, and the only way to distinguish between them was in the timbre of the two. They were the same note, but differed in timbre as singing and whistling must differ. But two things often occurred to make both their nature and their distinctness clear. The singing followed by the fraction of a second the note in the whistling, and often had to cease before the whistling, while

the latter kept on until the singing could begin again. I tried to get evidence of their successive relation and distance in time sufficient to account for them as separate efforts, but not a trace of such evidence could be detected. All this while I could also discover no evidence of the movement of her body or sympathetic movements of the right hand and arm, such as we might *a priori* suppose when the left hand and body were adjusting themselves to the necessity of the acts.

The shaking and movements of the tambourines were not so interesting as they were more easily accounted for naturally. But two incidents occurred in connection with the movements of this instrument. First, the tambourine often touched my hand resting on the table or on Miss Burton's right hand and so lightly that one could not see how it could be done so suddenly in pitch darkness. It was as deft as if she saw my hand clearly and did it slowly. But when any object, such as the trumpet or tambourine touched my hand or head it was done with that ease and suddenness, often while whistling or other events were going on, that it struck me as difficult to manage. Once the tambourine struck my nose a blow hard enough to make me jump back, tho it did not hurt me. Apparently it was done on purpose: for immediately a hand came and carefully rubbed my nose, as if to remove the effects supposedly produced by the blow, which, in fact, had not hurt me, but surprised me. Once the large tambourine was very quickly laid on my right hand resting on the table and the smaller tambourine picked up so quickly and rattled off at other side of the table that I cannot imagine how it could be done so quickly and without betraying evidence of how it was done. All this time my left hand was holding down Miss Burton's right. We may suppose that she had both tambourines in one hand and simply dropped the larger on mine and had not to pick up the smaller at all. I do not know where the instruments were on the table at the time this particular performance began, and so there is no way to make the event so remarkable as it might appear to some, especially when not reported accurately.

Once when the tambourine was making a noise and moving apparently near Dr. Hamilton some four feet distant from Miss Burton she leaned her head forward to rest, as she frequently

did during the evening. It rested on the table in front of me. I put my right hand over my left arm and placed it on her left arm and felt it from the shoulder down for six or nine inches, so far as I could guess. My desire was to see if her left arm was doing the act. I found it without a sign of muscular action and not in a position stretching toward where the sound seemed to be located. Her arm was not apparently stretched out at all, but inclined exactly as it would be if the hand were resting quietly on the table, which it supposedly was on the assumption of her honesty and the genuineness of the phenomena. I had expected to find the left arm stretched out in the air and so the upper part of the arm elevated and showing signs of muscular action. But not a trace of either was discoverable. But I noticed that very soon the tambourine suddenly ceased and I withdrew my right hand from her left arm and shoulder and it was some time before any more phenomena occurred.

During the whistling and singing simultaneously, Dr. Hamilton reported several times that he held Mrs. Milton's throat to prove that she was not accompanying the whistling by her own voice, and he reported no signs of vocalization on her part. Also several times when the tambourine was really or apparently in motion he held Mrs. Milton's hands to prove that she was not doing it. Once or twice, apparently the phonograph was started or stopped by the "controls." If the music was not satisfactory to the controls the instrument was apparently stopped by them and without the intervention of Mrs. Milton. To give this more stirring character Mrs. Milton put in a new piece of music, wound up the machine and placed the needle and then placed both her hands in Dr. Hamilton's who was holding them with his hands, and the instrument started apparently of itself. I could not tell in the darkness whether Miss Burton was near enough to do this with her left hand. I neglected after the séance to examine. But I did not detect any movements in her body or sympathetic movements in her right arm to indicate that she had done it. If the needle was on the side of the instrument near her she might have reached it, but apparently it was where Mrs. Milton could reach it without coming to the place where Miss Burton was to get it. An examination this evening will determine this.

Once during one of the performances, I forget which, whether

movement of the tambourine or whistling, I wanted to hold my right hand on Miss Burton's right and to place my left hand on the back of Miss Burton's chair to touch and examine her back and left arm at suitable moments, and so placed my right hand on her right, but did not move my left from it. In a few moments, as if reading my mind, a hand came and took my left and placed it on Miss Burton's shoulder and neck. After the sitting I learned from Dr. Hamilton that this was often done at his séances, so that we do not require mind reading to account for the coincidence. Neither would we require it if it had not been a matter of frequent occurrence. We may suppose that the very placing of my right upon her right might lead to an inference on the part of Miss Burton's subliminal that I wanted to do some such thing, and to satisfy me her left hand had placed my left on her shoulder and neck. I observed, however, when it was there, evidence of sympathetic muscular movements in the neck connected with the occurrence of phenomena at an apparent distance. This was the only evidence I obtained during the evening, with one exception, of synchronous muscular movements that might be taken as evidence of the medium's action in the phenomena.

We asked for lights and they soon came. Once before, in experiments with Mrs. Blake of Huntington, W. Va., I saw exactly similar phenomena, but never before or since. I am not able to make suggestive comparisons with trick lights and am not familiar with methods of making them. I know some simple ways of doing it, those of using moistened phosphorus matches on the finger tips. But Drs. Hamilton and Smyth tell me that these lights are not the kind that they are able to produce. It was often noticeable, especially when the lights appeared on or near Miss Burton's face or chest, that a radiated light shown on her face or dress and that the light itself was not seen by the observers, Drs. Hamilton and Smyth, on the opposite side of the table. Often they saw lights which I could not see. This was uniformly when I was not in a position to see what we may call the background of the light. That is, the lights often seemed to issue from a point in space and shone only in one direction, not in a direction opposite the radiated light on the face or dress. This would appear to indicate that the finger concealed the light

from observers who could not see the light from the front. Sometimes the light seemed to be long and at others round. Once it appeared as an arch. Usually it was in slow motion, more often slow than very rapid. They often appeared as if below the table and at a point which would require me to see them through the table. I knew where the crevice was and they appeared at a point which would not be visible through the crevice. A few times I saw the light come up through this crevice or at points that suggested this. I asked for them to occur at my left and where I intended that it would be difficult for the left hand of Miss Burton to produce them without betraying her own part in them. Once a light so appeared in a few seconds and if my localization of it could be assuredly correct it would not have been easy to produce it in the situation observed, or apparently observed, without the use of extensors. I also asked for them to appear at my right and they did so several times and where it would have been apparently impossible to do it with her left hand—I all the time holding her right—unless she used extensors. With her hand alone, assuming that the lights were a foot at my right as they appeared to be, she could hardly have made them without betraying sympathetic muscular action and I bent all my attention and energy to discover these movements, having asked for the lights at the right for the purpose of investigating these movements.

I resolved to test the lights and to repeat the experiment I performed with Mrs. Blake for the purpose of trying to catch Miss Burton's hand in the act of making the light. I waited for the appearance of a light before and near me and had my hand within a few inches of it. Twice I managed to put my hand through the light without touching any object whatever. The first time this was perfectly clear and unmistakable. The second time it was not so unmistakable, as the light was further off and I was much more liable to illusion in the localization of the light. The third time I touched a hand or object and the lights immediately ceased and Miss Burton's head fell forward for a rest. Lights did not appear for some time again, but did come again spontaneously and repeated many of the previous phenomena, tho I made no further attempt to disturb them.

We tried levitation of the table. Soon I observed convulsive

muscular movements in the right hand which I was holding and they were soon followed by the apparent rising of Miss Burton from her seat, but examination showed that she did not stand up. She seems to have leaned forward and to have only slightly raised herself from the chair. The table cracked and groaned several times and then ceased. I held my two feet so that I could measure the elevation of the table, if it occurred, but always watching for the movements of her body and expecting her to get up and go between the two parts of the table where she could get hold of a part of it to enable her to lift it. I often put my right hand forward to feel her in the crevice—about eighteen inches wide—but never found her there. The table ceased cracking and tho we were told by raps that they would not cease trying to raise it no tendency to rise occurred and the attempts to levitate it were interrupted by the repetition of whistling and simultaneous singing and lights.

Dr. Hamilton called for "Mrs. Galton's kiss." This consists of raising the sitter's hand in the air and apparently kissing it out of the reach of Miss Burton's mouth. After some waiting and other performances this was done for me in the following manner.

My left hand was taken by some hand, while I held the right hand of Miss Burton in my right, and my hand, the left, was raised in the air and apparently let go and "kissed." It seemed only a touch from something. I was not able to determine what kind of a touch. I did not detect the features which Dr. Hamilton conjectures to be the facts, namely, the placing of the thumb on the first two fingers and putting them down on the sitter's hand to imitate the successive touches of lip and nose. I seemed only to get a touch. I did not have the chance to observe as closely as I desired whether the touch on the top of the hand was simultaneous with the holding of my hand in the air by the "spirit" hand. But while my attention was occupied in studying the position of my own arm and hand my observation of the "kiss" was that my hand was let go and the "kiss" implanted on the top of my hand afterward, so that we can suppose that it was Miss Burton's left hand that did the whole thing. The second "kiss" pointed more distinctly to this. I resolved to rise this time to see if my hand would be moved to a point

wholly out of reach of her left hand or of any other. On this occasion, soon after the first, my left hand was taken by some hand and placed on Miss Burton's chin and lips. My right hand was then taken in some hand and raised in the air. I arose and intended to let it go as far as I could reach. But the hand took the curve which Miss Burton's hand would take without rising, as she did not rise, and occupied a position where her own hand could reach, when the "kiss" was implanted as before, and the "spirit" hand removed at once. There was no evidence that her own left hand had not done it, and as the right hand was free for a moment we may suppose that it was able to aid. But in fact, I do not believe that the right hand moved in the case. Her body did not rise, as my left hand on her lips and chin showed this. The "kissing," however, was not beyond her own powers at the time. If my hand had been pushed out into space, instead of making the curve which it would do in hers, I might have been impressed more with the phenomenon.

Now in regard to general observations of particular actions I must remark that there were comparatively few muscular movements of the right hand during the two or more hours of the séance. They were frequent in the sense that they occurred a number of times not numbered by me and lasted for a few seconds, except when she twice became cataleptic in her arm. Only twice did I notice that the movement of the right hand or arm, mine following them, appeared synchronous with the phenomena going on. All other times they either preceded something to occur, apparently foreshadowing it, or seemed to occur in an interval. They were not sympathetic movements, but muscular contractions of some force and often very sudden and convulsive, but never tending to draw the right hand into any complicity in the phenomena.

Whenever Miss Burton had done something for some time, she suddenly fell forward on the table for a rest and when ready to go on spontaneously she arose to an upright position. She seemed limp when thus resting, but tense and natural when upright.

The most important observation to make is this, which I have left to the last purposely. It tends to show that muscular action of large parts of the body could take place without re-



vealing itself in the hand and arm which I was holding. The first time she fell forward I did not notice any sympathetic action in the hand or arm that I was holding, and in fact did not know what had occurred until Dr. Hamilton remarked it from the thud of her head falling on the shawl protection placed on the table. When he remarked it I put my right hand out and felt her head lying on the shawl. In a few minutes I put my hand out a second time and found that her head was not there and *by examination with my hand found she had risen to an upright position and I had not detected the slightest evidence of it in any sympathetic action of the right hand which I was holding in my left.* This occurred three times, and her head had to fall forward so that her shoulders had to move through a considerable arch to rest on the table. There is here evidence of isolated, or what Dr. Hamilton calls segmental, motor action, so that there is apparently no way to detect motor action of her body and left hand, while holding her right, except to have some command of the left side of the body. One thing is certain and that is that whatever part her body played in the phenomena it did not betray adequate sympathetic muscular action of the parts held by me to prove that her left hand or other part of her organism was sufficiently concerned to account for the facts. We must assume that she was able to control all of her organism that would betray what she was doing, or that I was deceived in my judgment about the parts I held. We might assume both of them and that I was not situated to make accurate observations. As I was on the alert for this sympathetic motion it is not easy to impeach my perceptions, as least not so easy as if I had not suspected what the facts were. My very search for sympathetic movements would tend, if suggestion and preperception have any claims to respect, to create a perception of the very thing expected and sought. The sympathetic motions may have been so slight as not to be detectible, but this is to grant what would not be expected in such circumstances. Apparently the important fact is that there was only segmental motor action by the body, if we are to suppose its agency in producing the effect, whether partially or wholly.

One thing I neglected to mention in connection with the whistling. I observed several times that the whistling continued when the phonograph paused in its music. That is, when an

interval of silence obtained at times the whistling continued alone and could be well located and recognized as an apparently independent phenomenon.

One thing that struck me was the real or apparent evidence that the hands that rubbed mine were pulled in a direction that made it seem impossible to suppose that Miss Burton's left hand could do it. One would imagine that the hand came out of space and pulled itself along mine so that the palm and ball of the touching hand with the fingers pointing toward Miss Burton's body moved out from her body. Supposing it her hand we would expect the movement to represent her hand and fingers more or less at right angles to the median plane of her own body. But the hand and fingers moved in a line parallel with the median plane. I watched this very carefully and could detect no apparent illusion in it, tho at times the hand touching mine seemed not to take this parallel course.

Jan. 16th, 1909.

The second sitting had some of the features of the first and two or three new ones. I shall describe only the new facts and any such additions that will throw light upon the case or the previous experiment. I write from memory again the next morning as soon as I could dress, having not been able to get home until two in the morning.

The first thing that I did on this evening was to examine the phonograph to see if Miss Burton could have touched the switch that started the instrument the evening before. I saw that she could easily have done so. The switch was over on her side of the machine and could be reached nearly, if not altogether, as easily as by Mrs. Milton.

The whistling repeated this evening the same phenomena as on the previous evening and I had the opportunity to study its localization still further. I tried my utmost to locate it where it would appear to be if Miss Burton were doing it herself but I could not obtain even an illusion of such locality. As the phenomena were ostensibly produced by or through the trumpet it was natural that I should not locate the sounds near Miss Burton. The location was varied as before and appeared now near Drs. Hamilton and Smyth, now on my left across the table,

now at my right across the table, now at my left near my ear and between Miss Burton and myself and now at my right near my ear, and apparently moving about with considerable rapidity from place to place, but always at considerable distance from Miss Burton. But I observed that the localization of the sound was determined by the place of the trumpet. The trumpet was, at times, made to touch the left side of my face, my left arm near my ear, and then my right hand holding Miss Burton's and against to be manifestly near my right ear. Whatever source of the whistling its localization was determined by its relation to the trumpet.

But there was one thing in this whistling that was perfectly clear and which leads me to think that I may have misrepresented some of the facts connected with it the previous evening. I noticed this time that the whistling did not repeat the notes of the music played on the instrument. It kept time with the phonograph, but the music of the whistling was an accompaniment of the instrument. It gave the independent notes and pyrotechnics of an expert whistler varying and adding notes at will. This was as evident as I ever noticed such phenomena in singing in a concert. I think it possible that the reason I did not remark the fact the evening before was that I gave my attention primarily to the time and the effort to discover whether the whistling was independent of the machine. I noticed that the music was the same in its general character and that parts of it were as identical as in a concert. But I did not mark the variations, which I think now probably took place. For they were unmistakably present this evening, and the localization was, if anything clearer than before.

Several times there was whistling as clear and nearly as good when the phonograph was not playing at all. At first this occurred spontaneously and the praise that we gave the performer led to the request for its repetition and it was granted. I think it was four times that this independent whistling occurred while the instrument was silent.

The most striking incident in the way of music again was the simultaneous singing and whistling. I gave my attention this time to assuring myself of that kind of simultaneity which shows that the whistling and singing were not due to Miss Burton

alone. I do not mean that I have felt any doubts about their apparent character before: for there could be no mistake to one who heard it at all times that they could not be accounted for in the ordinary manner, even if we assumed that Miss Burton did it all herself. What I wanted to study still more carefully was the features which would discredit the hypothesis that she could produce the whistling and singing by successively doing the one and the other by separate notes. One who heard it at any time would not suspect this was possible, but it is the only conceivable hypothesis to escape independent voices, except that Mrs. Milton or one of the others, Drs. Hamilton and Smyth or myself were participants in it. Dr. Hamilton reported at the time that he held Mrs. Milton's throat and larynx and that no vibrations were perceptible when the singing and whistling went on. Assuming that it was impossible for Mrs. Milton under the reported circumstances to assist and that no others of us were doing a part, an observer would not naturally even suspect that the whistling and singing could be done by the same mouth any more than he could suspect it in an ordinary concert. The tones were as absolutely simultaneous as I ever heard anything and as distinct in timbre. If objection be raised it would have to be on the ground of illusion produced in my hearing. But I could no more imagine this than I can imagine that all the auditory sensations I ever had were illusions. I could detect no difference between the situation and that of a concert which I heard normally and I had no reasons to imagine that I was in any respect different on this occasion than I have been at concerts or other entertainments. The voices in the singing were not musical in any remarkable sense as the whistling was, but they were clearly voices singing in the trumpet. I could not always hear the words distinctly, but that they were of the nature of voices, however, produced, I could have no doubt, so far as sensation could report them. They were somewhat more muffled when the whistling and singing were simultaneous, but as distinct as in a concert. Objection must come from the suspicion and charge of illusion against my senses and this is perhaps conceivable by others who were not present, but not apparent or detectible by myself. The variation in localization of the singing and whistling was a marked and important circumstance. I gave attention to

see if the singing would be located at one place and the whistling at another, and then together at the same place. I observe many times that the singing might be at my left and the whistling at my right or both at the left and both at the right at other times. Also I noticed that the singing might be near me either in front or at the side and the whistling far in front or at the side, or *vice versa*. That is, the singing appeared at a distance and the whistling near. There was no such uniformity as would imply that the same organism was producing the effect, except by supposing that two trumpets were used by the same mouth simultaneously singing and whistling but moving the separate trumpets about in different localities. The fact was that the trumpet present was made of two pieces each of which could be used, but in the darkness there was no way of determining assuredly that the two pieces were used. Besides it would be difficult for Miss Burton to handle both trumpets with her left hand while I held her right as I did all evening, with the exception that occasionally it was free for a few seconds and this only when nothing was occurring. Even then I saw that it was resting against her cheek and not engaged in any action to produce phenomena. It would have been extremely difficult for her to hold both trumpets in the one free hand and to move them about so that the singing would appear located at one place and the whistling at another, and to vary these in ways suitable to alternate their localities in any direction. And also to do this with the rapidity and ease that were apparent. Besides the size of the larger piece was such that it would have to be held in one way and the smaller another, except we suppose that the smaller was held at its larger end. The larger piece could be held simultaneously with the other only by pinching it on the rim by its thickness and not by placing the hand around its circumference. Its larger end was at least four inches in diameter and the smaller two inches or more. How she could have handled these two pieces and carried on the simultaneous singing and whistling I cannot see. Not that I assume or believe that she did not, but that I have had no experience that would lead me to believe that such a thing can be a fact as simple as we must suppose to account for the phenomena. I find no simple explanation, whatever it be.

The table lifting or levitation was perhaps as remarkable a phenomenon as occurred during the evening. It was asked for and promised. In a few moments after it was promised I noticed decided muscular movements in Miss Burton's body. They were not movements in the hand which I was holding merely, but there were evidences in the way the hand on the table moved and especially in the change of position in her arm against which I was holding my left hand at times and at others my elbow, to show that some bodily movement was executed. But it did not last long. It was apparently like a slight shifting on the chair or leaning forward. It was the only evidence that I obtained all evening for the movement of the body, except when she threw her head on the table to rest. As soon as the few movements were completed she sat in the usual quiet manner and there were no further indications of action on her part during the whole performance of lifting the table three times.

I should have remarked that we sat at the table in the same order as before, and the table had been pulled up, as before, near the phonograph until Miss Burton and I were jammed up against the wall, I with my chair tight against it. A short time before the experiment at lifting the table and before some of the whistling was completed Mr. Milton came in and sat at my right hand near me. He was present during the rest of the evening. There was no similar light this evening to that described previously. The light had not been allowed to burn in the kitchen and so the crevice between the swinging door and sill showed no line of light. Only a little light streamed in at the top and bottom of the window curtains, but not enough to affect the darkness of the room. I could see it dimly, but unless facing it the light could not be noticed and Miss Burton did not remark it.

It was some time before the table was lifted. Communication through the trumpet to Dr. Hamilton and Mrs. Milton was had to direct our sympathetic mental action and asking us to think of what we wanted and what they were going to do. Several times during this period and before these directions were given I felt a hand take my left hand, which was now holding Miss Burton's right, and press it down on hers. I did not interpret this act as meaning anything more than usual. But finally the trumpet told the two mentioned that Miss Burton would have a

tendency to use that hand and that I must press it hard to prevent it. I then indicated that I had had the hint several times, but did not interpret it so. I then began a heavy pressure, perhaps ten pounds, on her right hand while my right rested on the table with a similar pressure. At no time did Miss Burton remove her right hand from under mine. I had but two things in the experiment to watch, namely, her right hand and the foot of the table in front of me. I was to see that this foot was not reached by hers and to measure the distance the table rose, if it rose. The music continued, and after some minutes the table showed signs of rising, and after swaying a little rose about four inches, went back to about two inches, and then rose to about six inches, as measured by my following the bottom of the foot in my command and marking the height on my left leg, when it began to descend, having held my left leg against my right foot. This was done twice and the table on my side rose perhaps eight inches the second time. I watched, as far as possible, for evidence that the table was not tipped and I found no trace of it. It was apparent that it rose with little difference between different sides of it, and the others reported that their sides rose about the same as mine. Dr. Hamilton had charge of the leg on his side and held Mrs. Milton's hands while the phenomenon occurred, she sitting some distance from the table, perhaps nearly two feet or fully that. Dr. Smyth had charge of the table leg in front of me and on the opposite side. There was only one leg accessible to Miss Burton or any one else, and that sustained the same relation to Miss Burton that the leg I controlled in front of me, tho I have no evidence that she touched it. I could detect no movements on her part either to raise the table or to influence the leg of it within her reach. My occupation with the hand held by my left and with the measuring of the elevation of the table was an obstacle to clear perception of her actions, if they occurred, so that I must allow for that preoccupation of attention which would limit my powers of observation. But I could easily have detected any extraordinary movements by her and there were certainly none by her right hand, which rested on the leaf of the table in perfect quiet under mine.

As Mr. Milton was on my right and could be accused of either lifting the table or of aiding others, it was deemed best to try



again under better conditions, and it seems that these were suggested by the trance personalities. Mr. Milton felt impelled to place his two hands on the table near me and my right hand was picked up and placed on them. I then felt his hand to be sure that I was holding both of them and wove my fingers between the fingers of both his hands on the top of the table, and seeing that his thumbs, so far as I could determine it, were not placed under the rim of the table. I had Miss Burton's right hand in my left as before pressing hard upon it to make it keep its place. My right foot protected the leg of the table against Mr. Milton's doing anything with it, and no other leg was within reach of him, tho the central protector of the leaf supporter might have been reached by him with an effort, but only by some stretching of his leg. Hands were pressed on those of Dr. Hamilton and Dr. Smyth at a distance of four feet and some inches from Miss Burton. It was apparently to indicate how the hands were to be held on the table. But Dr. Hamilton held the hands of Mrs. Milton, who did not place hers on the table at all, while he commanded one leg of the table and Dr. Smyth another as before.

I held my right foot against the left side of the leg of the table in front of me and my left leg against this foot. I was so jammed against the table and my chair that I could not get my foot around to the right side of the leg to see that Mr. Milton did not touch it. But when the table was raised I put my foot under the leg of the table and to the right, seeing that Mr. Milton's foot was not there, and held mine in that position until the table began to descend. No trace of Mr. Milton's was found. Under these conditions the table again rose about eight inches, swaying a little at times, but certainly elevated in all parts above the floor, as reported by all sitting around it. Dr. Hamilton at my left on the opposite side and four feet distant, with the crevice of two feet between the two parts of the table, reported that it rose to the height mentioned at his end and Dr. Smyth and myself were responsible for our end. Mr. Milton could have no part in the result except by stretching out his leg to the central protector of the foot in the middle of the table, and I could detect no indications of this. We may suppose that he did so, that Miss Burton similarly reached this central foot and that

either she or Mrs. Milton or both also controlled the leg of the table near them, Miss Burton using one foot for the central leg and one for the leg at her left. But how the table, weighing what it does, could be lifted in this way without betraying evidences of muscular action which I could not detect I cannot understand. I do not say that it is conceivable, because I have no evidence in experience that such a thing can be done without detection, but we have to investigate such possibilities, and perhaps to imagine them in preference to supernormal means. But there was not the slightest evidence that any such action as imagined took place on the part of either Mr. Milton or Miss Burton, whom I more or less could observe. Dr. Hamilton had such command of Mrs. Milton as to make it extremely difficult for her to take any coöperating part, and it is certain that no one of them could do with either hands or feet or both such things as we observed under the circumstances. With great strength and under different circumstances it might be possible for one person to place himself so that with hands and feet he might raise a table in the same manner. But a table of one hundred pounds and four feet and some inches wide or in diameter and with a crevice of two feet between the parts, with the enormous leverage involved and with hands protected against free usage it is difficult to imagine any normal method of producing the phenomenon reported and observed. What actual experiment may determine remains to be seen, but persons familiar with ordinary mechanics would not naturally accept the hypothesis suggested unless evidence in actual experiment were adduced, and only the preference for an unusual mechanical explanation would tempt him to choose it in preference to a supernormal method.\*

---

\* April 17th, 1910.

Dr. Hamilton suggested that the table might be lifted by putting one foot of it on top of the instep and using the heel for helping while the hand pulled on the cross piece. Last night I tried this method while Miss Burton and Mrs. Milton were out of the room and I could not bear the weight of one foot of the table on my shoe, tho I had two pairs of stockings on with heavy leather. I tried my toes under the edge of the table foot and at the side of the castor and pulled on the table with my hand. I could do nothing but roll it. I then tried to rest the central support on my foot and it was impossible, owing to the weight hurting it. It might be different with an

The next remarkable phenomenon was the tying of the medium. This was done in the dark. There were two pieces of rope on the table, both together making forty feet, according to the statement of Drs. Hamilton and Smyth. When it was announced that this would be done the two pieces of rope were lying on the table at some distance from Miss Burton, and that they had not been used by her previously was attested by Drs. Hamilton and Smyth, as they, the pieces of rope, were lying near them. The fact too that the trumpet was in constant use previously and that there was complete absence of interesting phenomena that must supposedly be done by her free left hand tends to show that the ropes had not been used previously. I had held the right hand of Miss Burton all evening, with the exception of the several times, four or five, when she suddenly jerked it out of my protection. But on every one of these occasions I immediately placed my hand on her elbow and ran it up the arm to find her hand on her face, and it was soon replaced on the table and covered by mine. Not more than a minute elapsed in each of these cases when her right hand was put on her face, until it returned to its proper position and while on the face was under my supervision. When it was announced that the attempt would be made to tie her with the rope I immediately took extra precautions to watch her movements while I watched her hand and arm carefully. During the whole process of tying it, as it appeared, this right hand was not out of my care. It was not once placed on her face nor once removed from the table or my cover of it. I kept my elbow against hers as much as I could, with occasional lapses on account of movements to watch for movements which might take place on her part. I never discovered a single movement of her body while she was being tied, according to hypothesis, until a hand picked up both hers and mine and put the rope around both of them twice and lashed them together. Some twenty-five or thirty minutes, as far as we could estimate it under the circumstances, were involved in getting her tied. Some seven or ten minutes before we were told to turn up the light the act of lashing our two hands together took place.

---

anæsthetic foot, but the mechanical action under the circumstances showed only a tendency for the table to slide on the floor.

During all the rest of the time her body was perfectly quiet and unmoved, in so far as I could tell. I was keenly on the alert for indicative and sympathetic movements, but found no trace of them whatever. I took little or no part in the conversation going on, remaining quiet on purpose to keep my observations clear. As remarked, I had complete control of the right hand during the entire tying, and it was not moved from its position but once and that after mine was lashed to hers. The two hands were then moved over to her other hand which was tied to the leaf support in the table and hers fumbled about with it for about four or five seconds and returned mine with hers to their proper position.

Perhaps seven or ten minutes before it was announced through the trumpet that the tying was completed my hand was picked up with her own under it and the two lashed together. It took but two or three seconds to place the rope for this purpose. I felt the tying of the rope about the hand for a short period afterward. After the tying was completed some conversation went on by raps and through the trumpet about whether I should untie her or let the control do it. The control after deciding that I should untie her said he wanted to do something first. We waited and whistling occurred without the use of the trumpet. Then we were ready for the untying and a red light was turned up and we examined the ropes. Both had been used. Her left hand was tightly tied to the cross piece for supporting the extension leaves of the table, the rope having been wrapped about it twice and several times about her wrist and three knots in it at different points in the rope. There was first the knot on the end of the rope and next to it a knot that tied it to the wrist, a hard knot and then after being wrapped about the wrist a single knot tied in it before its passing around another part of the rope which was about her waist where another knot was in it.

I then began to untie the rope. I began with the hand lashed to mine. Every inch of the two ropes had been used and I first untied a hard knot to loosen the two hands lashed together, hers and mine, and then followed the rope to the place where it was tied around the other rope before passing about the waist to her left side and back where it was again tied to the frame of the chair. Untying this I followed the rope to the right side

by way of her back where it was again tied to the frame of the chair. After untying this I followed the rope to the right side of the chair near her right leg and untied it where it had been tied about the rung of the chair, following it to her ankles and found both legs or ankles tied together. I then followed the rope up about her waist again from her left to right, or *vice versa*, if I am not mistaken and then to her left hand lashed to the leaf support as indicated, where I untied a knot and then unwrapped the rope to reach the last knot. This freed her from all but the first rope which still tied her left leg to the left rung of the chair and the right leg of the chair between the floor and the rung, passing up to her waist and about it, with the other end tied in a bow knot to the right frame next to me, the other end being tied about her left ankle.

I do not know how clearly this description appears to the reader, but as I see it I do not understand how the rope could be tied by the girl under the circumstances. I can imagine her tying the left hand as described and tightening the knots afterward, tho I am not clear that this is really conceivable. If we can suppose that she had tied all but the last two knots and left these loose until the moment when she took my hand over to her left with her right lashed to mine we might suppose that this action of hers was to help tighten the knots. But she fumbled the left hand with her right so lightly and for so short a time that I do not see how she could have fastened the rope so tightly about the wrist and the support for the extension leaves. It is certain that she had but one hand with which to do the work and we should have to suppose that Mrs. Milton aided her when not detected to make the matter simple. But Mrs. Milton was occupied with the phonograph and more or less under the supervision of Dr. Hamilton, tho she had the free use of her hands at times. The facts which make it perplexing to explain in the usual manner are these. If she first tied the knots on her left hand and lashed it to the leaf support, how was the rope put about my hand and tied to hers. If she first tied my hand to hers how did she tie the knots and lash her left hand to the leaf support. We can only suppose collusion on the part of some one. Mr. Milton was at my right and absolutely inaccessible to her. I held his hands. Besides I was so jammed up against the wall

at my back, the back of the chair being against the wall, and the foot of the table absolutely preventing the movement of my foot past it or any foot at all, and the space between the table and wall so filled with my chair and myself that no one could get at Miss Burton except by betraying himself through contact with me, except by use of extensors or merely contenting himself with touching Miss Burton on head or shoulders. No one from my right could possibly get at her feet or any part of her body below the waist even with extensors to effect anything without detection. Besides as remarked, I was holding Mr. Milton's hands and he was seated, or apparently seated, at my right and no trace of movement by him was detected. Dr. Hamilton was responsible for the position and actions of Mrs. Milton. I can say nothing about her. Apart from Dr. Hamilton's testimony all would depend on her honesty.

But the standing puzzle is the apparent quiet of her body during all the time that the ropes had to be placed and tied in apparently impossible positions. Assuming that Mrs. Milton did not aid her, I do not see how she could tie her ankles and the ropes about the frame of the chair and about the rung and foot of the chair on her right side, or even about the left side with her left hand, without betraying bodily movements, not one of which did I detect during the whole time. I was trying to discover these, but never felt any indication of it. The music prevented hearing anything and so I depended on the sense of touch with the use of hand and elbow touching her right arm. But not a movement could I discover. Nor is it easy to imagine that she could put the rope about her waist several times and tie knots in it at various places on the right side of her body without the use of her right hand, which never left my control. Nor was I holding a dummy hand. Its temperature and its muscular action at times when a convulsive contraction of both arm and hand would take place and the pulse in it which I once felt purposely while holding it, as well as what I observed when the light was turned up before I removed my hand to untie the ropes, would somewhat protect the case here.

One thing is clear. It matters not where the tying began. The complications and various places at which the ropes were put makes it extremely difficult to imagine her doing it with the

left hand alone. Nor does it matter whether we suppose that she tied her left hand first or last, we have to account for the apparently impossible movements to surround her body and tie the ropes to the chair in five places. Of course if we suppose that she tied her left hand at first it makes all the rest seem miraculous without collusion. But then supposing that she had wound the rope about her body and tied it at the several places named before she tied her left hand to the leaf support, how could she effect this last result without collusion. The rope was not loose at any part of its length, but was stretched tightly about the body and, as remarked, every inch of it used up. What might have been done by limb movements to give this tightened appearance I do not know, but it would matter not for the positions and knots of the rope.

I had my left knee against the corner of her chair, often trying to detect movements of her legs. But she sat on her chair so that I could not often touch her dress and never her knee or leg with mine, so that I had little opportunity to ascertain evidence of movements there. I could not detect any with my hand and arm in her right arm. On the whole I have no evidence of the supernormal and none against it of a clear nature.

Two other things were done that have some interest, and apparently indicate telepathy. I took her right hand in my right and placed my left on my thigh so that to pick it up and place it on the table, as was frequently done when it was in easy places for this, would be a difficult or impossible thing. My intention was to see if any effort would be made to do this without suggestion from me and I said nothing about where my hand was. That my left hand was not holding hers could be inferred from the sensations of my fingers and thumbs or her right. After awhile I felt a hand touch me between the elbow and shoulder on the left arm, placed as described, and go quickly to my hand and pat it. No attempt was made to pick up the hand and place it on her right. Such an act would have involved taking Miss Burton's own hand, her left hand, through her right arm or reaching over this right arm and down to my hand in a manner which would inevitably betray the nature of the act. But this was not done. Only the touches were made.

Again I placed my left hand on the back of her chair without



touching her to see if she would pat it on the back. The ball of the thumb rested a little beyond the frame of the chair and nothing was said. After a while I felt a touch on the ball of the thumb, but detected no movement of the body or right arm held in my right hand. However, there was no effort to touch the back of my hand. We may conceive that Miss Burton's left hand came over in front to her right shoulder and touched my hand.

Since writing the account of the rope tying described above I have inquired of Drs. Hamilton and Smyth whether they could account for the ropes up to the time when it was said to have begun and both state that they had the ropes under their supervision until the time indicated. Dr. Hamilton reports that he had the two ropes under his hand till the tying was said to have begun. Dr. Smyth had one end in his hand just before the work began. I had a part of one rope under my supervision for a long time while the tying was supposed to be going on. When it was brought over it lay near my left hand and I often held a finger on it and often felt it purposely with my right hand. Finally some minutes, how many I cannot tell now, before the thing was completed, I felt it removed, and heard it fall on her lap, for I felt for it there and found it lying in her lap. But only a part of the time occupied in tying the ropes was used after the disappearance of this one from my control.

I do not recall whether she fell forward for rest during the tying. I usually noticed this sort of thing, but may not have noticed it on this occasion and certainly do not recall its occurrence. She might have fallen forward in order to get the rope around her ankles and to tie it to the chair, but if she did, it was not frequent, as I always held her head when she fell forward.

January 17th, 1909.

The séance this evening was at the house of a stranger, having been suggested by Mrs. Milton to protect herself and Mr. Milton against the hypothesis of secret means of doing the things or aiding in them. Mrs. Milton and Mr. Milton accompanied Miss Burton and shared in the sitting along with Mr. and Mrs. Cameron, and toward the end another

gentleman to whom I was introduced earlier in the evening who had an engagement to meet before he could be present.

Nothing was so well done this evening as before. The whistling was not so good and the simultaneous whistling and singing, while they were very good and repeated the difficulties of normal explanation remarked before, were not so frequent as in previous séances. Only a few things need be added to previous reports.

Once the trumpet was placed against my left hand holding her right and my right hand lying near, and taps were made which I interpreted to mean that I should hold it. I took it and held it to my right ear and gradually moved the end of it out from the reach of Miss Burton at least easy reach, and held it at about sixty degrees from the line which would connect her head with mine, assuming that her head and body were not thrown forward. In this position singing was heard distinctly in the trumpet, and I tried to locate it outside the trumpet, but could not succeed. There was no mistake about its locality. I could catch a word only now and then. It accompanied the phonograph and sang the same notes. This was repeated a number of times, but the music in the trumpet would last only a few seconds, perhaps ten or more, sometimes possibly less. Sometimes the entire effort would fail. The trumpet held in my hand would drop except that I held up the end which was in my hands. A curious phenomenon occurred in all cases of this. The mechanical energy involved in its sustentation and falling showed that, while the singing was going on, it was much longer than when the other end was let go. The direction of the energy holding the other end always seemed to be toward Miss Burton's left hand, and the resistance in weight and tension was many times greater than the weight of the trumpet when the singing and holding of the other end ceased. The most interesting phenomenon was the apparently greater length of the trumpet when the phenomenon was occurring than when it ceased and the evident direction of the mechanical energy when the trumpet was let go. The same experiment was tried at a less number of degrees, as I did not want to betray my object, and the success was easy, but not more frequent than in others.

One other interesting thing took place. I was holding her right hand in mine, as usual, and had my left hand resting on my left leg or thigh. It rested below the position of her right arm so that it could not be raised to the table by her hand without apparently passing through the arm which I was holding, with my right. This left hand was taken by a hand and placed on her right hand and my right placed on it and the table and touching the ends of her fingers. I asked that it be replaced and it was done but I obtained some distinct evidence that her right arm was lowered to enable the hand holding mine to reach over it to place mine in a position below. A similar experiment was performed with my right hand. It was resting on my left thigh and my left hand was on the back of the chair. My right hand was taken and placed on her right hand resting on the table. I immediately asked that it be put back in its place. It was done at once and I quickly pushed it up and found her right arm in its natural position with the hand on the table. I had the distinct impression of the arm moving through hers. But there was no way to corroborate the impression, perhaps a suggested visual associate, as she could or might have easily moved her arm to suit her action. I had no way of determining this, as my right hand was unoccupied for a few moments and my left hand was on the back of the chair. I remark the experiment for calling attention to a phenomenon which I am convinced occurs in all dark séances with what are called *visuels* in psychology. I noted this in the impressions of touch by a hand, tho I have hitherto said nothing about it. I have said that I felt hands from time to time. I have no evidence that they were hands. There was a clear visual image of a hand when the touch occurred, not a visual sensation, but the reproduction of memory and imagination accompanying the inference that it was a hand. All the sensations were those of a hand, and sometimes the impression of fingers was clear. But the facts are that the visual memory and imagination may have added greatly to the contents of consciousness in the judgment of the situation and the probable truth is that I had only touches which aroused associative memories and brought up visual pictures of hands which were more than the impressions would directly express. That is, I might have had sensations from anything which I would interpret as

hands. Now on this occasion of apparent movement through matter, of the apparently supernumerary hand through hers, I am inclined to think that my own imagination was responsible for the apparent effect. It was clear, perhaps because the act was so quick that, without tactual sensations of where her left hand and arm were I formed my associative picture without reckoning with the actual facts. It was the most interesting phenomenon of the evening in this respect.

Only one item more of interest need be noted. While what I described was going on I resolved to try another test experiment. As soon as it was finished and while holding her right hand in my left as usual, I took the trumpet and held it at full arm's length at ninety degrees to the line that would pass through our heads, which would make the end of the trumpet about five feet from her left hand at her side and far beyond her normal reach. I said nothing to see if she would discover what I wanted. Presently I felt a hand reach over and press my elbow against hers, as if to help in the protection of herself against suspicion. But soon afterward I noticed a hand rubbing and tapping the back of my head. This continued for some time, and then it was repeated with more frequent taps on top of my head. I could detect no proximity of her head to mine and no movements of her body. As she did not "catch on to" what I wanted done with the trumpet I asked that it be taken out of my hands. It was some time before I felt a hand touch my right arm between the elbow and shoulder and then run along the arm until it caught the trumpet and took it out of my hands and dropped it on the table.

Both of these acts were possible by her left hand. She could not have reached the upper end of the trumpet with her hand unless she stood up and leaned far forward. I detected nothing of this and perhaps could not have detected it if I had tried, as I did. But she would not have required more than leaning forward and turning about to the side to reach my arm and the lower end of the trumpet to take it as she did. The touching on the back of my head might have been done by turning about on the chair and leaning toward me, tho the manner in which it was done was dexterous enough to elicit admiration.

One other thing I should remark. Several times Miss Bur-

ton suddenly fell forward to rest. Dr. Smyth told me afterward that he had reached forward and felt her left hand or arm in the act of doing something. I usually tried to catch her head before it fell roughly on the table. On one occasion her left hand touched mine and a question was asked when I distinctly felt her left hand produce the rap in reply. All evening I noticed that the raps were nearer me than before, as the table was not an extension and had no opening in it. The raps were always near her and actually appeared to be near her body.

Once she suddenly arose on her feet and I noticed it at once, tho only holding her hand and not touching her elbow. This will throw light on situations when I could not detect any movements. Apparently I could easily detect rising movements.

One interesting incident should be noticed in connection with these lights manifested at Mr. Cameron's. Several times I had a perfectly distinct odor of phosphorus. It was just the odor that can be produced by ordinary matches. This is the most suspicious circumstance I have witnessed, because it would seem to indicate that, previous to the séances, she consciously prepares for the performance. I have no evidence that she does, but the circumstance suggests it.

January 19th, 1909.

The experiment was omitted last night and all parties took a rest. This evening, before we had our sitting, there was a long conversation and discussion about the subject, and some during the experiment, regarding the work and especially regarding what did or might take place in the organism of Miss Burton during the trance and performances. My object was to get Mrs. Milton to see the importance of more distinct tests and the elimination of darkness. While I did not and do not believe that we can at once eliminate darkness I felt it was necessary to impress both Miss Burton and her foster-mother with the conviction that the scientific man would not commit himself to anything supernatural until he had adequate means for determining the exact nature of the phenomena and that we must be able to ascertain what part Miss Burton's body had in the result. But the main object was to make the suggestion that better tests were necessary, and from the results of the evening it was clear that the

suggestion acted, and especially on Miss Burton, as she spontaneously offered conditions in the trance which were not asked for but which made some phenomena much more inexplicable than before. Once during the trance when a certain thing was done we talked in explanation of the phenomenon, saying that her organism acted in harmony and more or less synchronously with the work of the control at a distance and we were told through the trumpet that we should not talk and especially should not express the views we did, as it made the medium believe that she did it and more difficulty in the performance was entailed as a consequence. This was an interesting rebuke and certainly in keeping with the genuineness of the case.

The result of our discussion was soon shown when we requested that I be allowed to hold my hand and fingers on Miss Burton's throat and larynx. Several experiments were performed under these conditions, and the results have unusual interest. On each occasion my hand was raised by an invisible hand and placed on the throat. I held my finger and thumb on the larynx in such a way as to command a goodly portion of the throat and chin. At times there was an interesting resentment of the touch, her head and throat acting as if it wanted to be secure from this contact. The head would move back or to the side to get away from the hand. Sometimes I followed its motion up to prevent removal and sometimes I did not, desiring to see if the resentment would be corrected spontaneously. Usually Miss Burton would restore the proper position herself and there was every evidence from the touch and suddenness of the attempt to escape the touch that her act was reflex. But she restored the proper position in a manner that showed there was intelligent control against this reflex action.

In the first experiment Pietra gave the whistling while I thus held the larynx. I could not detect any sympathetic action of the larynx, tho at times I thought or imagined that there was a slight tremulous action. But I was too uncertain either way to affirm or deny it. But the localization of the whistling toward the opposite side of the table, apparently four feet away, was clear. The best part of the affair was the fact that I was sure of the position of Miss Burton. She did not move her head forward and I did not detect any general sympathetic movements

of her body. In all other experiments I could be conscious only of her right arm. But now that I was both closer to her and holding my right hand on her larynx and my left hand on her right I had an excellent command of her body and this did not lean forward. Besides I could place my left ear as close to her head and mouth as six or eight inches. I strained my hearing to see if I could detect any whistling in my proximity or any sound that would indicate that she was doing it with her mouth through the trumpet, and I could not detect the slightest evidence of this, save that occasionally I noticed the slight groan that accompanied the effort. I noticed this several times and in a manner that appeared to show that the whistling was an entirely independent thing. The location of the whistling was clearly at some distance and not a trace of its occurrence through the mouth could be obtained, tho I had unusually good opportunities to hear it if it had been issuing as supposed. Of course, if the whistling was through the trumpet, as it was, we may say that this prevented discovering it near her head and threw it off to a distance. But the whistling was so loud and clear that, whatever limitations the music and the trumpet might impose upon observations, I ought to have detected the whistling near me as easily as the groaning, which was very slight and weak, not having been heard previous evenings.

The second time the same experiment was performed my hand was raised without my suggestion to the throat and larynx. This time, as the whistling occurred, I felt some swelling of the larynx and occasional vibrations, but they were very slight. The location of the sound was as before and no trace of any sound about the head except the occasional groan, which was slight and could not have been heard but for the proximity of my head to hers. I held her right hand in my left. No trace of bodily motion could be discovered.

After some delay the third experiment involved my holding both hands. My left hand held her right hand. My right hand was taken as before and placed on the throat and larynx and then her left hand placed under it, so that I held my finger and thumb on the larynx and the palm of the hand rested on her hand which lay upon her breast. Several times there was a convulsive effort to remove her left hand, but it was immedi-



ately replaced without any effort of mine to prevent its removal or to hold it tightly. I did not hold it forcibly. There was the same reflex action and correction of it that I had before observed in the head and neck. The hand resisted or resented this protection but spontaneously restored it, as if the control was determined to regulate the results against the natural and automatic tendencies of the organism. In this experiment, while thus holding the right hand securely with my left and her left with my right Dr. Hamilton felt a breath of air in his face and noticed the odor of it as that of Miss Burton's breath, and in a few moments the trumpet fell on the table apparently near him perhaps three feet away. I was certain that her head was not leaning forward and that her hand did not move from her throat. Indeed I held her left as well as her right hand for some time after the trumpet fell. There were frequent groans during this experiment, but they were very slight and could not have been heard had not my head been very close to Miss Burton's. This experiment was better than the first, as there was distinct evidence that the trumpet was moved and Dr. Hamilton could attest what occurred to him on the opposite side of the table while I was assured of Miss Burton's position out of reach of the trumpet and the security of her hands against taking part in it.

On the third experiment my hand was again placed on her throat and larynx and her left under it and made to clasp mine, as if to prevent the convulsive effort to take it out. I held it tightly with three fingers while the thumb and forefinger pressed on the larynx. An effort was made to do something, but failed. What the attempt was could not be ascertained. But the trumpet fell on the floor. It was certainly not in her hands and could not have been gotten in to her teeth, as I had seen to it that her head was upright and my right hand was where it could have felt it falling. No motion of her head occurred that I could detect and we can account for the falling of the trumpet by a touch from her elbow, left elbow, which I did not command. There is no reason to suspect that it could be gotten into her mouth and held there without my detecting muscular action about the throat when it would be thrown, unless we imagine more skill in controlling the muscular action of the head and neck than is usual.

Again I had my fingers at her throat, but not holding her left hand, when a few notes of singing occurred, I holding her right in my left. The trumpet fell after a few notes without being able to continue. The vibratory action of the larynx was very distinct. The sound of the notes seemed to be located at about eighteen inches from her face at my right. This would suit the length of the trumpet and as there was no prevention of her holding the trumpet in her left hand no value can attach to this experiment, except that it at least proved sympathetic action of the larynx.

The next experiment, undertaken voluntarily, was singing. I had no control of the throat and larynx. The singing was by two voices, but they were successive, not simultaneous. They were, so far as I can describe them, apparently an alto and a baritone. I may be entirely mistaken in using these terms, but they suffice to indicate their difference, and it may be that the difference was even more marked than my terms would indicate to a musician for I admit that I do not know what baritone is except from once hearing it in a lady, when it showed masculine qualities. In this case one voice was distinctly masculine in quality and the other was feminine, but not of the soprano type, so far as I could perceive it. The two voices alternated and the interesting feature was the promptness of the change from one voice to the other without apparent disturbance of the body of Miss Burton and without apparent effort. Most striking was the groaning which I could simultaneously hear while this singing was going on, suggesting that the singing could go on independently of the ordinary laryngeal action.

Now an important point in all these experiments was that during the experiments in which I was holding both hands of Miss Burton, Dr. Hamilton was holding the lips and hands of Mrs. Milton. I announced when I was holding Miss Burton's hands and throat and this was the signal to hold Mrs. Milton. The doors had been sealed and the windows locked at the outset, and Mr. Milton was not present. The seal on the kitchen door was found loosened at one end at the close of the experiments, but a chair was in front of it so that a person coming in in the darkness would stumble against it. The turning up of the red light at various times also showed that no evidence of a con-

federate had been discoverable. The localization of the whistling and singing, as well as the sympathetic or direct action of Miss Burton's larynx was against the supposition of confederates. This was quite clear.

Once my left hand was raised from her right hand and placed over her lips and chin and when I placed my right upon her right it was gently lifted by placing the fingers under mine and raising my right aloft. I rose to follow it and had to stretch it as far as I could, but in a curve somewhat adapted to the possibility that it was done by her left. She did not rise and could not possibly have raised my hand thus aloft with her right or had any complicity of the right in it, since my left intervened to prevent its use. The head was not raised or moved forward and when my right hand was stretched as far as I could reach standing and while it was apparently held under the fingers something "kissed" the top of the fingers and then the hand was let go. It was done very quickly after being elevated, tho the elevation was slow. I may have been under an illusion as to the "kissing" while the hand was held from under, but as I had not been able at a previous evening to detect whether the "kissing" was simultaneous with the holding I tried to watch this on this occasion and the appearance was decidedly for the simultaneity of the two acts. It is possible that it could be accomplished by finger movements to produce the illusion. I had too little time to study the effect to be assured that the action was independent. The only thing to be noted of special interest was the distance of my hand from her body whose position I could clearly determine by my left hand on her lips and chin. We put on the red light at once to ascertain what position I was in and I rose to repeat the position, still holding my left hand on her lips and chin and placing my right as nearly where it had been in the darkness as I could determine it. It was not possible for her to easily reach it, if at all, without turning her body and partly rising. There was not to my left hand the slightest trace of any such movement, but I may not have been able to reproduce the exact position of my hand when the light was on, and the curved course which my hand took in the act suggests that its motion was in some way related to her left, even tho we suppose a supernumerary hand doing the act out of her normal reach.

At a point near the end we were told through the trumpet that they had been making lights and that we had not seen them. And we had not seen any lights. It was explained that some one stood between us and the lights. Soon lights appeared and they were very bright and large. The first moved in curves in front of Miss Burton. But presently they appeared on her face and breast and often illuminated them for some distance. Two or three times the radiating illumination covered her dress for six or eight inches, tho I could not see the point of light from which the illumination proceeded. At times there was a very bright spot of light on the face as radiant as any candle light, but not occupying any more space than apparently a quarter of an inch in diameter. But the most striking incident in all this was the frequent appearance of a light in her lap while I saw one in her face. I was situated so close to her and holding her right hand that I could look over the edge of the table leaf and see into her lap. I could distinctly see lights, sometimes two of them, in her lap, while I saw a very bright light in her face and different in size or appearance, tho not in quality. Later I saw lights in her lap which the others did not see. But they were not under any conditions to prevent supposing that they were made by her left hand, I holding her right. I did not smell any phosphorus this evening, tho trying to do so. None of the others mentioned it, except Mrs. Milton but they did mention that they did not smell it. I was much nearer Miss Burton during all this than when at Mr. Cameron's. But all effort to get the odor of phosphorus failed. Mrs. Milton smelled phosphorus.

We then urged that the sitting come to a close. I took charge of Miss Burton's head and did what I could to aid her coming out of the trance simply by rubbing her eyebrows slightly. Soon I noticed the usual twitching which is a symptom of this. But finally I heard her trying to say something, as I listened for her voice to say that she was all right in response to my query if she was. The voice said "Where am I?" I replied that she was in the room where we began. She emphatically denied this and I took the cue at once to ask if she could describe the room and tell me where she was. She made an effort to speak, but could not articulate, and I asked if any friend of mine was there and received the answer "Yes." Spontaneously there was an effort

to give a name. But it failed and I requested that time be taken and not to try too hard. I asked if it was a man or woman, but got no answer. The effort to give a name continued, and finally it was given up and I was told they would try to give it to me at the next sitting. I got the words "I am" several times, but nothing more.

As she came out of the trance I asked Dr. Hamilton if this sort of thing had ever occurred before, and he said that it had not in his experience. I had seen that the phenomenon was a reproduction of what regularly occurs with Mrs. Piper and has often occurred in the trances of Mrs. Chenoweth and Mrs. Smead, namely, the giving of messages as the medium returns to normal consciousness, and if this has not been tried before it was a suggestive event.

On the whole the sitting was the best we have had. The test conditions were much better than ever before and there was decidedly spontaneous effort and intelligent effort also to give test conditions without our asking for them. What was done would not be offered by conscious fraud so readily with the reflex opposition of the medium. There was apparently intelligent initiative and coöperation to make the sitting what it ought to be scientifically, and the impression of even subliminal honesty was created or suggested by it. The affair created the most favorable impression that I have felt since beginning the experiments.

Jan. 20th, 1909.

Only Dr. Smyth and myself were present this evening with Mrs. Milton. Mrs. Milton wanted to try materialization first and tho I did not care for that kind of performance under the conditions which observed I yielded. A cabinet was extemporized in the kitchen. The door, a swinging door, between the kitchen and the room into which we enter the house was sealed and wedged, and the cellar door was locked and sealed, and I held the key in my pocket. These precautions Mrs. Milton asked for and were a protection against confederates. A curtain hung between us and Miss Burton who sat in a chair was within the darkened and enclosed space. A red electric light shone in the far corner of the room and we could see each other very well.

The tambourine, trumpet and other articles lay on a small table within the curtain. The music was kept up as usual. After some delay Miss Burton went into the trance and there was tapping on the curtain to signify that the music should be louder. Then the trumpet came through the crevice in the curtain and moved up and down a few times and finally Dr. Smyth was told through it that they could not materialize and the experiment was given up.

We then moved into the other room where all the previous experiments were made, the dining room, and reproduced the usual conditions. The desire was to have automatic writing. As soon as the trance came on the table was pushed together. That is, the crevice which usually obtains between the two halves of the table, was closed apparently to make the automatic writing possible or easier, as the tablet had to lie on the table where the opening had always been. We desired the red light to see the writing go on. A curious conflict went on in response to this. One control wanted complete darkness and another wanted the light. This was signified by double sets of raps. A single rap would come for "no" and then at once three raps for "yes." Finally with an Indian grunt Miss Burton suddenly rose in the air on her feet and stood a few moments as if in fright or indignation and two or three times "Black Cloud's" distinct grunt of apparent anger occurred. Whether it was he or "Dan" that wanted the light I could not tell, but the impression was that it was "Dan" and that it was Miss Burton's deceased mother that wanted the darkness. Mrs. Milton said that it was the mother that had always insisted most rigidly on the darkness. I did not insist on the light. Dr. Smyth insisted some time, but to avoid suggestion too strongly I agreed to let it take its natural course and the light was insisted on. So the red light was allowed to shine. We could see each other distinctly and also the whole process of the writing. I could watch Miss Burton's hands and face with tolerable distinctness. I have the sheets which show the result, but I need not give the contents here. The important things to record at present are the characteristics of the process. There were long intervals between the separate efforts at writing. After awhile I was asked, through the automatic writing, to hold my hand on hers. I placed my left on her wrist

and the back of the hand. I did not discover in the results any material aid, but continued obeying orders in this respect. I noticed several interesting phenomena. While the right hand was writing the left went through the motions of writing on the table and at first from right to left. That is the movements were symmetrical with those of the right hand. After awhile the left hand in its writing went from left to right and so followed the directions of the right hand. Now and then the head would shake as if dissenting with something and often did so clearly where this was meant. Now and then also there were simultaneous convulsive movements in the two hands and the fists would be rolled up. The automatic writing explained the difficulties and said that she could write if we would only insist on it. But it became late and we were not sure what this meant. Finally we indicated that "Dan" had better bring her back and after some waiting and apparent efforts to bring her back, "Dan" wrote that there was a lady present who would not go away unless I insisted on it and that he could not bring her back until I insisted on this lady leaving. I at once thought of my deceased wife as the one person who might naturally persist in the effort to communicate with me. I then began to question "Dan" as to who it was by shaping my queries to have them answered by raps. I first asked if it was my mother and received no reply. I asked if it was my sister and received no reply, and then if it was my wife and received a quick and decided yes in three raps. I then explained aloud that we should have to cease and asked the lady to give up and there was soon a relaxed condition of Miss Burton's muscles and she came out of the trance easily.

The performance inclined me to think that Miss Burton's subliminal is honest. I was not so inclined before. But the study of her automatisms and especially some interesting phenomena while Dr. Smyth and Mrs. Milton went into the kitchen to read the writing strongly inclined me to believe that the subliminal is not tricky. The red light was not sufficient to read the automatic writing and Dr. Smyth or Mrs. Milton always went into the kitchen where they could turn on a white light to read it. On the last occasion when "Dan" had explained that I must insist on the lady's leaving, evidently having tried to say this before, both Dr. Smyth and Mrs. Milton went in to the



kitchen to read the writing and left me alone with Miss Burton. As they read the writing I could hear their voices, but could not always distinguish the words. Indeed I could rarely do so. But I constantly heard the rap for "no" on the table when they seemed not to be getting the words or the meaning, and finally when they did get it correctly a decided "Yes," three raps, came. I observed, as I had done several times during the evening, that there was no evidence that her left hand did the rapping and as I was holding the right hand under my right I was sure it did not produce them. Of course her foot might be supposed to have done it, but the location of the raps did not favor this. I had often heard them when they seemed to be located on the other side of the table and perhaps under it. Apparently the left hand was not the cause, tho the foot might have been. But on this occasion the raps were distinctly at a distance, whatever the cause or illusion regarding them. The interesting thing was their occurrence in connection with the deciphering of the writing in the kitchen.

What the various phenomena observed suggested to me was that Miss Burton is not conscious of her body at all. She is anæsthetic so far as her normal sensibility is concerned, but evidently subliminally hyperæsthetic. This will make her unconscious of bodily action, but perfectly conscious of sensory impressions. Or perhaps I can express it by saying that she is sensible to ingoing stimuli but not sensible of the motor and outgoing currents. She is in the condition of a normal person in his dreams when he is perfectly conscious of mental action, but neither conscious of his body nor capable of acting with it. The actions in the dream do not produce sensible motor effects because of anæsthesia. But the difference between Miss Burton and the normal dream consciousness is that she has a tendency to automatic action in the motor centers. The sensory stimuli produce their effect in consciousness, but without making her aware of her body, and then with a tendency to automatic action bring this about with their secondary stimuli to annoy her, if the body is touched by another. Or in other words, her mind seems to herself to be acting independently of the body, but does not, and any sensory stimuli not interpretable as her own quickly establishes rapport with the body and disturbs the natural sense

of independence, while her automatic tendencies keep up a connection which may prevent real independent phenomena, tho not preventing the sensory appearance of them, as a consequence of the complex relation between normal anæsthesia and subliminal hyperæsthesia.

Another important circumstance to be noted was Miss Burton's sensitiveness to light under conditions which would hardly suggest fraud. When she came from the kitchen after the attempt at materialization she was ostensibly brought by "Black Cloud." As soon as she sat down in the chair, tho nothing but the red light was shining, Miss Burton fell in a heap with her head on the table. It was some time before she raised it and showed signs of the usual trance ready for work. Several times during the experiment at automatic writing, when Dr. Smyth or Mrs. Milton, or both went into the kitchen to read the automatic writing, the opening of the door admitted white light and tho I was standing between her face and the door which was behind me and some six feet at her right, the small amount of light radiated from the wall and window curtains at my right upon her face, creating a slightly lighted up face, had the effect of often making her shiver or startle and several times she fell with her face on the table as a consequence. This resulted in having the light in the kitchen put out when they came in and under such circumstances she did not once show the effect of their coming in. The red light was shining all the while in the room where we were.\*

One interesting feature occurred at this, the third, séance. My left hand holding Miss Burton's right hand was raised in the air by an invisible hand and with it Miss Burton's right and the two were suspended there. Then my right hand was raised in the air by an invisible hand and suspended there some six or

---

\* Dr. Hamilton, on reading over this account, says that it was "Black Cloud" that has always insisted on the admission of light and that it is "Dan" that wants darkness. I had inferred otherwise as above stated by the circumstance that "Black Cloud" seemed to be in control of the organism at the time and to me apparently caused the negative reply to our queries. I had no special evidence of this except the vague memory of "Dan's" three raps at other séances. Dr. Hamilton's experience decides the matter.

eight inches from the others. Then my left hand was manipulated a little and the others were told that the intention was to have me feel the pulse of the invisible hand. I then took the hint to feel the pulse of the medium's right hand, which I did, while waiting for the extra hand to feel its pulse also. Finally a hand and wrist came at my front where my right hand was and I touched it, but it disappeared at once, but after awhile reappeared and I was able to place my finger on the wrist so as to feel the pulse for a moment and did so. It repeated the sensation of the pulse which I was feeling with my left hand in the right wrist of Miss Burton. I got only two beats, however, before the wrist was suddenly pulled away. It seemed to me that the wrist came from a point on the opposite side of the table from the medium and to be out of her normal reach, to say nothing of the impossibility of bringing her hand and arm in a direction the opposite of what was possible with her left hand and arm. But of course I had no assurance of the position of the hand, and while it seemed clear that the arm felt was extended in a direction parallel with the median plane and at its right, we may suppose that she arose and turned herself around sufficiently to make it appear so, or to have had her hand in a position beyond me instead of nearer me. I have no evidence to prove either hypothesis, but the appearance was of the impossible with her left hand and arm, but the conditions were such that we could not determine the possibilities.

There are important general observations to note. One of the most interesting is the fact that the left hand, whenever I had an opportunity to observe it, acted synchronously with the right which I held. In the darkness I rarely had a chance to know what the left hand did, and only when it was held could I observe its behavior. Always except on two instances when holding the left hand as well as the right did I notice any movement in it which was not duplicated by the right and these two instances were evident attempts to free it from the test conditions of the time tho immediately, as indicated, it was restored spontaneously in all cases to the protection which I was giving it. But in absolutely all cases when I could see the two hands, whether I held the right or

not, any movement of the right hand was duplicated by the left exactly. The action was most apparently automatic and due to the same influences. While I held the right hand in the darkness I could suppose that the left did not act, but was employed in some trick. But whenever I could observe the left, either when holding the right or not and in subdued light, I noticed that any action in the right hand was repeated in the left. It would be natural to suppose that the same action took place in the darkness, and occasionally when holding the left as well as the right I observed the fact. On this supposition we would have some suggestions, tho not evidence, of the genuineness of the phenomena which might be explained by trickery. I could not detect any evidence that the left hand was playing a game. It was clear that the right hand played none and there would be no use for the duplication of its action by the left, except on the hypothesis that the trickery was more ingenious than we have any reason to believe probable from the normal character of Miss Burton.\*

Catalepsy occurred a number of times and interrupted the experiments some minutes. It was not possible to determine the cause of this catalepsy, but it represented rigidity of the entire body so far as I could observe. All that I noticed particularly was the rigidity of the arms and the neck and head. I could not determine whether it was the signal of some intended event or the consequence of one performed. Further investigation might determine this.

One interesting circumstance was that we could usually suppose that the automatic jerk of the right hand, sometimes and perhaps always accompanied by the same action of the free left hand, was the signal of something to be done. Trembling did not occur often, but sometimes preceded catalepsy and perhaps always the fright from the sudden admission of light. But the jerk of the right hand symbolized the effort to do something, and was often followed by a slight groan, as if the medium was reluctant to do anything at all.

---

\* Dr. Hamilton and Dr. Smyth remarked the same synchronous movements and actions of the two hands in all similar situations. See their Report, p. 186.

January 21st, 1909.

The sitting this evening had a number of incidents tending to confirm my judgment of the previous evening that Miss Burton is subliminally honest, no matter what explanation of the phenomena be accepted. More proof will be necessary, but such evidence as obtains points in the direction named.

We desired to have automatic writing. Dr. Hamilton had brought with him a rheostat for regulating the red light and we had it shining with so little intensity that it was almost as dark as without any light. I could see the white of Miss Burton's shirt waist, but that was all. Before she had started into the trance the electric light was pulled on suddenly and no one could account for the fact. Dr. Smyth who sat nearest it disclaimed having done it and the rheostat strings were not within the reach of any one else. I was four feet away and Miss Burton was six feet away and under my supervision. She first noticed it, or rather first exclaimed when it occurred, and she was in her seat at my left, the light being in front and a little to my right. The friction of the instrument would naturally prevent its doing this spontaneously, but a change in the current of electricity might occasion the phenomenon, tho I do not know any evidence for such a possibility. "Dan" assented by raps to his having done it and said he would do it again. But it did not occur a second time. There was no evidence that it was anything more than an unusual accident, due possibly to an increased current thrown on the wire, tho I do not know enough about such things to believe or suspect even such a thing as this.

Soon after going into the trance Miss Burton placed both hands in mine and held them there some time, apparently trying to do something without the use of them. Nothing occurred. Finally there was a jerk and the hands separated and I let them go. The light was sufficient now, owing to adjustment of my eyes, to see both of them. In a few moments she moved her hands to and fro on the table from right to left, that is, separating and bringing them together alternately. This soon ceased and apparently was done without any evident purpose. Soon she reached for the pencil and I gave it to her and there was an endeavor to do automatic writing. After great effort the hand wrote: "We want you to put out the light and put the trumpet

on the table." The remainder of the writing cannot all be deciphered by me now, but it includes the statement that they will do the writing afterward, meaning that they wish to do something else first. The reading of this had to be done in the kitchen.

While this was being read in the kitchen the hand changed the position of the pencil and held it between the first and second fingers, precisely as Dr. Hodgson always had it held by Mrs. Piper and as he has held it for me in the Chenoweth and Smead cases and even alluded to its significance. As soon as I saw this act I at once asked why the pencil was held this way, being careful to avoid indicating the gender of the supposed communicator. I simply asked, "Why do you hold the pencil in that way?" The hand wrote: "Because this is the way I write." It was read in the kitchen by Dr. Hamilton (p. 329).

After the séance I asked Miss Burton to write her name. She picked up the pencil between the thumb and first finger and wrote it and then I asked her if she always held the pencil that way and she replied in the affirmative and I asked if she ever held it any other way and she replied in the negative.

The light was then put out and the experiment was allowed to take its own course. I managed to get my head very close to Miss Burton's while my right hand held her right and while some whistling was being done I could feel distinctly her hair against my forehead and could listen for the location of the sound, trying to see if it proceeded from her mouth. I could neither locate it so nor distinguish any unusual movement or position of her head. There was a slight movement of the head, but I could not detect the nature of it more than that it made her hair, or a few hairs of her head, move on my forehead. I could occasionally hear the slight groan in her throat, but not the whistling. The whistling seemed at a distance and was located by Dr. Hamilton and the others as near them. The falling of the trumpet midway between Miss Burton and them favored this location. This was continued until we heard singing under similar conditions and I could not distinctly locate it, as I was too intent on watching for indications that it was all done by her throat. The first success at this represented a very low and light voice and seemed to be in her throat, but soon it became loud and clear and I could not detect any satisfactory evidence that it

proceeded from her throat. I could often hear the slight groan there simultaneous with the music, but the loud singing seemed at a distance. I gave no special attention to locating the sound elsewhere clearly as I wanted to see if I could find it in her throat and discover movements of the head corresponding to those of a singer. I found in two instances of this clear and loud singing that the movements of the head corresponded somewhat to that of a singer making an effort. My head rested against hers so that my ear was within two or three inches of her throat. The singing was natural and of excellent quality, very much like that of a stage singer of some character, and was the first of this type that any of those present had heard. By raps the claim was made that it was a friend of mine. I tried to question "Dan" to ascertain who it was, thinking that I might be told that it was my wife, but no replies were made, tho I tried various relationships to get a reply. I was not in a position to locate the musical sound accurately and did not care to examine how far off it seemed, leaving that to the others. But no effort could bring me to perceive it in her throat, tho I could distinguish that the sound fluctuated from place to place, sometimes nearer and sometimes farther away. The trumpet fall showed that it was apparently two or two and a half feet. I had such command of the head and face that it would have been difficult to hold the trumpet against the mouth without detection. I do not say that it could not have been done. But it would seem that, if the trumpet was so held, I should have detected the sound in her throat easily, and with it movements of the head to indicate the varying positions of the sound. But none of these were noticeable, tho I was trying to perceive them so.

Automatic writing then directed us to give some light and to put up the curtain. Dr. Hamilton hung a red handkerchief on the electric light and turned it up. Raps signified that it was wrong and in the adjustment of it the light was turned up a little too high and Miss Burton began to tremble considerably. The light was adjusted, but evidently things were wrong because, as soon as Miss Burton could get over her trembling, her hand seized the pencil and wrote: "We mean the window curtain." The red light was put out and the window curtain slightly raised letting in the light out of doors. This was all done at the sug-



gestion of "Dan" who now wants to get phenomena in the light. But some time later after unsuccessful trials the window curtain had to be put down further, tho admitting some light.

We returned then to further physical phenomena. The loud singing by this apparent new voice was repeated. I this time got my head clearly against Miss Burton's and held her right hand in my right, and detected only very slight movements of the head. Their significance was lost, however, in the fact that the same movements exactly could be noticed both when the singing was not taking place and even when the phonograph was not playing. It was only such movement as would take place if the body were slightly trembling. I could not observe whether the body was trembling or not. I was not situated to study this. But the singing was as excellent, as loud and as distant as before. I could not detect anything that would indicate its occurrence in her throat, tho noticing as always the occasional groan in the throat.

She then placed both her hands together in my right hand and put them up to her chin. I held my two fingers on her chin, and my thumb and other two fingers so as to feel both hands. One finger, the little finger, was between her palms, and the other finger and thumb clasped the backs of her hands. I held them tight and she made no effort to extricate them. If a spasmodic effort occurred to do this an immediate spontaneous effort would restore their normal position and tension. Finally the effort succeeded in producing a little singing and whistling under these conditions. It required a prolonged and difficult effort, however, and the singing and whistling were neither clear nor as distinctly located as on other occasions. My head rested fast against hers with my ear not more than two inches from her throat. Apparently at first a sound seemed to issue from her throat, but only once and the rest of the notes seemed to be at a distance. I obtained as little evidence as before of the participation of her vocal organs in the result. Such as I did obtain may have been due to the fact that the musical notes did not seem to be as far off as usual. Her hands took no part in the result and apparently the trumpet was not used. I have noticed that the trumpet is not apparently used whenever the hands are both held, tho there were one or two exceptions to this. One

of these was when Dr. Hamilton got a breath like Miss Burton's. The trumpet seemed to be near him and fell on the table near him. On this occasion she could not easily have held the trumpet in her teeth without detection as my fingers almost touched her lips. I kept them as near her lips as I could.

The next experiment resulted in simultaneous singing and whistling while I held my head against Miss Burton's. The location of the sounds at a distance was very distinct and also the variation of their locality. But I could detect no evidence either of head movements or of throat sounds except the occasional groan. I was of course holding the right hand, but not the left.

In one case of singing and only in one which seemed to be the result of great effort, did I detect apparent participation of her throat. I may say also that often at the beginning of a phenomenon I thought I detected the first note or sound in the neighborhood of the throat, and set myself to see if it continued so, but I could never find it repeated after the first apparent case of it. I could as well assign the perception to an illusion as to assert its reality. My hesitation to accept my judgment of its place in the throat is based on the constant echo of the phonograph apparently in her throat when certain types of musical notes were played. This did not occur for all the music or for all the notes in any piece. But certain types of resonant sounds would rebound as it were so that I would get the impression that they were in her throat, as if the beats had caused it. The phenomenon did not interfere with my perception of the slight groans or properly distinguishing the voices and whistling, as those resonant sounds were only at certain intervals and in certain pieces of music. They may have caused the apparent voice once in her throat, as some of the music played on the instrument was vocal. This one instance was such an exception to all the failures to get any throat location of the singing and whistling that I cannot urge it as conclusive for the origin of all the apparently independent phenomena there.

In the beginning of the apparently independent voices or whistling I did obtain at times a vague sense of throat action, but it would not continue and the sense of distance would become so clear against all attempt to locate it in the throat that I could

only imagine that the vocal organs had some sort of relation to the phenomena, tho wholly unable to prove it while the appearance from location and variation of the sounds was all in favor of independence.

In spite of the evidence being negative for the action of her organs I have a general feeling that investigation would discover synchronous action on their part and perhaps an adequate explanation of the facts. I am certain that her muscles exhibit sympathetic action at times. But I found no evidence that her vocal organs acted in any way that would adequately explain the facts in the more striking instances. Such evidence as there is preponderates for at least the appearance of independent phenomena, tho, of course, not proving the fact of them. One feels too perplexed with a confident denial of them to risk his reputation on that side and would feel quite the same in taking the opposite stand.

The spontaneous willingness to admit light and to offer more or less test conditions as shown by the above account show that we cannot be confident of either normal or subliminal "trickery," and the evidence of automatism is so great and so complex that the phenomena are unusual without assuming that they are supernatural.

At the close of the séance there was an attempt to give a communication as the medium came to normal consciousness. I got the sound "S," others thought it "Hess" or "Bess." Immediately afterward I seemed to hear in a whisper the name "Charley," but was too uncertain to admit it or to utter it in recognition. Finally automatic writing was resorted to to tell us that we must not utter the name till we got it clearly. Further effort was made to utter it and I got "C here" or "See here" very distinctly, but we could get no further. I have a brother Charles deceased, as my Report on the Piper case shows.

February 19th, 1909.

On my return to —— to-day I had another sitting this evening with Miss Burton, after telegraphing ahead to Dr. Hamilton the time of my arrival. We allowed things to take their own course after the narrative of Mrs. Milton regarding the remarkable experiences of the evening before. It appeared that peculiar

lights had been seen covering the tambourine and trumpet and that other phenomena had been unusually good. One of them was the getting of the trumpet from behind the phonograph. Mrs. Milton proposed that we try this on the present occasion, and tho she might be the person suspected when Miss Burton might not be I remained silent about the matter and we turned off the lights after placing a wedge under the door going into the kitchen and lighting a fire in the sitting room or parlor so as to let a little light come into the room where we were. The object was to make seals on this door unnecessary. The light from the parlor was sufficient to be seen on the window curtain and to enable me to see a stream of light from where I sat, so that anything intervening between me and this stream could be seen. A dim stream of light shone on the table, so that with the light from the door and what was visible on the table I could see any movement of Miss Burton's arm or hand to use any trumpet or object lying on the table. Unfortunately after about three-quarters of an hour elapsed at the experiment the complaint was made through raps in answer to questions that there was too much light, and the door had to be closed, with a much less clear stream of light emerging through it. Two or three times before any phenomena began I saw something intervene between me and the line of light and it was clearly not Mrs. Milton, as I saw her form and arms several times, she leaning toward Dr. Hamilton to talk or give her hands to him. It interrupted my vision of what might have been done simultaneously by Miss Burton. The little light that remained after the door was closed was not sufficient to do more than discover the interruption now and then of some intervening object without power of detection as to what it was. At no time was I able to discriminate what intervened, save that now and then it was evident that Mrs. Milton's arm or body shut off the light. Besides I had to lean forward considerably to see anything intervene and this cut off other observations about Miss Burton's movements of head or arm. I gave up trying to detect anything in this manner and gave my attention to watching her head, body, and singing or whistling.

Before anything occurred I took Miss Burton's right hand to watch her movements with reference to getting the trumpet

out of the corner of the room and behind the phonograph. This was while the table was in the center of the room. After some minutes had elapsed in the darkness Dr. Hamilton asked Miss Burton a question and she gave no reply, being apparently entranced. Soon the table moved a step toward the corner of the room where the phonograph was placed. I observed that there was no muscular action whatever on the part of the right hand which I was holding. Whatever part Miss Burton played in the act the right hand undoubtedly had no share in it. I observed the same thing every time the table moved toward the corner and this was perhaps seven or eight times before it reached its goal. By this time it was jammed up against me and had me and my chair tight against the wall. Miss Burton was close to the phonograph. But after half or three-quarters of an hour elapsed, evidently trying to get the trumpet it was given up and Dr. Hamilton took it out and placed it on the table. During this period I heard a few light groans by Miss Burton, which I could easily locate in her throat. But nothing else of importance occurred.

Early in the séance I placed my left hand on Miss Burton's right shoulder with a view to detecting any movements of the body and after lying there some fifteen minutes a hand came and gently moved it down to the table on her right hand where my right was placed. I gave up this method of trying to watch her bodily movements and resorted to leaning over toward her and allowing my head at first to touch stray hairs of her head and finally by placing my head directly against hers. Often I noticed what seemed to me the turning of her head to the left to prevent my detection of any action by her mouth and throat. But this was not uniform and there were times when I had my face and ear against hers and often the side of my head touching her temple so that my ear was close to her throat. I heard nothing there except an occasional light groan. But only a few important phenomena occurred under these conditions, and in fact not many interesting things took place during the evening.

The first time that any singing took place I had my head against Miss Burton's and her head was turned slightly to the left, and to me the sound was distinctly from her throat and seemed to be directed toward Mrs. Milton. Drs. Hamilton and Smyth

located the sound in the same way. After the whistling began I asked that I hold the left hand also and it was permitted. The whistling was repeated several times while I held both hands. Then singing was attempted and Miss Burton spontaneously placed both hands in mine and singing occurred under these conditions, with my head close to hers. But I could detect clearly that the sound issued from her head and throat. No trumpet was used at any time that I held both hands, tho when I held only the right the trumpet was occasionally used. But there was not enough taking place during the evening to require the frequent use of the trumpet. Usually Miss Burton seemed to want me to hold both hands. Singing and whistling took place several times while I did so. Twice, however, when I held both hands I thought I heard distinctly the expert whistling, but none of the others heard it, and I had to set down my judgment or perception as an illusion. There were two excuses for this. The tune played by the phonograph was a whistling tune. That is, it was expert whistling that had been recorded on the plate. The second reason was that I was holding my head against hers and found it difficult in that position to locate sound. It was so all evening when I had my head against hers, and only my liability to illusion, as usually assumed, made it necessary to qualify my perception about the sounds of singing and whistling in the region of her throat or would throw doubt on that judgment. But it was confirmed by the opinion of Drs. Hamilton and Smyth. Besides the music of the phonograph was just behind her head from my position and together with a sort of echo it was not always easy to assign an exact location to any new sound arising as the instrument was played.

But it was better when another tune was played which had no whistling recorded. It was an Indian song. The whistling that accompanied this was very distinct and not to be doubted. I was holding both hands and all the others knew this, tho only after it was over. I did not tell them I was holding both hands until it was past. The trumpet was not used and I could not detect with any assurance that the sound issued from her throat. Indeed I had no impression that it did or did not. My judgment was entirely negative both ways. All that I know is that the hands had nothing to do with it.

As an attempt to give something was tried Miss Burton moved both hands with mine to her face and I was enabled to place my thumb on her throat and the forefinger on her lip. There was an attempt to do the whistling under these conditions. It was made twice and after long trial failed. I could detect with the thumb slight movements of the throat, but no whistling occurred. I have since this in my room frequently effected good whistling with my finger on my lips when I would have imagined that it was either impossible or easy of detection if possible. But I found it quite possible and very difficult of detection. Another circumstance to be noticed in this whistling of mine was that at times I could not do it. I do not yet know how exactly to arrange the mouth to get the effect. Sometimes I can do it quickly and easily, but at others it requires some time to get the adjustment necessary and I cannot tell always just how to secure that adjustment at once. But regardless of these difficulties it is clear that it will not be easy to provide a test against Miss Burton's doing the whistling by holding a finger on her lips.

The most important observation of the evening, however, was the fact that I could discover that the sounds which an earlier observation referred to Miss Burton's throat, doubtfully at the time, were undoubtedly due to echoes or bad resonance of the phonograph. I heard the same sounds this time and being nearer the instrument could easily discover that they were due to this and not to her throat. This very much strengthens the former instances in favor of independent phenomena, tho by no means proving them, as their character may still have been due to the action of her organism.

An important observation was that of raps while I held both hands. This occurred many times and so far as I could detect them they were located on the top of the table. Drs. Hamilton and Smyth who were better situated than I for locating the sounds were not confident that they were on the top of the table. Miss Burton would have had to produce the raps with her feet under the conditions, by striking one of her feet on the foot of the table. There was no evidence that this was or was not done. All that I could be sure of was that raps occurred in answer to questions while I held both hands and while these hands were not touching the table. Earlier in the evening when raps oc-



curred and seemed to be definitely located out of Miss Burton's reach of the hand I asked that they be repeated near me and under my nose and this was done, in so far as I could locate the sound. It was certainly near me. I held the right hand and could not detect any evidence of movement of the left hand on the part of Miss Burton. But she may have done so nevertheless. All that I can report is that the raps seemed to be on the top of the table, and I did not detect any movement of her right foot to make them, tho my left foot was near it. I had no control of her left foot.

Once I heard very indistinct sounds of the tambourine which were so light that I could not see how Miss Burton could have produced them by handling the instruments. I held one hand, the right, and am not sure now when writing out my notes whether I was holding the left or not. All that I recall distinctly is that I asked if that was the tambourine and a voice by Miss Burton said "No, no, no." Drs. Hamilton and Smyth said they had not touched the instruments. The sound was near my ear which was near Miss Burton's head. It followed the statement a few minutes before through the trumpet to Mrs. Milton and Dr. Hamilton that they were trying to do something special. I remember also of being struck with the importance of the phenomenon as if I were holding both hands, but it may be that it was the slight character of the sound suggesting to me that it was not the real tambourine that impressed me and not the actual protection against using her left hand. The more I think of the fact the more I feel that I did not hold the left hand. Her own "No" in answer to my question would imply that she did not touch the instrument, as she never before made any such reply to inquiries about any object or instrument in this manner.

The evening as a whole was not at all impressive for the existence of important phenomena in favor of the supernormal of any kind. At the close there was some automatic writing, but its contents were in explanation of the failure and stated that there were so many present and the conditions so complex that they could not give much. The writing was done in the dark and Dr. Hamilton had to go to the kitchen to read it. While he was reading one sheet Mrs. Milton remarked that she wished they would give us some such lights as they had done the evening

before at their private circle. At once the hand wrote: "We will give you some light soon if we can."

Soon afterward, when we thought she was coming out of the trance, a light came of the usual kind, a clear electric looking light moving in a curved line in front of Miss Burton's face. I held the right hand. Several lights were seen by me, two or three apparently in her lap. But they were not especially successful and she soon began to come out of the trance, after Black Cloud said "No good! No good! Me go" several times. There was an attempt to say something as she came out of the trance, but I could not detect certainly what it was. At one time I thought it was the attempt to give the name Helen or Ellen, or Henry. I did not detect the last clearly enough to be sure that it was even an attempt at it, and tho the sound of the others seemed possibly attempts at one or the other of them I was hardly any surer about them than Henry.

There was occasional talking by Miss Burton through the trumpet to Mrs. Milton and Dr. Hamilton, and once it seemed so far off that I asked where it seemed to be located and Dr. Hamilton said it seemed within a foot of himself. He remarked that he could feel distinctly the breath of Miss Burton. I asked the question because the sound seemed to me fully three or four feet away and I had complete control of her right hand and my head rested against hers in a position which showed that she had not leaned forward. She might have held the trumpet in her left hand, but unless she had put the smaller piece of the trumpet in the larger she could not easily have produced the effect noticable. Usually during the evening she talked through the larger piece and apparently this was used on this occasion.

The most striking incident of the evening was the stopping of the phonograph while I was holding both hands. Mrs. Milton was occupied with Dr. Hamilton and the machine stopped suddenly without any warning, as if the piece played was undesirable. This frequently occurs. But at no other time had we control of her hands. This time I held both on her breast and my head was near hers. I did not detect any motion of her body whatever and the part of the instrument to be touched could not have been reached by her foot without detection of bodily movements by me or without raising her left leg three

feet in the air and putting it on top of the machine fully on the level of her head and at her left as far back as her shoulder.

Once during the evening an incident occurred which had been observed at one of the earlier séances. The raps answered "Yes" to an inquiry and the whispered voice of Miss Burton said "No." Miss Burton made this reply twice as did also the raps, showing a contradiction that was persistent. This conflict of "forces" was an interesting circumstance quite consistent with the occasional reluctance which Miss Burton showed against test conditions. I frequently noticed resistance of her head to contact or to holding the left hand, but there was always a spontaneous surrender. In this case the conflict was between the affirmative of the raps and the negative of her own voice. What it meant may be conjectured.

February 20th, 1909.

Dr. Hamilton was not present this evening. Only Dr. Smyth and myself with Mrs. Milton were the sitters. We resolved to not try any special tests but to let the affair take its own course. Very soon after the lights were turned off the control was asked if he were present and his reply was promptly "yes" by raps. One or two other parties answered by the same and some conversation was carried on with raps regarding the sitting. Sometimes the raps seemed to be in the proximity of Miss Burton and sometimes on the other side of the table opposite her, perhaps three feet away from her. This, of course, is all conjecture, but my impression should be recorded as a part of the facts. All this while Miss Burton was normally conscious, as evidenced by our turning on the light for a moment to make some omitted arrangement and by the circumstance that Miss Burton answered Mrs. Milton normally that she, Miss Burton, had not moved the trumpet, which had apparently moved to Mrs. Milton to say something through it. The reality of this, it is apparent, depends wholly upon the integrity of Miss Burton and Mrs. Milton. Soon after, however, Miss Burton was in a trance, as she failed to answer another question, perhaps five minutes later. At the time the light was turned up Dr. Smyth had observed that her eyes looked heavy and her face unnatural, tho she remained nor-

mally conscious some minutes longer. It is possible Miss Burton did it while anæsthetic below the larynx.

The first thing that occurred was whistling by Pietra, accompanied by the phonograph. The music was not a whistling tune. That is it did not contain a record of whistling, hence I could detect easily the sound and its apparent locality some distance from Miss Burton. I sat at right angles to her at this time, having resolved not to sit near her or to act as a disturbing factor. It was a good position from which to observe that the sound did not apparently issue from her mouth, as it seemed four feet distant at times. But as she was free to use the trumpet this signified nothing. Finally I was asked where I was sitting and I replied by touching Miss Burton's hand and saying that her hand was just within reach of mine. In a few moments her hand reached over to mine lying on the table and pulled it to hers when I stretched it out and laid it on hers, and then she pulled my arm as if desiring me to move my chair toward her which I did and took my seat beside her, remaining there for the rest of the evening with the power to have better test conditions.

Before this was done, however, there was some independent singing, which I neglected to describe. The voice was not distinct, tho the sound at times was loud and the following of the notes on the phonograph was clear. The only thing to be remarked of importance was the appearance of a voice issuing from the place where Miss Burton sat. This was apparently simultaneous with the singing tho the occasional note which I so heard was not simultaneous with any note heard at a distance. The locality of the sounds varied from side to side, at times appearing to be as much as four feet from Miss Burton. But the appearance of an occasional note issuing from her locality, as if she were singing into the trumpet. I note this particularly because later, when I sat beside her and held my head close to hers, while the same kind of singing occurred I could not detect the slightest sound in her throat or apparently issuing from her mouth. In one case of singing when I sat near her I noticed that the sound sometimes issued from a point near her, but this may have been when I had to locate its apparent place at her left. But at the most favorable moments for locating it across the table in front of her I could not detect any sound

whatever issuing from her head or mouth. During the evening I did occasionally locate the slight groan in her throat and this very distinctly tho the sound bore no comparison in volume with the singing.

After taking my seat beside Miss Burton in response to what was evidently a spontaneous desire that I sit near her and be able to control her right hand, there was some good whistling, the important incident of which was the location frequently of the whistling at my right ear and at times apparently two feet from my right. I had the opportunity to watch for the movement of the trumpet on this occasion, as there was some light from the window in front and the right of me. I could not detect any object between me and this light. After the whistling and while there was resting I picked up the trumpet and waved it between me and the light and when I moved it with a reasonable velocity I could easily discover its shadow on the retina, but when I moved it rapidly I could not detect anything but a slight interference in the light. It was clear, however, when the motion was slow. I could detect the outline distinctly. But if Miss Burton moved the trumpet rapidly in that direction she might have prevented my discovering its shadow. She could not easily, however, have reached with her left hand as far as it was necessary to make the sound appear where it seemed to be, as the piece of trumpet usable was not more than eighteen inches long, and I was not only holding her right hand in my left, but I could not detect any motion or movement of her body. It was not easy to account for the location of the sound where it appeared, and in fact it was so definite and clear to my hearing that I should affirm with much confidence that the phenomenon could not be easily explained by ordinary means were it not for the liability to illusion which we have to admit, tho it does not seem that this liability is so great as we sometimes imagine.

There followed simultaneous singing and whistling with localization of them at different places and the variation of the localities where they seemed to be. Two things I noticed very carefully. The first was that words were not articulated in the singing, tho it was apparent that the attempt was made to articulate them. The second incident was that I could not detect in the throat or near the head any sound whatever, save occasionally

the slight groan mentioned above. At times the sound of the voice appeared nearer the head than at others, but at no time could I definitely locate it in the throat.

The uniformity of this distant location of the sound was disturbed only once or twice during the evening. Once, when there was evident difficulty in singing, the sound did seem to issue from some point in distinct proximity to Miss Burton. On such occasions the trumpet was not held long, but was thrown down after a few notes were sung and for no apparent reason but fatigue, as no effort was made on my part to disturb it or to apply inquiries into its source. Through all of the phenomena, as remarked at all the past sittings, there was that phenomenon of interrupted singing or whistling by the throwing down of the trumpet, but on signifying our appreciation of its merits the trumpet was immediately taken and the singing or whistling or both of them taken up and continued, until the music of the phonograph ended.

The trumpet or horn of the phonograph had been removed earlier in the evening in response to my request. My object was to lessen the sound and to eliminate the echoes or bad resonance of the music. But it seemed to make matters worse by scattering the sound, as the horn had collected it. Finally it was remedied by putting on another piece which somewhat muffled the sound and things proceeded.

There was then whistling again of a very expert type with location as before at my right, and as it only repeated in more distinct form than before what was then observed no further comment need be made, save that I could not again detect any sound in the throat tho the whistling was very loud and my head very close to hers, perhaps as near as two or three inches.

Then followed singing with the independent voice apparently, and it was on this occasion that I observed no trace of sound issuing from the throat as I thought I had heard it on the first attempt when I sat more than two or three feet distant from Miss Burton. The same phenomenon was observable on later occasions of singing when I tried to detect the issuance of the sound from the throat.

I then asked if I could hold my hand on Miss Burton's forehead while the expert whistling was done. Raps answered

"Yes." While waiting my left hand was picked up in some hand apparently and placed on Miss Burton's forehead and after a few moments elapsed it was removed and my right hand picked up and placed there. In that position and while my left held Miss Burton's right expert whistling was done locating the sound apparently as distant as four feet. I proposed this plan in order to see if I could detect any motion of the head and body while the whistling went on with its location at a distance. I thought that perhaps the motion of the trumpet, if used by her left hand, would give rise to perceptible movements of the head and body. But I could not detect the slightest tremor of any kind as the whistling proceeded.

Soon after, while the music was proceeding with the phonograph I noticed frequent raps in front of me on what I thought was the trumpet lying there. I immediately put out my right hand, my left resting on Miss Burton's right, and found that there was no trumpet there. I still heard the raps continuing with some rapidity and constancy. The sound was not so distinct as when made at my left and to the left of Miss Burton. The quality seemed wholly different. I then asked that the music be stopped and gave my attention to the raps noticing that they were immediately in front of me and apparently on the table. When they ceased I asked for their repetition and they came. They were very light raps and much less emphatic and less regulatable apparently than those which "Dan" and others purport to give. As soon as I found they were possible in reply to request I asked if this was a friend of mine rapping and the answer came in three raps for "Yes." I then asked if it was my wife, tho thinking of Dr. Hodgson, in order to test more carefully whether I would get evidence of guessing. The answer was one rap for "No." I asked if it was my mother and silence followed, then my sister and got "No" again in one rap. Then I asked if it was my friend whom I had succeeded in the work and got the answer "Yes" in three raps. I then asked if he would signify in raps the spelling of the name and the answer was three raps again. I began slowly to repeat the alphabet and when I reached H there were three raps. I was thinking of his first name and hence the name Richard and went on. But no reply came to the rest of the alphabet. Dr. Smyth



too had noticed the raps at H and now remarked it at the moment that I was going to ask if it was H. I asked it and got the three raps. I then went over the alphabet and raps came at O again. Again I went over the alphabet and when D was reached I expected a rap, but none occurred and I went on. When G was reached there were raps again. I then resolved to recognize its meaning and asked if it was Hodgson, and the reply was again three raps. I at once asked if he had recently communicated with me and the raps were three again. I now asked if it was by writing and the answer was hesitating, but there came a "No" in one rap. Then I asked if it was a speaking medium, thinking of Mrs. Bain's independent voice, and received some hesitation at first and then one rap for "No." I then asked if it was an independent voice and no reply came. I then asked if it was a speaking medium and the answer hesitatingly was "Yes" by three raps. I asked again if there was any writing and received no reply. I could get no more raps.

The facts are that Dr. Hodgson purported to communicate through Mrs. Bain, at first apparently by voice and then succeeded in getting his name through by automatic writing twice in the form of "Hobson," tho earlier in the evening I was told that my friend "Hodgson," was present with Mr. Ingersoll. Mrs. Bain knew of my relation to Dr. Hodgson and so I could not attach any value to the message.

There followed this some further simultaneous singing and whistling of a most excellent character the chief mark of which as observed by both Dr. Smyth and myself was that the voice and whistling were perfectly simultaneous at times and often in one breath of whistling there were several distinct notes of singing. Sometimes the note in the singing was not synchronous with the note of the whistling and it was to me the signal for observing whether she might not be alternately whistling and singing, and Dr. Smyth seems to have spontaneously watched for the same fact, as he often called my attention to the absolute synchrony of notes and whistling at various points. This I had set out to mark and there was no mistake about it as it occurred on several occasions during the evening, but was more distinct and marked on this trial than before. No words of the song were distinguishable, however.

After this and a short rest my left hand was picked up and placed on the chin and lips of Miss Burton and my right hand then picked up by placing fingers under mine palm downwards and then raising the hand high in the air, I standing up to follow the process. When my hand had reached the highest point possible for the hand holding it my fingers were kissed on the top while the fingers held the bottom of mine. So far as I could judge there was apparently a double impression on top of the fingers, as if two lips touched them. This may have been an illusion due to what I expected, as I knew what was going to be done. But there was nothing done that could not have been done with the left hand of Miss Burton. My hand took the curve again, as before (p. 299) to suit the position of Miss Burton's left hand and there is no reason to suppose that the phenomenon was anything but the act of her own arm and hand.

There followed more simultaneous singing and whistling of an excellent character which need not be detailed, as the facts were the same as before, and afforded only additional evidence from repetition of the perfectly distinct localization of the sound at different places and especially at my right, even close to my right ear which it would seem to be impossible to reach by Miss Burton's left hand with the trumpet without indicating bodily movements for which I was on the watch and which I could not discover. The whistling and singing were not located always, if ever, at the same point. The whistling usually seemed farther off than the singing. I could hear nothing in the throat. But I was perhaps a foot or more from her head, tho I had no means of assuring myself of this, as it may have been possible to lean toward me and reach with the trumpet far enough to my right to locate the singing or whistling near my ear. The only objection to this was the absence of any discoverable bodily movements necessitated by such an act. I held her right hand in my left and could have detected any movements that would have affected this arm. But possibly agile movements of her left arm and hand may have overcome this imagined difficulty. But it would not have explained the simultaneous and more distant location of the whistling while the singing was at or near my ear, as it often was and as often apparently some distance from it to the right. It would be more difficult to explain this farther

localization of both the singing and whistling than that at the ear. But as it was dark I have to suppose anything possible rather than the apparent thing, tho I will say that as before I could not detect any interference with the light at the window by the presence of the trumpet. As remarked before its rapid motion would probably prevent this.

Soon after this Mrs. Milton requested lights. These were promised. A new piece of music was inserted and presently a light appeared apparently issuing from Miss Burton's face and taking a curved motion first upward and then downward disappeared below the table. In a few moments lights followed with some frequency and taking various directions, until some very brilliant ones appeared illuminating parts of Miss Burton very clearly. Two or three times a light apparently issuing from space, only the side of which I could see, illuminated her forehead and nose so distinctly tho fully eight inches from it, that I could see forehead and nose as clearly as under a bright electric light. Several times the whole face was illuminated, but not so distinctly, tho clear at points or in a certain vertical line. Then her breast was similarly illuminated. Also my face in the same way on request. Finally I asked that a light be made to issue from my head and in a moment I was touched by a finger, or what I supposed a finger and a light issued from my forehead and moved into space. This was repeated several times, tho not by touching my forehead again. We may assume that it was a mistake to have touched my head. In one of the spontaneous lights I saw distinctly a cloud of vapor arise like phosphorus smoke and I tried to smell it, as it was near my face, but I could not detect any, tho I tried several times. Dr. Smyth remarked the same cloud and tried to get the smell, but failed. I then asked "Dan" if he could produce a light for me while I held both hands and three raps signified that he could. I told him to take his time and then asked if he could give us two lights simultaneously and the reply was three raps again. But Miss Burton fell forward with her head on the table for a rest, after remarking to Mrs. Milton through the trumpet that she must rest first. After the rest there was some independent singing again which I need not describe as it was a repetition and then the effort was made to give the double lights. As this was beginning I noticed frequent

groans by Miss Burton as if reluctant to do it and when the first light appeared it was not only single but was not distinct. Presently two lights appeared simultaneously about three inches apart, then in a moment two again as far apart as a foot or fifteen inches. Then I saw a very bright light on Miss Burton's cheek and one in her lap fully eighteen or twenty inches distant from it. Several times in the air two lights appeared simultaneously about a foot apart. Often there was an apparent attempt to get separate and simultaneous lights, but they resulted in two successive lights a foot or eighteen inches apart, following one the other so quickly that it seemed impossible for the hand to traverse the space so quickly without showing a stream of light in the movement, or even being impossible as movement at all. This might have been an illusion, however, but the attempt to produce simultaneous lights seemed to be the proper interpretation of the effort as I had never remarked this peculiarity, except in this experiment at separate and simultaneous lights.

A special piece of music was asked for through the trumpet by the supposed trance personalities and it was some time before it could be found. When found and played it was an exceedingly difficult piece to produce with it simultaneous singing and whistling, but this was done, at first apparently with difficulty, as the trumpet was dropped very soon after the beginning several times until encouragement brought better success.

There then followed one of the most interesting incidents of the evening. After a little rest the right hand lifted from mine holding it and extended into space and I soon took the hint that it wanted to write. Paper and pencil had been provided before the sitting for this emergency. When I felt for the pencils that were lying near the pad when we sat down at the beginning they could not be found and after some feeling about I remarked that I would have to use mine. I took one from my pocket and was in the act of handing it to her, that is placing it on her hand, when she reached in the darkness on the other side of the table and got the two pencils. Soon the hand wrote a sheet full and stopped. I handed it to Dr. Smyth who took it into the kitchen where he could turn up the light to read it. He returned without having deciphered all of it, but said nothing of its contents except that it was for me. After some writing the pencil, which had

been thrown down after the first writing, was seized again and held for a moment between the finger and thumb, I having helped to place it, and then spontaneously changed into a position between the first and second fingers, after the manner in which Dr. Hodgson held it in other cases, as remarked above (p. 309), and I saw what might come. Another page was written and given to Dr. Smyth to take into the kitchen to read. Thinking it might be important for me to go out I left my place, which perhaps I should not have done, and went into the kitchen and read the message. I came back and found Miss Burton resting her face on the table, the light admitted by my going into the kitchen having probably caused the collapse. As soon as she rested again she seized the pencil and held it awhile in the left hand between thumb and first finger when again it was suddenly and spontaneously changed and held between the first and second fingers of this hand in the same manner as before and an effort made to try writing. But it failed and after further waiting and a fall of the head on the table again the trumpet was picked up and the whisper of Miss Burton in it held to my ear was: "Better stop. The medium is very much exhausted." We then closed the sitting and Miss Burton came out with a slight headache.

I did not quote the automatic writing above as I did not know the first sheet of it until I came home. The writing was in pitch darkness with the "i's" dotted and the "t's" crossed, most of them with perfect accuracy. The first writing was as follows: "Will try very hard to give you a message next time. R. H." The "H" in this signature is clear, but the sign supposed to be intended for "R" is not clear and is so conjectural that the intention must be inferred from what occurred in the communication of the name by raps earlier in the séance. The "R" was probably not known by Miss Burton and the "H" was. The expression "Will try" is characteristic, as Hodgson elsewhere uses this sort of abbreviation and the fact is probably not known by Miss Burton. The second writing was not signed, but it contains a most characteristic phrase which Miss Burton could not have known. It was: "You know how hard it is, but I will try hard [?] next time." The third trial resulted in only a slight scrawl. Possibly my leaving the room broke the connections and spoiled the results.

One incident was forgotten in this account. At the beginning of the séance the first thing done was shaking the tambourine about. In the course of this it was shaken for some moments on my hand and I managed to move my hand from under it and to push up my fingers so as to see if anything was holding it and my hand came to a hand, or what the touch made me believe was a hand, holding the tambourine. As soon as I touched it the tambourine was quickly lifted and played in the air. I have no doubt it was Miss Burton's hand that I touched.

There were also raps that appeared to me to be on the table while I was holding both hands. Dr. Hamilton, however, could not feel confident that the raps were on the top of the table. They seemed so to him, but he felt too strongly the possibility of their being on the leg of the table and their locus being mistaken to be certain of what it was.

February 21st, 1909.

This evening Dr. Smyth was absent and only Dr. Hamilton present with Mrs. Milton. The phenomena were largely repetitions of the previous sitting in many of their aspects and certain details need not be mentioned. I shall mark only those which exhibited interesting new characteristics, or such of the old ones as attracted special attention to their importance. I resolved at first to let things take their own course until the conditions permitted my applying certain limitations to Miss Burton's actions.

Soon after the lights were put out the table was opened and moved some distance toward the phonograph, but not so nearly to it as on the evening previous. I sat for some time on the right of Miss Burton at about the distance of two feet. Before the singing began a hand touched me and placed mine on her right, evidently to indicate that test conditions or partial ones were to be permitted at once. But it was some time before I moved nearer Miss Burton. I simply listened at the distance named to the whistling and singing. There were various cases of either whistling or singing or both whistling and singing at the same time. I had opportunities to watch the simultaneous singing and whistling very carefully and to mark their apparent localization at a distance from Miss Burton and this both before and

after I took my seat beside her. Many times, whether the singing or whistling took place separately or together I was able distinctly to locate one or the other or both at my right hand, when seated beside her, or apparently across the table from her when seated at right angles to her.

The whistling and singing were interesting as being much clearer than usual, the whistling in particular. At times the whistling was certainly expert. But the singing varied in its quality. Sometimes it was apparently easy and certainly loud and distinct. At others it was difficult and not loud. One thing I marked regarding the whistling in comparison with the singing which I have not mentioned in previous records tho I recall that it existed there as here, tho at times not so distinctly as here. The whistling was more continuous than the singing. That is, when the whistling occurred it seemed that the whistling could be prolonged more readily than the singing. At times the whistling lasted throughout the piece of music that was being played and without interruption. But often the singing could last only for a few notes when the trumpet would fall and a moment's respite would occur before it began. Sometimes it would not begin again for some time. But it was clear that the singing was not so easy or so sustained as the whistling could be. On the supposition that it was mere trickery, whether conscious or unconscious, we should not see a natural excuse for this prevalent difference.

Through the trumpet there was a call for a song, after music had been played several times for whistling and the Indian Maid was sung which brought out a very clear instance of singing in loud and clear tones. Sometimes the singing of a tune was in the voice of a man apparently and sometimes in that of a woman. There was that variation of personality that suggested the real, tho there was no proof that it could not have been done by Miss Burton.

The variation of the locus of the whistling and singing when they were simultaneous was very distinct this evening, and when I was seated near Miss Burton they were often at my right. Several times I tried to observe whether the trumpet passed between me and the window light from which I could see perhaps more distinctly than before. But I did not observe it. However



I was able to discover it touching my chin once or twice while locating the sound near my right ear, Miss Burton always being at my left. Once or twice also it touched the top of my head while locating the sound apparently at my right. I could not detect any movement in Miss Burton.

A few unusual things should be noted. I observed more frequent groans this evening than usual and could easily locate them in Miss Burton's throat, tho whistling might be going on. I observed, however, that they were more frequent just previous to some difficult task, and I often detected a toss of the head, when holding it, previous to some evidently difficult or new experiment, even when not suggested by me. There were also whisperings in the trumpet, in Miss Burton's voice, when some directions about the work were to be given. This is a regular phenomenon of the séances.

An important point indicating that the trumpet might have been an essential aid in the whistling at all times was the fact that, on one occasion this evening, the music was very low or light and I was able, while the music was going on as indicated, to hear a distinct resonance of the trumpet. The whistling did not sound in the trumpet, but the trumpet gave off the natural resonance or sound which characterizes any similar instrument when sound is made to go through it.

Another important point to remark is the fact that we did not always agree as to the locus of the sound. Usually we did, but occasionally the sound seemed to me to be near Dr. Hamilton and he thought it was near me. In all cases, however, in which we so differed the sound to both of us was in or near the median plane when it is known that we cannot localize it accurately. But we found that when it was outside this median plane, or in plane dimension as distinct from the third, so to speak, we were much more agreed and accurate as to its apparent locus, whatever such a judgment may mean.

There was another incident on which all three of us were agreed. It was as to the relative locus of the whistling and singing when they were simultaneous or single. I had noticed that the whistling had always seemed farther away than the singing, and this whether accompanied by the singing or not. Without making the suggestion as to my judgment I asked how it seemed

to the others and both agreed spontaneously that the whistling appeared always to be farther off.

The rattle bones were tried once and failed. Mrs. Milton said that at times the rattling of them had been excellent and shown apparent skill of some merit. But Miss Burton could accomplish nothing with them this time.

Dr. Hamilton asked Black Cloud to give his yell. The reply through the trumpet was that he would try but that he was not sure he could do it. In the preparation for it I noticed some groaning on the part of Miss Burton. After a considerable time elapsed there was a sudden shrill yell with a tremulo in it and the timbre of an Indian yell. It came so unexpectedly to me and was so loud that it made me shiver for a moment. The trial was continued and with some delay for each yell and groaning by Miss Burton it was given four more times, at some interval for the second and third times, and then two sudden yells very close to each other for the fourth and fifth. These last two were much weaker in tone than the others, but had the same quality, the sudden tremulous succession of several sounds. The phenomenon was certainly a most interesting one, especially for the difficulties which seemed to have to be overcome to accomplish it. But there was some difference of opinion as to where the yell seemed to be located. Dr. Hamilton thought it near me and I thought it near him. As soon as it was done Miss Burton fell forward with her head on the table and her right hand, which I had held all the while, fell at her side and was limp as a rag.

There followed this a singular phenomenon in which the trumpet figured, as it touched me once in the act. I felt a distinct wind blowing against me and waited before remarking it, when Dr. Hamilton and Mrs. Milton remarked it. This kept up for some time and it seemed that we all felt it simultaneously. There was only light music and I could not detect any movement on Miss Burton's part during it. She would have had to move the trumpet very violently to produce a sensible wind such as I felt and perhaps very rapidly. How it could be so regular a breeze and how it could be felt simultaneously by the others with nothing but that small trumpet to produce it with I do not see. The trumpet could be used to produce a breeze easily

enough. It is the character of the wind, not the fact of it that is interesting, tho it may be our liability to illusion from not having produced such an effect in our own experience that makes the fact seem striking. The air did not seem to come in puffs as it should have done by vigorous waving of the trumpet and was distributed over too wide an area to have been done easily without indicating bodily movements which I could not perceive. But however explained the fact as described was there.

Dr. Hamilton, perceiving from the odor in the room that there were apples somewhere asked Mrs. Milton if they were on the sideboard and received an affirmative reply. This was situated at his left some four or six feet away and at least eight feet away from Mrs. Milton who was at the phonograph. It was as far from me at my right and in front. That is it was nearly in front of me, and the table intervened between me and it as well as between Miss Burton and the sideboard.

Dr. Hamilton then asked "Dan" if he would not bring an apple to him, and the reply was two raps, which signify in the parlance of the experiments that he did not know. Asked if he would try the reply was in three raps which meant yes. At the time I was holding both hands of Miss Burton and also her head. There were soon evident muscular disturbances in her head and hands, the latter beginning to reach out and finally stretched their full length toward the sideboard and then, as if in fright, they were suddenly drawn back and some trembling of the body took place. After the lapse of some time, during which there was some shaking of the head, as if refusing to do some one's bidding, the hands again, I still holding them, were stretched out. I had said to go on with it, seeing that the hands wanted to move, and I helped them by moving my hand with them. They stretched out as far as Miss Burton could reach without rising and she leaned slightly forward and in a moment she drew them back slightly and moved them toward the left as if trying to give something to Dr. Hamilton, and then again quickly withdrew them, as if frightened again. We then recognized that the trial was a good one and said that it need not be repeated. I then resolved to interrogate "Dan" on the incidents of the experiment. I put the result in dialogue as below.

(Do you use any force from the medium in trying to do this?)

[No reply.]

(Do others help you?)

Yes [Three raps].

(Does more than one person help you?)

Yes [Three raps].

(Do five persons help you?)

[No reply.]

(Do four persons?)

[No reply.]

(Do three?)

Yes [Three raps].

(Do you use force from the medium in it?)

[No reply.]

(Do you take the medium with you?)

Yes [Three raps].

As soon as this answer came Miss Burton fell, as if shot, forward with her head on the table to rest. Its significance seems to be its resemblance to the effect of light upon her when suddenly introduced. It suggests that my voice made her conscious of her complicity in the results and that this had the effect of discovery on her mind, as the lights had done this in the earlier experiments of Drs. Hamilton and Smyth. It may, however, have been mere exhaustion and to have thus coincided merely with the supposition of discovery. But the most interesting incident was "Dan's" apparent ignorance of probable processes involved in other cases. I refused to use the words "light" and "energy" which are used in the Piper, Smead and Chenoweth cases, "light" for the medium and "energy" for some apparent force used up, because I did not want to make any suggestions in this direction. But "Dan" seemed only to know that the medium was taken out of the body, and Mrs. Milton soon after my remark that his was a good answer, said that she thought they took her soul out of the body when they did such things. Apparently thus Miss Burton is familiar with the idea which may have given rise to the answer to my inquiry.

The next trial, spontaneously made by the trance personalities, was for lights. The first lights were single and exhibited the characteristics of previous performances. The movements of them through space represented all sorts of directions from

the body. At times I did not see them when Dr. Hamilton did, but he remarked that what he saw was at points which, in fact, I could not see, for instance, on the left side of her body. At times I saw them in her lap when he could not. But usually both of us as well as Mrs. Milton could see them. As usual they seemed to issue from a point behind which they could not be seen. They were not often like phosphorus lights, but nearly always like small electric lights. Very seldom did they illuminate any surrounding space. A few times they lit up her face or points on her face. Usually they did not and this effect did not seem to be a necessary accompaniment of their brilliance, as they were often very brilliant without producing any perceptible illumination of surrounding space. I asked that they be brought from my forehead and it was done. But neither I nor Dr. Hamilton noticed any illumination of my forehead. In fact Dr. Hamilton did not know except from my statement that they emanated from it. Once a finger or similar agency touched my forehead, but afterward the lights issued from the forehead without touching it. An interesting feature of this was that I could see no light until it began to move away from the forehead, so that, on any theory of its production, the phenomenon was withheld until the outward movement began. This would not be done without betraying the light to some one else, if it were phosphorus, as it could be done only by turning the finger about just as it began to move away from the forehead. Nothing was said by the others to indicate or prove that it might have been done in this manner, and it would not be easy for them to make observations that would prove this. But the nature of the light was such that we cannot suspect phosphorus. If it was produced by small electric lights it could possibly be done without turning about the hand. All that would be necessary would be to withhold turning on the light until the outward motion began.

I then put out my hand in front of Miss Burton's face and asked if lights could not be made to issue from it. The reply was in three raps. Then came a series of lights apparently going all about the hand on different sides of it and even through it, until once my hand was struck by something in connection with which the lights were produced. I would say it was a hand. I was holding the right hand of Miss Burton. It showed, the

hand that struck me, clearly that the localization of the light was a mistaken one in those cases in which it seemed that the light had gone through my hand. There was no illumination of my hand and so my judgment of localization was probably disturbed. I was struck with the appearance of the light going through my hand without any sensation of an object which I had suspected would be her left hand. But the experiment showed, as indicated, that my judgment was probably an illusion.

There was then a rest and I held both hands. Suddenly her right hand moved away from me and brushed away something. I asked if some one wanted to come and the answer was in three raps. Asked if it was a friend of mine, no reply was made.

Then came a series of double lights spontaneously produced. They were certainly remarkable in their appearance. The first instance of it, after a few single lights appeared, was one in which there was a stationary light on Miss Burton's shoulder or breast and a moving one which at first seemed to issue from the same neighborhood and to move down toward the lap some eighteen or twenty inches away and then disappear. The stationary light at first moved slightly, but soon settled down to a perfectly fixed position. I at once recognized that this might have been effected in a very simple artificial manner and before I could request that the two lights move an instance of it occurred and then a number of cases followed, perhaps a dozen or more. The two lights were often separated as much as eighteen inches and moved both of them in various directions. There was no regular or mechanical system in their movements. Sometimes they would approach each other after taking curved directions and sometimes move away from each other within the limits of their distance from each other. The movements and directions seemed quite capricious. Once I saw three lights simultaneously in motion, the distance between two of them being at first about a foot, as I could estimate it and between the other two about eight inches, but the latter two quickly approached each other and one passed the other so that, before they disappeared, they were again as much as six inches apart. The lights on this occasion were not as distinct as before. They were of the same quality, but not as large. Dr. Hamilton did not see the three. I remarked the occurrence at the time, but he did not see the three.

At times I also noticed three lights in motion, but two of them were such that they seemed to be one or two inches apart—varying thus—and moved with each other in the same directions keeping their distance from each other. The other varied in its distance and movements. At times also in the single lights I was able to notice that there were four within say half an inch of each other, like fixed points.

Dr. Hamilton asked that a light touch his hand. He was seated beyond the reach of Miss Burton's hand. The light went out some distance, but failed to reach his hand.\* I held out my hand in front of Miss Burton and asked that the light be made to issue from it. In a few moments Miss Burton or some hand began to stroke my hand outward and I seemed to feel a cold touch, as if a cold sweat accompanied it. In a moment a hand took mine and raised it up and waved it about in the air, as if feeling for something, and when whistling soon began, I took it as a hint to move my hand about, which I did and could not feel the trumpet in the air. But when it fell it was so far to my left that it might well have been handled in the air out of my reach.

There was then a rest when I held Miss Burton's head on my shoulder and my left hand on her forehead. Soon singing began and I could not detect the slightest motion of her head. My head also rested against hers so that my left ear was within three inches of her throat and yet I did not detect any sound issuing from it, tho I could always detect a groan issuing from it when I heard the groan. This same condition was repeated for whistling and the same effect observed. The whistling seemed, as usual to be located as far as four feet away. The singing did not. The singing seemed indistinct and to be at no time more than a foot or two feet away, and usually near the face, perhaps within six inches, but at no time in the throat.

During the evening several times I was holding both hands

---

\* On the point involved in this part of the incident my mind was not clear and I had to ask Dr. Hamilton afterward about the facts. He reports that he stretched out his hand in front of him and asked that "Dan" touch it with the light. A hand or something touched his hand, but no light touched it, the light seeming to be off from it. He then said: "Dan, touch my hand," and at once the hand of Miss Burton, at least so considered confidently by Dr Hamilton, took hold of his.



when raps occurred in reply to questions. I held the hands on her breast and so that they were not in contact with anything but her dress, with palms toward each other. The raps could not have been produced by the hands, however we may think them caused.

We had been insisting for some time that the sitting should cease, but the trance personalities would not stop, insisting that they had something more to do. Finally while I was holding the right hand, which I did all evening after I took my seat beside her, the right hand stretched out as if wanting to write. I had the pad and pencil ready. The following was written and given to Dr. Hamilton to take out into the kitchen where he could turn up the light.

"We wanted to give you a light with you holding both of her hands, but we cannot do it to-night. Dan."

After a pause the hand signified a desire to write again. I picked up the pencil which had been thrown down as soon as the first writing had been finished and put it in the hand. I noticed that it was held in Miss Burton's usual way, between the finger and thumb, as I had been careful to observe the first time, and the following was written.

"We will need help to bring her out: for she is very much exusted [exhausted] and we cannot do it at once. There are so many here" \* \* \* \* [the first word is possibly "but" or "that" and the second is wholly uncertain or indecipherable].

When she came to consciousness she seemed to have a severe headache but I soon relieved it by stroking her forehead and holding the back of her head, as she complained that it was in the region of the medulla oblongata. The automatic writing was much less distinct than usual, showing a more scrawly style and so corresponding to the claim of exhaustion. One incident I neglected to put in its place. Once the smaller tambourine was placed in my hand while the larger one was apparently playing in the air. I was holding the right hand of Miss Burton at the time and the tambourine was placed on top of mine holding hers. I was not able, owing to the unprepared situation for a specific observation, to be sure that the other tambourine was in the air. Miss Burton could most probably have been holding both tambourines in her left hand and simply dropped one of them on my

hand while she continued to play the other and as my localization of sound might not be accurate I would have an illusion as to the exact situation.

February 22d, 1909.

Dr. Smyth was not present this evening. Only Dr. Hamilton accompanied me. Miss Burton seemed to have a headache and some disturbed condition of the stomach, which it was feared might interfere with the sitting. I resolved not to try test conditions of too severe a kind. The consequence was that there was nothing of special note to record beyond what has already been said of the singing and whistling. There was not so much of these as on previous occasions, nor were those as good as formerly. While there were several songs sung there were evidently but two voices concerned. That is to say, the variations and differences were compatible with the idea that only two persons were impersonated and possibly the different voices were only the same person impersonating. I noticed two or three times while the singing was going on that a note now and then seemed to issue from her throat, but usually the sounds appeared to be about eighteen inches or two feet away. These have been the only times when I thought I could detect sound of singing in the throat. Groans were very frequent this evening. Miss Burton also frequently showed the effects of fatigue that resulted in her throwing her head on the table.

There are only a few things of interest to record of this sitting. They pertain to the nature of Miss Burton's condition and the apparent subliminal honesty of her actions, with situations that would suggest the opposite. But those which suggest the opposite are quite consistent in fact with subliminal honesty, if we assume that her physiological and psychological conditions are so delicately poised that they give rise to hyperæsthesia and various disturbances suggesting trickery. Whatever they are worth the facts should be noted.

As we have reasons to believe that Miss Burton's left hand is closely associated with the phenomena observed and unobserved I thought I might contrive a means of making observations that might settle matters more quickly than by long experiment. I therefore purchased an electric bull's eye lamp with

a long protective sheath for the purpose of using it at opportune moments for detecting certain suspected actions. But her sensitiveness to light made it impossible to try this until I had become *persona grata* to the subliminal of Miss Burton. I had been told and soon observed myself that Miss Burton showed abnormal, or even supernormal sensitiveness to light, and so would not venture on experiments that disturbed the sittings. But I finally resolved to test this sensitiveness under conditions that might assure me that it was genuine. I therefore called Mrs. Milton on the 'phone yesterday and obtained her permission to try the bull's eye lamp and she granted it. I had provided it with an extra tube sheath which would prevent the light from illuminating the room and which enabled only a round spot of it to be seen on any point under which the light would fall. The tube had an aperture about the size of a silver dollar and the light thrown on an object or the wall appeared larger according to the distance and was correspondingly diminished in intensity with this distance. There was some reflection but not much. The instrument did not allow any large distribution of the light to affect the room and in fact the light could affect only a small area of the darkness. I explained to Mrs. Milton that my desire was to test her sensitiveness to light and possible clairvoyance, and on arrival showed her the lamp and how it worked. We sat down to the experiment and Miss Burton had not seen the lamp. I had concealed it and the tube in my pockets under my coat, and when the electric lights in the room were turned off I took the lamp from my pockets and arranged it for work.

I waited some time after Miss Burton had gotten into the trance and had done some whistling and singing. Without any one knowing what I was doing I took the bull's eye lamp in my hand and held the end of the tube so that it was behind her head and the lamp perhaps a foot or eighteen inches away from it and threw the light upon the wall behind her head. It created a spot of light about two inches in diameter on the wall and a little reflection but not enough for me to see any object or person in the room. I could see a little light thrown from the wall on Miss Burton's hair, but that was all. Miss Burton instantly fell over on the table and I had to revive her. She trembled and groaned for some time before she recovered her balance.

I then resolved to wait some time before trying it again. Three quarters of an hour later I thought I would see if she could detect the turning on of this light while I shut out its shining into the room. To effect this I placed the mouth of the tube on the floor with a view to excluding the light from shining in the room and also at a place that would prevent any seeing it through the table, if I failed wholly to exclude it, and then turned on the light. I held it so for perhaps a full minute, but nothing happened to her. She did not fall over this time. Dr. Hamilton afterward said that he saw the light on the floor, so that I had not wholly excluded it. But for Miss Burton to have seen would have been to see through the table.

I waited a few minutes and then turning the lamp toward the corner of the room at my right so that my body would intervene between Miss Burton and the spot on which the light would fall ten or more feet from Miss Burton and at least eight feet from me, put on the light. Instantly Miss Burton fell over on the table and I had to revive her as before. There was again much groaning and some trembling and I did not repeat the experiment. Mrs. Milton had not seen the light on either of these occasions. In the first of the three experiments, when the light was thrown behind Miss Burton's head Mrs. Milton had seen it, but on neither of the other two had she seen it. When it was on the floor she could not see it, as the table intervened between her and the light. On the other occasion I had expected her to see it. But she stated afterward that she had not known I had tried the experiment and saw no light. Dr. Hamilton seems not to have seen it. It is certain that the reflection must have been very slight or Mrs. Milton and Dr. Hamilton would have seen it. As my body intervened between the light and Miss Burton she was less able to see it, so that her sensitiveness to light is well indicated by the result.

As we feared Miss Burton would hurt her head by falling forward on the table we told "Dan" about the danger and asked him to be careful. I, however, said to him to let her head fall on my shoulder and I would look after her. The next time that she needed rest after being fatigued from whistling or singing she voluntarily threw her head on my shoulder and rested it there. Once or twice at other times she fell forward on the table,

but she more frequently threw her head on my shoulder. After one of her songs she threw her head on my shoulder and soon raised it. I kept my hand, left hand, on her left shoulder to watch for muscular action in the left arm when anything occurred. In a few moments I felt her hand on the trumpet and at once they moved away and the trumpet fell. I retained my hand in its situation and after some minutes her left hand came up and touched mine. I reached my fingers forward and put them into her fingers and felt something there that I thought might be used for producing some of the phenomena, say lights or other incidents. I tried to take it, but she withdrew her hand and placed it on her breast. I took my right hand and placed it on her left and soon found her fumbling at something. I soon got hold of it and she let go. I found it was her breast pin and dropped it. In a few moments she suddenly raised her right hand and I found both hands working at this pin and in a few moments again it was thrown on the table in some sort of disgust. Mrs. Milton asked if anything was the matter with the medium and raps answered "Yes." I waited a few moments and asked if it was connected with me and the reply in raps again was "Yes." I then explained the situation to Mrs. Milton and Dr. Hamilton. There was evident resentment, if I may so call it, at my having touched the breastpin, of which Miss Burton I understand, is very fond. It was, of course, all subliminal.

We had several times advised "Dan" to bring her out, as we thought she was not in a condition to do good work and wanted to reserve her powers for the next evening. There was no disposition to accede to our request and so after an occasion in which Miss Burton had thrown her head on my shoulder to rest, when I had to hold it with my left hand, I retained my left hand on her left shoulder with the design of rather enforcing their bringing her out by making her phenomena difficult or impossible. Soon there were evidences of her resenting this. Her head shook "No" or dissent several times and her shoulder and arm would shrug as if trying to throw off my hand. I held it in its place while several pieces of music were played, and no phenomena took place. In the meantime we were urging that she be brought out of the trance. But there was a persistent desire to do something. Finally after many efforts to get my

hand away Black Cloud, who seemed to be in control, said "Me want go," and we thought he said "Me won't go," until he made it clear that he said "Me want go." Then thinking that I might be preventing his going I removed both hands from Miss Burton, the left from her left shoulder and my right from her right hand, and waited. Soon we saw lights. The same phenomena as on other occasions occurred save that there was a number of vaporous cloudy lights in her lap, some quite dim and some brighter, but all vaporous. There were some double lights which might have been produced on two fingers, the distance varying between a half inch and three inches. But nothing more important occurred.

Finally it was signified that they wanted to give me lights while I held both hands. This was done by raps in reply to Mrs. Milton's queries and by putting the left hand over to me. I at once took hold of the two hands which were folded on her breast. There were numerous efforts to extricate them, and as I always let the hands go it was but a moment till they were returned to their position and I held them again. I then began to hold them a little more tightly and several times prevented the effort to extricate them from succeeding. But once or twice there was a violent effort and for a moment the two hands were free. Then Miss Burton spontaneously put her two hands over nearer me and finally on my breast folding and clasping them very tightly, as if trying herself to prevent their getting free. We made long trials to get lights but did not succeed. Once or twice I had a vague impression of seeing a vapory cloud near or on her hand, but this was probably a subjective effect of my own retina due to watching for them. But no lights occurred such as had been seen before and after further trial Black Cloud said "Me go," and we began to bring Miss Burton out of the trance.

I held her forehead with my right and the back of her head with my left, my plan being to prevent the recurrence of her headache and to see if I could prevent her trembling as usual. It was a long time before she recovered consciousness and during it Mrs. Milton showed some impatience at the delay and wanted to take Miss Burton's hands and rose to do so. On touching her hands, Miss Burton showed resentment and jerked her hands away. I let go thinking that two of us should not hold her hands

at once and in a few moments she threw her head on my shoulder and put her hands to me. Mrs. Milton retired and I again resumed my position as above described and she finally came out of the trance without trembling and with a diminished headache.

As soon as she had recovered consciousness and felt no more of the trance conditions I signified my desire to perform an experiment. The plan was to turn off the lights and to have her close her eyes, while I threw the light from my bull's eye lamp on the wall as before and see whether she would be sensitive to any light. We turned the lights out and I asked Miss Burton to close her eyes. I then threw the bull's eye light on the wall immediately behind her and asked her if she saw anything. She said that she did not. I repeated the experiment a number of times and she said she saw nothing. Dr. Hamilton then asked her to say whether she noticed any change when I did certain things, without saying what I did. I repeated the experiment a number of times and she said she remarked no changed conditions. I then threw the light in the same corner of the room as during the trance and nothing was observed, but Miss Burton fell over on the table as in a trance, and I had to revive her. When this was done I showed her what I had been doing and while her eyes were open she began again to go into the trance, and we ceased.

One incident I have not recorded. Before we began Mrs. Milton remarked that the spirits could ring the bells or cymbals on the tambourine without making any noise with the cymbals on it. This seemed to me impossible at the time. During the séance the tambourine was played and I noticed at times that I could hear only the bells and not the cymbals, and then in a few moments the cymbals would be heard louder than the bells. But at no time were the cymbals sounded while the bells were silent. At last it occurred to me that perhaps the bells could be rung, while the cymbals were kept silent, by shaking the tambourine in a certain way and then altering its motion to shake the cymbals. I asked to put my finger on the tambourine while it was shaking and was permitted. I noticed that the shaking was light when the bells only rang and that it was shaken in a different manner when the cymbals were rung. I said nothing at the time. I had noticed that it was shaken as I had



imagined when the bells alone rang, namely, more or less lightly and in a line representing a median line with its diameter, or coinciding with it. Then it was revolved on a polar line vertical with this when the cymbals were rung. I had supposed that it was shaken up and down on this polar line. But my theory was confirmed. After this was done and the tambourine continued to produce these phenomena I asked the others if they noticed what had taken place, just after the tambourine had been laid down on my hand holding Miss Burton's right hand, and instantly it was picked up again and the same phenomena produced for some minutes. The bells were rung alone and then the cymbals with them. Miss Burton was evidently ignorant of what I had discovered.

February 23d, 1909.

Dr. Smyth and myself were the only persons present this evening with Mrs. Milton. Miss Burton had complained of a headache during the day and Mrs. Milton stated that she had treated her for it until she was much better when we arrived. She said she was all right, but there is some reason to believe that she was not completely over her bilious attack and that her head still troubled her. The only alternative supposition to this is that her whole illness was simulated as an excuse for failure if the conditions made success impossible. I have not discovered any signs of dissimulation at any time. But the alleged conditions induced me not to press test conditions as I had desired to do, tho I often had them during the evening.

As soon as the lights were turned off Miss Burton remarked that she saw a large light in front of her, as large as a face, but round. It seemed to be located just in front of Dr. Smyth who sat on the opposite side of the table. Miss Burton seemed surprised that the rest of us did not see it. It remained some minutes, perhaps three or four, and then before disappearing moved to the left some distance. Whether it disappeared to her vision or her oncoming trance prevented seeing it could not be determined.

The phenomena began with whistling which was not good at first, but became most excellent at times. For the first two instances of it I was not holding her right hand. But for all

later phenomena I was holding it. I need not remark upon its localization, as there was nothing new to be noted on this point. As on other occasions I gave myself up to studying the possibility of illusion in localization of the sound, and one of the most interesting phenomena was the variability of localization for the musical sounds issuing from the horn of the phonograph. I had remarked this before, but now that I felt free from watching the whistling I gave some attention to this and noticed that certain notes of the sound appeared to be at one place and others notes at another. The cause of the variation was not clearly determinable. But it may have been the different echoes from different parts of the room, tho one would wonder why this would effect one note more than another. The apparent difference of localization was correlated with the loudness of the note, tho issuing all of them from the same place. During the evening I was able to study some echoes which were wholly different from these variable localizations. They were very light sounds which I could even localize off at some distance at my right and ever at my left toward Mrs. Milton who was at the left of the phonograph. The localization seemed to be determined by some peculiar geometrical relations of the room or objects in it. The corners perhaps affected it. Whatever the cause I was able to tell fairly well the directions of the echoes. Hence the variations of the localization for the original sounds seems to have been determined by the volume or intensity of the notes. The fact has a bearing on the localization of the notes in the whistling. One marked difference, however, between the localization of the whistling by Miss Burton and the whistling notes in the phonograph, when the whistling tune was played, was the fact that certain notes in the phonograph always remained in the same apparent place, while Miss Burton's whistling varied. Only the general question of illusion is to be considered in their comparison. The variation of the notes in the phonograph was not so marked with other tunes and so was far more marked in the whistling tune. Miss Burton would whistle with any tune.

The first piece of singing was not clear. The sounds showed no articulation and were not located far from Miss Burton's mouth, not more than the length of the trumpet which was evidently used, as indicated by its falling at the end of the piece.

In the second piece of singing the same phenomenon was observed at first and then the trumpet fell, but only to be picked up at once and singing began in a very clear voice of a different quality, articulating the words.

There was then a pause and I felt the pulse, holding the hand until singing began again, when I felt the pulse carefully and could discover no appreciable change in it.

I then placed my left hand on the back of the chair at Miss Burton's left shoulder and allowed my fingers to touch her dress and keeping my position so as to allow my fingers to move forward or recede as might be required by any movements she would make. My object was to see if I could discover any movements in her left arm. After some slight movements by her body backward and forward she fell forward on her face and I removed my arm.

After this some excellent whistling took place and I was able to let my forehead rest against her head so as to detect slight trembling of her head accompanying the whistling. It seemed to be such movements as an expert singer or whistler makes when performing to help give effect to the music. I am not certain that these were the movements, but apparently there was some sort of sympathetic action going on.

The next incident was some singing and I seemed to detect it in her throat for the first time and watched it carefully. I could at the same time hear a voice alternatively at a distance, and so thought that I was hearing occasional notes at her throat and others located at a distance by the trumpet. It soon ceased, however, and there was a rest. The experiment was repeated spontaneously, without any remark of mine as to what I had heard, and I again noticed distinctly singing at her throat while a voice seemed located perhaps eighteen inches away. I did not dare to touch her head and throat, but thrust my head forward as far as I dared and could clearly detect a voice in her throat and I watched it closely for its relation to the one that seemed to be located farther away. To my astonishment I thought I discovered notes different in quality from those I heard farther away, and this soon became perfectly clear. I had assumed them to be the same at first, but very quickly I discovered that two parts of music were being carried along. Often they became

the same, that is the same notes, for a few times and then they would become different, as distinctly so as alto and soprano. In fact, they were at times alto and soprano notes simultaneously sung. Sometimes they were not in the same time exactly, but so close that it would seem impossible to have made them successively. The variation in time on these occasions was exactly like the difference in time which was often noticeable when singing and whistling were simultaneous. I kept perfectly quiet as to what I was observing, not wanting to betray it to any one and to watch it as long as I could. It lasted for two minutes I would think, and to prevent illusion as to localization I moved my head slightly from side to side to get the effect of different auditory impressions and discovered no illusion as to either the locus of the notes in the throat or the difference of the voices. Had I not discovered different notes simultaneously I would have thought that I was getting simply the sounds of the music first from her throat and then from the end of the trumpet, but when I first noticed different notes I bent all my energies to ascertain whether it was an illusion, and I could discover none. In fact, so far as my impressions were concerned I was never clearer as to the real or apparent nature and locus of the notes. One voice articulated the sounds and the other did not. As soon as the singing ceased Miss Burton fell forward on the table, as if exhausted. She had done this but once before this evening. After a rest she raised her head and placed it on my shoulder when I asked the others if they heard two voices, and both remarked that they had not. The voice in the throat was so indistinct that it was, of course not possible to hear it amidst the louder voice at the end of the trumpet unless situated as I was. When I say "indistinct" I mean to any one having to listen at a distance at the end of the trumpet and the notes of the phonograph. They were distinct enough to me with my ear as close as three or four inches to her throat. While holding Miss Burton's head in this position and speaking of the two voices the right hand stretched out and I interpreted it as desiring to write. I placed pad and pencil for this and the following was written. Dr. Smyth sprang up to take it into the kitchen to read it, but the hand, left hand so far as I could discover, reached over and pushed me as if to indicate that I was to go and

read it. I did so, having thought that this act freed me from the necessity of keeping care of her. The contents of the automatic writing were as follows: "There were two voices, but one was very low and so near you the rest could not hear it. Hod...."

No special value can be attached to this automatic writing, as its contents were possibly suggested by my statements regarding the two voices. The signature of Hodgson's name was interrupted by the pencil running off the sheet, and it can be treated as a subliminal product, with whatever inferences others may see fit to indulge regarding the entire performance. Certainly, as I was the only observer of the two voices my impressions are exposed to the suspicion of being illusions, and I have no way to remove that hypothesis. I would not resent it in the least, and I would not myself assume any other as possible, were it not that I tried it at the time, knowing my liability to this suspicion. If there was no illusion as to the locus of the sound it would be difficult to insist that there was an illusion as to the difference between the notes in the throat and those at the end of the trumpet. The most interesting circumstance is the fact that this, with the previous instance, was the first time that I was ever able to distinctly locate the sound of a voice in the throat. I had thought several times, as the report above indicates occasionally, that a note or two could be located in the throat but when I tried to assure myself of it I was always defeated. But on this occasion I had the chance to watch the procedure clearly for the whole performance and there was no more illusion about it than there had been all along about the locus of the slight groans. All the while I was holding the right hand in mine. I noticed no groans this time.

After this, while resting, the necklace was again taken from her neck and thrown on the table. I was holding the right hand in mine. I remarked in reply to Mrs. Milton's question if the necklace had been taken off, that it had been done with one hand. At once a rap for "No" came and Mrs. Milton asked if "Dan" had done it and three raps for "Yes" came.

After a considerable delay the trumpet was passed over Miss Burton's arms, neck, and breast to "magnetize" them, and she voluntarily placed her two hands in mine to give some test. I

imagined it was for the lights to be produced under these conditions, as promised two nights previously. A long and strained effort took place, the hands often being jerked from mine for a moment, and then replaced at once and clasped very tightly, as if herself trying to prevent this spasmodic act of releasing them. Nothing occurred. Finally, in a rather disappointed tone, I heard Miss Burton's voice say: "Don't you see" and something undecipherable, and I asked that it be repeated. After some delay I heard her say: "Don't you see and understand. I was trying so hard to show you lights." Then the hand signified the desire to write and I again placed pad and pencil. The following was written:—"The lights, the lights! don't you see them. We were trying to show you and we thought you could see them then [?]. Dan."

Again there was a delay, apparently for repeating the effort, and while holding only one hand, I saw a vapory light in Miss Burton's lap and remarked the same. It was after seeing a few lights, however, of a clear sort in the air. I was waiting to see what would occur before applying the test by holding both hands, when I several times saw two and three lights in Miss Burton's lap, once four lights, but not far apart. Most of them were vapory. I noticed also a strong smell of phosphorus, and Dr. Smyth remarked the same. This ceased for a moment and the right hand which I was holding stretched out toward Dr. Smyth and soon afterwards I saw a light near him, but beyond the reach of her hand, as I was holding its fingers at the end. The light seemed in the indirect field of my vision—for I was not looking in that direction—and appeared to be like all the lights I had previously seen, that is, bright. Presently Miss Burton broke out in the Indian voice "No good! No good!" and then stretched out her hand, with mine holding it, and as it were struck at Dr. Smyth, saying again: "No good!" I remarked that it was the best thing that had been done, not knowing that Dr. Smyth had done it himself with a match. During the appearance of the vaporous lights in her lap Dr. Smyth had reached forward and touched Miss Burton's hand where the light was and she soon remarked: "You must wait." Further efforts did not seem to succeed and the sitting was brought to an end, after some whistling which was perhaps undertaken to develop the conditions

for further experiment. But it was too late, as we should miss the midnight car, and the experiments terminated.

I have perhaps not sufficiently remarked the occurrence of raps while I was holding both hands. I have called attention to it in the above report at times, but I have not remarked it as often as it occurred. They occurred often this evening and at the two previous sittings. This evening I had my right leg resting at times against her right and wanted to put it over both hers to test whether she was rapping with her foot. But I did not get the chance, as we were watching for other phenomena at the time. As it was I detected no movement of the leg next to me and no evidence of disturbance when the raps occurred. But the conditions were not such as to make this negative observation important. The locus of the raps seemed always to be on the top of the table, but this might have been the case when they were produced on the leg of the table. But it was certain that raps occurred when I was holding both hands. What I noticed at the beginning of the séance was that the first raps were near Miss Burton's hand, as if they could not be produced so early without proximity or actual use of her hand. At other times the locus did not seem near her, but at least two or three feet from her. In any case she would seem to be extremely resourceful in producing them, if she does, when the conditions tend to make them more difficult.

I must remark on a peculiarity of the light produced by Dr. Smyth. Had I been looking directly at it I might not have noticed the resemblance to the bright lights. But my impression that it was like the bright lights we had been seeing all along has its interest for the reader who may wish to urge our liability to illusion in such experiments. But the chief interest lies in the fact, that whatever illusion may have occurred as to the character of the light I had none as to its locality. That turned out to be correct and possibly the quality of the light would have had no illusory features had I been looking directly at it.



**SECOND SERIES.**

January 25th, 1910.

The following record is the result of a previous arrangement for further experiment with Miss Burton. The first sitting took place last night. The conditions were the same as in previous ones. Present Dr. Hamilton, Mrs Milton, Miss Burton and myself. We were shut in the dining room with a table, two tambourines, a bell, a trumpet, a writing tablet and the two ropes formerly used for tying experiments.

Before sitting down I observed that Miss Burton was less bashful and diffident than last year and showed more social interest and looked brighter in the eyes. She was evidently in better health and showed evidences of being more alert. During the sitting I noticed that she did not have the bad breath of last year, a fact in favor of better physical health. This will be a circumstance in estimating the nature of the phenomena and their limitations.

I sat at her right as usual, Dr. Hamilton on the opposite side of the table and Mrs. Milton in charge of the phonograph. After some time the table was moved toward the corner of the room where the phonograph was. As we had agreed not to try tests this evening, but to let things take their own course I was not situated so as to ascertain what part she played in it, tho this must be assumed. It is noted as a part of the preliminaries. It was some time before the trance seems to have come on and she seems not to have remained in it long. She awakened several times and complained that she could not remain entranced. Finally some whistling was done and as the controls could not accomplish their object the right hand which had been resting on the table near me reached over and began to make motions of writing on the table. I put a pencil in the hand and it wrote: "She is continually coming out and it is so hard. There is a man here who wants to speak very much if he can to you [?] you will have to be patient." We had been told by the voice earlier that a man was present who wanted to speak and he was said to be a very strong man.

Previous to this I had made no efforts to hold the right hand, only occasionally allowing my left little finger to touch her right hand, and finding it passive on the table. Finally a hand picked up mine and placed it on top of hers, the right, as if to protect it against doing anything. The whistling and singing then proceeded. I am not able from memory to give the order of these nor is it important. I came to make it my whole object to study her subconscious processes for the purpose of ascertaining whether there was reason to believe that the subliminal was purposely or consciously endeavoring to deceive. I gave less attention to the effort to determine whether the phenomena were independent than to the mental processes associated with them.

Some light came into the room from above and below the windows. The night was an exceptionally clear one and this allowed some light to enter as described. Sitting where I was I could see the outline of Dr. Hamilton opposite me and the outline of the chandelier. Dr. Hamilton with his back to the windows felt that it was perfectly dark, and when we later changed chairs I saw that, with my back to the windows, I could discover no light in the room.

In this situation I resolved to see if I could at any time place myself so that I could see the head of Miss Burton between me and the light visible at the window. I did this a number of times to see if I could detect any significant movements of the head while singing and whistling were going on. I discovered no indications of movements connected with the use of the trumpet which was employed in the whistling and singing. The head always seemed to be perfectly stationary. The light was not distinct enough to enable me to see slight movements, but it was distinct enough to see any marked motions of the head and none of these occurred. It was not necessary to make any distinct movements as the use of the trumpet did not involve swinging it about to any extent and the effects could have been accomplished without any but the slightest movements.

The whistling was very good and so was some of the singing, tho none of it seemed so expert as on previous occasions. I tried to discover whether the sounds could be located in the vicinity of Miss Burton's mouth and they often seemed so, but as often at some distance from her. The use of the trumpet would pro-

duce the latter effect. But I had no chance to put my ear near her face and throat. I did not desire to disturb conditions in this experiment. But there was every reason to suppose that the whistling and singing were done with her vocal organs, tho I had no proof of this beyond the inferences from various circumstances which made any other hypothesis preposterous. There was no simultaneous singing and whistling.

I made it my entire task to study the coincidences between the various motor actions of Miss Burton and the phenomena claiming to be supernormal and independent. Incidentally I studied the phenomena themselves, but nothing in the latter suggested anything independent. Dr. Hamilton reported after he had sat where I did at first that he got one occasion on which he discovered Miss Burton's arm stopping the phonograph. She sat very close to it and her left hand could easily reach the necessary key for this. He also noted that her voice, when the singing was once done without the trumpet, was in the vicinity of her mouth. That is he was perfectly confident that she was doing the singing herself. I noticed on this same occasion, when sitting opposite and in Dr. Hamilton's original place that the voice was more fixed, when the trumpet was not used than when it was.

I had no such opportunities to investigate the sympathetic motor action as I had on previous occasions, as it was our purpose not to try tests. But as I soon discovered little or no resentment to my touch I took such opportunities as could be taken without making the conditions suspicious of my purpose. The right hand, which I frequently held and in various ways, did not as often as on former occasions show decided muscular excitement. There was stress and tension often and sometimes convulsive movements and also moving the hand up to the breast. On several occasions I followed up her hand with mine and found that she was holding both her hands together on her breast or at her throat, sometimes fumbling them more or less, but never trying to do anything. Sometimes there would be a quick convulsive movement of both of them in this situation. After a few moments or perhaps a minute or less she would put the right hand in its place on the table and I resumed the position of mine on hers. On not a single occasion when she removed her right hand from my control did she attempt to do anything with it to

simulate fraud or to try any tricks. Its actions were spontaneous and without any apparent purpose and certainly without any effect on the phenomena occurring now and then. Quite a number of times, tho not so often as last winter, I noticed a quick convulsive action in the right hand while holding it in mine and it always preceded some whistling or singing, or the attempt to do something. No attempt on such occasions was made to break my control. The action was simply sympathetic with the action of the left hand, as I had marked it when they were together. But in no case did it reveal the slightest evidence of either conscious or subconscious intention to deceive or play tricks. Only on one occasion did I detect an act that would suggest some sort of deception, tho it would not prove it. I was holding my hand on hers which was rolled up into a fist and projecting upward from the table. A left hand, no doubt Miss Burton's, came and apparently in an accidental manner touched mine and very quickly withdrew, as if discovered in a trick. Two or three times I was struck by the tambourine either on my hand holding hers or on my head. Once I was struck on my head when I was leaning back far to get her head between me and the light, and trying to prevent my breath by holding it from betraying where I was. I was struck in a manner that indicated a knowledge of where my head was. Possibly my movements could be detected by the noise of my clothes as I moved, as she is probably hyperæsthetic in the trance. But whatever the explanation there was very deft action on the part of the tambourine and hand moving it in striking me without producing any shock or missing the exact spot in a way to make the blow harder than would have been nicely done while actually looking at my hand or head.

On one occasion my hand was taken, the right hand, and placed against her throat, as if to serve as a protection against the supposition of fraud. I held it there and there was apparently some attempt to whistle or sing. But it was ineffectual. Perhaps fifteen minutes were consumed in this effort. After I held my hand against the larynx for some time, there being no endeavor in the meanwhile to extricate herself from it, she moved her head as if to get away from the control of her throat. There was no vigorous effort to do this, and tho it was done at inter-

vals some half a dozen times, the head would quiet down with a slight sigh as if told that it must submit to the conditions and would remain passive again for some time. But not a single phenomenon occurred during all this effort. I held my hand very lightly, in fact only my fingers, against the larynx with a view to detecting any movements in it that would occur in connection with singing or whistling. But as nothing occurred nothing was discovered. But it was in connection with the end of this experiment that another incident of some interest occurred and terminated my control of the larynx by a sudden and violent jerk of the head to release it and get at the writing pad, tho it followed a pause of some moments.

This incident was preceded by the most interesting occurrence of the evening and which was not directly connected with the experiment just described. The reader must remember that we had been told soon after the sitting began that the medium was continually coming out because of the presence of a strong man who wanted to speak. I could not suspect any definite person. Finally after some whistling and singing the trumpet was seized and Mrs. Milton was told through it that this man wanted to speak. In a moment I asked if it was a friend of mine. No reply was given to this inquiry and I repeated it when I got an affirmative answer in three raps. I then asked if he had ever communicated with me before and again in the same manner received an affirmative reply. I asked if he had ever communicated here by writing and the prompt answer again was affirmative, and the right hand quickly and excitedly reached for the pad and I seized the pencil laying it on the writing pad. It was excitedly picked up between the thumb and first finger and quickly changed to a position between the first and second fingers, as held by Mrs. Piper, and the hand thrust up to mine, as if to show how the pencil was held and on my saying "Good, that is all right," the pencil was thrown down without writing a word or making a scrawl. I had been able to detect by glimpses of touch what the hand was doing in all this, as mine had been resting on it just before and I allowed it to remain in a position to catch its movements. The action was more excited than any action of the evening and was just as I have found it in the Hodgson control in the experiments with Mrs. Piper, Mrs.

Smead and Mrs. Chenoweth. As soon as the effort was over Miss Burton fell with her head on the table, as if exhausted and needing to recover strength.

After she recovered the normal trance condition there was a considerable pause and after a while there was a sudden ejaculation with the voice, normal voice, I being near enough to note this, which said: "There it is." On my asking what it was no attention was paid to the query. In a few moments the ejaculation was that it was a strong man, and after another pause another "There it is" was uttered. But nothing else occurred for some time until again there was a sudden and excited movement of the hand for the pad and pencil. I this time placed the pencil between the thumb and finger, when it was at once spontaneously placed between the first and second fingers by Miss Burton and the attempt made to write. The hand made a few movements on the paper and ceased. No writing occurred, but after the séance was ended the sheet showed a scrawl and apparently the letters "Ho." The "o" might be another scrawl, but the lines are a definite "o" and may have that interpretation, if only a coincidence. The "H" is clear enough, tho there is no proof that this was the intention. It would have required a complete sentence to prove that this interpretation is necessary, tho no other is possible of the lines written, unless we treat it as casual and as a set of scrawls, which it would not suggest.

When I interrogated the man said to be present, I had suspected the possible meaning of it was a reference to Dr. Hodgson and the nature of the answers confirmed this suspicion, and I proceeded on this assumption to test it by accepting the impulse to write as described above. The manner of holding the pencil and this latter writing of the apparent "Ho" strengthens the hypothesis, tho we may not go beyond chance coincidence to account for it. The least that can be supposed, if it be not casual, is that the medium had read my mind and reproduced the pencil holding of last winter in this dramatical way to influence my mind as to the real or alleged communicator. I did not tell her last winter who had appeared nor did I tell her how the pencil was held or what it meant., I was careful also this time to conceal its meaning and also the fact that the pencil was held in a significant manner.

It was after this episode that the experiment was tried in which I held my fingers against the larynx. When it was apparent that this would be a failure "Black Cloud" came in and while an Indian song was being played on the phonograph he remonstrated against it by the Indian grunting voice, and the music had to be changed. After some trials at something which was not effected the hand reached for the pad and pencil. I put the pencil on the pad and it was picked up and the hand wrote the following: "We must go. We could not \* \* \* [do it?] we [resembles 'in'] \* \* \* ['wanted to sign the'] we will do it yet. Good-night. B. C.

But the séance did not end at once. Apparently the effort to do a certain thing whose character never revealed itself was ended and we turned to other work, tho thinking that it was the intention to close the séance, but this was not the case, as the rap in response to suggestions and inquiries about it indicated.

The trumpet was used to say to Mrs. Milton that Dr. Hamilton and I should change places. We did so, he taking my chair at the right of the medium. I had the opportunity to study the singing and whistling from a new point of view not involving contact with the medium. The sounds could not be definitely located, except that they were always between me and the medium, save once when they were quite apparently at her right and between me and Dr. Hamilton. The latter afterward told me that the trumpet was put over in that direction, as he touched it, and hence the sounds, vocal music, were thrown in that direction. Nothing occurred to suggest anything more than that the medium was doing the whole thing. Once, as remarked above, the singing was done without the trumpet and the variation of locus for the sounds was not what it was when the trumpet was used, as would naturally be the case under the circumstances. During this interval we asked for the exhibition of lights. After some minutes I saw one which I alone remarked and indicated at the time that I could not be sure whether it was subjective or objective. In a short time, however, another appeared which all three of us saw. It was very clear and moved slightly. In a few moments I saw two lights about four inches apart, and one of them soon disappeared while the other twinkled like a star, a fact remarked by all three of us. It did this for perhaps ten or



more seconds. The remarkable thing about this was that it should appear thus to twinkle to three of us in such different positions, assuming that it was made by the ordinary means, namely, a sulphur match and the finger. The light was too bright for this and the twinkling was done without giving any lateral motion to the light. Dr. Hamilton was close to the medium's right, Mrs. Milton to the left and I directly in front of her. If the light were produced by putting phosphorus on the finger I do not see how we could all of us see it in the way we did. Besides it was too bright for this, as I have never been able to duplicate this kind of light with phosphorus. But then it might have been some chemical or electrical device, of a kind which I have not seen and of which I have not even heard a description. But with such an apparatus it might be possible to produce the effects observed.

I saw a field of cloudy light once that resembled that of phosphorus. It was about an inch in width and appeared to be below the leaf of the table. Apparently no one else observed it or could observe it. Once also I observed a very misty light perhaps five or six inches in diameter and apparently conical in shape, and this too was apparently near me. No one else seems to have noticed it and it was simply a flash, wholly unlike phosphorous effects. It was thin and translucent, so to speak, as if an imperfectly formed mass of cloudy or misty light. It may have been the *Eigenlicht* of my own eyes, tho, if so it was the first manifestation of this that I could detect. It followed closely the first exhibition of cloudy light and may have been the flash of the same in another stage of its development after a temporary disappearance.

After this I was asked to resume my place and Dr. Hamilton his, which we did and a few more efforts at experiment ended the séance. Some singing was done, but nothing of importance. One fact of some significance occurred in the remark of Mrs. Milton. While waiting for something to happen, she remarked that she sometimes thought it would be better to try and develop doing it in the light and let Miss Burton do the whistling and singing herself, relying upon the contrast between her normal inability to whistle and sing in this way and the trance performances to instill conviction in the sitter of its supernatural char-

acter. This is a virtual admission that Mrs. Milton is aware of the fact that at least some of the phenomena are actually produced by the organism of Miss Burton, and that the darkness is kept up only to conceal the real nature of the facts and reliance placed on the assumed honesty of the medium and Mrs. Milton to enforce the importance of the phenomena. The evidence, of course, is all for at least a part played by the organism in the results, and no satisfactory evidence that it is in any way supernatural. The one question to be settled is whether the trance personality is consciously deceiving, that is, consciously producing the results and relying upon darkness to conceal the real facts.

Whatever supposition we may make of trance deception in the case in the present experiment it was certainly not clever and as certainly showed very little resourcefulness. No efforts were made with the right hand to do anything when it might have coöperated in the phenomena. The long pauses when nothing occurred; the failures to do anything when I held the larynx, tho it was as easy as before to do it under the circumstances; the contradiction between spontaneously putting my hand on the larynx and the confessed inability to do anything; the spontaneous steps taken in the different performances, as if preparing for something, that was just as easy at one moment as at another on the supposition that it was trance deception; the peculiar muscular action of the right hand coincidentally or forecastingly related to events coming or going on—all these are much more consistent with a trance personality that is automatic and limited in its abilities than with the assumption that it is a clever deceiver. The motor dissociations in the body too are suggestive of a genuine condition, even tho the phenomena are not what they claim to be. The whole dramatic machinery was that of an honest subconsciousness working under insuperable difficulties to produce a reality which never took place except as an expression of the physical organism of the medium and hence never independent. I assume throughout that nothing independently physical occurred, and it was my task to see if the various motor phenomena observed would articulate with the hypothesis of trance fraud, that is, some sort of unconsciously conscious attempt to deceive, if the expression may be tolerated. "Trance

deception" there is, but this phrase must not be taken to indicate that the subliminal is imitating the fraud of a normal consciousness. The external phenomena are the same as this, but the internal phenomena are not as consistent with the idea of moral responsibility as they should be if the description is to be regarded as accurate or complete. There are too many inconsistent incidents and as unnecessary as inconsistent with the things done. The conformity of the automatic reflexes with situations which repeat what I have observed in all other mediumistic experiments involving a change of control or phenomena is a very significant fact in defence of real honesty on the part of the trance. At any rate whether proving it or not, the various facts observed show the most superfluous action on any hypothesis of clever subliminals. Nothing was done at moments when the best opportunities were given for some effect, and failure confessed when something could have easily been done. What it is that causes this system of automatic actions that cohere so rationally with the supposition of real honesty and apparent trickery of a conscious kind cannot yet be determined from the phenomena of this case. But it does resemble other mediumistic phenomena in all but the evidence of the supernormal. Even on the hypothesis of trance dishonesty the efforts are ineffectual where they should be easy on the theory. The one view which is consistent tho not yet completely intelligible is that of a subliminal condition that is automatic in its nature but unusually limited in the expression of its desires.

One thing I neglected to note in the record of this first sitting. It was that early in the coming on of the trance Miss Burton complained that a hand had been placed on her face. I had not yet touched her hand even and much less had I touched her face. It is probable that the phenomenon was the same as actually observed by Drs. Hamilton and Smyth in their experiments while it was light enough to see her hand and face. Cf. p. 255. Miss Burton had touched her own face with her own hand, and being evidently anæsthetic in the hand and æsthetic in the face did not know that her hand had done the act. This was probably the case here.

January 26th, 1910.

In conversation with Dr. Hamilton last night he told me some things which occurred while he was in my place beside Miss Burton and which he had not mentioned the evening previous. They are strongly in favor of the sincerity of the subconscious. He said that it took some time for Miss Burton to get adjusted to his presence and contact. When he first took her hand to hold it she jerked it away, but soon picked up his and placed it on her right and patted it to signify that he was to hold it there. Then she went through a series of experiments with her left touching his hand at first lightly with her finger but jerking it away as if affected by an electric shock until she could stand it. It took some time to get this adjustment and nothing occurred in the way of phenomena until this adjustment was secured.

I should have remarked in my account that twice Miss Burton suddenly sprang to her feet during the sitting. They were both after the attempt on the part of the apparent Hodgson control, as if trying to get away from some influence. When I attempted to follow her she withdrew quickly and began to "treat" herself by rubbing her breast and arm vigorously.

January 26th, 1910.

The second sitting last night had some further developments of interest. It was in respect of its evidence of honesty on the part of the subliminal much the same as the night before, with here and there additional indications of the consistency of that view. It was thought before we went that the sitting could not be held, because Miss Burton seemed to be somewhat indisposed. But we finally agreed to take a short sitting.

Soon after the lights were turned out the table was moved and opened in the usual manner. It sat in the center of the room when we began, and had to be moved over toward the corner where the phonograph was. I seized the opportunity before this movement of it began to place my hand on Miss Burton's, fixing my little finger on the table and against her little finger while I rested my other fingers on top of hers. My object was to see if I could discover any muscular action when the table was opened. I had to assume that she was doing it and that considerable effort would be required for this, as it is a very heavy table. It took

several trials to get the table in its place and opened as desired. In not one of these could I detect the slightest muscular tension or action on the part of the right hand, and yet a normal person in opening an extension table has to use both hands and the muscular pressure and effort is always perfectly apparent. Miss Burton's hand in these cases was perfectly limp and there was not the slightest detectible strain or action on its part, as would be naturally expected. If her left hand did it there was complete dissociation between the two hands and their action.

In regard to her motor actions there is nothing more to be said of them during the experiment, except for special incidents. They were the same as before. There were more frequent convulsions in her right hand preceding the attempt to do something and perhaps more indications of automatic impulses in various stages of the work. But their special significance was not discoverable.

Whistling began very soon after the trance and it was clearer and done with more apparent ease than the evening before. There was then a long effort to do something which did not mature. At times I held both hands, as this was readily permitted. What was intended we did not know, but nothing occurred. Finally the right hand reached for the pad and I placed the pencil in the hand and the following was written:

"If you will let the medium rest just a few [?] minutes until we get control we are going to try to get you a test. We do not know what we can get yet. But we are going to try very hard."

The medium was allowed to rest for some minutes and then when she was ready she spontaneously placed both her hands in mine and waited for results. Some twenty minutes or more elapsed in the effort, we not knowing what was in mind. In the meantime the hands alternately remained quiet in mine or made curious attempts to get free and to maintain their position in mine. This form of statement is made to indicate that the efforts were curiously contradictory, if we are to suppose that the intention was to get free because the efforts were not either serious or determined. They were little more than moving the hands about and seeing they kept together or in mine, once in awhile the struggle being violent enough to get loose, tho the hands were at once put in mine or put together and held so without

my control. Sometimes the effort was very decided to get free and I would not resent it too strongly, but would allow my hand to slip on hers or her arm, so as to keep track of its movements and intentions. It never attempted to do anything in the way of phenomena. To test the intention I often let both hands go and Miss Burton would quiet down and I would immediately find the two hands clasped together in her lap or on her breast, and repeatedly I found evidence that the object was to avoid contact with mine, not to perform anything. There was not a single effort to do anything when her hands were free in so far as I could detect it, and my means for detecting it were fairly good, as I did not allow her hands to be free from mine more than a few seconds usually until I would take them. There was no quick jerk at any time to free them, and I never failed to find them quiet and together, sometimes clasped in each other, after freeing them. Finally after a little rest and on one of the two or three occasions when I allowed the hands to be free from mine for a few moments, they were put voluntarily in mine, hers being clasped, and I held one in each hand, the left in my right and the right in my left. Neither of them was a dummy hand, as was apparent in the behavior of them. In a few moments whistling began, and I was certain that the trumpet was not in her hand, as I had always assumed it was when I did not control it. After whistling for perhaps a minute or more and during which I put my head close to hers, seeing that it was in the proper place and that the sound did not seem to issue from her mouth, the trumpet fell on the table at my right, perhaps eighteen or twenty inches from Miss Burton's head and fully ten inches from her hands which were in mine. I was quite surprised at this because I supposed she was not using the trumpet in any way. Her hands were perfectly still during the performance and I had no reason to suppose that she was holding the trumpet in her teeth. Indeed I do not see how she could whistle as she did if she had so held it. Her head was upright when the whistling went on and her hands in mine were resting on the table. The sound seemed to be located as much as eighteen or twenty inches from where her head was when I placed mine near it, sufficiently near to let her hair rest on my forehead.

There is only one way to explain the phenomenon, if we do

not suppose that Mrs. Milton handled the trumpet, and that is to suppose that Miss Burton had placed the trumpet on her elbow while her hands were free and that she had thrown it off after whistling. But there was not the slightest motion of her hand or arm that I could detect while whistling and none when the trumpet fell. As soon as the trumpet fell her head fell on my hands and arms holding hers, as is always the case after test efforts. The trumpet fell before her head did and I was holding the hand and wrist of the left arm, and not a tremor in them was detectible when the trumpet fell. If this method was employed it was extremely clever in its arrangement and execution. A normal person could hardly do it without betraying some motor action as evidence of it.

During this long period when Miss Burton was alternately trying to prevent the use of her hands and to free them I noticed, until toward the end, that they both became quite moist with perspiration. At the latter part of the period this was less noticeable. It was the first time that I have noticed perspiration in this manner.

During this period of holding the hands, and at several other times during the evening, when holding both hands, we got distinct raps on the table. The first rap that I noticed in this situation was spontaneous, the usual raps for stopping the music or rather taking out the piece that was playing. I then resolved to try the experiment of asking questions while I held both hands and got the raps immediately, one for "No" and three for "Yes," as occasion required. I did not say that I was holding both hands until after the raps came, so that the others present, Dr. Hamilton and Mrs. Milton, did not know the conditions under which they were expected. The sound of the raps was as much as two feet away and near where Mrs. Milton was sitting. Part of the time I held both her hands while they rested quietly on the table and I repeated this a number of times for the purpose of studying the possibility of her making the raps with her fingers by rubbing them on the table. But I never detected the slightest tremor in the hand or fingers. I was certain that she did not do it in this manner. Then to further assure myself I held both hands together on her breast and asked questions. The raps occurred as before, without any contact with the table. Her hands, in



fact, were as much as one foot from the table. The raps seemed on the table near Mrs. Milton. Once or twice Dr. Hamilton asked that they be made near him, and they followed this suggestion as far as detectible.

The only ordinary supposition we can make is that the raps were made either by Mrs. Milton or by Miss Burton's foot against the foot of the table. The only thing to throw doubt on this latter hypothesis is the distinctness of the locus of the rap on the top of the table, but if we allow for possible illusion on this point it will have no weight. I do not feel disposed to think that this explanation is so easy as imagined. The promptness of the rap after the question and the distinctness of the locus of it, with the relation of the raps to the nature of the question suggest that some other method was used, whether by one or the other of the two persons, and I have no evidence that either of them would resort to deception, Miss Burton not consciously, for she was in a trance. I tried the experiment many times during the evening and at different junctures of the work, and there was no difference between the responses when I held the hands and when I did not. I suppose the raps occurring while I held both hands were as many as twenty or thirty, and did not always differ either in volume or clearness from those that occurred when the hands were free, tho sometimes the raps were quite weak when I held both hands, and too weak to suppose that they were made with the foot on the leg of the table, unless the dexterity required would make them so.

Soon after the test in which the trumpet fell on the table while I held both hands it tumbled on the floor at Miss Burton's feet, for some reason. While it was there I was holding both of her hands against her breast and in mine, when the trumpet was raised up and leaned against her dress and my leg which was placed against hers. I noticed no motion of her foot or leg to explain it. I then asked if they could put the trumpet on the table while I held the hands. I was holding both hands when the response of two raps came, which meant that they did not know. The answer of three raps was given to the question whether they would try, meaning "Yes," and this under the conditions described. After a long effort to do it and the falling of the trumpet on the floor from resting against my leg and without detect-

ible motion of her leg, the experiment had to be given up as a failure. This was indicated by the hand reaching for the pad. I placed the pencil in her fingers and the following was written.

"I will do it. I must do it \* \* \* \*. We cannot seem to overcome the influence of grandpa, but we will get right very soon. B. C."

Later I learned that this "influence of grandpa" referred to some mental disturbance occasioned by him during the day through some unpleasant domestic incident. This, of course, represented the normal knowledge of Miss Burton. The grandfather was living.

We then sat down to try another test which it was said they would try, tho we had suggested ending the experiment. I was again to hold both hands. What it was could not be conjectured and they said through the trumpet that they did not know just what it would be. Finally after a long and unsuccessful effort the hand reached again for the writing pad and I put the pencil in the fingers. The following was written.

"The conditions must not be this way again. We cannot stand the pressure. It suffocates us and we cannot \* \* so well. Dan."

Tho we then insisted on giving up further experiment the raps signified that they would not do it, and tried to do something else, but the same difficulties arose and the writing was tried again to explain it. The following was the message written.

"Altho she did not realize it she was so impressed [?] by it that we cannot \* \* \* \* when we come and straiten [?]  
\* \* out \* \* anything. Dan."

Further experiment only resulted in Miss Burton's suddenly springing to her feet and forcing her way past me to the other side of the room where I found her muttering something which I could not understand. We pressed the need of terminating the experiment and soon she started to her original place and seized the pencil only to write the name "Glady." We then proceeded to bring her out of the trance, and we were long in getting it effected.

Once or twice during the evening Black Cloud tried to speak, but I could not tell what he said save once when he said that he would do it, meaning that he did not propose to give up what he

wanted done. There was all along a very singular apparent willingness and unwillingness to do anything on the part of Miss Burton. All her actions up to a certain point indicated perfect willingness to have something done and then some climax would be reached when she resented something, whose meaning I could not discover, and apparently this resistance brought out the determination of Black Cloud to carry out his design.

On the whole the evening's work indicated, as before, that there was no evidence of any form of deliberate deception. On the contrary the subconscious seemed sincere and desirous of doing the right thing.

January 27th, 1910.

I went alone to the experiment last night, neither of the other parties being able to go, so that only Mrs. Milton and Miss Burton were present with me.

I watched the right hand again when the table was being moved and opened. I had one finger resting between her thumb and the edge of the table in the opening made before we began, but between it and the table in such a way as to allow only a little space between the thumb and the table. The rest of my hand remained on top of hers and over the edge of the little finger and that part of the hand between this finger and the wrist. When the table was moved and further opened I could not detect the slightest muscular strain in her right hand, as we should naturally think I ought to feel, the supposition being that the action for moving and opening it would be what it is in our normal experience and would even unconsciously adjust and distribute itself over the entire physical organism. But no such phenomenon was detectible.

As I wished to repeat the experiment of raps while I held both hands to do it under better conditions than the previous evening I suggested that I tie a pillow to the foot of the table to which Miss Burton had access and thus prevent the use of it under conditions that would at least alter the timbre of the sound if done, and in fact prevent her from touching the foot of the table. Such a pillow was obtained on request and I took one of the long ropes used for the experiments of tying and fastened the pillow on the foot so that it could not be touched with her

foot. All this was done before we sat down and turned out the lights. During the experiments I took care to see that this pillow remained in its position and I found it there during all of them and at the end of the séance tied exactly as I had done it before we began.

The first thing done was some whistling which was clearer and better defined than on the two previous occasions. There was nothing else to be remarked about it, as there was no evidence of its independence. The trumpet was picked up and dropped as usual in connection with it. The location of the sound was at a distance and I detected nothing unusual in the action of the right hand which I controlled. I thrust my head up to hers as closely as I could, touching her hair, but not her face, with mine and could not locate the sound in her throat or discover motor evidence that it was being done in the ordinary or any other way.

The next experiment was singing. This was plainly done through the trumpet and I could variously locate the sound at a distance and in the vicinity of the throat, applying the means described above to determine this. The notes, of course, were the same as those in the tune of the phonograph.

The next experiment, all of them being spontaneous, was simultaneous whistling and singing. The whistling began first and the singing a little later. I was holding the right hand as before and I could put my head close to Miss Burton. The whistling was excellent, well defined and expert. The singing was not expert and contained the same notes as the whistling and the phonograph. But it had the interesting features of being perfectly synchronous with the notes of the whistling and very sharply defined in the notes. Words could not be detected and in fact there seemed not to be words in it. But the sounds seemed to issue from the throat or head of Miss Burton while the notes of the whistling seemed to be as far off as four feet. The notes of the singing were not blurred with those of the whistling but were well defined and sharply distinguished from the whistling. In such efforts as I have made to whistle and sing simultaneously I can neither whistle nor sing properly, tho I can make whistling and half grunting notes but no music in the singing. I have to do it by using the larynx to make a noise

and to move the tongue and muscles of the mouth so as to vary the sounds. If I whistle a tune I cannot produce a sound at all with the throat, unless I suspend a note or more of the whistling, and I cannot then sing without making such intervals between the notes sung and whistled that there is no simultaneity in them. With Miss Burton whistling and singing were perfectly simultaneous and no blurring in the notes.

The next experiment was a remarkably interesting one. The choice of the time for it was spontaneous on the part of Miss Burton. The first indication of it was the putting of her two hands together and thrusting them over to me. I had previously heard a few raps while I had been holding both hands, as we were waiting for anything that might happen. But at this time I was allowing Miss Burton her entire freedom and waiting for her initiation in the rapping. At once after placing her two hands together in mine she moved her chair slightly so as to turn her face and body toward me and brought her feet over to mine. I at once placed my leg around both of hers so as to hold them away from the pillow and the leg of the table. I took one hand and felt to see that I had both of her legs confined properly and I found them so and held securely against the foot of the chair with as much as eighteen inches intervening between them and the foot of the table protected by the pillow. No other foot of the table was accessible, as I protected the one at my right.

In this situation we waited perhaps some fifteen minutes before anything occurred. There was no effort to release her feet. They remained perfectly passive and stationary. But her hand showed frequent tendencies to get free, tho always inhibited spontaneously by herself. I made no violent efforts to restrain them, tho I kept them securely in my own and all her actions were of a person voluntarily trying to protect her motor action against its automatic tendencies. I heard one or two raps in this condition, apparently two or three feet distant but near where Mrs. Milton sat while directing the conduct of the phonograph. One or two of them was the rap for "No." But I was not sure, as they were either indistinct or possibly interpretable as casual noises. But finally the voice uttered "No music," and I said this to Mrs. Milton. Then her hands were released and the trumpet was seized and Mrs. Milton told to stop the music. This was done and I

again took the hands. We sat quietly some minutes when some very clear sharp raps occurred on the table near Mrs. Milton, while I held both feet and hands securely. The raps this time were not like those we had always heard before. They were like the click of a pencil point on the wood. While all previous raps had sounded to me like those produced with the knuckles on wood. This time however they were sharp and wholly unlike the muffled rap of previous occasions. In a moment the raps were repeated farther off to the right on the table, apparently four feet from me and at the left of Mrs. Milton. Then all at once some six or seven raps occurred across the room, apparently on the sideboard, this time a little more muffled in tone. It was a quiet night outside and I reckoned with possibly casual noises outside, but as I had been keenly listening I could detect no evidence of this, while no such noise had been heard during the previous period of quiet. I said nothing, however, until Mrs. Milton spoke up and asked: "What is that?" I said, wait a moment, and asked if those were raps over on the other side of the room. There followed immediately some six or eight irregular raps again apparently on the sideboard and of the same quality as before. They were perfectly distinct to both of us. I spoke in hearty approval of the result and they were repeated again, and a little later more raps occurred on the table. All this while Miss Burton remained with her hands and feet perfectly passive under my control, save for slight muscular convulsions when raps were not occurring. When the phenomena were actually taking place the motor system was at rest. There were frequent groans during the period and at times very distinct muscular convulsions, as if frightened. I noticed during the entire evening that there were more than the usual number of groans and muscular convulsions, but not at any time synchronous with the performances of any special thing, save a few times that slight groans were noticeable with the singing and whistling, tho not with the simultaneous singing and whistling. The trance was apparently deeper this evening than on the two previous occasions especially than on the first.

The next experiment was a spontaneous repetition of the previous one with a modification. We did not know what was going to take place, but only that the conditions of control were

the same. After getting ready for it the trumpet was seized by Miss Burton and Mrs. Milton was told to start the music and to go around to the other side of the table. The preliminaries to all this were the music and waiting for some minutes, as if preparing for the test. As soon as directed Mrs. Milton started the phonograph and came around on the other side of the table immediately at my right and within fifteen or twenty inches of me, or perhaps two feet. Her voice and the occasional touch of her arm indicated to me where she was. I was between her and Miss Burton. The part of the table where she had sat near the phonograph was five feet from where she was now. We waited for results, but none occurred that we could detect, tho once I thought I heard one rap. I asked if it was a rap and no reply came. It is possible that it was the rap for "No" and indicating that the music should be stopped. Finally the voice broke out, apparently Miss Burton's and not Black Cloud's, which is always masculine and abrupt, and said "No music." I told Mrs. Milton this and she went around to the machine and after stopping the music returned to her place at my right and we waited for results. It was some minutes before they came. In the meantime there were some convulsive movements in the hands, frequent groans and some twisting of the head, which I sometimes had resting against mine. Finally when all convulsions subsided there came some quick sharp raps as before in front of me and near Mrs. Milton's original position when directing the phonograph. They seemed to be at least two feet or thirty inches from me and wholly beyond the reach of Miss Burton's hands even if they had been free. But I had both hands and feet securely pinioned. After a few raps occurred they seemed to move further off and to the right of the original place and so seemed to be on the other side of the table five feet away or even in the air over the edge. They were the sharp clicks like the previous instances and very distinct. To test them I set up a series of interrogations. I first asked if any of my friends were present. There was a pause and no reply until I repeated my question when three distinct raps came. I then asked if my friend was present who had communicated the first evening and three raps came again. I then asked if my father was present and received three raps in reply. On asking if any other members of the family were



present I received several raps in quick succession. Asked if my mother was present no reply came. I then ceased inquiry as I did not wish to suggest any specific person from whom I actually wished to hear and whom I had in mind. But I noticed in the raps a curious appearance of eagerness which was not noticeable in the others, a manner which was like being pleased or representing recognition of the correct judgment that I had of the situation. All this may have been the result of my imagination, but I was not peculiarly interested in the facts and not at all excited about them. I was actually surprised to find this apparent characteristic in the raps, as it had never been manifested so distinctly to my observation in these experiments.

In both cases of these independent raps, at their close, Miss Burton fell over with her head on my arm which rested on the table. This was due to apparent exhaustion. After a few moments of rest or perhaps what is better, of altered conditions to change control, she raised her head and we were ready for further experiment. She required some time, however, for recuperation.

The interesting aspects of both of these experiments are the evidences of intelligent purpose and adjustment. I had not made a single suggestion as to mode of procedure and every step of it was made and directed by the spontaneous action of Miss Burton. After the first experiment in which the raps appeared on the dresser fully ten feet away I wished that I could have raps without the presence of Mrs. Milton at that side of the table at which she always sits. I said nothing about it and when the second experiment was undertaken the first hint of this intention was in the request of Miss Burton that Mrs. Milton set the phonograph going and come around to the other end of the table. Mrs. Milton did not suspect what this meant. Success did not immediately follow, as the machine ran down and had to be rewound. Mrs. Milton indicated her curiosity as to what it meant and I said I thought I knew, but I did not say what I had in mind, tho saying that I thought I knew. This quieted her curiosity and after the raps I explained what I had thought and that the course of events had been as I desired and suspected. The whole arrangement of hands and feet, directions about the music, whether suggesting the mode of conducting it or stopping it, and the locality of the raps were as pretty indications of tele-

ology as one could desire, and this regardless of the question whether the facts are to be explained by Miss Burton's action or by outside agencies. The arrangements and desire to submit to the tests that were needed and the behavior of the hands during it all were perfectly in harmony with honest intentions on the part of the subliminal and in not a single instance either suggestive of or consistent with the motion of an intention to deceive. When I was not holding the hands, as was the fact occasionally, when nothing was occurring, I found them clasped together on her lap or on her breast, and no effort to do anything with them, as if the only desire was to escape the effect of contact with me. There was no objection to this contact when the raps were actually taking place. The convulsive movements of the hands and apparent attempts to free them occurred when nothing was taking place of a phenomenal sort, and I did not discover a single effort to use them for tricks when they were free.

After a considerable rest another experiment was tried. What the intention was I did not ascertain as the experiment was not successful in accomplishing anything. I held both hands at times, according to the suggestion of Miss Burton herself who placed them in mine. There were frequent convulsions of her hands and body and groans accompanying them. But not a thing occurred to suggest what the attempt was, unless it was to bring some object from a distance. The only hint of this to me was the frequent extension of her hands and arms under my control, as if trying to reach something. I always allowed perfectly free action in this while keeping strict control of them. Frequently they were suddenly jerked back to the normal position and then extended again. Finally it was given up and the hand reached for the writing pad. I gave it the pencil and it wrote:—"We like you to have your own conditions, as we can do it in time, and it puts all minds at rest. Dan."

There followed a rest and then an attempt to do something whose nature was not indicated. But nothing occurred and the hand reached for the pad again. After giving it the pencil it wrote: "We are going to try to give you a test. But it is very hard [hard] for us to try to give you a test and not let it interfere with our conditions. You understand. Dan." I replied that I understood perfectly.

We then returned to the experiment. I held both hands, as suggested by Miss Burton's putting them together and thrusting them over to mine. The usual muscular convulsions and groans occurred for perhaps fifteen minutes, during which Mrs. Milton was sent again around to the right of me, as during the raps. While she was there whistling began. Miss Burton's head resting against mine, and just as this began Mrs. Milton started for the phonograph as it was running down. I called her to stop and she had heard the whistling and stopped. It continued for a few moments and ceased. The machine was started again and Mrs. Milton returned to her place at my right and after the same difficulties had been overcome as before, with much trembling and groaning the whistling began again and continued for perhaps a half minute. It was not loud, but was quite distinct. Both times it seemed to be located at my right about eighteen inches and no trace of it in her throat. But the trumpet was not used apparently, as it was not dropped on the table as usual. I had perfect control of both hands. So far as I could detect nothing occurred which we would not naturally explain by the action of Miss Burton tho the whistling was not as good as it usually was either in volume or intensity. I had no proof as to its character either way.

After this there was another test, tho I had asked if we had better not stop, assuming that Miss Burton had done enough and was tired. The answer by raps was "No." But a trial was made without indicating what it was to be. Mrs. Milton suspected that it was intended to raise the table. But apparently this was not the case, as the hands held in mine extended as before and as if trying to reach some object at a distance. I did not tell Mrs. Milton of this fact. Before beginning the sitting she had told me a story about a plate being taken from its place and put on the table. But whatever the intention was it was wholly abortive, and I suggested that we cease. The hand reached for the pad and after placing the pencil it wrote: "We did not do what we wanted to and we do not want to stop, but it is best for the medium. she is tired. Dan."

We then proceeded to let her come out of the trance. It took some time for this and the usual trembling occurred and as I held her head and stroked her forehead to help she finally re-

sented this and my holding her hands, as suggested by Mrs. Milton as a help, and I let go. After a few minutes she fell forward with a heavy thud on the table, and I had to quickly seize the head. When she recovered consciousness she had a headache.

One or two things occurred during the séance which I have omitted from the above account because I am not sure at what juncture they took place. One of them was some writing not far from the beginning of the séance and probably in connection with the first abortive attempt to give a test. The message was: "The medium is [in] so much better to-night and the test can really [really] make her easier [easier]. when she knows you are going to do something without \* \* she goes [?] under control she is better satisfied. Dan. and [sheet changed] altho it is hard for us we will do it if you only give us time. Dan."

There was evidently some confusion occasioned by the necessity of turning up the light, red light, to read the writing, as it always took some time to establish the proper conditions for further tests. I had to protect Miss Burton's eyes against the influence of the light, tho by the warning beforehand and consent through raps she was protected against the shock that usually occurs in turning up of the light. She showed on each occasion of it this time slight sense of shock. She winced very sensibly at the appearance of the light, but soon recovered her control.

One thing I neglected to notice in the above narrative whose interest and place I noticed at the time. It was a constant observation that a convulsive act of the hand preceded by a short time the occurrence of some phenomenon, as we always notice evidence of this in some form with the changes of personality in automatic writing, if not in the hand then in the character of the writing. Here it was a systematic phenomenon preceding some occurrence like the whistling or singing, and sometimes during it when a change in the event was to take place. On the occasion, however, of the simultaneous whistling and singing I noticed a very distinct convulsion in the hand which I was holding while the whistling was going on and just before, by a few moments, the simultaneous singing occurred. It was the apparent signal of the new phenomenon.

The whole evening was as interesting a psychological study

as could be desired. Not a single incident occurred to suggest unconscious deception, that is, the intention to practice it. Actual events occurred, such as the whistling and singing, and once the movement of the trumpet, which were consistent with such an hypothesis. But the delays and abortive efforts to do various things whose nature was not revealed in any way, and the behavior of the hands of Miss Burton generally were wholly inconsistent with any such supposition.\*

During this sitting I indicated some disturbance from the sound that issued from the large end of the horn and came directly into my ears. After some minutes and while Miss Burton was perfectly passive and quiet as far as I could detect and while I held her right hand, the horn was quietly removed from its position and placed on the table in front of me. No one knew this until it was done and until the altered sound of the music occurred. At first the exclamation of Mrs. Milton, when the sound of the horn on the table was noticed was: "What is that?" The altered music at once indicated what had taken place. I at once reached out in front of me and took hold of the horn to remove it from the table. It seemed easy to lift at first but in a moment became quite heavy, owing to the sudden falling of the heavy end on the table. Why I did not feel this at first I do not know as I had apparently moved it some inches before

---

\*I resolved to test somewhat the localization of sounds experimentally for the purpose of ascertaining to what extent the objection of illusion could be sustained. I therefore had Dr. Hamilton, in his office, close his eyes while I made light raps with a pointer on his desk, and any other object near by. I made them at various points on this desk and on a table at his left almost behind him a little. There was not a single error as to the place from which the sound issued. Whether above or below his face or to the right or left he was infallibly correct in the localization of the sound. Several times out of the dozen or more trials he specified the place of a few of them orally rather than pointing to them, the pointing always being in the right direction and if in any error at all would be occasioned by the mal-adjustment of motor action with the memory field of vision.

I then had him ask for the place of making the raps with eyes closed, my purpose being to make the raps elsewhere to see if expectation would cause an illusion in localizing the sounds. I made some half a dozen or more trials and he was correct in all but one of them, and in this one he was correct in the general direction but not as to the exact place. Expectation seemed to have no influence whatever in localizing the sound.

this weight became sensible. How the removal of it from the phonograph, involving some complicated action with its attachments, could take place without betraying muscular evidence of it in Miss Burton's body and some noise while the music was going on I do not know. But as interesting motor dissociation goes on in the case we have to concede the possibility which we do not detect as a fact.

After this séance was over I resolved to see if I could lift the table, which is said to weigh about 125 pounds, with one hand by placing my hip against it and holding the cross piece on the other side that supports the leaves and top. I tried this a number of times, now with my right and now with my left hand. But I could not even raise any part of it from the floor. I then put both hands on the cross piece and allowed both legs at my hips to rest against and slightly under the cross piece on my side and in this condition I was easily successful, but only with nearly all the strength I had. I repeated the effort to do it with one hand, but totally failed. I do not see how Miss Burton could do it under the conditions which prevailed last year, especially as she was apparently in a sitting posture all the time. Owing to motor dissociation in her phenomena I cannot be sure she was sitting on these occasions, and the observation of others seems to support the fact that she was standing when they succeeded in getting the table lifted. But I had not strength to do it with one hand, and she certainly had but one hand with which to do it on the occasion which I have described.

January 28th, 1910.

The table last night began to move to its place and open before Miss Burton went into the trance and the singing began soon after with less lapse of time than at any previous experiment. There was no muscular indications in Miss Burton's hand for several performances, she seeming to rest in a perfectly passive condition. I had one hand on the chair at her right shoulder with my fingers lightly touching her dress to see if her body moved forward for the singing and whistling and my head at times touching hers near her cheek. There was not the slightest forward movement of the body at any time nor of the right hand

which I held in my right. Nevertheless the singing and whistling seemed far to my right. Occasionally a note of the singing in the first and third trials was seemingly in the throat or its vicinity. The singing was in a sort of baritone and quite clear. The words were occasionally distinct. But no two successive notes seemed to be in the throat. No groans accompanied these efforts. The fluctuation of the locus for the singing generally, for whatever reason, may have caused the failure to be sure that some of the notes were in the throat. I was never perfectly certain that they were there tho I was certain that they did not seem at my right but in front of me, my face being near hers. If the notes had been continuously in that vicinity I might have reached a definite opinion. The notes at my right were not only assuredly there, so far as my sensations were concerned, and whole strains of them with only such fluctuations as involved various angles of direction.

In the second performance it was whistling. This was very clear and seemingly distant to my right, apparently as much as four feet. At no time could I detect the slightest evidence that it was issuing from her throat, tho I often had my face and ear within an inch or two of her throat, and at times I moved my head, both with the singing and whistling, so as to get the effect of adjusting both ears to the situation. But there was no doubt or indistinctness in the feeling of localization. The trumpet was used in all of them.

After these Mrs. Milton asked me if I had ever held my hand in front of the face to see where the mouth of the trumpet was. I said that I had not, and so asked aloud if I could do this. Mrs. Milton simply directed me to place it there which I did. By first touching Miss Burton's face to see where it was I managed to put my hand about four or five inches in front of her face. Soon there was evidence of trouble, as she moved her head. I could detect this by my right [left] hand resting on her shoulder and by the sounds that issued from her throat. It was some time before I suspected that anything was doing in the way of music. In fact nothing but the phonograph was discernible for a long time, and when certain sounds of a musical sort were heard at my right and distributed over the space between the right and where Mrs. Milton was seated in front of me at the machine, I supposed they



were mere echoes of the music of the phonograph. I have often heard a special note which I interpreted as an echo of the note played by the machine, but never a continuous series of sounds, and I never before distinguished as I did this time between the locus of the original sound and that of the apparent echo. On this occasion it was the complete duplication of the music and its wholly different locus that first attracted my attention. But I considered it a mere illusion for some time, when its persistence set me to investigating it very carefully. I moved my head about so as to get the effect of binaural fusion to test my judgment of its locality and it always seemed at my right while I had no apparent illusion as to this and none as to the real locus of the sounds by the phonograph. The notes were the same as those of the machine but more dreamy and more like *Æolian* tenderness, as perhaps echoes would be. Sometimes I thought I could hear a low voice in it, but as the instrument had voice music accompanying I could never distinguish this as clearly as I could the mere fact of duplicating the phonograph music. I watched this for fully five minutes and tried in every way to discover evidence of illusion, but there was no confusion whatever with the phonograph music. The locality of it was distinct, while the individual echoes of previous experience were located where the original sound appeared. "Echoes" is possibly not the term to describe the character of what I had observed in individual sounds before, but it indicates the peculiar character of the sounds and the feeling that they were not exactly the original. They may have been aural illusions caused by the swelling nature of the tone. But whatever they were the appearance in this case was wholly distinct. The musical stream of notes was continuous and definitely located. I tried my utmost to identify its locus with that of the phonograph, but it kept its individuality and place with an infallibility that puzzled me. At no time could I be sure that it was anything but what I have called, namely, echoes, tho nothing of this kind, that is, of such a systematic sort, had ever been noticed by me. At its end, the trumpet not being used evidently, as it did not fall on the table, I asked Mrs. Milton if she heard any independent music. She replied that she had not. I asked the control if any music had occurred at my right and the raps signified "Yes." Of course no value could be attached to

this, but I wanted to try the response. I was not yet sure that my sense of the thing was correct.

We then started to go on with the experiments without suggesting what should come next. I had no suspicion of what was intended. But the trumpet was seized and Mrs. Milton was told orally through it to start the machine and to go to the other side of the table, she having replied to my inquiry about the music that the horn prevented her from hearing anything, as the sounds issued from it in her ear. She now started the machine and came around at my right. Soon Miss Burton placed both her hands in mine and put her head against mine. For some time nothing occurred and the phonograph had to be wound up again and Mrs. Milton returned to her place at my right for a second trial. Soon I noticed this duplication of the phonograph again and it continued as before for five or more minutes. I studied it as carefully and in the same manner. The apparent independence of it was more distinct than previously and the sound of a voice in it more easily discernible. In my sensations there was no illusion whatever as to the facts, whatever illusion there might have been as to the reality of the phenomena. The independent stream of musical sounds was clear and definite and duplicated the character of those in the phonograph. I held the two hands during the whole time. At the end of it Miss Burton fell forward as she always does when a test is tried and seemed exhausted, but soon raised herself up and fell back in catalepsy. After some minutes she recovered from this. Mrs. Milton, on being asked if she heard any music but the phonograph, said she did not. She was at my right, however, and if it was real should have heard it. She could not expect what it was, as no hint of the intention was given and the phenomenon was entirely new. I did not explain how it appeared to me, and hence Mrs. Milton is ignorant of what actually occurred.

There then followed several attempts to do something. What it was I did not know, and no hint of what the attempts were was given, as they were all failures. I held both hands throughout. Mrs. Milton had made the suggestion that we try lights and said soon afterward that she saw one. I saw none, however, and the effort was given up apparently. But there was a considerable effort made to do something with occasional groaning

and struggling of the hands, none of this, however, issuing in any serious tendency to freedom. It was apparently automatic voluntarily inhibited. There was the usual evidence of sincerity in the effort and contentment with failure rather than success under doubtful conditions.

In the next experiment, the character of which was not indicated beforehand, Mrs. Milton was sent to the other side of the table in the same manner as remarked above and took her place near me at my right. There were two or three failures before anything really occurred. When we did get success it was simultaneous whistling and singing while I held both hands and had her head resting against mine. The singing was clearly in the vicinity of the throat, but the whistling was as clearly at a distance and not one indication of it near the throat. The singing did not involve articulation of words, but was clear in enunciation, tho weak in sound. That is the notes were clearly defined in their individuality and distinction from each other, tho the same notes as the whistling. No trumpet was used, if we may judge from the fact that it did not fall on the table at the close of the performance. But it was certain that neither hand was used. The head fell forward when it was over and the body became very limp and the hands fell down at her side. I had to catch her to save the face from striking the table. The jar from the fall knocked the trumpet off the table. At least that was my interpretation of it, as its fall followed rather than preceded the event. If it had preceded it there might have been a suggestion of independent movement of it, tho even this would have been subject to the suspected possibility that it had been within the reach of Miss Burton's elbow, which it was not, so far as I could detect. The probability, however, is that it was the shock to the table from the fall of the head on my arm that caused the trumpet to fall.

There was then a long pause waiting for some other test. No attempt seemed to be made. Miss Burton was perfectly passive. No motor convulsions in hand or body appeared. The pause was perhaps ten or twelve minutes. Mrs. Milton suggested then that perhaps they could tell us what the matter was, and the hand reached for the writing pad. The following was written:

"You must understand we have to do what we can do best, sometimes we can do one thing better than what you might suggest and in that case we do it."

There was then a pause and I expected more writing. But the hand remained inactive. In the meantime some raps occurred signifying that something was wanted. I asked if music was desired and one rap signified "No." I then asked if they wanted me to do anything and the raps, three, signified "Yes." I could not tell what it was but presently my hand was touched apparently by another hand, my left resting on her right and a sheet of paper put into my right. It was so sudden and unexpected that I was unable to tell when or how it was separated from the pad. The paper was pulled up into the air and I kept holding it. It was slightly jerked about and turned over so that the top of the sheet folded over and touched my wrist, trembling as it did so. Once or twice it was apparently touched and shaken by some force which I might infer to have been a hand, her left hand presumably, if the inference be correct.

But the striking phenomenon of the occasion was this. I held the right hand of Miss Burton with the pencil under my left, and the piece of paper in my right and nearly two feet from her left hand and perhaps eighteen inches above the table. It was fully three feet from Miss Burton's left shoulder, her left hand being free. While holding this paper in this position something like her left hand was placed on top of my left holding her right and simultaneously something took hold of the edge of the paper in my right and pulled and shook it with violence enough to make the force very distinct, in fact, as distinct as any one could make it. Mrs. Milton was at the phonograph and I do not recall whether it was playing or not. I simply know that a part of the time during this work it was not. Presently my left hand was picked up and put to the paper apparently to have me hold it in both hands. There was a pause and nothing occurred, except, if I remember rightly, memory being insecure here, some raps. Finally a hand reached and took the paper while my left returned at once to find her left on the table where I held it. The paper was made to keep time in the air with the music that was now going on, but nothing phenomenal was apparent in this. The one thing that was phenomenal was the simultaneous pull-

ing of the paper while I held the right hand and while an apparent left hand was placed on top of mine.

There was then a pause for some time, and presently the hand signified a desire to write. The pencil was inserted but no writing occurred. Finally the hand was moved to mine and various actions occurred till I conjectured from them that it was desired that I hold my hand on the pencil and hand, which I did. I asked if this was what was meant and raps came to signify the affirmative. The raps this time were on my side of the table and apparently six or ten inches from our hands, and tho possibly within reach of her left hand occurred without betraying any evidence of the bodily movements necessary to get the left hand there, as she would have had to move forward and around to do this, and not the slightest sympathetic movement of the right arm took place on which rested my left. Finally the hand began to write while I held mine on it and the pencil. The following was the result.

"Oh, if it were only as easy to come back as we thought it was. But there are so many things we have to overcome. There is so much I want to tell you."

This message had a new ring and was neither in the style of "Dan" nor signed by him, as the reader will see. Mrs. Milton tried to read it, but raps called her and she was told through the trumpet that I was to read it. I did so, tho it took a second trial to make it out with her help. As we had some difficulties and doubts about it, the red light being turned up, I saw the hand start to write. I returned to it, which this time wrote in the light the following:

"There are so many conditions to overcome and there is so much we want to tell you. H."

It was the latter part of the previous message that gave us the difficulty, evidently because the manner of writing it with my hand obstructing the action of her hand and the pencil. As soon as I saw the "H" signed at the end I saw its ambiguous nature. I could not be certain whether it was intended for me or for Hodgson. I at once kept the nature of the letter to myself, being careful not to utter it aloud and asked who had written this. The hand started for the pad and the light was turned out. I placed the pencil on the pad. It was spontaneously picked up,

and I felt the hand twist the pencil about until it inserted it between the first and second fingers and then thrust it upward to my hand and I at once said I knew who it was. The pencil and hand at once dropped and Miss Burton fell forward. I caught her head and prevented it from crashing on the table. Her right hand fell limp at her side and off the table. In a few minutes she recovered the normal muscular tonicity of the body and resumed her position still in the trance.

After a pause for further experiment I suggested stopping for the night and the raps signified agreement. We proceeded at once to bring Miss Burton out of the trance. She had evidently been in a rather deep trance and she was long coming out. But apparently this was as much due to the apparent attempt to get some message through as in the case of Mrs. Piper's recovery of normal consciousness as to the depth of the trance. At one stage of it Mrs. Milton thought she heard the name Aggie and pronounced it so. This was a legitimate interpretation of the sound, tho I did not catch it in spite of being nearer than Mrs. Milton to it. In a few moments I caught sounds again, but they were undecipherable. A few minutes later I heard the name Agnes very clearly and Mrs. Milton got this also. Following it I got what seemed an attempt at the name Mary. I signified my desire to have it repeated and it came three times more until I was sure it was this. Mrs. Milton did not detect it and I did not utter it aloud, tho I said it was right and that I understood it. No further attempts were made and at the proper time Miss Burton came out. The two names I got have been associated in the sittings with Mrs. Chenoweth, tho I have never been able to ascertain who the Agnes was. My wife's name is Mary, as I got it here and we must assume that both Mrs. Milton and Miss Burton have had abundant opportunities to know this. But neither of them know anything about the apparent significance of the name Agnes. I asked Mrs. Milton if the name had any meaning in connection with her or her relatives, and she said it did not.

If Aggie or Agnes be a mistake for Annie it can have the same significance as the Association of Annie, the name of my deceased sister, with my wife's name in my Piper records, and this would put the same interpretation on the names associated in the work

of Mrs. Chenoweth. Cf. *Proceedings Am. S. P. R.*, Vol. IV, pp. 541 and 597.

During the experiments I often had raps while I was holding both hands. I made no tests of this, as I had been satisfied with those of the evening previous. But they very frequently occurred this evening. Once they occurred on my right while I was holding both hands, fully four feet from Mrs. Milton. At times they occurred when Mrs. Milton did not know that I was holding both hands. Once they occurred in response to a question while the whistling was going on and I was holding both hands. This too was at my right.

Early in the evening I had put my arm on the back of the chair and around so that I could touch a fold of her dress on her left shoulder, and seize it in my fingers. I desired to see if her left arm moved when anything was done. Once while holding one of the folds the arm and body moved slightly forward and I had to move my hand forward to accommodate it to the movement. This movement, however, was not more than an inch or thereabouts. The right hand in control of my right did not betray any sympathetic motion. A little later something on the left side of her body reached up and slightly touched my finger. This was repeated a few moments later, no movement of her arm or shoulder being detected, and I took it as a hint to remove my arm which I did.

The incidents which had their suggestion of Dr. Hodgson have their weight in the peculiar mode of indicating it, and to some extent in the contents of the written messages, as they are different in tone from Dan's usual writing, and reflected sentiments more like what I have gotten elsewhere, not so much in the complaint of difficulty as in the reference to what he wanted to tell me. The manner of holding the pencil was, as described in last year's experiments and in one of the earlier sittings of this series. As remarked there, I did not reveal what it was and Miss Burton does not know its pertinence with me or its usage elsewhere as representing Dr. Hodgson. I did not tell Mrs. Milton what it was. When I recognized who was meant I said so aloud and Mrs. Milton asked if she had written the name and I replied that she had not but that I knew what it was. She remained content and I did not even explain that it was a symbol.



Whatever weakness attaches to the entire episode comes from what we must assume of previous knowledge of my connection with Dr. Hodgson. Mrs. Milton knows that I have been connected with Dr. Hodgson and it is very probable that she and Miss Burton have mentioned their hope that I would get messages from him. Evidence of this will be found in some conscious automatic writing of Mrs. Milton in the morning. She reported the same to me after the experiments last night. She told me that she does it by impression and that it might have been all from her own mind. The only confidence that she expressed in it was that she frequently gets what appears to be messages in this manner and that she can detect no indications in her mind that it represents her natural thoughts. She was entirely modest about it last night and said that after it she got the impression that it should have been signed "R. H." She said she did not know what the "R" stood for but got the impression it was Richard, which I told her was correct. I think it probable that she may have seen the name before and that the getting of the name was a subconscious memory. But it was interesting to find it "R. H.," as this is the form in which Dr. Hodgson signs his name in the cases of Mrs. Piper, Mrs. Smead, and Mrs. Chenoweth, rarely giving it whole, tho doing so where it is necessary to be clear. The automatic writing which Mrs. Milton gave me as purporting to come from him was signed "Hodgson."

But all this does not account for the pertinence of holding the pencil as described. We should have to refer this to chance, tho this view is not clearly compatible with the excitement in the hand or with the effect in Miss Burton of falling forward immediately afterward.

The first specimen of Mrs. Milton's automatic writing is as follows, dated Jan. 27th, 1910.

"The same law that governs the universe governs us in the experiments we are trying to make. We of ourselves can do nothing outside of using our powers to make the subject more passive to outside influences. Thought rightly directed is a wonderful aid to the forces who are endeavoring to communicate with you. If you could lay aside doubt and free your mind it would not take us long to clear the *cobwebs* away, and give you

a clearer vision. The world was not made in a day—bear that in mind. Keep your own counsel for awhile and I will prove to you conclusively that we are still with you.

“Hodgson.”

Later another short message came and was signed “H.” It is as follows.

“I can only demonstrate when conditions are harmonious, and they are hard to find. Something usually disturbs my mind. Perhaps it is my own impatience to communicate with you. H.”

In these messages the word “subject” is much more characteristic of Dr. Hodgson than Mrs. Milton, who would have naturally used the word “medium,” as I have always heard her do and never the word “subject,” which is beyond her reading and knowledge of psychology and philosophy, but more natural to a man like Hodgson than to Mrs. Milton. The reference to proof and tacit recognition that he has not succeeded coincides with what has appeared in association with his alleged attempts elsewhere, and perhaps, with the actual fact that he has not satisfied many with his evidence. The allusion to impatience later describes exactly his manner wherever he tries to communicate and it is remarked by sitters and other communicators alike. This sort of impatience was more or less characteristic of Dr. Hodgson in life.

All that Miss Burton did in this séance could have been done in one hour's time at the most, and perhaps in less time, but the séance was nearly three and one-half hours long. The abortive attempts at certain things whose nature was never indicated had no natural excuse, so far as opportunity was concerned. At times I made no effort to control either hand and would wait five or ten minutes for something to occur, holding my left hand on the back of the chair touching her right shoulder only to find her always passive. Whenever I reached for her hand or hands they would be either lying on the table inert or folded on her breast or in her lap. At other times her spontaneous submission of her hands and her head to subjection were not compatible with failure where success had been easy under the same conditions. That is, the imagined methods used to effect success were as possible in these conditions as under those in which failure occurred. The best evidence of apparent honesty, assuming that this is applicable to

the conditions at all, was when Miss Burton placed her two hands spontaneously in mine and raised them to her mouth, leaning her head forward to let the chin rest on my hands and allowing my head to rest against hers. I placed two fingers over her lips so as to seal them. I could notice the pucker for whistling, tho only very slightly, and this may have been an erroneous inference. But I at least imagined this condition, and for some minutes, with some muscular convulsions in hands and head and movements of the body, there was an attempt to whistle. Whether it was successful or not I have wholly forgotten in the interest of the attention paid to my control at the time. It is probable that nothing occurred or I would have noticed and remembered it.

There was, however, throughout the usual evidences of subliminal honesty, assuming the fitness of that expression. I often gave the hands freedom only to find them folded in Miss Burton's lap or on her breast in a perfectly inert condition, while they would be nervous, so to speak, or struggling between resentment and control, if I held them.

The most perplexing phenomenon of the evening was that of shaking the paper while both hands were connected with mine. I can account for it only on the supposition of illusion on my part. But why I should limit that illusion to the shaking of the paper and not include the perception of the two hands in that illusion I cannot see. The whole phenomenon was unexpected. The taking of the paper from my hands and shaking it in unison with the music has a simple explanation and nothing perplexing about it. But this is not so with the incident mentioned. Granting that Miss Burton's hand on either or both occasions reached the paper it is difficult to conceive how she could do it without moving her body, which, of course, after what has been discovered in motor dissociation, might have actually been the fact. But she would have had to reach at least thirty inches and perhaps three feet from her left shoulder to do it without betraying any sympathetic motor action in the right arm which I controlled to the elbow with my left. I do not mean to question this view by the statement of the difficulties, but only to indicate that we have a perplexing phenomenon even tho we go no farther than a perfectly natural explanation. The fact that would at least suggest clever deception was the frank exposure of the left hand by placing it on

mine and yet doing the trick of shaking the paper which would seem to be independent. Whether it was so could not be determined.

January 30th, 1910.

The sitting last night resumed what was omitted for the evening previous which was given to Miss Burton's rest. The first thing I did was to put my foot where I could determine whether her foot aided in opening the table and I found that her right foot was not used for the purpose while I detected no use of the right hand. The table was moved to its place and opened before she went into the trance. After it was done, having been effected so soon after the light was turned out, I asked her if she was in the trance and she answered that she was not.

The first thing done was some whistling which was clear and well defined. I held only one hand, and the only thing to remark is that its location seemed far to my right and at the other side of the table about four feet away. I tried to locate it in her throat or about her face but could not do so. I had my head at times near her face.

The next was singing by Oma, one of the supposed communicators. It was a deep baritone voice and it was followed by a voice more like high alto or low soprano, during the same piece of music on the phonograph. The baritone I could occasionally locate in the vicinity of the face, but only, as in previous cases, an isolated note. Most of the strains seemed at my right from a foot to two feet away. In fact the voice seemed to fluctuate between points nearer and remoter from her face to the right, and the occasional and isolated note heard near her face was like a musical grunt, if I may employ that expression to describe the peculiar modification of it caused perhaps by the fact that it was not made through the trumpet. But at no time could I detect a series of notes in immediate succession near the face.

In the next experiment I resolved to hold my left hand on her right shoulder and to put a finger of the right hand on the end of the trumpet which was lying on the table within her reach and to see what occurred. I did so. The trumpet moved and rolled slightly a few times but did nothing else and no phenomenon occurred. I then picked it up and held it in the air in front of

Miss Burton's face, hoping that I might get some whistling or singing. I held my hand on it so that if her hand reached for it I would detect it. Once I felt what seemed to be the end of one or two fingers lightly touch mine and no further attempt was made to take the trumpet. Mrs. Milton did not know what I was doing. If I remember rightly nothing occurred in this experiment. The muscular agitation of the body signified that something was tried. I then asked the control if I could repeat the same thing, saying to Mrs. Milton who did not understand the failure that I was holding the trumpet myself in the air in front of her face. In this second experiment, after trying for a time a hand apparently reached out and pushed the trumpet farther away, with the purpose supposedly of making the test better. I held the trumpet thus with the nearer end fully two feet from her mouth whose locality I could determine by my left hand on her right shoulder. After a long trial nothing occurred, but at the end of it Miss Burton fell forward, as if exhausted and remained inactive a few moments.

We agreed to continue this further and this time I held the trumpet nearer the face, perhaps fifteen inches. Part of the time my head rested against hers and part of the time I kept it away to better study the location of the sound. There were fairly distinct efforts to sing heard by both Mrs. Milton and myself. But they were largely humming sounds, some of which seemed in the region of the trumpet and some in that of the face, with an occasional slight groan. Hoping that it might be better we tried it again and the same phenomena occurred, but the singing was not so clear as on the previous trial.

I resolved to continue the same form of experiment and so it was tried again under the same conditions, except that the trumpet was held a little farther from the face. This time there was some whistling, but apparently under great difficulties, the body showing slight convulsive movements and considerable groaning. The whistling was at intervals and not well commanded. Such notes as could be heard were fairly distinct, but would not last through more than eight or a dozen of them. There was the appearance of labored effort and at the end of it the head fell slightly forward. But as the effort was rather abortive I suggested that we try again. I held my left hand on her right

shoulder and to make the trial easier put the trumpet a little nearer the vicinity of the face. It was fully a foot or fifteen inches from the face and a little beyond it to her left, perhaps four or five inches, so far as I can conjecture. Before assuming this position raps indicated that something was wanted and on inquiring if it was a change of the music the answer was no and after the continuance of the rapping Mrs. Milton asked if it was that she go to the other side of the table. She fixed the phonograph and took her place at my right, I being directly between her and Miss Burton, at times in touch with her at my elbow. Presently the whistling began and was very distinct and clear. My fingers were on the opposite side and near the smaller end of the trumpet which was the nearest to her face. On them I very distinctly felt a current of air blowing just as it would do if one were whistling against them. This continued as long as the whistling. The shoulders did not move nor did the head so far as I could determine. I put my own head forward two or three times and touched hers. Hers was not put forward but rather leaned toward me. The location of the sound of the whistling was not as in all previous cases, namely, to my right and the locality of the other side of the table, but it was clearly in front of me and apparently near Mrs. Milton's seat at the phonograph or between this seat, the phonograph and Miss Burton. I could not be sure of anything except that it was not near Miss Burton and was near Mrs. Milton's accustomed seat. I could not get a trace of it near Miss Burton's face or mouth. I made all the possible effort to locate it there, but not the slightest evidence of this was obtainable. I do not see how she could have caused the blast of air to come against my fingers in their position and to seem to come, as it did, from the locality of the sound. My fingers were beyond and away from her face and I watched the current of air distinctly and purposely for its character, suspecting the possibility indicated, but found no evidence that the suspicion was correct.

The most interesting conjunctions in the incident are that of directing Mrs. Milton to go to the other side of the table, as if her presence were a hindrance to the work of Pietra at that point and the location of the whistling sounds for the first time in that locality, with the effect of a current proceeding from that point.

The arrangement has all the character of being teleological on any theory of it. The body did not perceptibly move during this work, as my left hand had a fair control of the right shoulder and occasionally my head touched hers leaning toward me without any apparent agitation or movement. Indeed I found throughout all the experiments that, during the occurrence of a phenomenon, there was no apparent convulsion or agitation of the motor system, except momentary convulsions that indicated some change or difficulty. Usually the system was passive while things were going on and the convulsions were present when nothing was occurring, and this whether she was or was not under my control.

As soon as the whistling ended the head fell forward and I caught it. Miss Burton soon recovered normal balance in the trance and I placed her head back on my shoulder with my left hand held on the left side of her head and face. I then asked the control if he would try to repeat the experiment in these conditions. I desired to test the direction of the current of air more distinctly and again, as well, the whistling and its location. The answer was that he would try. There were groans and some agitation of the body as I held it. It was also some time before any effort was apparently made to do anything. I was holding the trumpet in the same position as before and the head lay back on my shoulder with my left hand holding the right side of her head and face. As the phonograph neared the end of its piece of music and Mrs. Milton had to go around to prevent its stopping there were several notes of clear whistling, heard by both of us, and not so loud as on other occasions. As they occurred the head turned slightly toward me and rolled over a little and the several notes seemed to be issuing from her face. She then tumbled into my arm and groaned and shook for a minute. This was the first time that I was ever able to locate the whistling near her face or mouth. It was perfectly clearly so on this occasion and the conditions for it were not more favorable than at other times. We made no further attempt at this form of experiment. But such as I have described occupied about two hours.

I then allowed Miss Burton to rest, not trying to get any tests. Her hands were freed and whatever was to occur was left to her



choice. The only thing that I did was to hold my left hand on her right shoulder. During a period of some five or ten minutes nothing occurred. Mrs. Milton, evidently tired of so many abortive efforts to do something, suggested in a weary tone that Black Cloud try to give us some good lights. The right hand of Miss Burton was placed on the table and I held it under mine, with my left hand on Miss Burton's right shoulder. After a lapse of some five minutes I saw a clear light and in a few minutes more another, both on her hip, one of them taking a curved line of apparently two feet in length. Soon after Miss Burton placed her two hands together and put them in mine and tried again. Presently a hand reached up, no success coming, and pulled my hand from the shoulder down toward the other, and I took the hint to hold her hands in both of mine. We tried some fifteen minutes for lights and none came. There was considerable agitation of the hands and body, but no attempt to free the hands. Then the hands were jerked out of mine and I allowed them to be free watching for lights. During the next five or eight minutes there was an apparent trial for lights but no success. We then tried again while I held her hands and failed again. We then tried still again with her hands free and failed as before. After further efforts the hand apparently reached for the writing pad when I started to get it and the hand shook as if in disavowal of its intention and tried the experiment, apparently of lights again, with no better success, and then indicated the desire for the pad. I placed the pencil in the fingers and the following was written:—

"Oh! dear it is had [hard] to wait but if you only knew how hard we were trying to give you something good in the way of a test you could be patient [?] better. B. C. is working so hard to get the medium in the right condition. just wait a little and we will try again. Lenore."

We then started to try the experiment for lights again. While getting ready Mrs. Milton remarked that Lenore's hand was stroking hers and this was at a distance of two or three feet from Miss Burton. She then asked her if she could not stroke me in the same way. In a few moments an apparent hand tapped or danced on my right which was resting on Miss Burton's right. I then asked Lenore to do the same on my other hand. My left was resting on the back of the chair at Miss Burton's right shoul-

der. I thrust my thumb lightly against the dress so as to detect any movement of the body and tried to avoid causing any sensation to reveal where my hand was. I waited for results and none came. I then removed my hand and put it on her right elbow and waited for something else. Presently the trumpet was seized and put to my left ear and I was told something which I could not detect. It was then turned to Mrs. Milton and she was told: "Perhaps he thinks I can't do it." I then remarked I was willing for her to try again. I placed my hand on the back of the chair quietly and at the right shoulder. I again reached forward with the thumb and barely touched the dress without pressing against the body. In a few moments, without the slightest motion of the right hand under mine and without any detectible motion of the shoulder near my left, I was touched twice on the left hand. It was as if two fingers came over the left shoulder and touched my forefinger. The thumb was not touched. It was perfectly possible to reach thither with the left hand, but we should have to assume that she had unusual sensibilities for ascertaining where my hand was. She was either hyperæsthetic or clairvoyant to find it, unless she experimented till she found it, and I watched for that without a sign of muscular action in such experiments.

We then went on to try for lights. At first I held one hand and intended that lights should be produced without tests and to let all attempts at control be tried spontaneously by Miss Burton. Several lights occurred in this condition and then she placed her two hands together and put them voluntarily into mine. The head was leaned forward to touch mine. We waited for results, but none came and after many trials Black Cloud uttered "Me go," and went. Dan then indicated through the trumpet to Mrs. Milton that they would now try for lights without Black Cloud and he succeeded in getting two or three lights but not under test conditions. I went through the same course as described and such lights as occurred took place when I was not holding the left hand. Miss Burton voluntarily put her hands in mine at the proper time and failing would jerk them free and also free her right shoulder from my hand. I would wait for lights to appear under these conditions but not a single one occurred. Such as did take place did so while I held the right hand and none appeared while holding both of them. During test conditions there

were the usual alternating convulsions and groans with passive states of the hands. Seeing that nothing was likely to occur I suggested that she had better be brought out. This was accepted by the usual three raps. Nothing unusual occurred in coming out. Miss Burton felt no headache afterwards.

But before starting to come out the hand reached for the writing pad and the following was written:—

"We are so disappointed but we will do it yet \* \* right [?] t [at] this time. B. C. is so bad to work with at times. If he wants to do one thing and can not do it just the way he wants to he will not try any other way that he might do it. We can do better when he is not working with us. it is so hard for him to throw off that way he had when he was here and when he comes back he imagines he is just the same. Dan."

During the séance there was one instance of simultaneous whistling and singing while I held both hands and the head leaned on mine. I did not mention it in the account because I am not sure just what its chronological place in the experiments was. This does not matter. The placing of the hands in mine was spontaneous. The whistling was clear and located far at my right, apparently four feet from Miss Burton. But the singing, heard by Mrs. Milton as well as myself, was a low hum of the notes. Mrs. Milton located it between herself and Miss Burton. To me it seemed to be in the region of her face and throat. It was apparently labored and difficult and more or less abortive singing. As soon as it ended Miss Burton fell forward into my arms but recovered her balance soon.

Two or three times the trumpet was picked up during the evening and placed in my hand with the large opening at my right ear. The small end was about eighteen inches from Miss Burton's face, with my left hand on her right shoulder. For a few moments something was apparently tried, but never successfully. What it was I do not know, but it might have been independent whistling or singing or speaking.

On one occasion the singing, while I held the trumpet in the air, appeared to represent two voices. But as it appeared that this might be the humming accompaniment of the phonograph, as all the singing under test conditions was humming, I asked that the piece be played again without any attempt on the part

of the controls to do anything. This was done and Miss Burton, I remarked, remained perfectly passive, as I held one hand, the right in my right, and my left on her right shoulder. I noticed that what I had imagined a possible voice was the humming accompaniment of the voice in the instrument. I observed this fact and make the note here because I observed at the time that this apparent third voice was not rightly located to be either Miss Burton's voice or an independent one. It was so closely identified with the locus of the sound in the machine. I studied it for the purpose of testing my liability to illusion in the localization of sounds, and I found my judgment, or hypothesis, during the performance to have been correct. It tends to show that my judgment throughout in the localization of sounds is not to be set aside without adequate concrete evidence.

The motor agitations during the evening preceding any specific event and forecasting it were not so frequent as on previous occasions. As there were so many failures or abortive efforts this may be intelligible. But I was struck throughout with the coincidences and adjustments in favor of a sincere effort to do something, and indeed the failures to do anything at all under conditions that were not protected, with the hard efforts to do something when they were protected, were very impressive to me at the time for an honest subconsciousness. Indeed from that point of view I regard the sitting as the best I have had tho I cannot give a clearer account of the incidents that proved it to me, and whatever recognition of this view is made must be determined by the amount of confidence that can be placed in my judgment under the circumstances.

After the séance Mrs. Milton reported getting the name or names Mary Ellen by impression and then tried automatic writing. This was in the morning. The writing shows the following: "Mary Ellen. To know, to love, to have the peace of heaven is not an idle dream." Then followed mere scrawls and no further writing was possible.

Several times during the evening raps occurred while I held both hands. The name Mary Ellen has a possible meaning of much significance known only to myself, tho without evidential meaning here.

January 31st, 1910.

I had arranged for a sitting in the light this evening for automatic writing. We sat down a little before eight and it was perhaps twenty or thirty minutes before any signs of trance came on. The first indication of it was a few groans. During this time Mrs. Milton and myself engaged in conversation on the general subject of the attitude of scientific men and their usual failure to appreciate the method of handling the problem. Finally she remarked that they were slow coming to-night and I said they need not hurry. At once three raps were heard by both of us on the table near me. Miss Burton had not yet become entranced and had not even shown any signs of it. The raps were not loud but quite weak. Perhaps five minutes later, in reply to the question whether she had ever been in a trance during her own work about which she was talking, Mrs. Milton said she had not, when three raps were heard again, this time near herself. No further raps occurred for some minutes when they again were heard during the conversation we were holding. They were spontaneous and no indications of a connection between them and what we were saying was observable. They were very weak and somewhat diffused sounds, not clearly localizable except that there was no doubt at all about their occurrence in the table, sometimes apparently at one place and sometimes apparently at another.

I had watched Miss Burton's hands and fingers to see if any motion in them could be detected as the cause of the raps and none could be observed. Indeed the locus of the sound never seemed to be near her, tho I could not tell at what spot farther off they did occur.

As a test of the raps I asked aloud of Dan whether any of my friends were present and at first there was no reply. I repeated my query and three quite distinct raps occurred at my right and in front of Mrs. Milton, who sat at the left of Miss Burton. The raps were out of the reach of both ladies and so distinctly located that I seemed to be under no illusion as to their relation to the two parties. I recognized them by saying: "All right," and then a whole volley of them followed in the same place. This volley of them was sharper in tone than the usual raps which were

muffled slightly, perhaps from being weak and diffused, tho not so much so that their quality and location could not be located with apparent clearness. They were like the raps that had occurred in the test experiments a few evenings previous.

After a pause I asked if my father was present and again, as no reply came immediately, I repeated the question and three or four distinct and well defined raps came apparently in the right corner of the room some twelve feet away and to the right of the sideboard. I said nothing till Mrs. Milton asked what that was and then I asked if the raps were across the room. No reply to this came. But the raps that I had heard were slightly drawn out and with longer intervals than usual. Their quality was the same as those apparently on the sideboard a few evenings previous.

All the while I had taken proper care to watch Miss Burton's hands and fingers to see if the sounds could be traced to them, but not a sign of this occurred. I had one foot in front of hers to see if her feet caused the raps on the legs of the table and detected no motion. The varied locus of the sounds, however, was distinct enough indication that they were not produced by her feet, and from the test experiments on previous evenings it was not necessary to question these. The raps on this occasion were never localizable in the vicinity of her hands.

After a pause of some minutes raps occurred in the vicinity of Mrs. Milton and she asked if they wanted music. The reply was a single rap for "No." Then she asked if they wanted the light put out and three raps for "Yes" was the reply. I turned out the white light and left the red one burning. There was then a pause for a few minutes, when the hand wrote: "Put out the light for just a few minutes."

I obeyed directions and put out the light. We remained in darkness for some minutes when finally the hand wrote: "Shade one of the other lights and turn it on. I think we can stand it now."

I read this after turning on the red light and we then shaded one of the white lights and turned it on. The shade was a handkerchief with much red in it. The red light was turned off. The shaded light gave sufficient illumination to read legible writing

clearly, and the hand was as clearly observable in its actions as could be desired. In fact the handkerchief did not exclude the power to read distinctly.

Presently, perhaps in two or three minutes after putting on the light, the hand moved up in the air an inch or two and, pausing for a moment, began motions of the pencil and of the first and second fingers, which I interpreted as attempts to change the pencil from holding it between the thumb and first finger to a position between the first and second fingers, as it is always held by Mrs. Piper and often by Mrs. Smead. This continued for perhaps half a minute. I remained perfectly silent tho watching it eagerly. Suddenly it ceased the struggle and the pencil suddenly returned to its normal position between the thumb and finger, Miss Burton's normal manner. The hand then rapidly wrote: "Yes, he will come a little later. This is going to be a little hard for us. it is all so new."

I read the message by the light and replied, "All right," when a long pause ensued. At the end of this the hand raised the pencil in the air, perhaps an inch from the paper, and began the motions of very fine writing in the air, such as my wife has done through Mrs. Chenoweth. No word or letter was legible, as the movements were too fine to be decipherable. After a pause the same acts were repeated and then a pause again, when the pencil resumed its position on the paper and another pause followed.

Presently the hand began apparently to change the pencil over to the first and second fingers. It was more evident from the movements of the pencil and fingers than on the first trial. The pencil moved farther forward, the upper end moving in an arc of a circle and the middle finger moving under the pencil while the hand revolved slightly on the axis of the arm, as if trying to accomplish its object. I remained perfectly silent and watching the action without indicating what I wished to see. But the effort proved futile, and after a brief pause, suddenly the pencil returned to its normal position between the thumb and first finger and wrote:—

"There are three people \* \* \* \* you and they are all trying to use the pencil at the same time. that is the reason it is so slow. we will get it through [?] \* \* [this ?] and before long. Dan."



A pause followed while I read this at the light, and I replied that it was all right and that I understood. A considerable period of inactivity in the hand ensued, when suddenly the effort to get the pencil between the first and second fingers was renewed, with clearer indications than before of the intention, and nearly succeeded. I was quite certain this time what the intention was, but remained silent watching it. The effort, however, failed and there was a pause at the end of which the pencil was quickly returned to its normal position between the thumb and first finger and wrote:—

“Yes, I am here. do you remember how I used to wonder why they couldn’t talk just the same when they came back as they did [?] \* \* ? Well I have found out it is not so easy. If I could just say anything I want to I could write a book. H \* \* [apparent attempt to finish the name “Hodgson”].

I read this by the light and replied that it was all right and, tho not quite clear [as to the name], that I understood it. During the pause that followed there were some groans noticeable. After this long pause, the pencil, which had been thrown upon the table at the end of the previous writing, was suddenly seized and the effort renewed to get it between the first and second fingers. The character of the effort was more distinct than any before. The second finger was thrust down under the pencil and the pencil came forward in a considerable arc. The hand then paused for a few moments and the effort renewed. It came nearly being successful this time. The pencil turned clear over, nearly half a circle and rested its top on the table at the upper edge of the pad. Several groans occurred. The point of the pencil was held between the thumb and first finger. After waiting a moment I reached forward and placing one finger under the top of the pencil tried to raise it, as a help, but I found it firmly held at the other end and so resisting movement. I withdrew my finger and waited. In a moment the struggle began again and this time it was successful. The movements were quick and impulsive. The fingers gave the pencil a twist and got it between the first and second finger, and then quickly raised it to my head and back to its place on the pad, as it had been done in the darkness at previous sittings. I exclaimed, “Good,” in recognition. The hand wrote apparently a name. It is undoubtedly not that of

Hodgson. It suggests that of Pelham, but this is not clear enough to be clearly apparent to any one save such as might be expecting it or knew of its relevancy in this connection. At least the two letters "lh" are fairly clear, and the scrawls that follow them very much resemble scrawls for "am." But the letters preceding "lh" are too doubtful for any assured conjecture even. The outlines of a capital "G," for George, are imaginable, once you suspect that this is meant, but this would make the scrawls that follow and presumably intended for "Pe" very dubious and defective. Assuming that the scrawl was intended for a capital "P" the scrawls following presumably intended for an "e" would be very redundant, and tho this redundancy is fairly frequent in the automatic writing of Miss Burton, it seldom or never shows so much of this as would have to be assumed here.

As soon as the name was written the pencil was dropped, as if a great effort had been made, and Miss Burton fell groaning with her face on the table. After a pause her head was raised and another pause followed. Then the pencil was picked up and held between the first and second fingers, with a pause again. Some excitement occurred in the hand and the pencil was held in the air off the paper, as if trying to get adequate control of it. Then it suddenly changed its position into its normal place between the thumb and first finger, and the hand wrote:—

"There is something holding him back. I believe he is too anxious." I replied that I understood and said not to worry and that I could be patient. I repeated this after a pause, saying: "Don't worry. Dan. Take your time. I can wait as long as you please." A long pause followed, and then some slight excitement occurred in the hand, with a scrawl on the paper. Then a pause again, and the hand wrote:—

"Oh! \* \* me [?] is so quiet here. we are not used to it, Lenore." Then again a pause, when the hand wrote, in a slightly different script: "Oh I must write, write," followed by a scrawl. I said, "All right, don't worry. You have really done well." A few groans followed, when I said we had better cease. The hand then wrote:—

"There are so many who want to write, but they do not understand all yet. we do not want to stop, but I am afraid we will have to."

I replied that I thought it better and there was a pause. Presently the hand wrote:—

"There is your lady here who is very anxious to write you something she wants you to tell the children, she says, but she cannot do it to-night. Lenore."

I said, "Good, I understand" and after a pause the hand wrote: "Good-night. Please turn out the light. It will be best. Lenore."

I did so and Miss Burton came out of the trance in the usual manner, with some muscular convulsions and hacking coughs.

The only suggestive incidents in the record are the Hodgson-Pelham ones and the subject matter purporting to represent a message from my wife. In her last attempt to communicate through Mrs. Chenoweth some five weeks ago her sole topic of interest was the children. Miss Burton and Mrs. Milton know that my wife is dead and that I have children. The manner of getting the pencil between the first and second fingers was very interesting and suggestive and if the name Pelham had been clear enough to be sure of its meaning the fact would have been very evidential in this connection with Dr. Hodgson, as he always appears wherever Dr. Hodgson tries to communicate with me. I do not think Mrs. Milton and Miss Burton know anything about him, and they probably know less about his connection as described, tho it is conjecturable from published records. I should perhaps give some importance to the statement: "I am here," purporting to come from Dr. Hodgson, as that is his phrase through other mediums.

February 1st, 1910.

There had been a little doubt about our having a sitting last night owing to the illness of a child during the day and on the arrival of Dr. Hamilton, who was present, and myself at the appointed time, Miss Burton remarked incidentally that she was ready for either writing or a dark séance. I had not suggested or expected the writing but another remark by her indicated inferentially that such a possibility had been talked over in case Mrs. Milton could not be present to direct the phonograph. I expressed my willingness to take either kind of a séance and we sat down with the expectation that it would be automatic writing

and waited for the trance in the darkness and directions to turn on the light. We were talking on this supposition when Miss Burton's hand signified the desire to write and I placed pad and pencil. The hand wrote:—

"We prefer to go on with the usual course to-night instead of the writing. Dan."

We read the word "prefer" as "people" and the rest of it correctly. Miss Burton's hand reached for the pencil and wrote the following in the light which had been turned up to read the first.

"We prefer to go on is [in] the musical way to-night instead of the writing. Dan."

This made the situation clear and it is told here in its details because Miss Burton normally was ready and in fact expecting to have the writing done. The table had not yet been opened and no movement made to open it or change its place. With the situation cleared up I sat down with my right hand on her right with the desire to ascertain whether muscular action could be detected when the table was opened and moved. I put my right foot in front of her two so that she could not open the table with her feet without betraying the fact. All rested quietly for a time when I slightly moved my right hand on hers to enable me to detect any movement of her muscles when she suddenly jerked her hand away and exclaimed "What's that?" She was not yet entranced or had suddenly come out of it. I spoke to her and asked what was the matter and she replied that something had struck her. I explained to those present what had occurred and the séance was resumed.

In a few moments the table was opened and moved toward Miss Burton. There was no use of the feet for the purpose and no discoverable muscular action of the right hand which I held while my left hand rested on the right shoulder. The feet could not pull the table forward as it was done and as my side of the table was pulled forward toward her and myself equally with the other side of it to which her left hand had access I do not see how it could be done without the sympathetic motor action of the right hand which I held, unless we can assume a most unusual combination of motor dissociation of the left and right sides of her body and the increased motor strength of her left, all of which

may be conceivable from past experience. But certain I am that she did not do the work with any aid of the right hand, and she could not do it with her feet, as mine prevented hers from getting at the legs of the table besides its being pulled toward her.

The first experiment was some clear excellent whistling which was not done under test conditions. I treated it as preparation for other work. But I took the occasion to rise from my chair so that I could stand over the head of Miss Burton and see, if I could study the localization of the sound. When it began I noticed that it was in the direction of Dr. Hamilton on the other side of the table. While standing there was no alteration of this judgment save that it seemed to be relatively lower down than when my head was on the level with it. I moved my head up and down in front of hers and found no sound located in the vicinity of her face and mouth. The experiment was continued and this time I repeated the rising and kept my right hand on her right. The sound was localized as before and I thrust my face down in front of hers till it must have been at least nearly in line with her mouth and where the sound seemed to be located, and no trace of trumpet or moving air was detected. There was not the slightest doubt about where the whistling seemed to be. On both occasions I asked Dr. Hamilton and Mrs. Milton to tell where the sound seemed to them without telling them what I had done or where it seemed to me. Dr. Hamilton located it in front of himself between his side of the table and Miss Burton presumably a foot or eighteen inches in front of her, and Mrs. Milton located it in front of herself at about the point Dr. Hamilton assigned. To me it seemed nearer Dr. Hamilton than the place indicated, but all three of us had substantially the same judgment about it. I was in a better position to judge its relation to Miss Burton as my hearing had to localize it on a line vertical to the direction of my hearing. My head was at the angle made by the line from her face to mine and from the apparent locus of the sound to mine. Dr. Hamilton was forced to localize it in a line direct from himself toward Miss Burton while Mrs. Milton had an angle similar to mine tho not so clearly defined. I ascertained no trace of sound near the face, tho at times putting my head against hers which never leaned forward during either experiment. The right hand was perfectly passive

and so was the head at all times that I observed it. During one of these trials Dr. Hamilton held the hands of Mrs. Milton, so that her manual complicity in the phenomena was not possible.

In the next experiment the trumpet was placed in my right hand. I held it, without telling the other parties that I was doing so, at arm's length to my right with the small end toward the place which Mrs. Milton usually sat and with the larger end pointing to my right. In other words, the trumpet lay in the air on my hand at right angles to the direction in which the whistling had to proceed, assuming that it was done by Miss Burton normally. Mrs. Milton was facing the small end of the trumpet, but Dr. Hamilton reported afterward that he held her hands. The opening of the trumpet must have been two feet from her seat. My left hand was on Miss Burton's shoulder. The whistling was not so clear or loud as when the trumpet was not held. This was remarked by both Dr. Hamilton and Mrs. Milton who did not know that I was holding the trumpet. The location of it was not so distinct as in the instances described and this was due to the less distinct character of the sound. Besides the whistling was interrupted and apparently moved from place to place. The head of Miss Burton remained without motion and to me the sound, at no time detectible near the face, appeared usually to be three or four feet away. As soon as it was over the head fell forward and remained on my arm a few moments.

The experiment was repeated with directions that Mrs. Milton should stand behind Dr. Hamilton. She did so and her hands were held by him. This time the whistling was more distinct and seemed located in the region of the phonograph. This was the judgment of Dr. Hamilton and Mrs. Milton before they knew mine. I held the trumpet in the air as before and detected no motion of shoulder and head during the performance. At the conclusion of it Miss Burton again fell forward, but soon recovered normal control of the trance condition.

Through the trumpet Mrs. Milton was again directed to stand back of Dr. Hamilton which she did, after starting the music, and he again held her hands. I held Miss Burton's right hand and had my left hand on her shoulder. There was then some simultaneous whistling and singing. The singing I located in the vicinity of Miss Burton's face. But the sound of the notes,

as I have remarked in all cases, was both jerky and apparently fluctuated from place to place. Only a part of the notes was audible. The whistling was complete and without interruptions and the singing imperfect and indistinct, tho the sounds were clear enough to detect them and to locate them. There was no tone of the trumpet about them, as was usual with the singing when it was a single voice. While this was going on one note of a baritone character was heard by me and having the trumpet resonance in it. But as soon as it was uttered the trumpet fell and the experiment came to an end. Apparently there was the effort to do what I had requested earlier in the evening, namely, to have an experiment of last year repeated in which I seemed to detect two independent voices. But there was not evidence enough of it in this effort. It was repeated, however without apparent success, tho before it was completed the trumpet was seized and put in my hand and I held it in the air as I had done in the previously described experiments. Mrs. Milton and Dr. Hamilton did not know that the trumpet was given me, and Mrs. Milton stood behind Dr. Hamilton with her hands held by him. She complained of being touched by some one on the back and was apparently more or less timid about it. The whistling was clear and resonant and apparently located about where Mrs. Milton's regular seat was. There was no discoverable singing.

During the pause that followed Miss Burton's hand reached for the writing pad and the following was written, after I placed the pencil in the fingers, tho there was a pause after it was placed before the writing was done.

"B. C. must go. he brings a disturbing element to the medium and we can do nothing. The influence is good to-night if Black Cloud will go. Please tell him. Dan."

This was the first intimation that anything attempted had been ineffective. Apparently it had been the intention either to satisfy my desire for two voices or something else which had not succeeded. As soon as these directions were given we asked Black Cloud to leave. There was immediate resistance shown by Miss Burton in shaking of her body and when I tried to touch or hold her hands, head or shoulder she resented it vigorously. That is, the resentment was in her organism, tho I found from what occurred a little later that she was quite willing and desired



to be released in spite of all this apparent resentment. I tried again and again to hold the hands, asking Black Cloud in the most courteous manner possible, to give up and yield his place to others. But he would have none of me, and at one stage of the struggle I heard a voice which was not like Black Cloud's which was always bass in tone and like an Indian's. But I could not distinguish it this time. Any signal from me to help was only met with resistance. Finally after a futile ten minutes were spent the hand reached for the pad and pencil which were placed, and the hand wrote:—

"You must take the hands and do not let them go until Black Cloud goes out. It seems strange but we know his influence. Dan."

As soon as this was read I took the hands and met the same resistance as before. But I held them tightly in my grip tho permitting Miss Burton to writhe about with them. Once the right hand gained its freedom and was thrust behind her back. But recovering it I maintained my position until she gradually succumbed to the struggle and Black Cloud went. It was a gradual process, however, and accomplished with a great struggle. During it I heard Miss Burton's voice two or three times. Once the voice was clear and said: "Go, Black Cloud" and all the while she was struggling to free her hands from mine.

I had noticed in the first effort to get Black Cloud to leave, when I did not insist on holding the hands, that they were extraordinarily sensitive, as if she were hyperæsthetic. The slightest touch from me would result in a quick jerk away from me, and I could not touch her anywhere without a similar reaction. During this and the second struggle I made suggestions at times to Black Cloud and statements indicating that I understood the situation and his difficulties. One of them was that his old nature came back to him in the situation. I had in mind what I had so often observed in similar situations that the habits of the earthly life were resumed and wanted to indicate to him that I understood it. I used the language given above, which I mention for the sake of what occurred in the next automatic writing, tho it had been spontaneously indicated at an earlier sitting (p. 397). After the release of Black Cloud there was a pause of quiescence in the organism of Miss Burton which relaxed and

her hands fell. Then came a stiffening and the hand reached for the pad. The following was written:—

"It is strange, but his influence is not good for the medium. When he gets back to these earthly conditions he takes on his own nature too much. Dan."

When this was read I understood it clearly, but Dr. Hamilton made some remark about his being contrary and stubborn, or something to that effect. Mrs. Milton understood this to be the fact also. The hand reached impatiently for the pad and pencil and wrote:—

"No, no. I said when he comes back to this earth he takes on his own nature again. Dan."

This was followed by a long wait for work. Miss Burton remained quite passive and made no attempt to do anything. The effects of Black Cloud's struggle were apparent. This was followed, after two or three pieces of music had been played during the pause, by whistling and singing simultaneously. Both were good, but not under test conditions. The whistling had all the characteristics and apparent location of previous performances. Some of the singing was not accompanied by the whistling, and the localization of it appeared to make it nearer than the whistling had been. Indeed I have always found the singing nearer Miss Burton than the whistling. The singing was in a sort of baritone voice and showed the resonant tones of the trumpet, with occasional location in the vicinity of Miss Burton's face, tho never so distinctly as I desired. The notes that seemed there were, as always before, only isolated notes and I could not get or detect a series of notes there.

At the end of this, as we started another piece of music for further performances, a noise occurred in the kitchen. Mrs. Milton stopped the phonograph and went to the kitchen. She had hardly reached the other end of the table before the whistling began very clearly without the accompaniment of the instrument. It continued the whole time she was in the kitchen. I held my left hand on Miss Burton's shoulder and my right on her right. The sound seemed situated at my right and in the vicinity of Dr. Hamilton, tho somewhat at his right, my face being toward Miss Burton. It was perfectly clear and I moved my head against Miss Burton's, finding it at rest and not a trace of muscu-

lar movement in her shoulder or right arm. Not a trace of sound issued from the region of her face, and with the silence of the room it was easy to study the situation. When Mrs. Milton returned I asked her to stop until the whistling ceased. She stood at the end of the table behind me and to the left of Dr. Hamilton. When the whistling ceased I asked her where it seemed to her and she said between Dr. Hamilton and Miss Burton. Dr. Hamilton gave the same location, and neither of them knew where it seemed to me which was about the same tho apparently a little to the right of Dr. Hamilton, tho I may have been under a false impression as to his exact locality. The phenomenon was one of the most interesting that had occurred.

After a pause Mrs. Milton was directed through the trumpet to stop the phonograph and to go behind Dr. Hamilton. She did so, and Miss Burton put her two hands together and placed them in mine, also turning her feet and legs toward me, so that I held both legs by winding my right leg about hers. The experiment was, apparently, to start the phonograph. It did not succeed. We tried again with her hands released and it did not succeed. The hand then reached for the writing pad and wrote, after I placed the pencil in it. "Start the music for a minute and we will try again. Dan."

It was apparent that they wanted to stop the phonograph, as it had been the previous intention to start it. I held both hands and the feet and legs with my right foot and leg. There was much struggling and groaning, but none that suggested anything but automatic action, while it was accompanied by an evident desire to sustain the test conditions. But the experiment did not succeed. It was repeated and after some struggling I released the hands and left Miss Burton free. But no success at starting the machine was attained. We tried again and I held the hands again. There was the same struggle and groans and finally the hands were jerked away and in a moment returned to mine without stopping the instrument. Again after a struggle they were released and I found them at times moving over each other but always unwilling for me to hold them. At last a click at the phonograph occurred and it stopped and as soon as it did so I put my right hand forward and found her two hands folded on her breast. There was probably time to get them in this position

before I reached them, but there was a quiescence about them and about the body while the right shoulder was in my left that suggested quick action to deceive me, and motor dissociation in the same supposed purpose.

We then made half a dozen trials to get the same result but always with failure, as the test conditions were good. I held both hands and tho there was struggling and groans there was no clear attempt to free the hands. Regarding two of them Dr. Hamilton and Mrs. Milton remarked, at their close, that they distinctly heard the click of the phonograph, as if some one was trying to stop it. I did not hear this. I was very intent on keeping perfect control and more especially of being conscious of the exact situation. If their sensations and judgments are correct the phenomenon was undoubtedly supernormal, unless artificial means undetected were employed, as I certainly had perfect control of Miss Burton's body. But as the failure was evident for what we wanted we decided to end the séance and brought Miss Burton out. But at the end of the last trial she threw her head back and went into a state of catalepsy, which lasted five minutes or more and only after the combined efforts of Mrs. Milton and myself did we bring her out of it. The exit from the trance was long, evidently accompanied by something like lethargic sleep, and finally she came out with the usual twitching of the body and hacking coughs.

During this series of experiments I paid some attention to a condition of things which had occurred to me before, but not so clearly as a few events of this séance suggested. The evidence of mixed anæsthesia and consciousness at the beginning of the séance when Miss Burton suddenly returned to normal consciousness when I changed the touch of my hand on hers and the conversation with Dr. Hamilton about earlier sittings at which they discovered clear indications of partial and perhaps localized anæsthesia, and possibly at times hemi-anæsthesia suggested the possibility that I was dealing with a peculiar set of conditions which I should study with reference to what was implied by the constant resistance to my touch and yet the habit as constant of doing nothing with the hands when released from this touch. I had all along noticed that the conduct of Miss Burton under test conditions was spontaneously adjusted to the right thing and

that when free it was inconsistent with the supposition of fraud. Her behavior was as if she wanted freedom and control of her hands at the same time, or as if she wanted them controlled without contact with mine. She always folded them together when released and as often would put them back in mine only to resent it and gain their freedom without using them to do anything. I suspected a tendency to sensibility, under test conditions, which was necessary for the phenomena, but that my touch had to be accompanied by anæsthesia to prevent its disturbing the results. What we had noticed on many occasions was the apparent dissociation of the left side of the body in its movements from the right side under control and which remained passive under this control. I had no means of ascertaining whether there was any hemi-anæsthesia or not, nor had I any means of verifying the hypothesis I suspected from the complicated motor action observable. But I did observe movements consistent with it, as before. The passive and quiescent state of the right arm and shoulder was observed, tho the head at times slightly swayed, and once I found the left shoulder and arm giving evidence of motor action on that side while the right hand was securely passive under the control of my right hand. Hence the hypothesis to be tested is this. Do contact and control require and tend to produce anæsthesia under which the physical phenomena cannot be produced easily? Or must consciousness of some sort, subliminal or supraliminal, attend the production of physical phenomena? I always found the hands resenting contact when they were released and then folded together in her lap or on her breast. If the supposition indicated be true it is clear that the whole system of motor actions apparently resenting control are only for the purpose of preventing anæsthesia which is an obstacle to results. This would confirm my hypothesis of physical phenomena as discussed in the *Journal* (Vol. IV, pp. 109-137). Certainly the appearance of affairs here is in favor of the idea that control tends to cause mental conditions which make the results impossible. That is, apparently contact and control require or tend to produce anæsthesia, and anæsthesia defeats the production of the phenomena. On the other hand, absence of control tends to preserve the sensibility of the subject, if only subliminal sensibility, and perhaps in a hyperæsthetic form, and

this may be necessary for the phenomena, tho it removes the conditions which prevent the results from being evidential in the darkness, Miss Burton being undoubtedly sensitive to light in such conditions.

Consistently with this view I have noticed that the part of the body under control by my hands was always passive when the phenomena were occurring. I had no means of ascertaining whether any other part of the body was so or not. I often enough found the head where I did not expect to find it during whistling and singing, namely too far from the location of the sound to suppose that it was playing a normal part in them. But there were often slight sympathetic movements in it, now leaning toward mine and now slightly moving in various directions as if muscularly agitated, but evidently disturbed, and would often discover my contact and suddenly remove it.

That there are all sorts of dissociation in the case is apparent in the fact that Miss Burton seems aphasic under the control of Black Cloud. He will occasionally speak in a half impatient or determined manner, but only the words "Me no go" or as I have heard the incomplete sentence: "Me no....." On interrogating him for further expression he could never seem to answer. He apparently can utter only a few words at a time. With Lenore it is apparently better. But she never seems to control for important phenomena. She will write automatically or speak directions through the trumpet, and seems to command language easily enough. But I have never known Dan to speak in any way. He can reply by raps or do automatic writing. Hence there seems to be that variation of conditions that involves apparent dissociations of all kinds, connected perhaps with variations of sensibility and anæsthesia, which have been actually observed at various times. However this may be there are coincidences and synchronisms which require to be carefully studied under better conditions than have hitherto prevailed to determine their significance.

February 2d, 1910.

Before the opening of the sitting last night I asked if I might hold my hands on Miss Burton's while the table was being opened and placed. I wanted to study the muscular action of her

hands. This was readily enough granted. The table was in the centre of the room, the farther edge of it being fully four feet from Mrs. Milton. I sat next to Miss Burton, but I did not take her hands immediately. I awaited the signal from the control. This came in the form of raps which Mrs. Milton interrogated to know if they were for her, and the reply "No" came in a single rap. I then asked if I was wanted and three raps signified "Yes." I then asked if they wanted me to hold the hands and three raps came again. I took the hands finding that they were already together on the table. From what appeared a little later Miss Burton was not in a trance, as a few minutes elapsed when she remarked that she saw a light in front of her. I suggested that it might be the vague misty light that came in below the curtain of the window and which I could see. Miss Burton replied that it was not this, as the light she saw was a little above the level of her head. The patch of cloud light which I saw was far below that level. Presently Miss Burton remarked that it came and went and on my asking its color said it was yellow and shape oblong. It kept coming and going for some time when she finally said it looked like a face. I had told her to watch it and perhaps it would develop. Some time after observing that it resembled a face she suddenly said it was that of a lady and a little later said she had blue eyes, and then after a pause remarked that there was something above her head. She could not distinguish what it was. I suspected its possible meaning, as an attempt to give a name, but I said nothing save to say that, when she could, I would be glad to see what it was above the head. Some minutes elapsed when Miss Burton suddenly exclaimed in a tone of some surprise that it was writing above the head. Waiting awhile again she said she could not tell any of it but the letter M. I remained silent for a moment and remarked "Good," and few moments later she exclaimed "It is Mary," with a slight jerk in the hands which I was holding. I said "Good" again and in a moment exclaimed "I know who it is," when there was a violent convulsion in the hands and Miss Burton fell forward on the table. Mary was the name of my deceased wife. Later inquiry showed that she did not know this fact or the color of her eyes.

After a few moments' or minutes' rest she raised her head and



I still held her hands to watch the movements of the table. It had not yet been moved or opened and during the work of seeing the light and getting the name Mary Miss Burton had gone into a light trance apparently. But after a pause following the fall on the table, perhaps of five minutes, during which I had my foot in front of hers to prevent them from opening the table without detection, and holding my two hands over hers lying on the table, I finally felt that the table was not going to move. I asked the control aloud if I was doing rightly. There was no reply, but a few moments later I noticed a little agitation in the hands and allowed them to go up to her breast, following them with mine and holding them well under control while there. In a few moments again I asked if they wanted her hands free and I heard three light raps on my right on the table. They were so indistinct that I was not certain of them, and repeated my question when three distinct raps occurred again at my right on the table. I had both her feet and hands under control and her hands were fully two feet and perhaps thirty inches from the apparent location of the raps. I released her hands, but kept my foot in its place. After a pause of some moments the table moved slightly toward Miss Burton and myself. In a few seconds it moved again and this time carried my foot with it against hers and pushed them along. I then put my right hand forward and felt for the opening in the table and it was not more than an inch wide. Her hand could not have touched the cross piece in the table, but as I was not holding the hands we may suppose that the whole thing was done by friction with the top of the table.

I made no further attempts to study this problem, but allowed the table to be moved to its place near Mrs. Milton and the phonograph. After this was accomplished the first thing done was some whistling which was merely preparation or getting "conditions" in order. This view is only an inference from experience in the case. But I rose and tested the location of the whistling by putting my head above hers, as on the evening before, and allowing my face to touch her hair moved it forward and let my head down in front of her face and forward some inches. After the evening was over I closed my eyes, when the light was on, and repeated it in the presence of Mrs. Milton and Miss Bur-

ton to see how far I must have put my head down, and I had done so as far as the nose. While my head was in this position in the darkness I was studying the location of the sound in the whistling and it was always at my right some distance and never the slightest trace of it at my left or in the vicinity of her face or mouth. My right hand was on her right and my left on her shoulder. It would seem impossible for her to have done the whistling normally without detection of its location at my left.

After this I suggested to the control that, when they were able, I would like to hold my hand on Miss Burton's throat while the whistling went on. He signified that he would try. This was done by raps, and we proceeded with the music, I not expecting that it would be attempted at once. In a few moments, however, my hand, resting on her right, was picked up by her right and raised to her throat. Her right remained on her breast at the lower part of the throat and under mine. The left hand was absent, as I determined at various times by my little finger. A long effort was made to whistle with my fingers so placed, but no success attended it. There was some struggling of the head and throat to get freedom, but not much of it. In a moment it was always adjusted spontaneously to the conditions of control. At the end of the attempt the hand showed signs of desiring release and so also the head and throat. I removed mine, and there was a considerable pause. I held the right hand in mine and my left hand on her right shoulder. No apparent muscular movements occurred during this rest. Finally my hand was raised again to the throat and the experiment repeated without success. I then resolved to interrogate Dan and to get his answers through raps regarding the difficulties of the test. I had noticed slight muscular resistance to my hand on her throat and wanted to test the trance personalities for possible anæsthesia and alternating sensibility there. I asked Dan if he would answer some questions and three raps came in the affirmative. I asked him if he could in that way explain the difficulties and three raps came again.

I then asked if she felt my fingers on her throat and no reply came. I asked if he felt my hand there and the answer was three raps. I then asked if her throat had to be sensitive when he whistled and no reply came. I asked then if he understood what

I wanted and the reply was three raps. I then asked if the part I touched was sensible and the part used in a performance was sensible and no reply came. I repeated my question whether he felt my touch and the answer was three raps. All at once it occurred to me to ask if Dr. Hodgson was present, and without using his name to indicate that I expected him I asked if my friend was present and as a pause followed I asked if the friend was present who had communicated before and the reply came in three raps. I asked if he understood my question, knowing that if he got it he would. No immediate reply came, and I asked the control if he could ask him the question. No reply was made to this, but in a few moments there was a slight convulsion in the arm and hand which I held and I assumed that a new control was being established. I repeated some of my questions and no answer came to any of them. Presently the hand reached for the pad and I supplied a pencil. It wrote as follows.

"The fact is it is like working thro... [through] two [two] mediums instead of one." [The signature was a scrawl.]

The handwriting was not clearly Dan's, and the contents are quite characteristic of Dr. Hodgson, tho not evidential of him. I indicated aloud that I understood all of it but the signature and we returned to the experiments, but in a moment the hand signified a desire to write again and the pad and pencil were supplied. The hand wrote:—

"The reason one cannot do anything just as easy in the beginning as we can with practice is not really [really] because of practice, but because we become more accustomed to your influence and can work with you better. Dan."

I accepted this as intelligent and turned out the light and we returned again to the work, but the hand again wanted to write and the following came.

"You see you speak of practice as you would of one who practiced [spelled 'practiiced'] singing or paying [playing] of an instrument, but it is not so with us. If the medium is free we can work thro... [through] her [pause While sheet is changed] with perfect ease, but just as soon as you or any other influence comes in contact with her We have to make conditions to suit before we can go any further and that is what you call practice. Dan."

We then returned again to the experiments and while my right hand was resting on her right and my left on her right shoulder the whistling began very clearly and distinct. After it had gone on perhaps half a minute or more the right hand moved a little convulsively and turned over and then raised mine slightly and started toward the throat. I took the hint and followed, the hand placing mine on the larynx. The whistling was not interrupted the least and continued for a minute or more very clear and distinct, not as loud as at other times, but almost so and apparently three feet at my right. No trace of the sound could be found in the throat by my ears. I could at intervals feel a slight vibration and also at intervals a very slight muscular action, but nothing like what I had expected to find. The same thing was repeated and in the same manner, so that I do not require to describe details. The effect was exactly the same. It followed a short rest. Then another rest came and I supposed something else would be tried when my hand was raised as before and placed on the larynx. But nothing occurred. Then we tried again after a rest and some very peculiar singing was done evidently with the trumpet, as its resonance was clear, and when it was finished the trumpet fell on the table. But while the singing was proceeding my hand was raised to the throat and placed on the larynx again. I held it there while the singing occurred. I tried by placing my head near Miss Burton's to see if I could locate the voice in the throat and I could not. The action of the larynx was very slight. Only the slightest vibrations could be detected and an occasional indication of muscular action. But the phenomenon did not last more than a minute, perhaps less, all told, and the trumpet fell on the table while Miss Burton's head fell forward. A moment's rest and the experiment was resumed with my right on Miss Burton's right hand and my left on her right shoulder again.

In a few moments the whistling occurred again and my hand was raised to the throat. I placed my fingers on the larynx again while the whistling went on without any interruption or confusion. The same phenomena as before took place in the throat. I gave my whole time and attention to studying them and to trying to locate the sound in the throat. But I could not detect the slightest evidence of sound there. It seemed at my

right, tho not so clear in the notes as before. The action of the throat and larynx was just as before. At the close of it Mrs. Milton remarked that she had heard two persons whistling. I had not observed anything of the kind. My attention was absorbed in other observations, and if it occurred at all and was not an illusion of hers I had not the slightest knowledge of it. But I asked Dan if he could repeat it for me and the reply was in the affirmative by three raps.

Again, after some moments, the whistling began and was quite clear as usual at my right. My hand was raised to the throat and my fingers placed on the larynx, while whistling proceeded without disturbance. After some moments elapsed I heard a few notes of whistling that seemed distinct from the main and clearest whistling. These notes were not continuous, but occurred at intervals and seemed located nearer Miss Burton than Pietra's regular whistling. At times the notes did not synchronize with his and it was in these conditions that I got the clearest indications of its occurrence, tho once in a while a note was fairly clear. Mrs. Milton remarked the two sounds and spoke of it from time to time. The music of the phonograph was not confusable with the whistling, as it was not a whistling piece. It was a song. There were some fluctuations in the locality of the less distinct whistling, and as remarked, intervals when it did not appear at all. But I have to treat the phenomena as exposed to the suspicion of illusion, tho it was not any more this than usual perceptions. There is no doubt, however, that the circumstances, association of the phonograph music and the need of greater distinctness in the apparent second case of whistling, and the darkness, make it impossible to give the phenomenon any more value than my judgment would have, and with the hardened sceptic that would be nothing.

If I remember rightly Miss Burton fell forward a few moments at the close of this effort. There was a pause for a few moments and the trumpet was put in Mrs. Milton's hand and raised above her head signifying that it should be held there. This she did and something was apparently tried but without success. The trumpet was put back on the table by Mrs. Milton. In a few moments it was given her again and raised in the air, not so high as before and a little nearer Miss Burton. The phono-

graph was started and, in a moment after whistling began, my hand was raised and put to the throat again, my fingers being placed on the larynx while the whistling was going on. No interruption of it appeared, and in a moment I heard quite distinctly another whistling, and the notes were fairly continuous and more distinctly located than on the previous trials. The clearer and louder whistling seemed more in front of me than on the other trials and as it were above Mrs. Milton's head, she presumably being in her seat by the phonograph. This was the region of the trumpet. But the other whistling was located very distinctly in the vicinity of Miss Burton's face. I put my head as near hers as I dared without disturbing the performance, my left hand being on her right shoulder, and I could never discover that the whistling was in the throat, tho when one of her slight groans occurred it was very distinctly located in the throat. The vibrations in the throat were slightly perceptible at times, and so also very slight muscular movements, but not at all times. No significant synchronisms in these actions and changes with the whistling were discoverable. But the two distinct whistling streams were more clearly perceptible to me than before and there was much less interruption and alternation of notes in the nearer instance of it than in the first case. Mrs. Milton when I asked her what she observed, after it was over, remarked that she heard whistling in the trumpet which she held. I asked her if she heard any second whistling and she said she had not. The trumpet and whistling which she did hear were between her and the point where I located the second case of it. We may suppose that the trumpet was placed as it was to separate the two attempts at whistling so that the sounds would be distinct. This was at least the effect to me, and as they were in the median plane for Mrs. Milton it was quite natural, assuming that I had no illusion, that she should not distinguish them. At the close of the effort Miss Burton's head fell forward and she had to be rested a few minutes.

During all these experiments I did not tell Mrs. Milton what had been done with my hand until the individual experiment had been finished, so that she did not know what was taking place until after the event achieved. The experiments were

entirely spontaneous ones and the conditions provided by Miss Burton herself in the trance.

There was one experiment whose order in the series I have forgotten, but it was somewhere in those I have just described. The trumpet was given to me and held in my left hand between my head and that of Miss Burton, the large end being at my left ear. Nothing occurred and the experiment was not repeated.

We resumed experiments after the whistling, leaving what was to be tried to the controls. Some minutes after the music had been started the two hands were put together in mine and raised to the breast. I took my left hand from the shoulder and held her right with it and her left in my right. In a few moments Miss Burton turned slightly on her chair and put her feet and legs out as a hint to protect them. I put my right leg around them and awaited results. There was some muscular agitation in her hands and head with apparent efforts, tho very slight and abortive to free the hands and my contact. The legs remained perfectly still. I made no mention of the conditions to Mrs. Milton, but conjectured that the intention was to stop the phonograph. I said nothing, however, and the attempt ended in failure. I then remarked to Mrs. Milton that I had been holding both hands. She had wondered why nothing happened.

We went on with another experiment. I placed my right hand on that of Miss Burton and my left on her right shoulder and let things take their own course. In a few moments whistling began of a very clear order. I attended only to its localization and found it as always at my right and nowhere else. When it ceased Mrs. Milton made some remark about what she thought they must have been doing and I replied, No, and that I thought they were simply preparing for something else, without saying what I conjectured. I had in mind the stopping of the instrument. On my indicating that I thought it preparation for something else three distinct raps in approval occurred and Mrs. Milton accepted it.

Immediately following this and after a rest the trumpet was seized and Mrs. Milton was told not to start the phonograph and to take her stand behind me. This she did, and at once, before Mrs. Milton took her place behind me, Miss Burton placed her two hands in mine and raised them to her face, putting her



head forward to lean on the hands. Her feet and legs were securely held in my right leg and she was turned away from the phonograph. At once her hands began to tremble rather violently. Only once was there any apparent attempt to rescue them from my grasp, but I held them securely and no further efforts were made in that direction. But there was more or less constant agitation in the hands and body. After a lapse of fully five minutes, without any marked synchronism in the muscular action of hand or body, the whir of the plate in the phonograph began and ceased after perhaps a second or so, and then with a lapse of a few moments again started with a whir and lasted perhaps for two or three seconds and stopped again. A longer interval occurred and then the whir started again and with it the music which continued for a bar or two and stopped suddenly. At this point Mrs. Milton standing behind me, placed one of her hands on my shoulder and the other near it on my back just below my neck and held them there more than three feet from the phonograph. In a moment the machine was started again and the music began again just at the note where it left off before. After continuing for half a minute Miss Burton suddenly convulsed and fell into my arms, while the music continued and Mrs. Milton waited for the machine to stop which it did not. I saw it was not going to repeat the stopping of the music and said so. Miss Burton remained in a collapsed condition for some five minutes and gradually recovered the muscular tonicity of the trance.

I felt that enough had been done and when the music was changed suggested that we ought to stop at that and three raps signified approval, when the hand reached for the pad and on supplying the pencil it wrote:—

"We had better go. we are losing our strength and the medium is getting tired. if we stay longer Black Cloud mg [or 'my' for 'might' or 'may'] get in when we get out and it would be better for all if he didn't come to-night. Dan."

We then proceeded to bring Miss Burton out. She was long recovering normal consciousness, tho perhaps not much if any longer than usual, and did so with the usual trembling and coughs.

I have omitted several unimportant things observed during

the evening because I do not recall their exact place in the order of events. Once the right hand moved and stretched out in the air and came back to its position under my right and then repeated the act extending the hand into space, as if reaching for something at a distance. Mrs. Milton, hearing the movement, thought Miss Burton wanted to write. I gave my conjectured explanation, but nothing followed. This occurred on a previous evening.

Once also she fell back in catalepsy after some hard effort and I managed soon to remove it by getting my hand on her neck in the locality of the medulla oblongata.

Throughout the whole séance I gave as much attention as was possible to the motor action for studying its relation to assumed conscious states and I found the usual marks of consistent and honest effort to do the right thing. There were the usual reflexes just before a phenomenon began, but perhaps not so frequent as at other séances. Often this evening no such reflex was noticed, but when some unusual thing was to be tried for the first time the reflex was noticed.

The best phenomenon of the evening was the starting and stopping of the phonograph. This was done, as the record shows, four times and under perfect test conditions, so far as the arms and legs of Miss Burton are concerned, and also in so far as the position of Mrs. Milton was concerned. She could not have reached the plate with her hands, as they were on my back. Miss Burton was close to the wall, the table was at my right and I intervened between Mrs. Milton and Miss Burton between me and the instrument. We might assume several ways of doing the thing under the conditions. The first and simplest would be that Mrs. Milton had a stick in her hand and touched the plate of the machine the first three times it was stopped and started. But this would not explain the fourth when she held her hands on my shoulder and back. Miss Burton was secure in my control. Of that there was not the slightest question. But we might suppose that some wire had been previously arranged to do the work. While we may conceive this possible in our ignorance of what is so in such cases I do not myself see how it could have been done, and besides it could not be manipulated as required to produce the effect. If a mechanical arrangement were made to do it at intervals it might have

been effected in the manner observed. But there was nothing that could have been done with the hands or arms of Miss Burton, and hence the only doubt that can be maintained is based upon actual darkness and the fact that I did not see that a hand or wire or other mechanical means were *not* there. Personally I have confidence enough in Mrs. Milton and Miss Burton to say that they would not consciously conspire to do it, and I know no means by which it could have been prepared unconsciously beforehand. No traces of such means were observed afterward.\*

During the séance and just after she had succeeded with the whistling while I held my fingers on Miss Burton's throat I said I wanted to perform the same experiment upon myself while I whistled. I did so in the darkness and observed that the vibration in the throat was much the same as noticed with Miss Burton, but the muscular movements and contractions were far more marked and evident, and also more continuous. I could not do the whistling without more marked indications of laryngeal action than was apparent in her whistling.

I repeated this experiment after the séance and found it the same. I have tried it since a number of times and the same difference is observed. Dr. Hamilton had tried it and found it the same as my experience. I also asked Miss Burton to sing a few notes after the séance while I held her throat. The muscular action of the larynx was much more marked than it was during the singing in the trance when I held the throat. The singing in the normal state was not so loud.

I should have remarked earlier that I have observed during the sittings that the temperature of Miss Burton's hands rises very noticeably. When we start the hands feel quite cold and clammy. After the experiments have been carried on a short time the temperature to the touch rises and before a great while her hands have the normal warm temperature. I spoke of this to Mrs. Milton last night after the séance and she had remarked it before and said that Miss Burton's bodily temperature had never been right in her normal state and that she had always

---

\* Later experiments show what was probably done on this occasion, but without removing the perplexities suggested in the present hypotheses, while showing how simple the explanation is when once discovered.

noticed this peculiarity in her hands. Nor is the appearance of the changed temperature due to adaptation of the sitter's temperature to the medium's. I was careful to observe this. Whenever my hands were kept free from hers for a time during the sitting, contact brought a very perceptible sense of warmth in her hand, while at the outset of the sitting the hand felt cold under similar circumstances. It is evident that the séances have the effect of causing a more normal physical condition. At one of the séances I put my head down on her breast to listen to the heart beat and it was normal, so far as I could determine.

I have also uniformly noticed that, during test performances, the hand gets quite moist with perspiration. It does not show this peculiarity in ordinary conditions, but when a great struggle is exhibited to do something under test limitations the moisture is very marked and soon disappears afterward.

February 3d, 1910.

I learned from Mrs. Milton last evening before we held the séance that Miss Burton was menstruating and that she, Mrs. Milton, had not ascertained it until that day. I was glad to know this fact, as it enabled me to watch for evidences of its possible influence upon the sitting.

The first thing done, after going into the trance and locating the table, was some whistling. I treated this as preparation and made no point of it except to watch the localization of the sound which was as usual and unlocalizable in the vicinity of her face. My left hand was on her right shoulder. During the performance, however, I ascertained that the table had not been opened more than two or three inches. It remained so most of the evening. Later on it was opened to about ten inches.

At the end of this performance I asked that the whistling be done at my right and the answer, by raps, was that they would do so. I moved my head around so that I was facing the sideboard instead of Miss Burton and Mrs. Milton, the latter at the instrument, and moved my head and shoulders away from Miss Burton so that, if the whistling were then located at my right it would be out of the reach of Miss Burton with the trumpet. My head must have been two feet from hers. The whistling varied in its locus during the experiment, most frequently at first being

in the usual position. But gradually it worked further over to the desired place and at times seemed at my right, but not always. More frequently it was in front of my face some apparent distance and yet apparently out of her reach. I did not hold my left hand on her right shoulder so had no means of ascertaining whether she had moved her body or not.

The experiment, however, was tried again and this time I held my left hand on her left shoulder and my right hand on her right hand. This time the whistling seemed located as it did before, sometimes quite at my right, and out of Miss Burton's reach with the trumpet. But the most that we can do in such circumstances is to assign a general locus. It might be at my right at a very small distance from my face and thus possibly within the reach of her left arm with the trumpet. But I noted that her shoulder which I was holding never moved in the slightest manner discernible. Nor did her right hand escape control. But I twice felt something laid delicately on my head while the whistling went on. This did not alter the apparent locus of the sound, which seemed three or four feet away. We may suppose that the trumpet was in her left hand and that it accidentally came into contact with my head, while I was under a delusion as to the place of the sound. But it was not easy to put the trumpet in that position while I held the right shoulder and detected no trace of movement in it. I say nothing of the fact that the object seemed to be laid on my head from the right to the left, as that sensation and appearance might be due to the part of the object which struck the head first. But the locus of the sound was not right for that place of the object and so we are left to pure conjecture regarding the source of the sensation, with a certain difficulty in understanding how Miss Burton could have done it with the trumpet by the use of her left hand. My head was two feet away and her shoulder under control. Unusual dissociation in motor action would be required to accomplish the feat without betraying sympathetic movements in the right shoulder.

The next two experiments were very interesting, tho wholly inconclusive as to what was apparently going on. I made no effort to have the whistling repeated at my right and returned to my normal position of controlling the right hand and shoulder. I left things to take their own course. The whistling began

and was very clear, located at my right across the table and in front of Mrs. Milton. During it I noticed a peculiar imitation of the instrumental accompaniment connected with the song played on the phonograph. I moved my head about to be sure of it and to see whether it was an illusion on my part created by the varying swell of the notes and apparent changes of locus in the sound of the phonograph. It seemed to accompany the whistling and at times seemed clearly located in front of Miss Burton and affected by the resonance of the trumpet. At times it lapsed entirely or merged in the sounds of the instrument. Often however it seemed clearly distinct and colored with a tone that may be described by a hum, as if some voice were humming in consonance with the instrumental accompaniment mentioned. I watched the performance to the end and the sound ceased synchronously, as always, with that of the phonograph. During all this I said nothing and only tried to satisfy myself that it was not an illusion.

At the close of it Mrs. Milton remarked spontaneously that she noticed something strange about it. I asked her what it was and she said it seemed like a tenor voice to her but at times like contralto, some of the notes going down to this. On my remarking that it did not seem so to me but more like a humming reproduction of the instrumental accompaniment, she agreed that it was this and like a hum, but she could best describe it in vocal terms. I then asked the control if more than one thing was done that time and received three raps in assent. I asked if it was an instrumental accompaniment of the whistling and no reply came. I then requested its repetition and we started again.

I watched carefully at the outset and found no apparent accompaniment with the music of the phonograph. It played the same piece as before. The actual accompaniment of the song on the instrument was clearly there and of course unmistakable. But it was not localizable, as it had been the apparent accompaniment in the previous experiment. For some time no apparent humming occurred. Then it began in a weak and low tone and rose to very clear sounds located in front of Miss Burton and every now and then reflecting the resonance of the trumpet. The whistling began later, having preceded in the first experiment. But the humming accompaniment, if anything, was more distinct

than the first time, tho also at times merging in the accompaniment of the instrument or completely lapsing. It was a distinct imitation of that accompaniment and may have been produced by a voice. The whole affair, while intensely interesting, depends too much upon the power to distinguish between the various sounds of the phonograph and their locus to treat as evidence of the supernormal. All that I can say is that I never heard the same thing before and the detection of it was spontaneous and collective. If it had not seemed at times so distinct and clear as separated from the musical accompaniment of the song, a piece often played, I would not have given the case a description here. I should have said it was only whistling with the phonograph accompaniment. But the whole affair was so unusual that it deserves a place in the account, even if it be only a remarkable illusion.

Mrs. Milton suggested that they try to give us some lights and the music was started with the expectation that such a trial would be made. After some time elapsed Miss Burton placed her two hands together and put them in mine. There was much trembling in the hands and body, and after a long effort was made to do something, presumably to make lights, it had to be given up as a failure. This was repeated several times with no better success. Then as an interruption of the monotony some very weak whistling was done. This, however, followed a long attack of catalepsy. After the efforts to get lights which seemed to be very arduous Miss Burton fell back in a fit of catalepsy. I did not remark it at the time. I had noticed a constant resentment to my touch and did not care to resist it. So when she moved from me after the attempt to make lights I did not follow her up to see what she was doing. The silence and quiescence were so long that I put my hand up to hers on her breast and found them tightly clasped together. I felt the head and neck and found them stiff as a board. It took me a long time to get her out of the catalepsy. When I did, she began to groan and it was some time before any attempts were made on her part to do anything. When it did succeed after several trials the weak whistling mentioned was the first thing accomplished. Then a trial was made at something else which turned out to be a successful effort at causing lights. Mrs. Milton had closed her eyes and



did not see them. I simply acknowledged them by saying "Good," and remarked the character of the results at the end. The lights first appeared in her lap and seemed to be stationary for a time and then variously appeared in her face, at her left, and in front of her. They were not especially clear or effulgent. They were not like lights made with matches and were not always of the same degree of perfection, now being misty though bright and now a clear sharp point of brilliant light, though never so brilliant as I saw them last year.

We then repeated the experiment and the hands of Miss Burton were spontaneously placed in mine for a test. The same struggles as always accompany such tests followed, but no success with the lights. This was tried again and again, but without success. I then suggested, having in mind the whistling and touching of the throat the evening before, that the lights be started and then her hands placed in mine. We started to try the experiment, but nothing occurred and then as preparation and rest a very peculiar experiment at singing took place. It was apparently with the trumpet, the tones being very unusual as remarked by both Mrs. Milton and myself. Whether anything else was tried at the same time was not observable.

Then followed another experiment whose intention was determined only by the issue of it. I held the right hand in my right and had my left resting on the same elbow. After a time I saw a light in Miss Burton's lap and in a moment both her hands were spontaneously put in mine and I held one in each of my hands while I watched the light in her lap. It continued for perhaps a full minute, but without any except the slightest motion. It was a small point and fairly bright, but without any radiating illumination as I had marked in the other lights. Gradually it faded out.

Many more trials were made but without success. I then suggested that I thought the control should bring Miss Burton out of the trance. Apparently there was no notice taken of this. Certainly no raps occurred and the request was repeated but without reply. Finally Mrs. Milton suggested that they write their message. In a few moments the hand reached for the pad and I supplied the pencil. After hesitation and delay the following was written:—

We have done everything that we could to-night and do not like to leave until we have done something. I am afraid we had better take her in."

There were pauses in the writing of this and when I read it by the aid of the red light which I had turned up, we were in doubt as to whether it meant to take her in a deeper trance or to take her into another room. Mrs. Milton suggested the latter as the interpretation, because she had done this before at times. We then had recourse to writing again to determine the interpretation. This writing was done with the red light shining.

"It is her head and we will have to take her where we can stop it before we bring her out. Dan."

This was clearer than before, but not intelligible to me, save that it implied something was the matter with her head. Mrs. Milton was not sure of its meaning and the writing was done again, this time with the light turned out. The following was written, repeating exactly the previous message and adding to it.

"It is her head and we will have to take her where we can stop it before we bring her out. \* \* something [?] to stop her headache before we bring her out. take her away from the table. Dan."

We then proceeded to help her into the other room, and after some difficulty she walked, with help, into the sitting room and was placed in a large chair. I proceeded to rub her forehead and to make suggestions about her headache. She resented it at first trying to get away from me. I ceased and let Mrs. Milton try it with more result as far as quiescence was concerned, but presently she resented that. I then resumed the work with some apparent success in keeping her quiet, but with an occasional sigh. Mrs. Milton went into the other room for some purpose, and in a few minutes Miss Burton arose and started for the waiting room whither I helped her and she was laid on the couch to rest. She went quietly to sleep and lay there some fifteen minutes or more while Mrs. Milton and I conversed on the general subject in another room. As I had to leave to catch a street car Mrs. Milton went to Miss Burton and told her I was going. In a moment Miss Burton began to cough as she always does on recovering normal consciousness, and soon awakened. In response to inquiry she said she felt all right and

said she had no headache. She seemed as normal and free from anything unusual as I have seen her.

The interest in this reference to headache lies in the fact that Mrs. Milton told me about headaches always accompanying her menstruation either at the beginning or the end of the period. She had not indicated either to me or Mrs. Milton before the séance that she had any trace of a headache and had none when she came out of it. The phenomenon is either a subconscious and automatic result of previous experience, thus expressing a possible anticipation of the headache or it was an actual subliminal headache. Dr. Sidis has apparently proved the existence of subliminal hallucinations distinct from the ordinary hallucinations introspected by the normal self. If this be true, we have here a similar phenomenon in the trance, a subliminal pain which the normal consciousness does not know anything about.

I have not remarked the most interesting physiological and psychological phenomena of the evening because they ran throughout the séance and were not an accompaniment of any one experiment alone, but a constant attendant of nearly all of the attempts to do something. I refer to the perpetual resentment shown to my touch. There was far more reluctance to admit of my holding her hands or resting my hand on her shoulder or holding her head and face, tho there was never any discoverable attempt to do anything when free from this control. Many times I would put my hand forward to ascertain what was doing and I invariably found Miss Burton's hands quiescent and her whole body passive. There were long periods when Mrs. Milton thought she was trying to do something but when she was simply passive and inert. Sometimes she did not resent my holding her and there were occasions when I held both hands in a perfectly passive condition on her part, as if she were simply asleep. At others I could not touch her without a quick resentful jerk by her and her hands and body would move away from me as a girl would do who resented inadmissible approaches. I made it my habit to simply let her have her way in such situations, and it was following what appeared to be one of these resentful withdrawals that the fit of catalepsy took place. I never knew her to be so sensitive to touch and never more disposed to avoid improving

the opportunity to do something while thus free. The whole impression on my mind was that it was all due to the influence of menstruation and that the failures of the evening were connected with this.

### THIRD SERIES.

April 10th, 1910.

Present: Dr. Hamilton, Mrs. Milton and myself.

The present series of experiments had in mind the completion of the set interrupted by illness in the family. It has been one object of them to study the coincidences between the passive motor condition of Miss Burton and the phenomena that occur. I had noticed on previous occasions that very marked phenomena occurred when her hands seemed perfectly inactive, and I have desired to concentrate observation on this fact more than on others which can now be taken for granted.

After some minutes the table was moved as usual toward the phonograph and I made no effort to ascertain whether it was accompanied by evidence of motor action on the part of Miss Burton. But the oncoming trance was accompanied by the little cough which frequently occurs in this stage of the sittings. It was a cough as if there were some oppression in the lungs, tho not marked or distressing, and was a short abnormal cough. I had thought, in my first experiments, that it was a tubercular cough, as she had decided symptoms of this trouble. But there is no special resemblance between her cough at these times and what I have observed in other tubercular cases. It has too fixed and uniform a character and is not continuous enough to justify assurance that it is due to stimulus in the lungs or throat of a tubercular type. She never does any such coughing in her normal state. The cough is decidedly like that of Mrs. Piper and Mrs. Chenoweth in this respect. I have had a similar cough due to the irritation of adenoids in the throat, namely, single short contractions of the throat and expulsion of the air to relieve the irritation. Her cough, however, is accompanied by the appearance of some difficulty in respiration which I did not test and could not easily test under the circumstances. But it had the character of functions that indicate a genuine trance.

After the trance had advanced somewhat I took the right hand and found it quite cold and clammy all the way to the wrist. I watched it in this respect during the whole séance and found that it gradually came to a normal temperature or was perhaps a little above the normal before the sitting ended. Perhaps the séance was one-half or one-third through before it reached the normal.

Before anything occurred of the usual character the right hand jerked in an automatic manner a few times, as if to be taken away, but immediately resumed its position under mine and without being released from control at any time. No special grip is necessary to keep it under control at any time. I observed this throughout the trance and many times, in fact, nearly always allowed it to lie on mine or held it easily under mine, with such action of my fingers as to make sure what hand it was as well as keeping continuous knowledge of its place. This way of describing the matter, however, would appear to imply the possibility of some doubt about it and of discontinuous action on the part of the hand. If this is so understood it is a mistake, as there were hundreds of situations in control of the arm and hand which made such a doubt impossible and I mention the actions of my hand only to indicate the fact that I always assured myself of the situation of the hand and that it was the right hand. Nothing occurred that would require its use instead of the left.

Occasionally, as in previous séances, the hand was removed from my control. I did not resist it as I have found that it only delayed the occurrence of conditions that seem necessary for the production of phenomena, and whether they are what they seem or not I deemed it best to encourage their occurrence. Very often, as on other occasions, the hand would be quickly jerked away from mine and immediately returned and this sometimes without interrupting contact and often without interrupting it long enough to do anything with it. The action was purely automatic and, following it scores, or perhaps even more times, it volunteered resumption of control in a manner which would suggest a conscious endeavor to prevent what the automatic action might seem to imply was the object of the subliminal. Very many times I followed the hand in these interruptions to see what it did, when the interruption was long enough to have done something with it. Invariably I found it either by itself on Miss

Burton's throat, or with the left hand either on the throat, rubbing the face, or in her lap with the left hand, the two folded together and lying there quietly. There was not a single apparent attempt to use this freedom for the production of phenomena. As I so often remarked in other sittings, there was not the slightest evidence that the hand was released for any purposes but to wait for the proper conditions for producing phenomena and when these came the right hand was in its place under my control. Had it been employed with the left arranging conditions I should understand the rationale of the release, but no single case of this use of the hands was discovered, and whatever necessity there may have been for the preparation of mechanical means that may be imagined it could have been satisfied by the free left hand, and in fact no physical event occurred that would require any mechanical apparatus whatever except the trumpet. Consequently no importance for a theory of trickery attaches to the actions of the hands and the intervals of inactivity that accompanied the release from control.

There was no absolute uniformity of conditions in the hand or hands under control at any time and their relation to what occurred. All that did occur of any interest was the raps, whistling and singing. In two of these only, the singing and whistling, was any mechanical apparatus usable or required and this the trumpet sufficed to supply. It did not seem always to be used, so that one hand sufficed to satisfy conditions there. But I did not ascertain, in spite of the closest observation, any evidence that either a passive or active condition of the hands was necessary for the result. Nearly always during the evening the occurrence of any phenomenon was anticipated by a twitch or jerk of the right hand without any tendency to release itself. But I very often noticed that the phenomena occurred while the right hand was perfectly inert, and this was measurably true of both hands in the cases when both were under control. There was more agitation in the hands when both were held than in the right hand when it was held. But the two hands were very often quite passive when the whistling was going on, and any trembling or agitation that occurred in both of them had no appreciable connection with what was occurring except a casual one. I was certain that they had no causal relation to events. When the



right hand alone was held it was more frequently passive and absolutely inert than active when a phenomenon was occurring.

The first thing that occurred was whistling. There was nothing evidential about it, unless the fact that I rose and put my head between her own head and where the whistling seemed to be in order to see if I could locate it at my left and in her mouth, might show that it was supernormal. I first allowed my forehead to touch her hair lightly enough to prevent her discovering my action and to be sure where her head and face were. I then removed it in front of her and thrust my head as nearly in front of her mouth as the darkness and the fear of touching the trumpet, if there, would permit, and watched for the locality of the whistling and it always seemed at my right perhaps two feet distant. There was no alteration of this apparent locality from what it seemed to be when my head was at her right one foot or more from her face.

While I wanted to avoid the appearance of discovering the trumpet and its use I wanted to make the discovery if it was actually there. But, tho I performed this experiment a dozen times or more during the evening, I never discovered the trumpet but once. On this occasion I was holding her head in my left hand and at first my forehead was resting against hers and I moved it down toward the chin while listening to the whistling and in this way my nose came against the metal end of the trumpet in her mouth. It quickly fell to the table and the whistling ceased. But on all other occasions, tho I had thrust my head farther down than this time I did not come into contact with any trumpet. Several times, as soon as the whistling or singing ended I quickly put my head against her forehead, from its position in front of her face, and I found her head leaning slightly back and upward, so that it seemed impossible for her to have had the trumpet near the mouth when whistling. If, however, her face had been turned away while I held my head in front of it and then quickly returned to its position before I could touch it with mine, I would easily have failed to discover the use of the trumpet. But we should have to assume this in order to suppose that it had been used, as the left hand was free to do it. Further details in reference to this matter will appear in describing special experiments.

The second phenomenon was the sensation of a breeze blowing in my face. I said nothing about it for a few moments, thinking it might be an accident, but when it showed that it was continuous I remarked it to see if others had noticed it. Mrs. Milton said emphatically that she felt it, and she was sitting in front of me some three feet or more distant. I watched the breeze for some ten or more seconds and then put my face near hers to see if she was causing the breeze by her mouth and thrust my face out as far as I could in front of hers and found no breeze issuing from her face. My left hand was on her shoulder and I noticed that her body was trembling. It was not showing systematic muscular action, but simply trembling slightly. But nothing occurred to prove that the phenomenon was a trick of any kind, and nothing was discovered to prove that it was not this, except that it was clearly not produced by her mouth. What her left hand may have done by producing a concealed fan no one can tell, and there was nothing ascertained to indicate that a fan was concealed about her. The trembling of the body could not be used to imply this, as it was not of the kind that would occur if her left hand had been fanning the air. The muscular action would have been of a different type and would have shown sudden climaxes and changes accompanied by intervals of lapsed action. But it was simply rapid trembling such as would occur in shivering.

In fact, the really first event, preceding the breeze, was the discovery by me of raps while I was holding both hands. The right hand had been released from mine and I had followed it up to her face when I found both hands together and held them in both of mine, seeing a disposition to favor this by thrusting them out and toward me as if this was agreeable. I said nothing and when I asked a question raps came very distinctly in reply at my right some distance. I then remarked that I was holding both hands, and I proceeded to have it duplicated by asking questions for reply by raps. They were made and then when I ceased asking questions raps continued on the table at my right and apparently near Dr. Hamilton. During it Miss Burton moved her feet toward me, as if in memory of my former control of them when getting raps (Cf. p. 371) and I held them for a few moments, perhaps a minute, and raps occurred without any con-

tact with the leg of the table. But most of the raps occurred when I did not so control the legs. Apparently the contact of mine with hers prevented the phenomena or made them more difficult and she resented the act, after having intimated that it was desirable. But at some stage of this, whether coincidental with my holding her legs or not cannot now be determined, because Dr. Hamilton, who did not remark the fact till after the séance, put his foot forward and touched the foot of the table on his side and could distinctly feel the jar of the table when the raps occurred. He thought them produced near where he had his foot. The sound was not as if the raps issued from this point, and once the raps seemed very distinctly on my side of the table where Miss Burton could not possibly reach with her free left hand had it been free while I held her right. In fact, I held both hands. But Dr. Hamilton did not hear these raps and so no corroboration of my judgment could be had.

The next incident of interest was a spontaneous one. The whistling began and after continuing a few moments the left hand came over to mine holding the right and I took hold of both of them and the whistling continued for two or three seconds when it abruptly ceased and Miss Burton collapsed, her head falling forward into my hands. The trumpet did not fall on the table, as it does when the left hand is free.

Another attempt at the same result succeeded completely, and it was repeated some five or six times during the evening, perhaps oftener, and on some occasions under slightly altered circumstances of control. The control was offered spontaneously, and it was done once or twice, after preparing as it were for control by whistling without any control except of the right hand. Several times this control of both hands was offered and assumed before the whistling began. But in each case, save two instances I had both my hands holding hers and several times she spontaneously leaned her head against mine, so that my forehead rested on its left side against the right side of her forehead. Sometimes there was a little agitation in the hands while the whistling occurred. In fact, I had good opportunities to observe that there was no uniform condition subsisting between the inertia or action of the hand and the whistling. All the inertia and action seemed to be casual and without causal significance

in relation to the effects, save that we might regard the agitation at times as sympathetic and that is all. But the whistling was very clear and so good that both Dr. Hamilton and Mrs. Milton remarked that it was especially strong and they did not know that I was holding both hands. There was no such hindrance to the work as I had observed on previous occasions when I exercised similar control. The motor agitation, when it occurred, was not so perceptible, and the whistling was apparently not in the least affected by the unusual conditions. It seemed *always* to be located at my right as much as two or three feet. I was facing Miss Burton, so that the sound seemed to be on the other side of the table where Dr. Hamilton sat. To him it seemed in front of himself. At no time could I locate it near her face. Not a trace of it could be found to exist in the mouth or throat. I had fine opportunities to locate it there and tried with all my might to see if it was so, but failed. My head rested against hers and my ear within an inch or two of her throat and no sound issued from it except an occasional very slight groan which was distinctly located in the throat, and which I could not have heard had I not had my head against hers.

Only once in these experiments of whistling when I held both hands did the trumpet fall on the table. Apparently it was not used except this once. The whistling was as good as it always is, in fact, if the judgment of Mrs. Milton and Dr. Hamilton formed without knowing that I had the control be accepted, it was better than when no control existed. This would tend to indicate that the trumpet is not necessary to the effect unless we suppose that it is independently used and not allowed to fall in a way to make a noise!! This view I would not entertain. But certain it is that the trumpet was not used as in cases where it fell on the table at the end of an experiment, and this has been absolutely invariable in all other experiments where there was no control.

The one exception to this during the evening is very interesting. I had both hands distinctly under control and my head resting against hers, my nose almost touching hers and the corner of my forehead resting against the right corner of hers. The whistling was good and seemed to be on the other side of the table at my right. When it suddenly ceased and Miss

Burton collapsed, the trumpet fell to her left and then on the floor immediately at her left. The sound located it close to her, and the circumstantial evidence in this fact and the place it fell on the floor favors the hypothesis, to some extent a probable fact, that she had placed the trumpet on her left arm so that she could whistle into it while I held both hands, and when the performance came to an end the trumpet simply rolled off the arm to the table and the floor from the effect of the collapse. There was nothing to hinder this part of the phenomenon and the evidence makes it very probable, and I imagine we might say quite certain. But I am aware that imagination and illusion on this side of the issue is quite as possible, in the darkness, as would be an interpretation more favorable to the supernormal.

The next instance was quite as interesting as the one just described. The trumpet was not used apparently. I held both hands in my right and they remained unusually passive this time, making no attempt to get release and being very little agitated at any time. My head rested against hers as described and my left hand rested on the left side of her head and cheek, and her head leaning on my left shoulder. Her face looked upward, so that, if the trumpet had been used, it would have to be raised at an angle of about 45 degrees from the horizontal position. But as it did not fall on the table it is not necessary to suppose it was used. The control was assumed before the whistling began. It was a little longer beginning than usual, but when it came it was as clear and distinct as usual and in fact remarked by Mrs. Milton and agreed to by Dr. Hamilton that it was unusually strong, while both did not know what the conditions and control were. The sound was located at my right apparently two or three feet away and only two notes of it appeared to be located in front of me and to the right of Miss Burton. At no time could I locate it in the face or throat. Often on this occasion and others under similar or no control, I noticed a slight tremulous condition of the forehead, but only of the automatic sort and at no time having any appearance of normal muscular action. The agitation was very slight and like a very gentle shiver, in fact, barely perceptible.

On nearly all the occasions when the whistling occurred I placed my head between Miss Burton's face and where the sound

of the whistling seemed to be, and always found that it was located at my right. This fact seemed remarkable to me, because the natural assumption has to be that it was produced by her own organs and yet not the slightest trace of this could be obtained. Even the two notes located at her left and in front of me showed no traces of issuing from her throat. I have to emphasize this circumstance because I made such heroic efforts to locate the sounds in the vicinity of her face and throat. If the trumpet had been used this could have been intelligible, but in some of the instances it could not have been used without assuming that it was supernormally done and it did not fall on the table to indicate that it had been used in any way whatever.

There was some singing during the evening and once singing and whistling at the same time. There was nothing special to be noted about the simultaneous whistling and singing, as they were not done under control of both hands. Twice I had both hands in mine when singing occurred, but it did not last long and was not clear or distinct. In fact, the singing is never so striking as the whistling. No trumpet fell when I held both hands during the singing and in this respect the phenomenon resembled that of the whistling under control of both hands.

But the one incident of importance in the singing was its localization. In not a single instance—and I have remarked the same fact in the previous series of experiments—was the sound so clearly located at a distance as the whistling. In fact I could never locate the sound of the singing more than a foot from the face and possibly not so far. Sometimes it was distinctly in the face or near the mouth. This was so frequent as apparently a foot away. But the sounds seemed to fluctuate between the two points. Once, however, when I held her head in my left hand and leaned it back on my shoulder with my head near hers it was apparently below her mouth some inches. It did not seem to be related to the position of her mouth in all other instances. The effect was apparently labored and did not last long. There may have been an illusion on my part, tho I could not detect any circumstance about it to suggest or justify doubt about my judgment. It has to be conceded, if at all, without evidence. The important thing, however, in the singing is the circumstance that the localization was never the same as

the whistling. It always had the appearance of being near her mouth where it would be if produced by it. If the whistling was produced in the same way we would naturally think that its locality would appear to be the same. But the whistling, as remarked, seemed always to be far removed from the face.

Once during the evening, when something took place, that seemed to be an independent physical phenomenon—I have forgotten whether it was whistling or the stopping of the phonograph, which occurred once—I very quickly put up my hand to hers, as I was not controlling them, and found them in a perfectly passive condition folded together at her throat. I did this so quickly that there was apparently no possible chance for her putting them together as quickly without betraying some evidence of it in the right hand and shoulder, as my left hand rested on her shoulder and had control of her right arm. I had in mind the circumstance that, on the previous occasion of my visit, when the phonograph was stopped without control I had not quickly enough put up my hand to prevent the objection of quick action on her part to get her hands together, and so I did not wait a moment. I was perhaps not more than half a second in getting my hand on hers and there was not the slightest evidence that she had been using them. I was quite surprised to find them so inert and complacently interlocked. On this occasion, as well as the one just referred to, she had no reason to believe that I would try to test the nature of the conditions, and this would have had to be anticipated in order to have so quickly prepared herself against detection.

There were many attempts to do something else under test conditions, but they were not successful and I had no means of knowing what the intention was. But I remarked it from the voluntary placing of her two hands in mine and the usual accompaniments of agitation and effort to do something. Indeed I had to say to Mrs Milton to keep the phonograph on the same piece of music to prevent the interruption of the effort. It was not known or suspected by her or by Dr. Hamilton what was in trial. Once or twice when I said they wanted to try something raps signifying assent occurred and thus relieved the tedium for Mrs. Milton who seemed to think that nothing was in mind. On some occasions of this kind the ordinary whistling would be



done without control of anything but the right hand, as if in training for doing this or something else under proper test conditions. I have remarked this same course on many other occasions, and have learned to let things take their natural order for this reason. But there was failure to accomplish anything more striking than such as I have already described.

One of the most interesting circumstances which I noticed this evening, as well as in my previous series, was the spontaneous desire and effort to secure test conditions. Very seldom did I volunteer to suggest control of both hands by taking them. This was usually tendered by her, and I have found that it is just as well to have it so. This policy has its suspicions or objections for the sceptic. It might be interpreted as indicating previous preparation of apparatus or conditions for deceiving you as to the phenomena. This suspicion, however, would be stronger if the phenomena were like the usual conjuring tricks which require mechanical apparatus. But in this instance, where the mechanical devices require only to be a trumpet, which was evidently not used on many occasions, it is not necessary to press it too vehemently into the case, and other apparatus would have no relation to the phenomena. I have no doubt that preparation had to be made to do anything striking, as this was tacitly and otherwise confessed in the automatic writing, by the resort to certain non-evidential performances as if training for the test ones. But whatever suspicions we may have to entertain under the circumstances they do not seem to me to be important, since they are not concretely relevant to the results. But the spontaneous action in offering control of the hands was carried out in such a rational way that it had all the appearances of a perfectly honest effort to give genuine phenomena, and the failures to accomplish this are entirely favorable to the honesty of the performance, whatever we may think of the external character of the acts and successes.

Only once during the evening did Miss Burton rise from the chair. This was toward the close during one of the efforts to do something which failed. What it was we did not learn. But I detected the presence of Black Cloud by his gruff grunt. In a few moments Miss Burton would not allow me to touch her anywhere. She jerked the right hand from mine and as I

followed it up took it away violently and soon arose to get away from all contact. When I followed her up she jammed herself up in the corner by the phonograph, after manifesting every sign of either hyperæsthesia or annoyance, and I let her alone, having satisfied myself that she had resolved to persistently resent it. After a while she resumed her seat and we went on with the experiment which failed and Dan then agreed that we should bring the séance to a close.

In one experiment Mrs. Milton was told through the trumpet before it began that she should go to the other side of the table. She went and stood behind Dr. Hamilton. I held both hands of Miss Burton, after she had voluntarily put them in mine. Nothing occurred except excellent whistling. It was possibly the intention to do something else, but if so it was a failure. I had to have my mind refreshed in regard to what occurred in this instance by Dr. Hamilton, as I was a little uncertain whether it was whistling that took place, tho thinking that it was this. Dr. Hamilton confirmed my memory.

At another time I was holding both hands and my head rested against Miss Burton's and I thought I heard the trumpet make a slight noise on the table, but as it did not continue or get loud I supposed it was my imagination. I said nothing about it, and in a moment Mrs. Milton asked if I heard the whistling. I replied that I did not, and Dr. Hamilton agreed with her that he had heard it in very low tones but only for a few notes. This coincided with the time that I seemed to hear the trumpet touch the table. But the phenomena were not distinct enough to be sure of anything in this instance.

Dr. Hamilton did not remark to me last night after we came away what incidentally came out at lunch to-day when talking over the work of the evening. But he remarked to-day that he felt the breeze caused by the whistling in his face, and that he could both smell her breath and her hair. Now I did not notice any of these. The failure to notice her breath and hair, in spite of my proximity to her, is easily accounted for in the worthlessness of my olfactory sense. This was very much injured by catarrh in my youth. Of course her breath was not toward me often, if ever, but when my head was either resting against her forehead or put in front of hers to study the locus of the sounds,

I should with any good olfactories have discovered some sense of them. But I did not and it is possible that my intent state of mind on other matters may have suppressed all sensation of them. But it will not be so easy to explain the failure, when holding my head in front of hers, to perceive the current caused by the whistling when we suppose that it did not proceed from the end of the trumpet. Once or twice I was holding both hands when this whistling took place and also rose and put my head in front of hers, but did not feel any breeze. If Dr. Hamilton had been in front of me and where Mrs. Milton sat it would be easily explicable, but my head was in a direct line between hers and where he sat, so that unless there was a way of blowing around me I should have felt the breeze. But also I have not now any means of determining whether the times he noticed it coincided with those which are described by the above statements, and hence there may be no real problem in this matter. But suffice it to say that I did not any time discover the slightest trace of a breeze from the whistling tho apparently in a position to notice it if it did occur. Dr. Hamilton sat four feet away from Miss Burton and if he felt it at that distance it must have been either because it was caused by transmission through the trumpet, in which case I would not naturally perceive it, or because he did not perceive it when I was holding my head in front of her, and there is no way to settle which alternative is correct in the case.

Occasionally I observed, by holding my left hand on her right shoulder, that she leaned forward, but this was not very often. Most instances were unaccompanied by anything of importance, and in no instance did she betray evidence of fraudulent intent. What the object was in so leaning forward I never ascertained.

When she came out of the trance it was in an unusual manner. That is, she came out with less difficulty and showing fewer symptoms of distress. In fact, no apparent distress whatever occurred. There was no struggle either with the breathing or the arms. Occasional trembling of the hands and body occurred, but nothing to suggest the distress that I have observed in previous recoveries.

April 11th, 1910.

The sitting last night was to be devoted to automatic writing and so I was the only person present besides Mrs. Milton. The table remained in the center of the room until toward the end of the séance. It was not pulled apart until the time mentioned. We first tried with the red light and it was some time before anything occurred and the first thing noticed was by Mrs. Milton. This was raps on the table. I was intent thinking and did not hear them. When I asked some question pertaining to them, I think it was a request to know if they were rapping, the reply was three raps signifying the affirmative. I could not especially locate them. Miss Burton showed no signs whatever of going into the trance. She said she did not feel any symptoms of it. We interrogated the raps a few moments which repeated themselves on the table without my being able to detect their apparent locality, tho I could not discover any indications that Miss Burton was making them with her hands or fingers. Her hands were plainly visible in front of me.

We then waited for a considerable time to have the trance come on and it would not do it. I asked if we should turn out the light. No reply came to this. I asked if we should have music and the reply, by one rap, was "No." We waited and every few moments we would hear a rap somewhere, often not very distinct, and which we might imagine due to any imaginable cause, cracks in the wood, hot water pipes in some other room, dropping water on the roof or what not. But it was certainly not cracking in the wood and not dropping water: for it was a clear night and no such sound had been heard by me before. Once Miss Burton herself thought the continuous raps heard were the hot water pipes upstairs in the bath-room, and it might have been this, tho I did not detect any resemblance to such noises that I have previously heard in connection with hot water pipes. I do not suppose them to have been raps, as there was no evidence of this and they were too continuously like taps on wood of a totally different timbre from all the instances that were raps or like them. But there were raps interspersed now and then over the room at different localities. The apparent noises of the hot water pipes occurred but once and lasted perhaps for ten seconds and never repeated themselves. But the single raps

which occurred at spasmodic moments varied in loudness and timbre and locality. Indeed they were now here and now there with no distinctness of place. Sometimes they would seem behind her either in the air or on the wall five feet distant, sometimes on the table in front of her, or under it, or under her chair, or to her left, or even behind me, anywhere imaginable.

Finally a continuous series of light raps seemed to occur on the window-sill ten feet distant. I heard them distinctly enough, but would not at first indicate it. Then when they continued I listened and turned my head from side to side to test their locus and they always seemed to be on the window-sill in front of me and to the left, and behind Mrs Milton, Miss Burton sitting at my left and at my side. I asked Mrs. Milton if she heard them and she assented. I then asked if those noises were raps and I got three raps for "Yes" and they were quite distinctly on the window-sill. By this time Mrs. Milton had acknowledged their locality without my signifying what it was. The continuous series was interrupted to make the three and the raps subsided a moment and I asked my question and they were resumed in a hot fire of them when I asked them to be repeated. The interesting thing about them in this was their occasional discontinuity. That is, they did not keep regular time, as it were. They were irregular tho rapid.

I resolved to test my sense of localization of the raps on the window-sill and to see if they could be repeated there. Remember that Miss Burton was sitting at the table in the light about eight feet or more away. I went around to the window and asked if they could be repeated there and the answer came in the affirmative by three raps. I watched Miss Burton's hands and actions with my eyes and listened for the raps. They were repeated many times on the window-sill within a foot of my ear. They had the same quality as before and there were perhaps a dozen of them. There was not the slightest trace of perceptible motion on the part of Miss Burton or her hands. If the raps had been caused in her vicinity I could hardly have failed to locate them in that direction. But there was no mistake about either their nature or apparent locality on the window-sill.

After this they again appeared at various localities and often I could not assign their locus with any degree of clearness what-

ever, except perhaps once or twice and these excepted times were either under Miss Burton's chair or near her hands on the table, tho I could not see any movements of her fingers. The interesting fact was the general inability to localize them in spite of the experiments with my son and their results. There was no absolute uniformity in this, as the report here shows. Sometimes I located them well enough, but the majority of them were not localizable at all and jumped about as if to intelligently disillusion us from the supposition that they had any cause or source. They varied too in timbre, not being apparently produced by the same person.

We then waited for writing. But Miss Burton showed no signs of the trance, and I again asked if music was wanted. The answer was "Yes" by raps. The music was started, but Miss Burton showed no more signs than before of the trance and I asked if the light should be turned out and the affirmative reply in raps came. The light was put out and it was not long until the little cough signified what was coming on. But it was long before any signs of the desire to write occurred. When they came the following was written, and read by the red light, which I was allowed to turn up in response to question whether I could do so.

"The medium does not seem to be in a very good condition for writing to-night, but we will do our best. Dan."

Now the interesting thing about this is that whistling began just before the writing and this message was written while the whistling went on. Mrs. Milton did not know the writing was going on. She sat some six or seven feet away at the phonograph. Just before the whistling began the trumpet was evidently touched and perhaps raised a little, since it fell on the table, but was evidently taken up in a few moments and the whistling began. I soon detected the hand writing and held my right against the wrist to be sure that the process was simultaneous all the way through with the whistling.

We then tried again and apparently the effort was made to sing and write at the same time. I heard singing. Mrs. Milton did not hear it. The singing was evidently very labored, as I could perceive that it was faint. The same differences of locus were noticeable that I remarked the evening before, both in regard

to the separate notes and their comparison with the locus of the whistling. The whistling always seemed two feet or more away, while the singing seemed near the face, and this in spite of the use of the trumpet in both cases. There were efforts to write simultaneously, but they failed and as the music was changed by Mrs. Milton in the midst of the attempt it was given up. After a pause and apparent effort to get writing apparently simultaneously with whistling, the pencil was suddenly seized, after the whistling ceased, and the following was written.

"We are going to try to get our strength while we try something else. Dan."

As the light was dim when turned up I read the words "our strength" as "your thought" and welcomed it without reading it out loud. I at once began to think of Imperator and nationality of the woman he mentioned recently in my sittings with Mrs. Chenoweth for the purpose of testing both telepathy and cross correspondence.

It was long before any writing occurred, but whistling took place and there were perfectly apparent efforts to write. I found the pencil between the first and second fingers, as described in previous experiments and the hand endeavored often to write. Part of the time the effort was simultaneous with the whistling. Finally in a very scrawly style and with much difficulty the hand wrote:—

"You know that communication I gave to you last."

This was unsigned, but I note a scrawl where the signature would be. The content of it evidently refers to the communication in my previous series of sittings. I interpreted it as involving Dr. Hodgson, on any theory, from the use of the pencil. We then went on to continue the experiment, after I said I knew what it was, tho thinking of the Boston sittings. I resolved, however, to think of the cross, asking mentally that the sign of the cross be written. All this effort to get telepathy was due to my misinterpretation at the time of the words "our strength" which are clear enough. But no reference to Imperator or the cross occurred. In a short time the control wrote the following explanation of the message just described.

"That message was not finished but his strength gave out so he could not finish it. Dan."



The interesting point in this is the third person as compared with the first of the previous message. It coincides with the same phenomenon in the previous series and with the apparent import of the message here. I replied that I understood, and asked if the light should be turned out. Raps signified "Yes," and the light was turned out. It had been the red light as usual.

I kept on thinking of the cross and my desire to have it written. After some ten or fifteen minutes patient waiting and nothing occurring except some whistling, I suddenly observed a flash of light on the left glass of my spectacles. It was pitch dark. I turned my head to see if any light had come in the room from the left and no sign of it. But an occasional flash of light occurred at the same point in the left spectacle and I turned my head about from side to side to see if it would disappear or continue. It kept on appearing and disappearing at various times with my head in all sorts of positions and all the while a cloud of light appeared in the field of vision. The same lights alternated in the right spectacle glass the cloud being apparently beyond the glasses. Presently both eyes were occupied with a perfectly blinding sense of cloudy light until I could have seen nothing for it if objects had been visible. The field still seemed black at the margins of the retinal field, but a large area of vision was simply blinded by the light. I do not mean by this that the light was brilliant or distressing, as such lights normally are, but that I can describe the sensation and light only in that way. The effect and impression were the same as a blinding light minus the distress and brilliancy. This lasted perhaps two or three minutes, and then the field became the normal darkness. Finally I again saw a large patch of light, rectangular in character, and cloudy in appearance, and which I took to be the window illuminated from the outside. It was a little at my left. I looked at it for a few seconds to discover whether it was the window and could not make up my mind. I turned my head about and the rectangular field appeared at whatever point I directed my head, so that the vision was not wholly objective apparently. This continued for perhaps a minute or more and then suddenly ceased. I have never had such an experience in my experiments with Miss Burton, and I never in my life had the peculiar lights that started on the spec-

tacle glasses. Some of them were brilliant points of light like a reflection from a light at a distance, but there was nothing of this sort about. Later I saw a long line of dim light at the left hand window, and tested it as before. It never changed its place with the movements of my head and I was convinced that there was an outside light causing it, perhaps only the natural light of the sky as it was a clear night. All the other lights bore no sensible evidence of being caused in this way. The only one that is open to that suspicion was the rectangular light which was undoubtedly suggested by the window, tho I could never discover afterward that any real objective light had caused it. My opinion is that they were wholly subjective, whatever we suppose to have been the cause of them. The only point of interest is that I was thinking of Imperator a little before and the sign of the cross. I was not doing this when the lights began, and I became interested in the phenomena only because of their coincidence with the claim made through Mrs. Piper and Mrs. Smead that he is the "greater light." It is imaginable that the subjective effect could have been symbolically produced to awaken this idea and to suggest identity. But it is equally conceivable that it was either a casual set of hallucinations or hallucinations subjectively and subliminally caused by my expectations or wishes. There is nothing evidential in the facts.

Some time was consumed in this and nothing occurred with Miss Burton during the appearance of the lights. Then the effort began to do some writing apparently along with the whistling, as the whistling began and the attempt was made to write. Finally while the whistling was going on the following was written:

"don't you know what I told you about that night [?]." There was then a long pause and apparent efforts to write, but without success, until the following was written, without simultaneous whistling, and in clearer script. "I cannot seem to tell you what I want to. H."

The reader will notice that this is in the first person, and the signature indicates that it was intended for Hodgson, the first person in the language confirming the interpretation of the previous message in that form of expression. In answer to the first part of the message I answered oracularly that I knew what

he had told me and said, do the best you can. The second part was the response to this.

We then proceeded to get further writing and after considerable effort got the following part of a sentence: "I want you to..." and the pencil was thrown down. I asked if the light should be turned up and the rap was "No." I waited and in a moment Miss Burton said: "I see a man." I asked her to describe him. After some effort and perhaps the lapse of a minute she said he had a beard. After a pause she remarked that she saw a book in his hand and in a moment remarked "No," but could not say more about it. After further effort the following was written:—

"He tried to write something and was so strong he brings her out. Dan."

I could not read this and asked that it be rewritten. The following was then written in the red light.

"His influence was too strong and he brought her partly out. Dan."

I could not be sure of the reading and while I was trying to decipher it the hand wrote the word "brought" and I suddenly read the word "partly," "brought" having been a wavering interpretation for "thought." The writing then went no further.

There was then evidently some further attempt to whistle and write simultaneously, but it failed. Then apparently Black Cloud came in, as I found out by the sensitiveness of Miss Burton and the fact that she took off her locket and laid it on the writing pad. This removal of the locket is always characteristic of Black Cloud. He does not like it. I laid it on the table out of the way and from some apparent dissent I asked if I should put it back. A very decided and loud rap took place signifying "No." We went on with the séance and presently both hands were put in mine. I held them securely, with very little agitation on their part. Nothing occurred and I did not ascertain till much later what the effort was to do. In the meantime the hands jerked themselves apart and I let them go. Presently the right hand was put on the table and I took hold of it. I waited some minutes, Miss Burton remaining quite passive, and finally the hand raised toward her face and I allowed mine to go with it, as there was whistling going on at the time, and as soon as I

touched the face there was a jerk and then in a moment I touched the left hand which was against the face and there was again a quick jerk of the left hand and the head. The hand was above the mouth. I had expected to find it with the trumpet, but I did not find it so. The whistling ceased and nothing more occurred.

Then after a pause both hands were placed in mine and I held them for some time. Perhaps half an hour or even three-quarters of an hour elapsed during the experiment which ended in the following automatic writing. But in the meantime the hands were taken to the face several times and I did not catch the hint at first. When they were placed on the mouth I suspected the meaning and while holding the two hands in my left I held my two fingers over her lips and saw that they remained shut. There was no resentment whatever at it. Finally believing that it was not necessary to hold the hands I let them go and they fumbled about my arm now holding themselves together and now releasing their interlocked condition and sometimes going to her lap apparently and back to my arm where they would keep up the motion which I nearly always remark when holding them. Finally the head resented my holding the lips, having failed to whistle which was apparently the object, and the following was written.

"We cannot seem to do as we want to there is something wrong. Dan."

I replied that I understood and that we would not try further for this. But the control would not cease trying and went on repeating the effort. It was only failure. Then the table began to open and move toward Mrs. Milton and the phonograph in the usual manner. We got nearly as close to it as usual when the same efforts were made, I holding both hands at times and for a long period holding my two fingers on Miss Burton's lips. The result was only failure, tho the period was interrupted by a little whistling. Finally after a hard effort the control wrote:—

"We may not be able to do it to-night but we will do it yet."

I acquiesced and we tried again in the same manner without success. Then Dan wrote:—

"I believe we will have to go for to-night. We do not seem to have enough strength to do more. Dan."

I then brought Miss Burton out of the trance. She was a little longer coming out than the evening before, but did so easily. She felt somewhat tired afterward.

Nothing evidential occurred in the automatic writing, but it was pertinent in its manner and especially in the holding of the pencil, but there was no evidence that my mind was read when I thought the attempt was to do that. The experiments for physical phenomena, apart from the raps, were practical failures, in fact, absolute failures in all but the simultaneous whistling and writing, which were not evidential. But the most interesting characteristic was the perfectly evident honesty of purpose in trying to whistle while the lips were held and the failure after the long trial. We were fully an hour trying to do this. Once or twice her head fell forward in the effort and she had to rest. The evidence in scores of situations was interpretable only on the supposition of subliminal honesty. I did not attempt at times to control even the right hand and nothing occurred as a consequence. When the hands were free while I held my fingers on her lips the trumpet could have been lifted but this was not done in a single instance that I recall tho I was watching for it.

Once I heard whistling in the trumpet or without it—I could not tell which—when I was holding both hands, but I was not holding the lips. I do not recall at what juncture this was, and hence the fact was not told in its chronological place. Mrs. Milton heard only a few sounds of the whistling. It was very faint and Miss Burton was six or seven feet from Mrs. Milton.

Once also—and I do not remember the juncture of it—there was whistling clear and distinct when the trumpet struck my face apparently with the larger end. There was no apparent change in the locality of the whistling or its character.

In one of the experiments to get whistling while I held her lips I thought I might help it by having it done while I held my hand in front of her mouth so as not to prevent the thing by the effect of touching her lips, as I have noticed that this touch affects the results in any experiment, especially when Black Cloud is present and controlling. But when I asked if I could do this

there was an emphatic and loud rap signifying "No." I have seldom heard a louder rap in this case.

April 12th, 1910.

Present: Dr. Hamilton and J. H. H. and Mrs. Milton.

The first thing of interest in this evening's experiment was the peculiar partial anæsthesia manifested by Miss Burton. After we had turned out the lights and sat for the trance some five or ten minutes, Miss Burton complained of her hands feeling strange. I asked how they felt and she said they felt heavy and that she could not move them. I remarked that the hand I was holding, the right, was warmer than it usually was and that it had been quite cold when we sat down. I then remarked that this was the reason I was holding it, that I wanted to watch its temperature. She asked me if I was holding her hand and I replied that I was. She expressed surprise and said she did not know it. Before I had a chance to say or do anything more Dr. Hamilton spoke up and remarked that her hand must be anæsthetic and I at once felt her arm asking her if she felt it and she replied in the negative. I tested her arm and shoulder and no sensation was discoverable. To test the matter further Dr. Hamilton wanted the light turned up and I asked if we should turn up the white light and the raps indicated the negative. For the red light they were affirmative. It was then turned up and we tested her anæsthesia for both arms and her leg. She had no sensibility whatever until we reached the middle of the neck just below the vocal organs. From that point up she was perfectly sensitive, I testing it on the forehead. Her eyes were open and she could carry on conversation as naturally as if nothing had occurred to the sensorium elsewhere. We then turned down the light and resumed our position, I holding her right hand. In a few minutes she quietly removed her hand from mine and took it toward her face. In a moment or two she returned it to my control and remarked that some one touched her face with a hand. I remarked that it was her own hand. She could not believe it. I asked her if she felt me holding it and she said she did not. I said to her that she removed her hand from mine and touched her face and put it back. She again indicated surprise by the tone of her voice and said she could not move her hand. I then

asked her to try and lift both hands. She was not successful. There was not a twitch of a muscle in the right hand which I was holding. There was no evidence that she tried, as there would not have been, assuming her powerless to move it. Everything depends on her honesty in this situation. After some minutes' waiting the little cough occurred and then a jerk of the right hand which signified that its paralysis had disappeared.

It will be impossible to describe in detail what happened during the evening in its chronological order, except what I have just given, which is perfectly complete. There is no reason in this séance for doing so, as nothing of special interest occurred. It became apparent before we had proceeded far that the effort was to whistle while I held my fingers on Miss Burton's lips. I knew that this would not be attempted at once and allowed developments to take their own course. I held the right hand at first and let the whistling take place without attempt to control or even investigate the left hand. Finally after two or three instances of whistling which was very clear, tho the first effort at it was more or less faint in comparison, I secured both hands. There was no resistance to this and we tried to get whistling while I did so. But none came. The hands would move back and forward toward the face and I finally seized the occasion to treat this as a hint to seal the lips and did so, holding both hands at the same time. There was a long effort to do something, whistle as I supposed, but without success.

Only two or three incidents of interest occurred in this connection. While holding both hands the whistling was going on and I thrust my head forward so as to touch her cheeks with mine, to see if I could get the sound in her face. There was no resentment to this and while I got my ear on her throat and my nose and mouth within an inch or two of hers I could not detect the slightest trace of a sound in her throat, save now and then the almost imperceptible groan which she uttered and which was never located anywhere else than the throat. There was singing once, but not of any significance. We then returned to the whistling, as the effort had been to hold the lips and start the whistling under those conditions. At last after many and long failures, I asked Dan if he thought he could start the whistling and then let me put my fingers on the lips. Two raps replied



that he did not know. To the question whether he would try three raps were made to indicate that he could. We then began for this and after an appropriate lapse of time the whistling began clear and distinct. During it the hand which I had been holding, the right, would half rise to the face and come back, repeating the act and each time getting nearer the face, until finally I was able to touch the cheek in the endeavor to find the lips. At once there was a convulsive jerk of the head and the trumpet fell on the table. She was evidently æsthetic or hyperæsthetic in the face. We then tried again while I held her head on my shoulder and my left hand on her forehead, and her two hands in my right hand. In this situation we tried for whistling and succeeded in getting it once. The peculiarity of it was that it was not as clear as usual and not as definitely localizable in all instances. Sometimes it seemed at my right as far as two feet and sometimes directly in front of me beyond her face. This latter appearance was not often. There was much groaning while this went on and this groaning was clearly localizable in the region of the throat, my head lying against her right cheek. At no time could I place the whistling in the throat. The trumpet was not used on this occasion, as it did not fall on the table. The same experiment was tried several times without further success, my intention being to hold the lips, as I did. But nothing came of it except groans, some convulsive movements and occasional endeavors to free the lips. In all of them, however, as many as they were, no success was attained at whistling while the lips were sealed. There was no resentment whatever most of the time to my holding them. Indeed she herself signified that it should be done by the action of her own hands.

Now there are several things to be remarked which characterized many situations and which I cannot now from memory locate chronologically. It is in fact not necessary to do so, as nothing phenomenal was associated with these things.

The first thing that I noticed scores of times and all evening was her unusual sensitiveness to my touch. Even the right hand which I constantly held would at times show the shock of contact, tho not always. There were marked fluctuations in this respect. Always when it was removed from my control as if sensitive I would feel for both hands in a minute and would invariably

find them either in her lap or fumbling each other in the air near her face. Touch from my hand would startle them and set them to jerking away from me. Often her face resented my touch, tho it is just as true that often both hands and face were perfectly passive and inert to my touch. The actions of hand and head caused me to suspect that Black Cloud was present and exercising some influence and it turned out in the end that this conjecture was correct, and I have always remarked—so has Dr. Hamilton—that this hypersensitiveness and resentment to touch is characteristic of his control.

The second thing of note in this connection and accompanying the resentment to touch, and at times of any control, was the absolute uniformity with which she failed to volunteer control of the two hands. There was not an instance during the evening, until after we got rid of Black Cloud, in which she offered the two hands for control. I had to take this liberty myself. Sometimes there was quick resistance to it, and often quite violently manifested. At others it was slight and still others not resented at all, tho there was, always more or less motor instability of the hands.

Many times, numberless I might almost say, I felt for the hands when I did not control them and found them together in agitation. Sometimes my action was resented emphatically and more frequently not resented at all. Sometimes I found them entirely passive and no reaction followed my act in these cases.

Once she violently resented my touch and holding of any hand at all, jerking her body even away from me. I let her alone and in a few moments she fell forward with a hard bump of her face on the table. It took some time to recover her condition from this. She groaned more than usual but did not resent my rubbing her forehead.

There was occasional use of her voice and replies of yes or no to some statements of our own regarding what took place or was going on. This was unusual. She is generally quiescent and apparently wholly unconscious of what is said. On these occasions, remarked as unusual by both Mrs. Milton and Dr. Hamilton, she was clearly aware of events.

It should also be remarked that I tried an experiment twice when the whistling went on that showed apparent clairvoyance.

As I had not been able to put my hands on the lips I thought to run my right hand forward in front of her mouth very carefully and see if I could detect either a breeze there or the trumpet. I was holding the right hand in my right and substituted my left for it. I then put my right hand forward, I suppose about a foot in front of her face and before I could get it very far, tho it was perhaps nearly in front of her, the trumpet fell suddenly as if discovered and her head fell on my shoulder. There was every appearance of a discovery of what I was after, tho it may be a mere coincidence that it seems so. But I tried this same thing several times following this and the same result occurred. Before I got my right hand free from hers at times she seemed to anticipate what I was after and indicated it in various ways, sometimes by holding it and sometimes by following it. I succeeded finally in getting my hand partly in front of her face perhaps six inches away, but there was the same abrupt cessation of the whistling and the fall of the trumpet that occurs when you actually touch the face and are on the point of discovering the trumpet.

Another thing to be noted was the fact that during the evening she managed to turn her body slightly away from me to her left and often when whistling it was apparent that she turned her face from me decidedly. When I put my face against hers I would move it around toward her mouth so as to see if I could detect anything going on there, but she moved her head and face around to prevent any success on my part, and in many instances the locality of the whistling changed according to the position of the face, tho I could never locate it in the face. But there were all the actions that would be performed to conceal what actually took place.

Finally we asked Dan to explain what was the matter by writing. In a short time Miss Burton's hand reached for the pad and pencil. I supplied them. I had been holding the hands rather persistently. She wrote:—

"Just let her go for a few minutes while we through [throw] off this influence we can do nothing until the conditions are different. Lenore."

The hand writing in this is unusually fine and slightly different in character from that of Dan. I read nearly all of it and caught the meaning and acknowledged it, reading the word

"through" as *throw* purposely as I saw its intended meaning from the context. But the time taken in reading it prompted Dr. Hamilton to ask for its rereading and Dan at once wrote, in the red light, as follows:—

"Let her go for a few minutes until we through [throw] off this influence before we can do anything more. Dan."

When I read this I remarked that there was a peculiar way of spelling "throw" and the hand at once wrote it correctly on another sheet of paper. I did not indicate how it had been spelled. We then let her alone and in a few minutes she rose from her chair and tried to slip past mine. It interfered with her, but I moved my chair and said aloud you may go out now, and she did so, walking to the other side of the room, where she remained, now uttering a sound or two, and once replying "No" to some statement of Dr. Hamilton's or Mrs. Milton's, and frequently indicating that she was moving about from the noises she made. Once she apparently rubbed her arms vigorously to help remove the "influence." This was inferred from her known habits in such situations. Finally Dr. Hamilton went out and aided her to get rid of Black Cloud, as many indications showed he was present, and after much trouble and resistance she calmed down and came back to her chair. We then turned to experiment. I waited awhile before taking her hand. Presently she reached for the pad and I gave her the pencil. The following was written:—

"We must try to do something to prevent B. C. from coming he will not do anything right and will not let us It is so much harder for us in this way. Dan."

The interesting mechanical feature of this writing is the fact that the hand, after finishing the sentence ending in "let us," went up and inserted the word "any" after "do" and a little above it to make the word "anything." This was in pitch darkness. I was holding my hand on the wrist while the writing went on to watch it. After this was read and a pause ensued the following was written:—

"We will not let this happen again it makes it so hard after a struggle like that If B. C. would have let us we could have give[n] you fine lights before but this influence is not good for the medium we have told all of you that before he is so strong

and brings back so much of his disposition that he had here Dan."

We then sat for further experiment. Some time elapsed while Miss Burton remained passive.

Soon after this writing the right hand was placed on the table for my control. I held it and held my left on her shoulder. I did not know what was to be attempted. Presently I saw a light in her lap and asked for the music to be continued, but without saying why, as no one else saw the light. It seemed to be in front of me and in her lap. Presently a light was seen again in her lap and I then remarked it to Dr. Hamilton, who assumed a position to watch for them. He too saw them several times, once at her left side when I did not see it and as if it were produced by her left hand, which was free. But lights did not often occur and were far between.

After a while she voluntarily placed her two hands in mine, the first instance of the evening and only when Black Cloud had been dispossessed. I held them quietly and after some minutes Dr. Hamilton saw a light. I said nothing and only after he had remarked it again I said I was holding both hands. Presently I saw lights faintly in different places, but was not at all sure that they were anything but phosphenes in my own eyes. I had the distinct impression that they were, and it matters not what the suggestion that sustained this feeling. Presently I saw a very clear sharp point of light whitish yellow. It lasted for a moment and vanished. A little later I saw a little to the right of the retinal field quite a patch of very clear light, perhaps half an inch in diameter. It was as bright as any electric light, but after appearing slightly yellow turned into a bluish hue and remained for a number of seconds clearly visible, fading just as a positive or negative after-image would do. But before it did so it broke up into a group of brilliantly lighted points, still blue in color. This same phenomenon repeated itself several times then ceased, but a little later occurred again. The lights were clearly subjective to me, and were the first of the kind that ever occurred to me in my life. They were quite distinct from the lights that occurred the night before. They were so brilliant and stood out so clearly in the dark field of retinal action. They came rather suddenly and marked an exception to all my experiences in these

experiments. I am never troubled by phosphenes, unless I may say that occasionally, perhaps once in six months, a single point of such light will flash out for a second and vanish, but there is no repetition and no systematic occurrence of them as here. When they finally disappeared on this occasion there was no apparent attempt for them to reoccur. Their manner of occurrence differentiated them clearly from the other lights and also their action in the field as I moved my head. They followed this movement, and there was the same tendency for them to move in this field that we always remark in after-images. To me they were remarkably interesting as subjective experiences without any ascertainable reason for their occurrence either on this occasion or in any habits of my own.

When the effort to produce lights failed while I held both hands there was a signal in the hands that they wanted freedom and I let them go. In a moment the right hand reached for the pad and the following was written:—

"do not tell her that we could do nothin[g] Dan."

I could not read the first three words and asked for their rewriting. The message was then repeated clearly, and we proceeded to bring her out of the trance, which was done with considerable freedom from evidences of distress or difficulty, tho she seemed long in starting, but came rapidly when started.

Once during the evening I noticed a breeze and two or three times Mrs. Milton remarked it. But I was not able to study its origin.

The most important general remark to be made is the circumstance that the actions of Miss Burton that would suggest trickery of any kind were more noticeable to-night than on any previous occasion. The sitting was the poorest I have had from the point of view of even apparently phenomenal incidents. Dr. Hamilton said afterward that he and Dr. Smyth had always found poor sittings follow the manifestation of the types of anæsthesia remarked at the beginning. I have noted on more than one occasion that the presence and control of Black Cloud are accompanied by more or less failure in the attempts to get anything interesting, and also more apparent evidence of actions suggesting trickery. The turning of the face and body apparently to avoid discovery of using the trumpet at the mouth to throw the

sound of whistling at a distance and various resentments against touch or control are thus associated with the hyperæsthesia that seems marked with the control of Black Cloud, and they are contrasted with the better results and greater willingness to permit of control under other influences. This is a most interesting fact and some day may help to throw light upon the character and effects of different controls or trance personalities.

April 13th, 1910.

Present: J. H. H. and Mrs. Milton.

The hand showed no coldness this evening and the trance came on rather quickly when it started. After some waiting I asked if she felt my hand on hers and she replied that she did. There was no recurrence of the anæsthesia remarked the evening before.

The first event that occurred was whistling while I held the right hand. I treated it as mere preparation for something else and made no effort to either control her for a test or to determine any matter of importance except to see if I could locate the sound in her face. I could not so locate it. On the second trial her right hand made two or three abortive attempts to take mine to her face, bringing it back until the proper time. Once the whistling ceased in the attempt to so take my hand, but when it was resumed my hand was taken to the throat and placed on it and the whistling ceased. Then my hand was again placed in this way on the throat and the attempt was made to begin the whistling, but it failed. Then several attempts were made to whistle while I held my fingers on her lips, but every one of them failed, unless we suppose that what Mrs. Milton thought she heard once or twice be accepted. But I did not hear a sound and under the circumstances no value attaches to the sensations of Mrs. Milton. In all these efforts my hand was taken voluntarily to the lips and when I placed my fingers over the lips so that I could see that they remained closed both her hands would take various courses. Sometimes they placed themselves with their finger tips so that the rest of my fingers could hold them. Then their muscular instability being very slight and at times not manifesting itself at all, they would press on the sides of my hand holding themselves tightly against the sides, or folding themselves together remain



under mine, or go down and remain in her lap awhile. I did not care what became of them or what they did, so long as I could seal the lips. Their action, however, was a most important circumstance in estimating the mental conditions possibly or probably subsisting. Occasionally there was a slight effort to release control of the lips, but this rarely occurred until the music stopped when she indicated by decided resistance in the face and resumption of activity in the hands that she wanted release and I always granted it. But not a sound was heard under these test conditions.

Then followed some singing without control of anything but the right hand, I taking it as preparation for something better and so remarked to Mrs. Milton. I examined its locus as well as I could by thrusting my head forward and once rising to hold my head above hers and putting it down in front of her face. It made no alteration in my judgment of the locality of the sound. It seemed often as much as eighteen inches from her face at my right and directly in front of her. Now and then a sound or note was clearly in the vicinity of her face and mouth, as I always observe in the singing. But there was no such distance from her face detected in this locus as is always observed in the whistling. The reason for this may be apparent from further observations.

I asked if I might hold my fingers on her throat while the singing went on. This was agreed to through raps. When she was ready my hand was lifted and placed against her throat and her two hands repeated more or less the actions described in the attempt to whistle with sealed lips. But no singing occurred. There were a few spasmodic efforts of the throat to do something, but no decided efforts to release herself from control. When this failed she put her hands to her throat after the removal of mine and rubbed it rather vigorously, as I inferred from what I have noticed scores of times under similar conditions. I have noticed, and last night especially, that, under these test conditions, she perspires somewhat. This was observable on the throat and I have observed it on the face. Apparently the rubbing with her hands is to remove this perspiration, and it soon disappears.

As this particular experiment failed we tried another by my holding both hands, spontaneously offered, and resting her head

against mine. She herself leaned her head forward so that I could rest the side of my face against hers and have my ear close to her throat while I could watch her mouth. Singing occurred in this situation and I could distinctly locate some of the notes in the throat, but most of them beyond. The singing was not loud or distinct as when free. The experiment was repeated and soon after it began she voluntarily turned her head and face and buried them between the left side of my face and my shoulder, so that her mouth was shut up by the side of my face. I held both hands securely in mine. There was no chance to sing without my discovery of just what happened. But no singing occurred, and I asked for a retrial, as the test conditions were good. I again held both hands and her head was spontaneously leaned against mine, but without turning and burying her mouth as before. Soon the singing began and was very distinct, the general locus of the sounds being as I have described in previous experiments. Under these conditions and the distractions which the singing produced I was able to gradually move my face around by turning my head without sliding my face until I got my mouth and cheek against the trumpet in her mouth when there was a sudden collapse and the trumpet fell and the singing abruptly ceased. I do not recall whether there was any collapse at this point, tho there was no special betrayal of discovery. I simply recall that in one of the attempts, I think the next one to repeat the phenomenon, she fell forward into my shoulder and arms soon after it began, as if fearing discovery at something. But soon the experiment was resumed, and I got a little faint singing, but not under test conditions sufficiently good to be sure that there was even apparent independence.

But several attempts were made to get singing while her face rested against mine and under good security against using the trumpet and without escape from detection in case her mouth was used. The piece of music played was such that I could often hear its echo or the reflection of the sound in some way and the sensation might be mistaken for a humming of the piece. As I noticed this I had the experiment repeated twice more to see if I could be sure of singing. Often it seemed as if the music was hummed, tho I was sure that it did not occur in her throat, as her face was buried against mine. But the whole case rests so

thoroughly exposed to the suspicion of illusion on my part that no value attaches to the appearances. It is certain that there was no distinct singing and no distinct vocal notes. I could very often very distinctly locate a humming sound independent of the phonograph at my right, perhaps two feet distant, but as I often remarked this sort of echo with certain pieces of music, where singing was not tried or expected, I can attach no value to the phenomenon. I remark it as perhaps an illustration of what sometimes passes with careless observers as independent voices. There was no sound in her throat at these times, but the apparent humming and simulation of singing was very distinct, and how much my watching for the singing may have affected the perception I do not know. I have not discovered any tendencies to illusion of this sort in other situations and I watched the phonograph as carefully as I did the sounds apparently at my right. In any case it is certain that no evidence of independent voices occurred.

These experiments were followed by simultaneous whistling and singing which were very good. I held only the right hand and gave as much attention as possible to studying the location of the sounds. The whistling seemed to be located as usual about two or three feet away. I held my left hand on her shoulder and this would make her face about a foot farther away than the sound seemed to me, it being at my right and in front of her. The trumpet was used, as it fell on the table each time the experiment was concluded.

I then asked Dan if he could do some singing with two different voices and no reply was made. I asked then if he had ever done it and the reply by a single rap was "No." I then asked if he could whistle while I held the trumpet as I had done last winter and the reply was two raps, signifying that he did not know. I asked if he would try and the reply was three raps indicating "Yes."

I took the trumpet and held it in the air at right angles to the line from her mouth, and perhaps two feet away, with my left hand on her shoulder. No whistling was heard, tho I detected some groaning on her part at my left, as if struggling with some difficulty. When this failed I asked Dan if he could stop the machine and no reply came. I substituted the word phonograph

for "machine" and repeated my question. No reply was made and soon the hand reached for the pad and pencil. I gave them and there was a pause and soon afterward the whistling began and continued quite clear and loud while the hand simultaneously wrote the following, the trumpet falling on the table at the termination of it:—

"We did whistle a little but it is so hard to tell wether [whether] you can hear it or not we will try again Dan."

As I was about to turn up the light to read this, the hand quickly reached for the pencil, and I waited till the following was written:—

"We want you to hold the trumpet up in the air we are going to try to whistle this first we will try the machine later Dan."

I then took the trumpet and held it in the air perhaps two feet or less from her face and at right angles to the line from her mouth. We waited a few moments when the hand stretched out for the pencil and when the pad was placed she wrote:—

"you do not hold [it] far enough away."

I turned out the light and held the trumpet at arm's length and up in the air so that it was a little to her right and as far away perhaps as three feet or a few inches more. I held my left hand all the while on her shoulder to see that she did not lean forward or get up. The trumpet was at right angles to the line mentioned above.

The first trial failed. At its end the hand indicated a desire for the pad and pencil, which were given. There was written:—

"Play something more quiet we want you to get this while the conditions are good for it."

The message was not signed, but is in Dan's usual handwriting. In turning up the light I made a mistake and got hold of the key to the white light. I turned it on and instantly discovering my mistake turned it off, but Miss Burton fell with a thud on the table. I turned on the red light and read the message, turned off the light and returned to my position. It was some minutes before she recovered normal conditions of the trance. There was no apparent catalepsy. I had expected that the episode would terminate the experiment by disturbing "conditions." but it did not do so. I resumed holding the trumpet as last

described and a more quiet piece of music was played. On the first trial nothing occurred. In the second very clear but not loud whistling was heard and located at my right the full distance away of the trumpet. I could not locate it in the trumpet, but Mrs. Milton remarked afterward that she heard it in the trumpet. The small end of this was turned toward her. But the most interesting incident in connection with the phenomena was the clear touching of the trumpet by something at the smaller end toward Mrs. Milton. I felt this distinctly. It was a slight agitation or trembling of that end with slightly interrupted blows as it were. All the while my left hand showed that she had neither risen nor leaned forward. I asked that the experiment be repeated and it was, but no whistling occurred.

My suspicion is that the smaller part of the trumpet, which consists of two pieces, was picked up by the left hand and the whistling done in this while it was reached out to the end of the larger piece and made to touch it while the whistling was done in it. But no trumpet fell on the table at the end as usually occurs when a performance terminates. Hence I have no proof of this.

We then turned to the experiment of stopping and starting the machine. Mrs. Milton was told to start it—told through the trumpet—and to go behind me. She did so and placed her hands on my shoulder. I at first held one hand, her right in both mine, expecting that they would try stopping the phonograph with the left hand as a preparation. Soon the phonograph was stopped and suddenly with great swiftness her left hand was thrust into mine holding the right. I secured them both and in the meantime she had turned her feet about for me to secure them, which I did by putting my right leg around both of hers. In a few moments the machine started again. The hands trembled rather constantly. It ran some time and stopped again and in a few moments started again. This was done all four times while I held the hands. Just before the final act there was a decided effort to release the left hand. I clasped it tighter and held it securely. When the machine stopped I was confronted by a strong effort to release both hands, and I called for the light to be turned on. Mrs. Milton turned on the red light. In the meantime I was having the struggle of my life, so to speak. The girl fought like a wild beast to get loose, but I held her so firmly

she could not. When the light was turned on she collapsed and fell into my arms in a cataleptic state. I looked at the phonograph and there was one of the ropes which had been lying on the table, attached to the key which stops and starts the phonograph, with two strands hanging down. Mrs. Milton did not see it at first. I called her attention to it in the midst of a sentence in which she was expressing her gratification at the result, and her surprise was manifest, and also her anger at it. She removed it at once and I had no chance then or at any other time to study the mode of its attachment to the key. Mrs. Milton wanted to repeat the experiment and threw both ropes on the floor at her left some eight or ten feet away. But I said we could not do it now as she was cataleptic. She was as stiff as a board in my hands. We worked with her some time and she finally raised her head but fell back against the wall as cataleptic as ever and we were half an hour or more getting her back to the normal trance. I suggested that we experiment no more but bring her out, as it was now quarter after eleven. I asked Dan to bring her out and after waiting awhile and holding her head and hands, I noticed that she showed the resentment which Black Cloud shows to touch, and without saying a word about his presence I seized the two hands and pinioned them up against her sides and asked them to bring her out. There was a very violent struggle which showed that I had been right in supposing that Black Cloud was in control. I kept it up against a strong effort to get away, and finally she relaxed and her head, body and arms became limp. I supposed she would soon begin to come out, and relaxed my hold when she suddenly sprang up and started to get away. I tightened my hold on her hands and in the struggle to get away I got them behind her back and held them there until she relaxed a second time and surrendered, Black Cloud evidently having played "possum." After she got back into the normal trance, the hand reached for the pad and pencil and wrote:—

"It is so hard to fight off the influence of B. C. it makes him so angry when any one touches the medium that he will not do right and we seem to lose all power for the time if we could have some way of letting you know what was the matter at the time we could avoid all this by you just taking hold of her hands the way you did he cannot resist then he has to go Dan."

As I started to turn up the light the hand reached for the pencil, which had been thrown down, and continued the writing.

"read this and put out the light & then we will have a hard tim... [pencil ran off paper] time bringing her out but we will do it a[s] quickly as we can Dan."

We turned out the light and started to bring her out, when another struggle occurred in the process showing that the influence of Black Cloud had not been wholly eliminated, and we turned up the light thinking it would be all right. Presently the hand reached for pad and pencil again and wrote:—

"put out the light we have her all right now."

This was not signed and we started to bring her out when again the hand wanted to write and pad and pencil were given. The following was written: "do not tell her we could do nothing Dan."

After this there was no more trouble, but she was a long time coming out, remaining in a very limp and lethargic state during the most of the time, as if asleep. But when she did come out it was natural and easy, but with a complaint that she had a headache, which I tried to relieve by holding her head. I seemed to help her temporarily.

One very interesting incident occurred which I cannot locate chronologically. A rather plaintive piece of music was being played when Miss Burton signified by raps that it should be stopped. Loud single raps are the method of doing this. When asked if she wanted another piece of music three raps signified that she did. When the phonograph was stopped I found her sobbing. The other investigators have observed the same phenomenon in connection with plaintive music, of which she is very fond in her normal state, but will seldom tolerate in the trance. It will nearly always bring sobbing if continued.

The climax of the evening, of course, was the stopping and starting of the phonograph. I could see no other way of accounting for the phenomenon than a choice between independent physical action and a string or some other apparatus. The sequel shows which alternative has to be taken and the interesting thing about it is that I had no intimation of how and when the rope was attached to the key of the phonograph. There was time enough for it between the writing which said it would be tried



later and the actual experiment. But much of this time was taken up with the experiment at whistling while I held the trumpet, and her left hand while free had presumably to be occupied much of the time with the effort to get the whistling into the trumpet which I held. When we began the experiment there was only a minute or two before the machine was stopped the first time and her left hand quickly thrown into mine. But some little time had elapsed before starting with the experiment, when I held the right hand and she was apparently inactive. Of course, the dissociation of motor activity which is so marked in this case would preclude attaching any special weight to this apparent inertia. However that may be, in a very short time and without betraying any indication of the process the rope was attached to the key and the result followed. During it the key was once snapped showing that it had been pulled. This occurred just at the juncture of starting the phonograph. It did not occur in the other instances. The interesting psychological phenomenon in connection with the end was the violent struggle to get her hands loose, evidently with the intent of removing the rope and covering up the traces of what had been done.

April 14th, 1910.

Present: J. H. H. and Mrs. Milton.

Before the séance Mrs. Milton showed me the rope and the knot in it which had been used the night before in stopping the machine. The knot was an unusual one and according to Mrs. Milton was hitched on the key of the phonograph in the knot. It was a bow knot and allowed the two strands to be used, but I do not see how it could be pulled without untying it, if Mrs. Milton be correct as to the way it was placed on the key. But nothing is determinable now.

I learned from Mrs. Milton that after the sitting that Miss Burton was told to go to bed and it was supposed that she did so. Mrs. Milton peeped into the bathroom and thought she saw her lying on the cot there and herself went to bed. Toward morning Miss Burton came into Mrs. Milton's room to lie with her because she had a headache, and Mrs. Milton learned that she had lain down on the sofa in the waiting room downstairs and there

awakened near morning and not knowing at first where she was. She said she was possessed with a fear of something and a weight in her stomach, and that she had not had any proper sleep, but had been in a sort of nightmare. This was apparently the result of the affair described in the previous sitting in the discovery of the "trick." Mrs. Milton gave her some salt and hot water to relieve the distress in her stomach and treated her in the usual manner, and then put her to bed when she slept soundly until 10 A. M., so soundly that she never moved from her position.

Nothing was said about the previous evening when we sat down and very soon the trance came on. I tried her hand two or three times, both hands as a matter of fact, and her arms for anæsthesia and found none. But during the oncoming trance she gave a sudden jerk and I at once tried her again for anæsthesia and she was perfectly insensible. In a moment she recovered normal consciousness apparently, as she began to speak, saying that she saw a light. I asked what its color was and she replied that it was a peculiar whitish light. I told her to watch it and let it develop. I waited patiently and then asked the shape of it and the reply was that it was round. Finally it appeared to be oval or oblong, tho she did not use these words to describe it. Then after some time elapsed it appeared to be a face and developed into the face of a lady with dark hair done up on the top of her head and with dark eyes. I saw at once that the impersonation was not of my wife, as it had been before. All at once came a sudden jerk of the right hand which I was holding and I examined her, finding her anæsthetic and in the trance, whereas just before the jerk she was perfectly normal so far as consciousness was concerned. I waited a while supposing that the intention was to go on to something else, but presently the hand reached for pad and pencil and they were supplied, with the following result:—

"I am afraid she cannot do it now take hold [of] her hands for a little we will bring her out again and try once [?] more he [?] [possibly 'she' tho the writing does not give any true indication of this. Only the shortened writing of frequent occurrence lends suspicion to the possibility] is so impatient and if we cannot show it to her this time just let her go Dan."

There was no sign of her impatience in the situation. She

remained absolutely patient and lethargic, in spite of her apparently normal state of consciousness, and said little spontaneously about the apparition, unless I asked about it. After the next experiment it was apparent that the pronoun was "he," so that the impatience became intelligible. But almost immediately after the recovery from the trance by my taking hold of her hands for a few minutes and coming out with a jerk of the hands as she usually does, she saw the light again and the face. This time the light and face seemed different and in a moment she saw that it was two faces, one of them she said was the same as the one she saw before. I was not sure at the time whether she referred to the previous series of sittings last winter or not. The sequel could make it either the face then seen or the face first seen at the present séance. When I urged her to go on and watch developments we waited and she soon got the letter A and then the name Agnes. I waited a few moments and said I thought it was another name. I had gotten Agnes at some sitting in my earlier experiments here and it was associated with that of my wife as it had been through Mrs. Chenoweth. But owing to the promise made through the last named person, as soon as a dark haired lady with dark eyes was mentioned, I thought of this person and waited to see if I would get what was promised. Agnes was not the name, and thinking that a subconscious influence and memory had brought it forward I thought I would dispossess it by saying that I thought it was another name. After a long time she got H, and soon after this the letter M, after saying that it was a name with four letters. In a moment she said it was Mary, and at once fell forward. As soon as the name Mary came and just before she fell forward I asked which one was Mary, but got no reply. I found her in a trance again, held her hands and she soon recovered. In a few moments she soon saw the faces and remarked the name Mary again and on my asking which one was Mary she replied that it was the one with the blue eyes. This definitely identified it with the one who had appeared last winter, and to clinch it I asked if Mary was the name of the one with the blue eyes, and Miss Burton fell forward while three raps occurred to signify "Yes" to my question. After a few minutes and before I could take her hands she reached for the pad and pencil and wrote:—

"we will bring her out again and try to show what he wants to [do] he is so impatient for you to know but if she cannot see it plainly this time do not try again Dan."

I then took her hands again and she soon returned to the normal state and after waiting awhile saw the faces again. This time the lady with dark hair was trying to write and this appearance lasted a long time with no results at getting what the writing seemed to be. Finally Miss Burton said she saw the last name and gave the letter R as what she saw. I said that was good, recognizing that it was not the letter I had in mind, tho a natural mistake for it, and not wanting to discourage her. I asked her to go on after a pause and in a moment she gave the letter E as the next one. Supposing that she was giving the name backward I said this was right, and in a moment she returned to the R and said that it was P not R, and I at once said "that is right." Then she came back to the other letters and after a considerable struggle she got I. I admitted this and asked her to go on, but a sudden jerk showed that she had fallen into the trance again. I held her hands again and she soon recovered and reached for the pad and pencil to write. But during the effort to read the visionary writing she broke out with the expression, as far as I could understand it, "You make me tired." I asked if this was what was meant and something was said about talking. This was in a sort of semi-trance and occurred just before she fell into the trance from which I had to bring her by holding her hands. When pad and pencil were given her she wrote:—

"he wants to talk and he does not seem to understand how to use this medium and he thinks we are keeping him from talking Dan."

I read the words "talk" and "talking" as "tell" and "telling," when the hand wrote: "I didn't say tell I said talk & talking."

We went on with restoring her to the normal state again and on its recovery we got the faces and writing again, this time seeing a paper on which the visionary writing seemed to be done, and it seemed to be a large number of letters which she could not decipher. Then came again the jerk and the trance which I removed as before, and the faces appeared again after some time elapsed. She again saw the writing and the paper and finally

deciphered the words "try send through" with a word in the midst of the message that she could not make out and a few moments later got the word "away" which seemed to be below the others. Then the trance came again and the hand reached for pad and pencil to write and when supplied wrote:—

"don't play that piece any more Dan."

The piece of music had been played a long time, Mrs. Milton fearing to change it, thinking that doing so might interrupt the message. The music was changed and we proceeded to restore her to normal consciousness, so to speak, for continuing the message. While I was holding her hands there was a jerk and she seemed to return. In a moment she complained that her throat felt queer. I suspected anæsthesia and pressing her hand asked if she felt it and she replied in the negative. I then felt her throat at the larynx and she felt my touch. I then felt a little below it and she did not feel it. I then tested hands, arms, and legs and found her insensible. I repeated the touches on the larynx, throat, face and forehead and found it as before, sensible above the middle of the neck or above the line which separates the larynx from the middle of the neck, the forehead being as sensible as any other point. But she was anæsthetic below this laryngeal line. Presently a jerk occurred and I found her face anæsthetic and she would make no response to my inquiries. She was perfectly passive. The anæsthesia lasted for some time. But she must have recovered from it as during it I would reach up and touch her at times and whenever I touched the face she would jump as if frightened and admit she had been touched. It was a mere surprise natural to the situation. But no reaction occurred on the anæsthetic parts. As soon as the jerk announced that she was entranced and totally anæsthetic I waited a few moments and the hand reached for pad and pencil. The following was written:—

"I do not believe we will be able to do much more to-night it has taken a great deal of strength to get all we have and it would be better to let it rest for to-night than to force it any farther the medium is tired this is new and entirely different than usual Dan."

I then brought her out of the trance in the usual way and when she recovered she admitted she was tired and stated that

she was dizzy. This dizziness still continued for some time and was there when I left.

The interesting things of the evening were several. The first was the decided evidence that the jerks of her hands, which were exactly like all that I have remarked in the past, were signals of a change of mental condition and perhaps personality. There was not an exception to this fact during the evening. It was the sudden disappearance of normal consciousness and the appearance of total anæsthesia that suggested watching for this and on each occasion of the jerk I examined for anæsthesia of the face and found it with no capacity to speak.

The apparent fright from touch resembled the resentment of Black Cloud and suggested that partial æsthesia or hyperæsthesia correlated with normal anæsthesia may be the source of the resistance to touch during the trances, and it may represent various relations between partial anæsthesia and partial hyperæsthesia. The fact that the fright or jerk from the touch of my hand when she was not entranced may have been a normal surprise, as she has shown it in the touch of her own hand when partially anæsthetic, prevents us from doing more than conjecturing an identity between the condition and that of Black Cloud's influence. But their resemblance should be noted, tho there are also differences.

The most interesting thing of the evening is the group of personalities involved in the visual apparitions and their messages. The letters P E I are correct for the name I wanted if read in the reverse order. I had agreed with this personality through Mrs. Chenoweth to have her try at this case. She had been one of the communicators there with my wife and Dr. Hodgson, the latter also promising to try here. There was no natural excuse from the point of subliminal ideas for the writing to say that "he was impatient," a characteristic of Hodgson in his communications and a fact which Miss Burton probably knows nothing about; for all through the normal state in which she seemed to be when seeing the apparitions, she was aware that the faces were those of ladies and the subliminal should not have supposed that a man had

anything to do with it. But here he is represented as doing the work and the fact is that the psychological machinery of the affair is identical with that which is manifested in my experiments with Mrs. Chenoweth. One personality acts as amanuensis to get through the messages of others, and here we have an unconscious exhibition of an agent producing the apparitions without appearing himself and seemingly indicating that the persons appearing could not do this themselves, while the whole machinery reproduces a process which occurs elsewhere apparently indicating the identity of the parties. This is all the more suggestive in that it represents an attempt to give some message and to keep back the names which might be attributable to previous knowledge, while the allusion to "his" impatience reveals the person at the helm and repeats a characteristic which I have found true of that personality everywhere else.

Then the admission at the close that the method was different from anything employed here before and new to this medium with the natural accompaniment of unusual weariness after half the time of previous sittings coincides again with the interpretation suggested. The allusion to talking was interesting, as it represented a form of effort which does not often occur in this case. Black Cloud will sometimes grunt out something, but there has been no apparent effort to communicate by talking in the trance of this case. She is usually incapable of it and has to employ raps to signify what she wants to say. Apparently a new method of communicating was tried on this occasion, and it coincides with the methods employed through Mrs. Chenoweth, always in the Starlight control and occasionally as the method of getting the messages to Mrs. Chenoweth's mind in Subliminal II. Apparently it occurs in the automatic writing on occasion when some confusion arises. But I cannot be assured here and the main point is a new effort with the personalities from whom I would expect a new method, and when added to the persistence of the attempt and apparently a partial success the evening proved to be a most interesting one.

The séance lasted only two hours this evening, whereas



it is usually three or four hours. This shorter period also coincides with the time recommended for the limits in the cases with which I work.

April 15th, 1910.

Present at Dr. Smyth's, Mrs. Milton, Dr. Smyth, J. H. H.

It had been previously arranged to hold some of the sittings at Dr. Smyth's for the purpose of excluding various hypotheses that might be based upon the chances to prepare for various phenomena in connection with their own phonograph in their own home. I had rented a phonograph and some music. But after an hour's trial Miss Burton could not go into the trance. Mrs. Milton had expressed a fear before the séance began that Miss Burton might not be able to do anything because she had exposed herself in the open air during the day in a low-necked dress. But whatever influence may have been attributed to this, the character of the phonograph was such that no sensitive person could easily do anything. It was a rasping noisy affair, and together with the associations of a physician's office and its various paraphernalia, was enough to prevent any one from going into a trance. We gave up and returned to Mrs. Milton's home where we tried again. Dr. Smyth remained at home.

Only a few minutes elapsed before Miss Burton went into the trance at her home. But she was lethargic and did absolutely nothing for perhaps three quarters of an hour or an hour. Then when I proposed that we give it up and bring her out, in a few moments, her hand reached for the pad and pencil, and the hand wrote:—

"We are so sorry the conditions are so upset that it will be impossible for us to do anything \* \* the medium must \* \* off this condition Dan."

The pencil was thrown down and I tore off the sheet and asked if the light should be turned up, but the hand suddenly reached for the pencil and wrote again:—

"You will not need to sit here it will be better to let her go and lie down and we will try to stop this disturbance Dan."

I took hold of her to help her walk into the other room where the sofa was, but she was lethargic and it was some seconds

before any muscular tonicity was observable. Then she slightly resented my putting my arm about her to assist her, but in a moment yielded and arose. She walked without any difficulty except for slight staggering and the natural influence of darkness, tho she soon overcame this. Some half an hour later I went in to her and found her slightly groaning and sensitive, but apparently in the trance. She was in this when I left. There were a few light raps during the experiment in answer to questions.

I made a somewhat careful examination of the phonograph key last night and the possibilities of controlling it with the rope which had been used to stop it. I was able to tie in it the same knot which was found in it on the evening of the experiment. I put it over the key and found that I could start and stop the machine without any difficulty by pulling the cord and then letting it relax. There was spring enough in the key to resume its position and stop the machine when once started. It required but little motion to effect this. But I could not stop the machine if I snapped the key, as this fastened it so that it had to be pulled back. It will snap and fasten at either end in the same way, but I could not make it snap at the farther end which stopped the machine. Once it snapped on the evening of the discovery, but I do not now know at what juncture it did so. Had it done this by pulling the rope toward us the machine would not have stopped and it did stop just before the light was turned up. Had Mrs. Milton not removed the rope we might have ascertained the condition of things.

One thing I have not remarked in previous notes, but which I have observed and intended to mention. It is the fact that quite frequently I have noticed, when holding my head against her face and forehead, that Miss Burton seems to be winking. The eye lashes were apparently and distinctly felt against my face. If this be true it is evident that she opens her eyes in the darkness and closes them when the light is turned on. She winces even when the red light is turned on and will collapse if the white light is turned up. But if her eyes are opened in the dark she probably shows various visual phenomena which we have not been able to detect, except on one occasion winter before last when she saw the light that Dr. Smyth produced in imitation of her

own lights. Here we should have to assume telepathy or clairvoyance to eliminate the supposition that her eyes were open.

I learned last night also that Mrs. Milton has frequently discovered Miss Burton in a trance during the daytime. On one occasion she was thought to be asleep by some member of the household and on Mrs. Milton's attention being called to it the pad was found in her lap and a remarkably important letter of an admonitory character was written to Mrs. Milton's father by her deceased mother. On other occasions she has thus spontaneously gone into the trance and written. The instance in my record at home during the illness of my daughter is another illustration.

April 17th, 1910.

I made a further examination of the phonograph again and found that the key would snap back to stop the machine if started. I was not able to make it do this in my experiments with the rope attached to it. But as it occurred on the evening of the exposure and but once, it is more than probable that it was an accidental situation in which it occurred, the friction of the rope having been in some way lessened. Consequently there is no further perplexity about the incident.

April 16th, 1910.

Present: J. H. H. and Mrs. Milton.

I suggested to the waking state that we try to get the name of the person tried for evening before last and we sat with this desire. It was some time before anything occurred and no trace of an apparition showed itself in this first effort. I tried for anæsthesia in the hand two or three times and none was discoverable. Finally after a long wait the usual jerk occurred and Miss Burton was instantly in a trance, and I could get neither oral nor motor response from her. There was then some good whistling and rans in response to questions about the music. Finally some rapid raps occurred and we thought they were a change of music, but this was denied. The raps were repeated and we could not discover what was wanted. In a moment Miss Burton's left hand was put over to mine holding her right and I took the hint

as a desire to hold them for bringing her out to try for the apparitions. I quietly seized both hands and remained silent. In a few moments, perhaps a minute, there was a jerk in the hand, followed by another and she had recovered normal consciousness. We waited a long time for any appearance of the apparitions. The only thing that took place was the remark by Miss Burton that it seemed so dark and black. I remarked that it would come all right, but soon after this there was the usual jerk of the hand and she was in the trance again. She reached for the pad and pencil and wrote:—

"She did not seem to be in the right condition for seeing just then bring her out again Dan."

I again brought her out by holding her hands. Presently she saw a white cloud and it soon developed into a clearer white. After waiting some time she suddenly asked, "Did you say anything?" and I remarked that I did not, and told her it was the spirits talking to her and said she should listen to them, remembering what had been said a previous evening about it. Presently she saw two persons and in a few moments recognized that they were the same two ladies that she saw before. Finally she suddenly saw a capital letter P and I recognized it as all right and a few moments later said it was correct, that I might stop further effort on that. There was a long pause and nothing more came. But suddenly again she broke out orally, "What did you say?" I replied "Nothing." Presently there was a jerk again and she was instantly in a trance and the hand reached for pad and pencil and wrote:—

"I tried to tell her She was not on our side but she thinks it is you talking H."

After holding her hands again she recovered consciousness and we tried farther for the name. Finally she got the letters "er" and then the name "Piper," which I acknowledged, because it was pertinent, tho not the name I wanted. I saw it was coincident with the communications about that case at Mrs. Chenoweth's and wanted to see if anything farther would develop. It did not. Afterward Mrs. Milton said the moment Miss Burton got the letter P she, Mrs. Milton, saw a line of light like an electric light, a little oblique in direction and then repeated vertically when the name Piper was given. She construed it to mean the

Piper light, she being familiar with the fact that mediums are called lights, but did not know that this particular expression was applied to Mrs. Piper and saying that she had never heard me use it. This is correct, as I always avoid this for the purpose of having its spontaneous use by or through a medium more suggestive.

At this time I did not admit that the name was wrong, but accepted it with the hope of further developments. They did not come in that direction. After a long wait Miss Burton got the letter H, and recognizing that it might be the initial letter of the name which the personality, whose name I wanted, called me in the Chenoweth case, I accepted it and asked her to go on. Finally she said it sounded like an Indian name and I admitted that I understood this. She had remarked also that it was a long name. The two things together confirmed the possibility that the name "Hurricane" was in mind, tho not making it clear enough to let it alone.

As one of the earliest incidents of the sitting had been the current of air which we often remark I thought to try a question and help the thing along by a few questions. I asked Dan if he knew who had caused the breeze at the first and three raps signified "Yes." I then asked if the person who caused it was the one whose name they were trying to give. The answer from the standpoint of suggestion should have been "Yes," but it was one rap for "No." This accorded both with the subliminal habits of Miss Burton and the absence of suggestion in the answer. I had hoped that the very idea of a breeze might help to get some sort of response that would farther confirm the possible meaning of the name in mind. But nothing came of it.

After another wait Miss Burton remarked that she felt a breeze. I had noticed it a few moments before but said nothing, desiring to ascertain whether it was caused by her left hand. When she spoke of it I quietly reached for her left hand and found it lying on the table, my right all the while holding her right. She asked if I was touching her hand and I said I was. But she did not resent it. She presently remarked that she felt the breeze in her face. I felt it on my hand and in my face. Mrs. Milton remarked it for some time and so did Miss Burton. It is certain that she did not produce it with her hands, as I held

both of them and no movements of them occurred. Whether she could have caused the breeze by her mouth without revealing the noise naturally accompanying such an effort I do not know at this writing. But her hands did not in any way cause it. How it could simultaneously be felt on my hand and face I do not see, supposing her mouth caused it. The same with Mrs. Milton's sensation of it, as she sat opposite me and at Miss Burton's left, three or four feet distant.

When this ceased we went on with the effort to get the name. After a long effort Miss Burton fell forward and in a few moments I reached for her left hand to hold it and enable her to recover consciousness. But she reached for the pencil and then straightened up and wrote:—

"We must let her rest a little it is all so new to her this part of it but I think she can get it yet Dan."

We let her rest awhile and finally she placed her left hand on the table with her right in mine and I took it as a hint to recover normal consciousness, and she soon became normal. It was done in less than a minute and recovery was marked, as usual, with a jerk of the hands. We tried for the same again and further indications occurred of the long Indian name, without saying that it was Indian, but nothing could be obtained. In the beginning of the effort she saw a man with the lady in dark hair but could not describe him. He soon disappeared. At a point in this effort Mrs. Milton changed the music and the moment the new piece began to be recognizable Miss Burton suddenly jerked her right hand away from mine and withdrew her body from me, resenting my further attempt to touch or hold her hand. Before Mrs. Milton had time to know this she saw that the piece of music was one that affected Black Cloud, as she told me afterward, and stopped the machine. But it was too late to prevent the obsession of Black Cloud. I saw what I had to do and took hold of her hands and there followed a long and very hard struggle to exorcise him. Miss Burton showed great muscular strength and resistance and now and then an apparent effort to play "'possum," tho I am not sure of this. Finally she relaxed and after a pause reached for the pad and pencil when the hand wrote:—

"do not bring her back by a thought You did just right that is the only way to get rid of him It is almost impossible for us

to manifest when he is here he will not have any one come in contact with the medium Dan."

I then held her hands a moment and she recovered normal consciousness, and we proceeded with the attempt to get the name I wanted. It was somewhere at this juncture of affairs that I remarked to Mrs. Milton when she told me about the light she saw in connection with the letter P and the name Piper, that Piper was not the name I wanted, tho it was pertinent. After a while Miss Burton tried the name Parmer. I simply said "Very good," without further admission, tho it was not the name I wanted. I do not know the surname of the person that I had in mind. It has never been given me. It begins with the letter P, and it was her Christian name that I wanted. Finally there was again the usual jerk of the hand and Miss Burton was in the trance and reaching for pad and pencil she wrote:—

"There are so many of your friends here and they are so anxious to give you that name I think the medium is to [too] tired to get it good Dan."

As soon as I read this I suggested bringing her out. Her eyes were open in the red light and at once her head fell forward and I turned the light out. A few moments holding of her hands brought her back to normal consciousness and the sitting was at an end. She felt dizzy after it and somewhat tired.

Once during the evening—at what juncture I do not recall—she complained of feeling queer and I asked her if she felt my hand on hers and she replied that she felt its pressure. I then tried the left hand and she felt the same sensation. I tried her neck and she felt the touch. Apparently there was a restrained tendency to anæsthesia which was inhibited. She remarked once or twice during the experiments that she never before, save on the previous occasion, had experienced an attempt to have them talk to her. It was clear on any theory that she thought me trying to talk to her, and only when I renounced the fact did she turn her attention to another source. There was an apparent attempt to keep her in the intermediate condition necessary to the use of her vocal organs and hearing while rapport was sustained for



the results. Any relapse into the trance stopped the whole affair.

The allusion to her not being "on their side" was true from the standpoint of the Piper case and Dr. Hodgson's ideas, who seemed to be the communicator, and this idea has never been expressed previously in this case.

The getting of the name Piper this evening deprives the letters of their apparent significance as given the previous evening. The letter P confirms the interpretation which I made of the letter R as a mistake for it, tho the supposition that it was the final letter in the name Piper which was being given backward might represent its meaning. Then the apparent correction to P would mean simply the reversal of the attempt and the effort to get the name in its direct order. But the letters "i" and "e" would not confirm this, except we suppose that they were fragments of the name and tho they came as if gotten backward they may have actually been obtained in the reverse order only at later times to suit the appearance of getting them backward. But the result this evening spoils the apparent significance of the result before, and makes the whole affair seem like pure guessing, and such it may be, tho I did not get enough to prove this hypothesis.

On the other hand, the continued effort to get the name and the association of a man with the apparitions, before I had indicated to Mrs. Milton that the name Piper was wrong, suggests the consciousness that I had not secured the right name. Whether this was inferrible from my manner and reception of the name Piper I do not know.

One interesting circumstance of this and the previous experiment of the same kind is the absence of all influence from the music to entrance Miss Burton. The natural assumption from all the ordinary experiments is that the music would act as a suggestion to produce the trance but it had no sensible causal effect on Miss Burton in this respect. The whole affair was apparently a rationally constructed effort to get messages by a new method representing psychological adaptations like those of Mrs. Piper and Mrs. Chenoweth about which Miss Burton knows nothing. The very production of

the whistling as a means of bringing about the required condition for the experiment in a different manner from the previous attempts and the voluntary return to the normal state for this end and without suggestion from me, the absolute lack of influence from the music for long periods, and the systematic adjustment of each crisis to the true situation represent an interesting psychological situation. Dan seems to have one object and that at variance with the object of Black Cloud, but the whole effort was to rationally adjust conditions, even the restraint of anæsthesia, to meet the demands of the experiment.

I neglected to remark one circumstance in connection with the dispossession of Black Cloud. It was interesting to notice that Dan said I should not bring her out "by thought" and that I had done "just right." On all previous occasions Mrs. Milton had pleaded with Black Cloud to leave and I followed her attitude and action. This time, however, I simply held the hands and said nothing, save the expression "it will be all right" two or three times. The expression "by thought" would suggest that there was no true sensation in what I said or in what had always before been uttered, in the effort to remove Black Cloud. What we did seemed to be only "thought."

April 17th, 1910.

Present: J. H. H. and Mrs. Milton.

Before the sitting I suggested that we have lights in this experiment. During the oncoming of the trance I tested the hand often for anæsthesia and no trace of it was discovered, Miss Burton always saying that she felt my hand. I tested the arm and neck in the same way. Finally there was a slight jerk of the hand and I tested it again and she said she felt my hand. In a few seconds there was another jerk a little more definite and I found her anæsthetic all over the arms and face, and suppose she was so all over the body.

There soon followed some whistling in a very clear manner, as excellent as any that I have heard. Immediately after this the two hands were put together and placed in mine and an attempt

made to do something, but failed. This was repeated and I got very distinct whistling located at my right some distance while I held both hands and had my head quite in front of Miss Burton's and within a few inches of her face. I did not detect the slightest indication that the whistling was with her mouth.

We started to go on with another experiment and a flash of lightning showed that a storm was coming and as the flash illuminated some few points at the window Miss Burton winced and came near collapsing. But she soon recovered and we went on with the experiment. We got some simultaneous whistling and singing while I held both hands. At first I did not detect the singing, tho Mrs. Milton did, but finally I got it very clearly. I could notice that the singing seemed near her face, but the whistling did not. On none of the occasions on which I held both hands was there any evidence of the use of the trumpet. It never fell on the table, as it always does when the left hand is free. This peculiarity shows that the trumpet is not absolutely necessary for the whistling. But it is just as clear to me that the whistling is not nearly so good without as with the use of the trumpet. With the trumpet it is clearer, more skilled and artistic. Without it, tho I still found the locus as with it, it was less, much less, artistic and distinct, so that the trumpet is an important factor in the character of the work.

During the long efforts to get whistling and singing while holding both hands we were interrupted frequently by flashes of lightning which delayed the experiments and probably produced conditions which prevented the evening from proving as fruitful as it promised to be at the outset. There was a long period, perhaps three quarters of an hour, in which Miss Burton was perfectly lethargic. I held her hands most of the time and there was no convulsive motor action, no resistance to the control, and no attempt to do anything. We tried to get raps to find out what the matter was. But there was no response, and it mattered not whether her hands were free or controlled. Finally Mrs. Milton suggested to Dan that he explain by writing what the matter was. There was no immediate response to this, but in a few minutes the hand reached for the pad and pencil and wrote:—

"We cannot seem to find out the real trouble but we cannot

seem to get anything through we are trying all the time but you do not seem to hear any of it Dan."

Whether it was before or after this that I asked—I think it was before—if they got the whistling on their side and the answer was "Yes" in three raps. We remarked that we heard nothing. I had been prompted to this inquiry by the long and earnest efforts to whistle when I got nothing audible. A few times I thought I had heard a faint whistle, and once Mrs. Milton heard it merging in with the music of the phonograph and when the trial was repeated I also heard it. Once I got two notes apparently from her face while I had excellent control and my face directly in front of her. At other times no such location could be detected. I am not sure that on this occasion it was the whistling, as it might have been two notes of the machine which could have produced the effect apparently in that locality. But my impression was that it was the whistling. The frequent failures with the earnest effort to be successful made me think that, perhaps, the mental states had not been repeated in the motor system and asked if they got the whistling on their side with the affirmative answer.

Early in the evening, while I was holding both hands, Mrs. Milton asked some question and raps came in reply. I asked a few questions and got raps, and then remarked to Mrs. Milton that I was holding the two hands. I repeated this experiment frequently, as opportunity offered, while attempting other things. As we failed to get other things and seeing that this could be done I suggested to Dan that we try for raps while I held hands and feet. He indicated by two raps in reply to my question that he did not know whether he could do it or not, but that he would try, giving three raps in reply to my query.

I then secured her two legs by placing my right leg around both of hers and pinioned them between the feet of her chair and away from the table while I held both of her hands in mine and up from the table. We experimented in this manner for half an hour with hundreds of raps apparently located at all sorts of distances and places. Some were off at my right and in front of Mrs. Milton. Others were farther at my right and out of all reach of Mrs. Milton. Some were apparently on the sideboard eight or

ten feet away, and a few were apparently in the corner of the room ten or twelve feet away. I asked for them to be made on the kitchen door behind me, but heard none there. Instead they seemed to come in the corner of the room as described.

I did not give my exclusive attention to the raps and their location, but was careful to watch the action of her hands and feet. I did not detect a single movement or convulsive action of her feet or legs. They remained absolutely passive throughout the experiments. As to her hands they also were perfectly passive most of the time. Occasionally there was a convulsion in the hands synchronous with the raps, but this was not frequent, and a number of times there was a convulsive movement that was not accompanied or followed by any raps. The body was occasionally agitated and there were very frequent groans, as if the effort was a difficult one. But I did not discover any reason whatever to suppose that the raps were causally related to any action of either hands, feet or body. The largest number of the raps occurred without any apparent motor action whatever. Neither could I discover any evidence of illusion in the localization of the raps. I gave as much attention to this as the simultaneous study of her body would permit, and as the timbre of the raps was the same all the way through while she was controlled, except the most distant ones, I had a good chance to remark the variation of location. The distant raps were not so clear or well defined as those which occurred apparently in the table. They seemed more dull or muffled, if I may use that expression. The quality of the raps was different from those which ordinarily occurred during an ordinary experiment, tho distinctly resembling those which occurred at an apparent distance during an ordinary experiment. That is, raps which come near the medium have a muffled sound often, tho not always, and resemble raps made with the knuckles or a soft object. I observed this with even the raps that occurred near when I held both hands. They did not differ in timbre from those when the hands were free. But whenever I got raps at a distance, whether the hands were controlled or not, the rap was sharper in sound and not so loud. In fact throughout these experiments this evening we had to stop the phonograph to hear them at all, and the sound was more like a click, tho not sharply defined as this, and never had the muffled

appearance except at a great distance, and even this was not so much so as raps near and when the hands were free, but had resemblances in quality to the sharper raps.

I am certain the raps were not caused by her hands and feet. If she produced them in any other way, we were under an illusion as to their locality. Nothing but the suspicion that this localization was illusory will remove the verdict that they were independently produced. As she did not know beforehand that I would experiment for raps, she could not have prepared an apparatus for the purpose, tho we may assume that she remains constantly prepared for this. But I would not care what apparatus she kept about herself the peculiar variation of sound and the uniformity of distant location ought not to have occurred, as I have found myself fairly good in locating such sounds. I moved my head about so as to get the benefit of binaural fusion and I found no exception to my impressions. I do not contend that these are in any respect conclusive, but only that illusion is the only hypothesis for discrediting the independence of the raps. It is certain that they were not caused by the hands and feet.

In favor of their genuineness was the failure for a long period to get raps of any kind when the hands were free, and we had to resort to writing to ascertain what the trouble was, and the control did not know. Many times I got raps while holding both hands when it was not my object to have a special test, but only to ascertain the situation, tho I availed myself of the control to see if the raps could occur then, while Mrs. Milton did not know that I had the control.

Toward the end of the long experiment for raps under control it was noticeable that we could not get them. We tried for some time to get them and no response came. I concluded that Miss Burton was more or less exhausted, as was more or less apparent from her groans and the occasional agitations of her body. The groans were very slight and not such as to interfere with the perception of the raps. But they indicated difficulty and I assumed exhaustion, and so suggested that, perhaps, we had better cease the evening's work. Presently the hand reached for pad and pencil and wrote:—

"There does not seem to be enough battery to draw from we cannot get the strength we want and need Dan."

I then held her hands and head and she soon recovered normal consciousness. It was accompanied by very little agitation of the hands. This occurred but three times. Miss Burton said she felt tired after the séance, but was not dizzy.

One of the most interesting things of the evening was the evidently earnest desire and effort on the part of the entranced Miss Burton to give tests. I had control of both hands most of the evening. This was always volunteered and the variation of success and failure under such circumstances is an important point. There was little effort to free her hands, as has often occurred before. Occasionally there was a slight apparent attempt to gain freedom, but she would instantly volunteer to return or sustain the control. I let go of the hands but a few times and this only in response to an evident need of rest. Every time that an automatic effort to free the hand would occur she would instantly replace it and sometimes vigorously clasp the hands to prevent this automatic effort to free them. There was the same struggle between two impulses that marks a most interesting feature of the case. The honesty of the subliminal was never more apparent, unless we assume it shrewd enough to simulate this for effect, and I have no way of disproving this hypothesis.

One most interesting phenomenon took place in conjunction with a remark of Mrs. Milton about having Dan explain the rope incident of the evening when the machine was stopped. Mrs. Milton did not say all that I have here said to make the matter clear, but it was evident what she wanted. Her statement was something like this: "Get him to tell about the rope." I at once hushed her, saying that her subliminal would catch it. I had hardly gotten this statement out when Miss Burton fell forward in a collapse. As soon as I could raise her I did so, and held her head on my shoulder. I found her in a state of catalepsy which came on after I raised her head and in a few minutes got her out of it. She soon folded her hands on her breast and they became cataleptic. After a few minutes she was restored to the normal trance. Evidently the subliminal memory of that evening and the suggestion brought on the same condition.



April 18th, 1910.

Present: J. H. H. and Mrs. Milton.

I had previously suggested that the evening be given to automatic writing, and tho it was a remarkable one, as the sequel showed, there was no disposition to accept this suggestion on the part of the subliminal and things took their own course with automatic writing only as difficult emergencies required it.

Very soon after the lights were turned out Miss Burton saw a straight light in front of her vertically placed. It came and disappeared in a flash. I kept testing her hands every now and then after this for anæsthesia, but this did not manifest itself for some minutes. When it came I found her anæsthetic to the middle of the neck and just below the larynx. After this condition supervened I noticed a strong breeze against the back of my hand which was resting on hers in a rather oblique position and slightly turned away from her face. I said nothing and in a moment Miss Burton remarked that she felt it in her face. She kept on describing it with some tone of surprise and I remarked that, while she talked the cool breeze still continued as before. I put out my right hand to feel for her left while I placed my left on her right and found her left hand perfectly passive near the right lying on the table. I still felt the breeze and asked her if she felt my hands, and she replied that she did not. I removed my right hand and placed it on her right and moved my left about in front of her mouth and could not detect the slightest trace of the breeze which continued with slightly abated intensity tho felt on my right hand. I held my right hand with the back of it slightly turned away from her face which was about eighteen inches from it and the breeze came apparently from the direction immediately opposite her face. The sensation of the current was not as if from her mouth or it would have been felt on the palm of my hand. In experiments which I have made a cool breeze can be made quietly enough with the mouth to not be detected, but it is difficult to see how she could produce it and talk simultaneously and keep both hands quiet as well as give the appearance of its coming from a direction the very opposite of what it should be to find an ordinary explanation. Mrs. Milton also remarked the breeze where she was sitting, but nothing anomalous would appear from

her position, except on the assumption that Miss Burton's face was not turned in that direction and apparently it was not at times at least.

Finally her silence suggested that she was entranced and I found her anæsthetic, having noticed a jerk of the hand. I took hold of her hands and asked Dan aloud if I was doing rightly. I was not sure of the reply whether it was one or three raps, and as no remonstrance came I held on and she returned to normal consciousness, except that she was anæsthetic to the larynx. Presently she remarked with a little tone of surprise that she saw "cross lights," and to avoid using the word "cross" I asked if they looked like a plus mark and she said no, that the lines were slanting, and I asked if they looked like the letter X and she replied (orally) in the affirmative. There was then a long effort to get more without success. At last I suggested that it be explained by writing. No response came to this and I kept suggesting it, that the meaning of the "cross lights" be explained by the writing, but the suggestion was not taken. This effort lasted for half an hour or more. Finally the hand showed signs of the desire to write. I handed it the pad and pencil and the hand voluntarily placed the pencil between the first and second fingers, not as usual in thumb and finger. I accidentally suspected this from a touch and felt to see if I was correct and found the pencil as described. The hand remained quiet a while and then wrote:—

"I am trying to show her something you will know me by. say nothing until I give it and she gets it perfectly H."

We tried again but nothing came to fulfill the hope suggested. After a time I saw a light in front of Miss Burton and without saying that I saw anything I said "That's good." Mrs. Milton saw nothing and I did not explain. I saw several of these bright pointed lights, not the color of cloudy phosphorus but bright yellow. Finally Mrs. Milton remarked them and thought we were going to get something. I admitted I saw them, but without uttering the word light. Presently Miss Burton exclaimed that she saw a light. I asked where and she said in front of her about where her hands were on the table. I held my right hand on her right, but I saw nothing and Mrs. Milton saw nothing. I found Miss Burton's hands anæsthetic and only her

face, as usual in this condition, sensitive above the larynx. We waited for more lights but none appeared. Presently she saw the "cross light" again and spontaneously remarked that it looked like a plus mark this time. There was then again a long pause in an apparent effort to get more, but nothing came, and I repeated my suggestion to have it explained by writing. There was again a failure to take up this suggestion for some time, but at last the hand reached for pad and pencil and wrote:—

"He seems so confused when he tries real hard he can do nothing I do not know what he is trying to tell you because he wants to give it himself Dan."

The description of the state of the communicator as "confused" is very pertinent and suggests the Piper situation and personalities, and so also does the refusal to let any one else give the message. .

We then tried again and for a long period Miss Burton was lethargic as seemed to be usual this evening. She saw a light with something in it and saw this several times, but could never decipher it. She described the light as yellow in response to my query. Finally the hand again reached for pad and pencil, and wrote:—

"he is so determined to tell you now it is the first time he has been really able to control the medium as he did not seem to understand her before perhaps you can tell her to wait until some other time for it Dan."

I expressed satisfaction and willingness to do so and signified the propriety of ending the experiment. I suggested bringing her out and took her hands for the purpose. I found her perfectly lethargic and apparently willing to cease trying to do anything. In a few minutes there was the usual movement of the hands and slight convulsion of the body which can be taken as the signal of returning consciousness, and once said "All right," as she always does in the first stage of recovery. But she at once lapsed into the trance and came no further. The music had stopped and thinking that I might get her out by having music I called for it and waited, holding her hands. But in a few moments she showed a violent desire to write and reached for pad and pencil vigorously. I reached for them and put them on the table. She seized the pencil between the first and second fingers and held on to my left

hand with her left clasping it tightly and resting both on the wrist of her right. In this condition she remained for some minutes without writing. When it came it was with labor and difficulty at first, after many muscular efforts to do it.

" \* \* \* \* things [?] \* \* \* \* I \* \* \*  
[want?] soon [?] to give [?] \* \* [not?] to night H."

The only clear part of it is the H at the end, and I asked for its rewriting. The left hand seized my own again and held it as before and again there was a long wait before the writing could begin. When it came it was labored as before, but not so markedly so. This time the pencil was held between thumb and finger.

"It is more natural with it I cannot seem to get what I want to say through I told you I would always \* \* but I can't get it all H."

After this we waited for results a moment and the pencil was again seized and Dan wrote:—

"bring her out of the condition and we will try something else she is very deep and we can do nothing else until you bring her partly out Dan."

I then held her hands and she seemed to show the motor activity of a less lethargic condition than before, and we waited for something else. I held my two hands on hers, both lying on the table. Finally I heard some whistling at my right, but it was not distinct at all times. Her hands were perfectly passive, her face near mine and at my left, and no trumpet used. Mrs. Milton heard whistling a second time, but I did not, save that I thought I did and rising to get my head above hers and in front of her face could hear nothing except the phonograph. Some of the tones could be mistaken for whistling, so that, while I have no reason to impeach Mrs. Milton's sensations I got none. At the next trial I thought I heard two or three attempts at whistling with the sounds located in her face, but they were too faint to be sure that there was anything but an echo of the phonograph. We then waited for whatever would come, and Mrs. Milton made a remark which made me think that the effort was to raise the table. I placed my feet in front of her so that she could not put hers under the central foot of the table or move them about without detection. I held both her hands on the table. Finally

she raised them off the table while I still held them. But nothing happened and apparently it was not the intention to levitate it. Finally the hand signified a desire for pad and pencil and wrote:—

“We want you to go [to] the other sid[e] of the table after you have set [?] the piece \* \* [back?] Dan.”

It was apparent in this that the desire was to stop the machine as on the previous experiment. While reading this the hand went on writing and in some way during the confusion rewrote on the same page without superposing very much, a fact which I did not discover till the next day when writing out the record. But it was as follows:—

“we are going to try once more and first we want to tell you to take the medium’s hands \* \* \* \* \*”

Here the superposing began and when the page was finished the hand seems to have begun at the top again with the phrase “then if we cannot do it we will have to stop it \* \* \* \*,” and superposition begins again so that the rest is not legible. The name Dan is found at the bottom of the sheet, but it did not end the message, tho it may have terminated what was intended as the end before the superposition began, as the message is finished on the next page: “I am sure we can do it and we will Dan.”

I saw what was intended and had been all the while holding her hands, Mrs. Milton having done the reading, as I wanted to keep perfectly uninterrupted control of the hands. I looked at the phonograph and there was no string attached to the key or spring regulating its action. As the message could not be read I asked for its rewriting and the light was turned out and Mrs. Milton went to the other side to start the machine which had been stopped. I found the pad was not within reach and had to get it. I reached for it with my right after placing the two hands in my left. Miss Burton’s right hand separated from mine and reached for the pencil but she voluntarily and with evident purposive care kept her left hand on mine as I let it fall on the right arm, and I had her under this control during the writing, her right arm being under my left holding her left, so that she could not have used it if she had tried to fix the key of the machine. The studied policy on her part to see that her hands were not in a suspicious position or out of control was very interesting. The writing, when read by Mrs. Milton, was as follows, I noticing, when the

light was turned up, that the phonograph key had not been tampered with.

"I said it seems to take so much strength and if we cannot do it now you can bring her out and tomorrow night I wish you would have at least one more in the sitting we do not seem to have enough [enough] strength to draw from Dan."

As Mrs. Milton read this she could not decipher it and Miss Burton's face showed annoyance and I asked Mrs. Milton to hold the hands while I read it. After reading it the hand signified a desire to write and the following came:—

"I am going to try to do it once more tonight and if we cannot do it then you must bring her out but we will do it and tomorrow[night] I wish you would have at least one more at the table we do not seem to have strength enough to draw from Dan."

I glanced at the machine and saw that the key was not interfered with. The machine was going, and the lights were turned out, I holding both hands and her feet under perfect control as I had all along. Mrs. Milton again came around behind me and held her hands on my shoulders, as she had done several times before. But tho there was some muscular agitation now of the hands, now of the body—at no time of the feet—and frequent groaning, nothing was affected. This was tried four times without the slightest trace of effect on the machine. At last the hand signified a desire for freedom, after the phonograph stopped and on freeing it reached for pad and pencil, and wrote:—

"Tomorrow night have at least one more at the table so we will have more to draw from Dan."

I then brought her out of the trance with the usual symptoms of recovery, tho it was not long or difficult. She said that she felt tired from the sitting, but had no headache or dizziness.

The attempt to stop the machine was psychologically as interesting an effort as I have witnessed. It was volunteered and not suggested by me, and the manner of offering her hands for control and insisting even after the writing that they be kept under control intimate that there was perfect consciousness of what had occurred before and what was necessary to remove suspicion. The head was thrown on my shoulder two or three times and while holding the hands I was careful to hold the back

of my left against her dress on her breast so as to see that she did not throw her body back toward the phonograph which was nearly two feet away. There was no apparent effort to get at the machine in all the slight motor agitation and trembling noticed during the experiment. One could hardly have secured better motor evidence of a sincere attempt to prevent and avoid fraud. Her hands would clasp tightly when any automatic action would seem to threaten them with release, tho this was never an apparent effort and was too slight to suggest it. Her feet, as said above, were kept in perfect control all the time. My head was within a few inches of hers and once she fell slightly forward resting her head against her hands in mine. Twice when the machine stopped her head fell on my left shoulder.

The only psychological explanation of this is that she wanted to impress me with the idea that she was honest and was willing to fail in the effort. But she would have to face the fact that she was perfectly conscious of her previous "trick" and that I knew the facts! This would seem to make the effort perfectly silly from her own point of view. The other interpretation is that she is subliminally honest.

One interesting circumstance in the experience of Mrs. Milton is worth recording. During the earlier efforts to do something while I held both hands and just before we learned what the experiment was through the automatic writing, Mrs. Milton complained that her hands felt remarkably cold and that she had to remove them from the table. She had been holding them there for the purpose of helping things. When she held her hands on my shoulder at my back she complained that she had strong impulses to remove them because they would get so cold. She seemed to be so "drawn from" whatever that may mean, that she felt she could not stand the act. I felt nothing whatever. But her experience coincides with what I often find true in supreme efforts to do something in the case of other psychics. Mrs. Milton is conscious that she is affected by such experiments, but seems not to have learned the fact from any other source than her own experience.

After the séance I asked them both what they had read in the literature of psychic research and spiritualism and both said they had read nothing. Inquiry about the English publications



and my own brought only a negative reply and accepting their statements there is no natural interpretation but chance coincidence for the several visions of the cross which were seen by Miss Burton this evening.

With the experiments of the previous evening in mind I resolved before beginning to test the localization of raps. Before we turned down the lights I asked Miss Burton to rap on the sideboard and the table with a pencil that I gave her which was tipped with a rubber eraser. I closed my eyes and directed her when and where to rap. I of course located the raps accurately enough, but I wanted to see if the sound was recognizable. I found it was, whether due to knowledge of locality or not. But whatever the cause I could recognize the timbre of the sideboard raps as that of those of the previous evening. To test the matter further I had the lights turned out and I stood where I could rap on the sideboard and table without moving and I had Mrs. Milton guess where I made the raps. She was correct in all instances, except one when she thought it was on the window sill instead of the sideboard. It was on the corner of the sideboard nearer the window than at any other time. She correctly located the raps I made on the chair near the window, saying they were on the chair.

Testing her with a series of raps on the table at different distances from her in the median line she was always correct as to raps being on the table, but said nothing about their distance from her. She probably could not tell this.

April 19th, 1910.

Present: Dr. Hamilton, J. H. H. and Mrs. Milton.

In pursuance of agreement Dr. Hamilton went with me last night to help in the test experiment tried the previous evening. Before beginning Mrs. Milton described further her sensations the evening before when standing behind me and holding her hands on my back. She said she trembled all over. I was too intent on watching Miss Burton to notice any indications of this. She said she was greatly exhausted and that she had something like nightmare during the night associated with the word "subliminal" which came to consciousness often as she awakened out

of the disturbed dream. She said she had never been so affected in her life.

It was some time after the lights were turned out before any symptoms of the trance could be remarked. This time there was no indication of it by a jerk of the right hand which I held. I found it out only by getting no response finally to questions which I had been frequently asking in the progress of the trance and receiving answers which indicated that Miss Burton felt my hand. As soon as her silence to questions was perceived I felt her left hand and found it lying on the table, and I held my two hands on hers. Finally she recovered normal consciousness, except that she was anæsthetic up to the larynx. Presently I put out my right hand, having removed control of both of them when I discovered her conscious, and touched her left hand. She quickly withdrew it by a jerk and I found her instantly in the trance again. There was then a long period of lethargy alternating with some remarkable illustrations of hemi-anæsthesia. I first noticed it by the resentment which she showed for my holding her right hand and shoulder. I put out my hand to touch her left hand and found that she would not resent it. I then experimented by alternately taking her left and her right hand to find that she would let me hold the left without resistance, but I could not touch her right without her jerking it away and pulling her shoulder away from my left. I could hold her left hand for minutes and no resistance would occur. Finally there was a sudden reversal of these conditions and the left hand resented contact and the right hand was passive to touch and control. This kept up for fifteen minutes or more, sometimes with sudden changes and sometimes by complete sensibility or æsthesia for a few moments in the change to hemi-anæsthesia. As further test of it, when I found that she would not let me touch her right shoulder, I put my left hand around her on the back of the chair and she was perfectly passive to touch on her left shoulder, while resenting touch on the right shoulder. I said nothing during these performances as to what was going on, as I did not wish to make any suggestion to the subconsciousness of Miss Burton, but after the normal trance came on I remarked that I had witnessed interesting illustrations of hemi-anæsthesia in order to explain to those present why I had been so quiet.

We then waited for something to occur, not knowing what might take place. I held her right hand, and at times her left. But she was lethargic at times. Often she resented touch and I left her free. She recovered normal consciousness now and then and returned soon into the trance, the normal consciousness being accompanied by the "gloved" anæsthesia extending to the larynx. I do not recall whether she saw any light during these fits of consciousness, but I think she did not. At any rate after a long effort without success, the hand reached for the pad and pencil and wrote:—

"Let the medium go for a few minutes we cannot seem to get her under control to-night" [then follow two or three words superposed on the last two which are undecipherable, tho they may be "to hold her."]

I then left her alone to rest quietly without touching her. She seemed to rest as in sleep and after awhile the whistling began very clear, tho not so good at first as when at its best. Simultaneously she reached for the pad and pencil, the others present not knowing what she did. I gave pad and pencil to her and the hand wrote the following while the whistling went on:—

"I think she will be all right now Dan."

As soon as this was read, the red light being turned up for the purpose in response to raps signifying that it was permissible, and when we returned to the experiment, the whistling began again this time very distinct and clear. The hand again quickly reached for the pad and pencil. They were supplied and while the whistling went on there was apparent writing all over the page. I always hold the wrist to watch the writing and sheet of paper. Toward the close the hand went to the top of the sheet and in a moment the pencil was thrown on the table. Raps signified that we could turn on the light. We found a clearly marked cross on the left hand corner of the sheet at the top. There was not another mark on the paper.

We then proceeded to let things take their own course. Some singing was done by Miss Burton that was very clear, but localizable in the vicinity of the face and not in any respect under test conditions. I did not deem it best to interfere because I have always found that the first performance after a test trial is re-

quired to restore a normal balance and to act as preparation for further work.

Then the hand reached for pad and pencil and wrote the following, after having indicated by placing the two hands in mine for trial purposes that they were ready for work:—

"We are going to give you anot[her] test tonight and we do not want you to mention it in any way but when the right time comes we will give it to you but under [?] test conditions Dan."

Some remark was made by Dr. Hamilton to the effect that we would get it when we least expected it. The hand at once, before the light was turned off and while it shone, reached for pad and pencil in a somewhat excited manner and wrote:—

"no not when you least expect it because we want you to be sure of your test conditions Dan."

We then proceeded to wait for intimations when they were ready. First there was some singing again without any evidential or interesting features. Some remark was made, about this time, by Mrs. Milton that Lenore had not done much for me this time and while waiting for something the door of the phonograph was slammed shut and Mrs. Milton was told through the trumpet by Lenore that she had to do something. I am not sure that this occurred just at this juncture, but it was after the remark had been made about her. We continued the experiment and it was long before anything occurred. I usually held both hands, as this had been offered. Once or twice I thought I possibly heard whistling, but felt that it could have been the echo of the music in the phonograph, as it was only occasional notes that seemed to be whistling, and as I have never more than three or four times heard whistling in the form of an interrupted couple or triple of notes I have to set this down here as an illusion. The conditions were such that I could not have heard anything but distinct whistling and faint whistling at my right would have been detectible by Dr. Hamilton, if discoverable at all. He and Mrs. Milton heard nothing.

Continuing the experiment I was holding both hands of Miss Burton in mine on her breast and my head in front of hers with my ear close to her mouth. I was not sure whether her face was turned away from me to her left or not. I could at times feel her

breath, and an occasional very faint groan. After awhile Mrs. Milton and Dr. Hamilton, at the end of the performance spontaneously remarked that they heard Lenore singing. Both were very positive about it and located it in their own vicinity, tho between themselves and me. On the way home Dr. Hamilton reiterated his assurance of it. He said just after the experiment, and also on the way home, that he was not sure of the singing near the end. *I did not hear the faintest sound of singing, tho I would easily have heard it had the singing been done with the mouth. My ear was not further from it than two inches, if that much.*

I then asked for it to be repeated and the trial was made. This time I had even better conditions. I managed to assure myself that her face was not turned to her left, and finally she voluntarily buried her face on my left shoulder and neck, so that her mouth was not only near my ear but could not do a thing without sure detection. There was some muscular agitation of her hands and body and frequent faint groans. But I heard no singing, and neither Dr. Hamilton nor Mrs. Milton discovered any of it.

After we remarked this there was a pause and soon the hand reached for pad and pencil and wrote:—

"It is so hard for us to do things and know just when you hear it but Lenore was trying very hard at the time Dan."

The details of what now occurred are not clear in my memory, except that I observed several instances of alternating hemi-anæsthesia during a long period interrupted by fits of lethargy and inertia. Apparently there were efforts at times to do something, but what I could not tell. Finally the hand signified a desire to write. Pad and pencil were placed and the following came:—

"We are having some trouble keeping out the control we do not want when we change controls he is bound to try to jump in Dan."

We could not decipher the word "jump" and were uncertain of the first use of the word "control." There was annoyance apparent in the face of Miss Burton and she seized the pencil again and wrote in the red light:—

"no, I mean when we change controls he is bound to try to jump in Dan."

We then waited a few moments and let things take their own course, and I do not recall any details of what occurred. There was nothing of importance or I should have taken note of it. I recall that it was somewhere about this time that I became suddenly sleepy and without any special reason for it that was discoverable in myself. But this was easily and quickly interrupted by the resumption of the experiment indicated by the trumpet being thrust against my hand. I took hold of it and held it out in front of me, and almost immediately the left hand of Miss Burton pushed it out and up further. I then held it at arm's length and as high as I could while the experiment continued with the apparent attempt to whistle or sing in it. Nothing occurred. All the while I held her right hand in mine, sometimes with my elbow on her shoulder but usually with my hand holding hers on her breast, this position having been voluntarily assumed by herself rather than have my elbow on her shoulder. The object was to see whether she arose or leaned forward to do what was tried. I then, owing to the difficulty of holding the trumpet so long in the air, held it in my hand at the same distance, but with my elbow on the table. Nothing occurred. The next time I held it as at the first, as high and as far off as I could. I held my left hand on hers held at her breast. This time I heard whistling at my right in the vicinity of the trumpet and this very clearly at times, but not so distinct and artistic as when not controlled. In fact the difference was very greatly marked. Dr. Hamilton and Mrs. Milton heard it also and located it where I did before being told how it seemed to me and were quite confident about it, Mrs. Milton not knowing how I was holding the trumpet, saying that she heard it in the air in the region which would have been correct if she had seen it. I then asked for the red light and showed them how I held the trumpet and Mrs. Milton then remarked that the whistling seemed to her to be at the end of the trumpet toward her. It did not always seem at that point to me, but to be varying about that locality and the other end. I had held the trumpet at right angles to the line drawn from her mouth, and at times my head was in front of her face. I heard no sounds in that direction, save now and then a faint groan. There was some agitation of the muscles in the body as the performance went on.

After this we proceeded with further experiment, I holding her hands. She remained inert save at times there was resentment to my touch as she apparently wanted rest. But I presently found evidences that Black Cloud was there and began to hold her hands more firmly to exorcise him. The usual resistance occurred and I would yield something, allowing her hands and arms to move about rather freely, but without permitting their release. I was making progress with the work when I remarked what I was doing in order that those present would understand it. In a few moments Mrs. Milton spoke peremptorily and imperatively to say that Black Cloud must go and that he was not wanted. Immediately Miss Burton assumed a violent antagonism to the effort I was making to exorcise Black Cloud and a long struggle ensued, in which I had very great difficulty holding her. She exclaimed in low tones at times something which I could not hear. But once or twice it was "Black Cloud! Go away, you hurt me." Finally after a ten minutes' struggle in this sort of thing she sat down and soon relaxed. I finally freed her hands and waited. In a few moments the pad and pencil were wanted and the hand wrote:—

"We must let the medium rest a little B. C. tires her so much you see she came partly out and it seemed to hurt her head Then we are going to try that other test Dan."

We gave her the rest by letting her absolutely alone and it was some minutes before anything further was done. When Miss Burton's muscular action showed she was ready for work she placed her two hands together and I took hold of them, securing her feet also firmly between the two feet of her chair. During the performances as we approached the time for this experiment the table had been pulled forward nearer the machine and also the chair of Miss Burton. At this time her chair was some distance from the table and her shoulder was within a foot or fifteen inches of the machine and key to be turned. I had hardly secured hands and feet, being almost in front of her, as the chair permitted this, when she reached for the pad and pencil and wrote:—

"We want you to go away from the machine entirely and get the medium under test conditions before you turn [out] the light Dan."



There was a pause when the pencil, which had been thrown down, was seized and wrote: "mean going to try our test."

The light was turned out and we started to arrange conditions and the hand again suddenly indicated the desire for writing and the following came:—

"I said not to turn out the light until you were all ready Dan."

I looked at the machine and saw that there was no attachment there and pinioned her feet and hands as described, her hands being held in front of her face and breast, while I was almost in front of her and her chair. When we were ready the light was turned out and we proceeded with the test. Three trials resulted in failure to stop the machine.

During these most interesting psychological phenomena occurred illustrating the same earnest effort to do the thing honestly that I observed in the previous effort when trying it the evening before. She kept her hands together firmly with much agitation of them and the body and now and then groaning. Sometimes I would allow the hands to separate from each other but never from my grasp. Several times there were motions which I interpreted as restrained attempts to reach toward the machine, and which were spontaneously resisted by herself. Often she threw her head on my left shoulder away from the machine. A few times she leaned it forward on her hands in mine but would usually throw it back from this position on my left shoulder. There were no violent efforts to free herself, but perfectly honest and intelligent efforts to maintain the test conditions. At the intervals when we had to permit the writing and when I released the hands while reading it, Dr. Hamilton remarked the fact that her left hand would reach toward the machine and her right would apparently seize it and bring it back, as if to prevent it from touching the phonograph. This sort of movement was the same that I had remarked when under control, save that the two hands were under control.

After two failures to stop the machine, the hand reached for pad and pencil to write and when furnished wrote as follows. I still held the left hand in my right while giving the pencil and pad with my left and the first writing was done in this situation, my left hand being placed on her right and her left in my right.

"We will try it once more. She seems so exhausted [exhausted. Not read at time] but if we do turn it off I want some one near the light so it can be turned off on ['on' superposed on 'off'] quickly."

This was not signed. There was some difficulty reading it, the word "exhausted" not being read, when she showed annoyance in her face and wrote in the light, while I still had her under control, the word "exhausted" again with this incorrect spelling. We then proceeded to try the experiment as before, getting control and seeing that the machine was not touched or fixed with any attachment. The light was then turned out as before and Dr. Hamilton stood where he could turn it on at once if necessary. Again there was a failure. Miss Burton then showed signs of desiring release and I let go her hands, but had the light turned on. She pushed her chair back a little almost against the wall and I allowed her hands to rest in her lap. I was standing almost in front of her, my right foot actually being in front of hers. In response to some question, what and by whom asked I do not recall, a rap for "No" came and I turned to see the locality apparent and it seemed to me about two feet at my right on the top of the table. We all remarked it, as it was a very clear rap. To me it sounded clearly two feet from me and I had to turn to test with vision where I would place it. I was under no illusion as to its apparent direction three feet in front of Miss Burton and two feet to my right and side. I could easily be wrong about the question whether the sound was on the top of the table or under it or above it. But whatever error in fact may be supposed about the place it was made it clearly seemed at a point at least two feet from me and three feet from Miss Burton whose hands were lying in her lap and I standing partly in front of her. I do not think her feet could have been used to make the rap on the foot of the table. Dr. Hamilton described the locality as apparently under the table to him but off toward Mrs. Milton, but it did not seem to him on the top of the table. His location of it approximated mine in direction and general locality. Whether this could have been an illusion on the supposition that the rap was produced on her chair foot by her own foot could not and cannot be determined. I have found no evidence for such illusions of localization outside the median plane

and the rap was clearer than many raps that have been constantly located correctly by various people, and it does not seem to me possible easily to have done it with the foot under the circumstances, but as my attention was not directed to this fact, being occupied with letting her rest while I watched her hands, the objection would be that it was caused in the very way that I doubt.

Once during the evening I had my right hand resting on her left and my left on her right when we heard raps in response to questions, and I distinctly felt the vibration or trembling of the table, but not the slightest motion of her hands. I noted this especially in her left hand because I happened to have my little finger and next one lying on the table beside hers while my left was lying on top of her right without touching the table. It was my finger on the table that enabled me to detect the shiver of the wood while her hand almost wholly covered by the rest of mine showed absolutely no indications of motion. This occurred three or four times before I remarked it aloud.

When we were ready to terminate the séance, as I expected to do at this point, I took the hands for the purpose and apparently there was a tendency to recover normal consciousness, but instead of this there was an indicated desire to write, and pad and pencil were given, and the hand wrote as follows:—

“we do want to try it again there is anothe [r] in controll [?] here and I will tell you about him after we try Dan.”

If I remember rightly the light was left burning until I got Miss Burton's hands and feet under control and saw that the machine was all right. In a moment the hand wanted to write and I let it do so while keeping control. It wrote: “turn out the light.”

We turned out the light and repeated the experiment as before with the same honest efforts on her part as described above and with the same failure. After it was over she was apparently aware of this failure and signified her desire for the freedom of her hands. After some feigned resistance to it I released them, and when a short time elapsed, perhaps five or six minutes, the hand wanted to write with the following result:—

“We could turn off the machine but B. C. will not let us if we could just keep him away I am sure we could do it all right

we will have to bring the medium out she must sleep this off for a few minutes let her go and rest Dan."

In a few moments, after the door was opened and the sofa prepared for her, with some help from Dr. Hamilton, she staggered up and walked out to the sofa, and we left her there.

Early in the sitting while Miss Burton was anæsthetic in the hands and body up to her larynx she remarked that she felt the wind coming against her face again. I felt it, but did not admit it, on my hand. I put my hand in front of her face and could discover no evidence of her doing it with her mouth, tho I did not know how far from her face my hand was or how her face was turned. But as my hand was between her face and my right hand holding her right there would have been a chance to detect the source of my sensation, except that it was on the back of my hand slightly oblique to her and no feeling on the palm. The phenomenon was the same as the previous evening, tho I did not investigate it as carefully. It was too early in the trance to disturb her. But once I was trying to test her for anæsthesia and trying her hands and arm I moved up her arm to her neck and as soon as I touched her neck above the larynx she started and then laughed as she detected what it meant.

I cannot remember exactly where the following event took place. I think it was a short time before the complaint was made that some one was trying to get into control when controls were changed. For I remember that I at first thought this reference was to the party that had made the sign of the cross. At any rate, at one stage of the experiments thereabouts the hand wanted to write and seized the pencil between the first and second fingers and appeared to be writing. But I noticed that it wrote in the air. There was nothing on the paper when the light was turned up later.

I should have remarked that during the efforts to stop the machine Mrs. Milton was under the control of Dr. Hamilton.

April 20th, 1910.

Present: J. H. H. and Mrs. Milton.

It was some time before the trance came on, and when it did so it was instantly with a jerk of the hand, after having been

tested a number of times for anæsthesia. As soon as the hand jerked I tested her again for anæsthesia and found her non-responsive. After a wait she returned to normal consciousness and sensibility with the same jerk, and we waited for developments. I tested her at various times for anæsthesia and found none. When I asked the last time if she felt my hand she replied "Yes" faintly and I repeated my question to be sure that she had said it and I found no response. She was found anæsthetic, and had apparently gone into the trance instantly on answering my query. But I soon found evidence of a change to hemi-anæsthesia. The right hand and shoulder showed resentment to touch and I tested the left hand and shoulder and found them non-resistant. I held the left hand for a while and there was a sudden change of it to sensibility and the right hand was the same. There followed some whistling with free hands, and then hemi-anæsthesia came on again. After an alternation or two of this I was able to hold the right hand and there was simultaneous whistling and singing, first noticed by Mrs. Milton and which became clear in a few moments. The differences of localization were clear and distinct, as always whatever their source. The singing was located in the vicinity of the face and the whistling two or three feet at the right. Owing to the borderland condition of things I was not able to test the matter as it should have been done and hence nothing is determinate in the result.

I asked for a repetition of it and it was granted. The whistling was clearer than the first time and the differences between the localization of the singing and whistling the same as before. One thing I have wholly forgotten in connection with the phenomenon and that is whether I held the left hand or the right. I think it was the left. What makes me think so is the fact that I recall being very much interested in this special trial and to have expressed considerable satisfaction with it. My recollection is that the trumpet was not used, and if this be a correct recollection I must have held the left hand. In that case the simultaneous singing and whistling would be still more interesting on any theory. But as I am not sure of the conditions under which they were done no importance can be attached to the incidents.

At the close of it her head fell on my shoulder and soon afterward she raised it and then recovered normal consciousness, as

she seemed to have done several times this evening after holding her left hand, and after some waiting she said she saw a light in front of her hands. There was no anæsthesia, and neither Mrs. Milton nor myself saw anything. A few minutes later she saw another light and located it to the right of my right hand on the table. Her right hand was under mine at the time and she was normally sensible. A little later Mrs. Milton saw a bright light but neither Miss Burton nor myself saw anything. There was apparently considerable effort to get more lights but it failed.

There came about this time a few raps that were interesting, as I was holding both hands. I had my right foot in front of hers so as to command a large part of the table foot. One rap was especially loud, and having secure hold of both hands against her breast I pushed my foot around further and found hers against the extreme edge of the table foot. I pushed it away and held it away from this place and tried to get more raps, but could not succeed. A little later some light raps were heard under these conditions. But they were not distinct enough to locate them.

There followed this an apparent attempt to duplicate the music on the phonograph. I was holding the left hand of Miss Burton and left her right hand free, as most of the evening. The first intimation of this appearance was distinctly hearing a humming sound behind me and to the left. It moved quickly to my right and then for some minutes, sounding like a human voice humming, it continued to duplicate the music of the phonograph. It followed the recognition of Mrs. Milton of the presence of her mother by raps. I had perfect control of Miss Burton, as I held the left hand and could get my face in front of hers and close to it. I could constantly hear faint groans and often feel her breath. Not a sound issued from her mouth but the groans. I moved my head about at times to study the localization of the sound and it moved about in the air as distinctly as anything could do, and I would return to her face to ascertain if there were signs there of producing the sound, but never a trace of this could be discovered. At its close I asked Mrs. Milton if she heard it and she did not. I asked for its repetition and also to have the horn of the phonograph moved from its position, as I suspected the whole affair might be due to some sort of echo of the sounds proceeding from it.

The horn was changed so as to throw its sounds right into the ear of Mrs. Milton and the experiment was repeated twice, with a change of music once. I had still better control of the face, the left hand of Miss Burton being held by my right and often I rested my left ear directly at her mouth and nose, often touching the latter. I heard the same duplication of the phonograph music variously located in the air behind and to the right of me and all about, giving a clear sense of independence. On the first trial Dan responded in raps to say that it had been done but did not signify it in the latter two cases. Mrs. Milton heard nothing again. To me it was very distinctly discriminated from the music of the phonograph which I could locate without any apparent illusion in its proper place. Now the phenomena were either a remarkable illusion or as good evidence of independent music as I have heard in this case. What interested me was the simulation of the difficulties and confusion of "forces" which we remark in other psychics, if the sounds were not illusions created by some sort of echo of the machine.

There are undoubted echoes produced by the machine. These I have often remarked, but they are usually of certain notes only. They also seem to vary in locality slightly at times. But I have not remarked, except in the experiments of last winter, such systematic reproduction of the phonograph music as occurred on these three trials. The whole phenomenon, not altered by the change of the horn, had all the impressiveness of independent sounds and created that impression, or illusion, if you may, on my mind very clearly. I have no evidence but this sensation that they were independent. The only thing that we can be certain of is the fact that I had such control of her hand and mouth that Miss Burton did not produce the sounds herself by the use of her vocal organs and perhaps also the fact that Mrs. Milton did not hear the sounds once during the performances. The two alternatives for explaining the facts are illusion on my part and confused independent music, with the facts in favor of the former most probably. The phenomena are not usual in the case and only the way that they stand out in the field of my impressions justifies taking as much interest in them.

But I must further remark one important incident in the last of the trials. It was a vocal piece and I heard all the way through



the words of it duplicated as well as the sounds. I have never before heard this as an echo, and it occurred so constantly that it was not an ordinary illusion. Whole strains of it manifested these words plainly, and it was this that confirmed my interest in the facts. Mrs. Milton did not hear them at all. With the horn of the machine in her ear she could hardly have heard them had they occurred, so that her failure is not so suggestive as it would seem. My impressions were certainly interesting illusions if they were such and I have no way of escaping this suspicion.

As soon as this third trial ended Miss Burton's head fell on my shoulder and she seemed exhausted, groaning faintly now and then. But she soon recovered normal muscular tonicity for the trance. I then proposed after a little pause that I be permitted to whistle myself through the trumpet and Dan responded in eager raps that I might. I began whistling as best I could into the trumpet, following the music as my poor imitative powers would allow, and I had hardly made half a dozen sounds when a clear bright flash of light occurred at my left and Mrs. Milton remarked it several times, as well as I, having kept up the whistling as soon as I saw them to encourage their production. But after occurring three or four times they ceased and Miss Burton began whistling the same music, both of us following the notes of the machine. Mrs. Milton did not remark it at first, but did when I called her attention to it and had it repeated. Then I deliberately whistled different notes from those of the music of the phonograph and Miss Burton followed the phonograph. I found her right hand quiet on the table and as I had the trumpet she could not use that. But the whistling seemed to be at my left and clearly in the vicinity of her face. No importance attaches to the phenomena except the prompt and apparent response to a novel suggestion.

There were following this more traces of hemi-anæsthesia and while I held the left hand there was some clear whistling apparently located at my right, tho not as distinctly so located as to assure me positively of it. It was not skillful and artistic. My face was very close to hers at times and I could not detect the sounds issuing from her mouth. I asked for its repetition and this time I had her face turned to my left and buried between my neck and left shoulder, so that not a sound could issue from

it without detection. No whistling occurred. This was certified by Mrs. Milton as well.

After this Miss Burton recovered complete normal consciousness without any trace of sensibility anywhere. While in this condition and while I held both hands Mrs. Milton said she heard whistling and remarked it at the time of its occurrence. This was repeated and she heard it twice again, but not so many notes as on the first trial. Neither Miss Burton nor myself detected any whatever. I heard only the whistling notes of the phonograph which Mrs. Milton also knew well enough. The probability is that the experience was an illusion like my own previously.

One thing I should remark. I often suspected that the resentment to my touch was evidence of the presence of Black Cloud and I took measures for testing it. Apparently I was correct: for two or three times the struggle was like former occasions, tho less violent, as no opposition was shown to him, and Miss Burton soon became passive and the performances went on. These resistances were usually accompanied by a refusal to go on with the experiments, a refusal, however, that was indicated only by inertia. But by exorcising this condition of resentment I was able to get performance immediately.

Another thing I was able to settle, at least for this occasion. I have remarked in a note above (p. 480) that I thought Miss Burton's eyes might be open in the darkness, as I had seemed to feel her eyelashes. I had a chance to test this during the experiments this evening. I found that what at first seemed to be evidence of the eyelashes winking was caused by the trembling of the face, and her hair against mine. Probably it was the eyebrows that I had before mistaken for the eyelashes, and the trembling of the face. I am certain that it was this trembling on the present occasion, tho it was not her eyebrows that caused the resemblance of the motion of the eyelashes, but strands of her hair.

One of the most interesting phenomena of the evening was the apparent purpose of the hemi-anæsthesia. I held the left hand most of the evening, this having been voluntarily placed in my hand several times. The first time that it was done in the evening it was clearly indicated voluntarily, and when I observed the hemi-anæsthesia at later periods I took the hint to hold the

left hand and all resentment to the touch of the right hand and shoulder ceased immediately. Apparently the hemi-anæsthesia was teleologically developed in order to prevent the use of the left hand in the performances. Once during the evening I was holding the left hand and my face was perhaps four or six inches from Miss Burton's face and whistling occurred in very clear but not loud or artistic tones. As soon as it ended I heard what I took to be the fall of the small trumpet, and Mrs. Milton remarked afterward that she took it to be this. I at once reached for it and found that it was a clasp or breastpin which Miss Burton had thrown there with her right hand. The click of its fall was like the metal sound of the small end of the trumpet whose end is tin. As soon as I found the clasp I reached for her hand and found it at her throat trying to unloosen something. I found nothing there and unhooked the hooks at the back of the neck and no further discomfort was manifested. But apparently the whistling was done without any trumpet at all. In fact we may be certain of this. I was not able to locate it sufficiently to say whether it was apparently independent or not. I noticed no special differences in comparison with other illustrations of the phenomenon.

As we could not get lights or other test incidents I suggested bringing her out. I took her hands for the purpose and it was some minutes before the lethargy passed and her hand jerked, as if recovering consciousness. But instead of coming out she reached for pad and pencil and the hand wrote:—

"It is so discouraging for us to stop without doing what we want to for you but perhaps it is best the conditions seem so changed and we cannot seem to find out why everything is almost as strange as tho we were using a new medium Dan."

I expressed my understanding of this and proceeded to hold her hands again to bring her out. But in a few moments the hand wanted to write again and I gave way to its desire.

"We try so hard to give you results but you do not seem to recognize them \* \* I know they don't get through Dan."

I then soon brought her out of the trance. She came out easily and without any distress whatever, as seems to have been the case in all the experiments of this series. The fact is a distinct change from the distress on my first winter's experiments.

It is true, and a very evident fact, that "they" try hard to give results. It matters not what the explanation of the facts, the evidence is overwhelming that honest efforts are made to give results, and results too that are under test conditions. But they fail almost invariably.

April 21st, 1910.

Present: J. H. H. and Mrs. Milton.

I left Miss Burton alone this evening in response to the desire of Mrs. Milton to eliminate the influence of test conditions and control of the hands. She was exceedingly anxious to get a good exhibition of lights. The result was most excellent whistling, singing and lights. I seldom touched Miss Burton and only then to see what she was doing during her lethargic and inactive moments.

The whistling was remarkable, the trumpet always being used with her hands free, and was very loud and artistic. I never heard better. To test the presence of her breath in it, assuming that she was whistling I went to the other side of the table and both sat and stood at times to see if I could feel a current of air issuing from the trumpet which was in front of me, tho evidently moved about to make the sound appear at different places. But I did not detect the slightest evidence of a current of air, tho the whistling was almost deafening, if I may speak a little exaggeratingly to impress the reader with its real loudness. I never heard louder whistling, appearing louder perhaps than it would out of doors because of the confining walls of the room which is about 12 by 12 feet.

One thing I watched for in the whistling and this was for an interruption to get breath and did not discover this at any time. When I whistled the night before Mrs. Milton remarked that I had to stop to get a breath at times. So I looked for a similar interruption in that of Miss Burton and found none where I would have expected it. At times the evening before I whistled by drawing in air to get breath, but could not whistle as effectively in this manner as by its expiration. But I found no trace of whistling by inspiration on the part of Miss Burton. I could not, however, investigate this point as fully as it deserves, and as

the conditions were not test ones I was not in a position to do what is desirable on that point, having to rely solely on watching the length of the effort and its apparent continuity in intensity. Her breathing would have to be watched and that I could not do under the circumstances.

One set of interesting phenomena did take place. I noticed it before Mrs. Milton spontaneously called attention to it. It was singing, or rather humming, the music played by the phonograph. It followed some very clear singing without any test conditions and also this phenomenon of humming was without test conditions. It had not been observable in previous experiments of the evening. I noticed it by the duplication of the sounds in the phonograph apparently located in various places to my right in front and to my left behind Miss Burton. The sound, as on the previous night, seemed distinctly independent of the phonograph, tho duplicating its tones in less volume and differing from them as a hum would differ from instrumental music. After it had gone on a few minutes Mrs. Milton spontaneously remarked it and at the close I admitted the fact, but remarked that I was not sure of it, as I feared the effect of echoes by the music of the machine, tho it did not seem like the echoes that I usually recognize. On my saying this there were vigorous raps to signify that it would be repeated. This was done and I remarked the same effects, and so did Mrs. Milton. This time I kept my face near Miss Burton, as I had occasionally done in the first effort, and heard no sounds in her vicinity, save the occasional groan which she emits when doing something difficult. But when it was difficult to locate more clearly defined sounds it would be more difficult to be sure of these. All that I can remark is my failure to discover what I was seeking. When it was over she fell forward and had to rest a while.

The lights came rather early in the evening. Miss Burton was not in any way under control. They were clear and to some extent responded in locality to my expressed desire. After the first trial at these there was a respite from them and some whistling was done, apparently to rest her from them. Then they came spontaneously some time later. In the first instance of them I asked that they appear on the face. They did not do so immediately tho they did in a few moments or minutes. In

the second trial they appeared in the face, as I suppose, more frequently and more distinctly. Sometimes they would seem to illuminate the face for as much as an inch and a half square, at others for a distance of two inches but only as a line an eighth of inch wide. There were no clear pointed lights in the face.

Sometimes Mrs. Milton saw a light which I could not see, and sometimes I saw one which she could not see. Sometimes I saw two or three lights simultaneously but not any greater distance apart than could be made by using as many fingers. Sometimes the light took a curve through the air, like a falling star. Seldom did a light appear stationary. They were always momentary and also varied in size and distinctness. Sometimes they seemed as much as a quarter of an inch in diameter and at others as a mere point, and often as brilliant as an electric light and often as a small point not well illuminated or as a mere cloud. But I did not once get the effect of a phosphorus cloud. I watched for this on every occasion of their appearance. Every one of them had not the slightest resemblance to the phosphorus cloud which I have produced with matches. While the exhibition of them was in progress I often leaned forward to see if I could get the smell of phosphorus and uniformly failed to do so. After one of the performances I asked aloud, so that no shock would occur, to have her left hand. I reached for it as I made the request and found it inert on the table. There was a slight reaction of it as I touched it, but not special resentment, and I took it with the right hand and put my nose to them and thought I could detect a slight sensation of phosphorus. In fact, the sensation was a rather certain one, but it was so indistinct that I am as much bound to regard it as an illusion or due to expectation as I would be in explaining away a more perplexing phenomenon by illusion from expectation. I do not believe that it was an illusion, as a matter of fact, but the smell was too slight, occurring immediately after the lights, to suppose that the traces of phosphorus could be so quickly and easily obliterated. For it would have taken a good deal of it, and perhaps in an unusual form, to produce any such lights as appeared.

After the close of the performance I asked to see Miss Burton's hand and to smell it. She had no objections and I could detect less evidence of smell, tho it seemed present, and Mrs.

Milton thought she could smell it, tho a little uncertain about it. Neither of them object to this view of it, as they think, Mrs. Milton having volunteered it and Miss Burton probably accepting the theory of her foster mother, that the lights are produced through her fingers and hands.

The important thing of the evening was to observe now and then the evidence of subconscious honesty. I observed this in the spontaneous collapses which occurred once or twice after a labored effort to do something which was entirely abortive. What it was we did not learn. But there were several rather long and strained attempts at something. I frequently heard the faint groans of other occasions, and sometimes found the hands folded together resting quietly on the table. A few times when I touched them there was a slight resistance, but this was spontaneously corrected and the hands voluntarily and strenuously held together and sometimes even thrust into mine as evidence of a desire to overcome the automatic resentment manifested. There was much more sensibility during the evening to my touch than on previous occasions, but this was probably due to the fact that I did not attempt control and to the sudden contact of my hand at times without warning, as I have noticed it in the dark during her normal consciousness and corrected in the same way. At times, however, there was not the slightest reaction to my touch, and whether her action was at any time due to the conditions that alternate between anæsthesia and æsthesia I do not know, not having had any appropriate opportunity to test this question.

There was some simultaneous whistling and singing early in the evening, and as it was not under any control it was better than usual. The apparent different distances of the whistling and singing, the latter being nearer the face, were as usual. I at times placed my face as near hers as evasion of touch would permit and heard the notes of the singing nearer her face and the whistling apparently two or three feet distant. No words of the music were uttered.

When I thought it late enough to stop the experiments I suggested terminating them and took her hands, while she was inert, to help bring her out. When she recovered muscular tonicity the hand reached for pad and pencil, but with apparent dif-



ficulty. I gave them and there was a pause and some agitation in the hand, I keeping watch of it by touching the hand at times and the wrist at others. I had my attention called to the necessity of this by the struggle I detected going on in the hand about the pencil. I noticed that there were peculiar movements of the fingers and soon discovered that they were trying to get the pencil between the first and second fingers. It stopped the struggle two or three times, after actually succeeding in it. Finally the pencil was thrown down on the table with the sharpened end in the fingers, and I raised it up and inserted it between the first and second fingers. The hand then wrote in the air a few moments and descended to the paper and wrote as follows, in a handwriting not so distinct as Dan's:—

"There is something I want to write [very scrawly] but when I get the pencil I do not seem to know what it is I want [very scrawly] to say H."

The pencil was then thrown down and I asked if we should turn up the light. No response came to this and I repeated the question two or three times without response. In the meantime the pencil was seized and the following written:—

"We must have more strength to draw from there seems to be such a lack of strength Dan."

We then brought Miss Burton out of the trance in the usual way. She showed a little more than the usual muscular agitation coming out, tho not indicating any special distress. It was only longer than usual in this series of experiments and a little more trembling.

At one stage of the experiments I asked the control if he could whistle when the machine was not going, and the reply was "Yes" by three raps. We tried it and at a certain point the phonograph was suddenly stopped and the whistling continued for a short time, but showed dwindling power and stopped quickly. It was repeated with the same diminuendo in the whistling. It was not at all good when the machine was not playing. I also asked to have the whistling started without the phonograph playing and this was tried. But a second effort had to be made before success was attained. It was very feeble music, however, and continued only for a few bars. It was tried again, but without success.

In order to compare the excellent whistling with vaudeville whistling of the same rank I went to the musical store of the place where phonographs and their music are to be found wholesale and on my request three pieces of the best vaudeville whistling were played on a Victor phonograph and I should say that Miss Burton's whistling of last night was quite as good as what I here heard. It is probable that the pieces heard in the store represented at points a better defined technique, but were not better in general artistic merit and in many points of technique. They seemed as loud as hers and hers as loud as these. Better judges might declare her whistling inferior to these pieces and I know I have heard many instances of hers far inferior. But the best illustrations which manifest themselves when no control is applied are quite apparently equal to what I heard on the machine, at least in many of their aspects, tho discussion might arise on points.

The interesting thing to note is that in her normal state she and her family associates declare that she cannot whistle at all save to call a dog, and it is apparent that she cannot whistle with any artistic success without music, tho she has done some of it better perhaps than she can normally. One illustration last winter without the music, when Mrs. Milton went to the kitchen and stopped the machine, had some merits but by no means to be compared with such as occurs during music.

After transcribing my memories of the evening before I got two kinds of matches, both ordinary phosphorus matches, one the red tipped and the other white points with black ground of Scandinavian make or type, and went into a closet which I could make as dark as pitch with not a ray of light entering it, except a barely visible touch of it at the bottom of the door and this not sufficient to illuminate even the region about the crevice. Here I tried for a long time with each kind of matches, having come out to wash my hands after the experiment with one of them, and I was wholly unable by any manner of effort to reproduce any kind of a light resembling what I observed last night. I could get the white cloud which would sometimes linger for half a minute and sometimes disappear quickly, but would never present

the yellow light of the evening previous. Also at no time could I get the points of light visible in the experiments with Miss Burton. I could get a cloud for a few moments which would reappear if I touched the finger tip on the palm of the hand and it left behind it on the palm a similar cloud. Often these would remain visible for some moments, and as often disappear very quickly and reappear spontaneously without rubbing. I tried also without success to get the instantaneous appearance and disappearance of those remarked the evening before and could not do it, tho at times I seemed to have done so. Possibly this appearance was due to the simultaneous disappearance of the light and the motion of my hand, but I could never determine this coincidence. Otherwise there was no reproduction of the instantaneousness of the lights of Miss Burton.

I also tried smelling my hands after the experiments and found that, if done at once it was very marked, far more so than on the evening before. But after the lapse of a minute the sensation was less distinct, tho perceptible several minutes afterward.

April 22d, 1910.

Present: J. H. H. and Mrs. Milton.

When I went away the previous evening, I remarked that I wished a sitting for mental phenomena and would make a special experiment. This was understood when we started, therefore, and it was interesting to remark Miss Burton's freedom from the suggestion of the music, as she did not show any tendencies to go immediately into the trance. I tested her for anæsthesia several times and found no traces of it. After a long wait she remarked that she saw a light. Asked to describe its color and shape she said it was yellow and looked like a large canvas. She then remarked that she felt queer in her head and when asked to describe her feelings she remarked that she felt as if she were going away from everything, and later on described it as like floating. After a considerable wait she remarked that she saw something like bars on the canvas. Another pause and she said they were an iron fence. In a moment there was a convulsion

and she was in the trance. I waited a few moments and took hold of her two hands which were lying on the table and in perhaps two seconds there was the usual jerk or convulsion and she was normal.

After waiting awhile she saw a room and a table in it with a drop light on it.

When the iron fence was mentioned I recalled, after a few moments, that there was an iron fence about the park on the way to Dr. Hodgson's rooms in Boston and wondered whether this was meant, as I assumed from previous experiences here that he would be the communicator or at least concerned with the evening's work. The mention of the room as described confirmed my suspicions. I asked what the table was like and after a pause of some time the answer came that it looked like a large office desk. She then spontaneously remarked that there was a large chair present, and requested to describe it more fully said it was an easy chair, and dark red. I recognized this chair and asked if it had any special name and she replied in a moment or two that it looked like a Morris chair and had a high back. I thought of an open fireplace in the room at which I once sat with a wood fire and asked how the room was heated to see if I would get a mention of this fireplace. The reply came after a pause that it was a radiator. I do not recall this and no mention was made of the fireplace.

I then asked if any help could come from the writing, hoping that this method could make the matter clearer. In a moment Miss Burton went instantly into the trance by a jerk and soon reached for pad and pencil. I placed them and the hand wrote:—

"There are others in control to-night and they are doing things the best and easiest way for them. I am only in control to keep the medium for them to work through. Dan."

There was a little difficulty in deciphering some of the words and when I failed to get any word correctly a rap signifying "No" would be made. I could not decipher the last two words and the hand wrote them on the sheet while I was making the effort.

I let her rest after the writing for a short time and then asked Dan if I should hold her hands and three raps signified the affirmative. I took both her hands and almost instantly

there was the usual jerk and she was normally conscious. After a long pause she saw the iron fence again and I asked what was near it. A pause and she remarked shrubbery and bushes. This was correct, tho I was thinking of the park and hoped to get an allusion to a small lake and bridge. Pressing for something else she said flowers, and I remarked that there was something beside the flowers. After a pause she said she saw something mixed up but could not tell what it was. Then finally she saw spontaneously a large tree with a seat around it.

There was then a sudden jerk and she was again in the trance. In a few minutes, after a rest, the hand sought the pad and pencil and wrote:—

"The control is so different and she is so unused to it it makes it hard to keep her conscious all the time we had not better try to hold her to [too] long Dan."

This was apparently to explain the changes of personality or condition and I took the hint to let her rest each time this occurred and to ask when to hold the hands. I followed this policy, as I had done before. After waiting a few minutes I asked Dan if I should hold the hands and raps indicated the affirmative. Almost instantly after taking the hands she was normally conscious, coming out with a jerk.

After a long pause she saw a shadow and presently a man, not very heavy and with a high forehead and a beard. I asked the color of the beard and she replied brown. She then remarked that he was in this room. When I asked what he was doing there no reply came but in a moment there was a quick and rather violent convulsion and she was in the trance again.

I let her rest some time and finally asked Dan if I should take the hands and the response was three raps. She recovered consciousness as before, almost instantly that I took the hands. After a pause she remarked that the room seemed so black. I waited some time and asked if it still seemed black and then asked Dan if he understood the sensation of blackness and on receiving an affirmative reply by three raps asked if it involved a special purpose and received again the affirmative answer in three raps.

I then let things take their own course for five or eight minutes, as far as I could guess time, and presently after this she

spontaneously remarked that she saw a red brick house. I at once thought of my old home and there was again a long pause, with the hope that something else would come to identify it more clearly. After the long pause Miss Burton remarked that she felt dizzy and that once in a while she got a flash of light but nothing more. Then a few moments later remarked that she saw something dim and expressed the belief that it was a house. When asked to tell how many stories it had the reply was that she could not see it plainly enough to say. After a pause I asked Dan if it was another person than my friend that was giving this picture, having my father in mind and the reply was the affirmative three raps. I then asked if he had ever told me about that house before and no reply came. I asked if any part of it had been mentioned and received an affirmative answer in three raps. I then said, "all right, give me a picture of that part of it." After a long pause Miss Burton said she saw a window with a bright light in it. This was not what I was thinking of, the old log kitchen being in my mind. She then saw the room but said it was dim. After a pause she remarked that all the chairs seemed nearly alike. There was another pause and everything disappeared and she saw only black again. Then she went suddenly into the trance again and after a rest was brought out in the usual way.

After a pause she could not see anything at first, but a few moments later remarked that she felt if she reached out she could touch something solid. Then she saw the shadow of something that was "real tall." Then she remarked she could see an outline of it, but not plainly. In a few moments she remarked that it was larger at the bottom and smaller above with something on the top. I asked what was on top and received no reply. In a moment there was a convulsion and Miss Burton was in the trance. When the description just given was made I could think of nothing but the tall chimney on our old kitchen and so waited for further details to determine its meaning, supposing that the reference again was to the old red brick house and something in connection with it. But while resting the hand reached for the pad and pencil. They were given and after a pause with occasional agitation in the hand it seemed to be writing. There had been a struggle to get the pencil into the hand, having

dropped it two or three times and being aided by me. Finally it was seized between the first and second fingers and apparently began the writing. When the light was turned up I found only a symbol on the sheet. It contains five wings and is circular in dimensions or form. It might be said to be star-shaped, except that the projections are not pointed. In fact, it could be described as a wheel with broad spokes but no rim, and in this respect resembles the wheel of a windmill. I did not understand it and asked that it be explained in writing. The light was turned out and the pencil seized, in much trembling and a struggle something was written, and the light was turned on after the raps signified that we could do so. I found the word "Wind" written with a letter or scrawl after it which might be the letter "m," or "hi." I at once thought of the old wind pump at home, but said nothing, after merely reading the word "wind." Mrs. Milton remarked "windmill." I then read it so and asked if this was correct and the reply came in three raps.\* I still supposed that the old wind pump was in mind and knowing that it would not be natural for father to mention this, while it would be

---

\* The following figure represents what I have described in the text as representing the symbolic effort to convey to me the name "Whirlwind." The record may not convey to the reader so distinctly just what was drawn by Miss Burton and the cut will show what was interpreted as the wheel of a windmill.



The following cut represents the handwriting in which the word for "Windmill" was written and another sample of Dan's handwriting which will exhibit the difference between them. "Wind M" is so fine in the cut that it minimizes the appearance of the original. It is a very different



natural for my recently deceased sister I started to find out by raps, directing my questions to test guessing. The questions and answers were as follows:

(Did a man give this?)

One rap. [No]

(Did a lady?)

Three raps. [Yes]

(Was it my mother?)

One rap. [No]

(Was it my sister?)

One rap. [No]

[I paused in some perplexity and repeated my questions without distinct replies. Then I repeated them slowly again.]

(Was it my mother?)

One rap. [No]

(Was it my sister?)

One rap. [No]

(Was it an aunt?)

One rap. [No]

(Was it a cousin?)

One rap. [No]

[I was again in perplexity as I could not think of any other

---

type from the usual automatic writing and the comparison is designed to indicate this to the reader. In making the photograph of the word "Wind M" it was somewhat diminished in size and hence does not represent the original accurately except in form.

*Mr. W. J. ...*  
*... to be*  
*... person*  
*...*

*Hand to*

way to ask questions without suggesting the person. In a moment it flashed on my mind what the word "wind" meant and I at once asked if this was some other lady than a relative, as follows.]

(Is it another lady that is not a relative?)

Three raps. [Yes]

(Have you ever communicated with me before?)

Three raps. [Yes]

(Was it at another light?)

Three raps. [Yes]

(Did you promise to come here?)

Three raps. [Yes]

This was clear identification, tho the last answers cannot be regarded as evidential, as each is one guess out of two, but no negative reply came in them. I waited to think of another question, perhaps for ten or more seconds and then asked if she remembered what she called me at those experiments. No reply came. I repeated the query and again no reply came. In a moment there was reaching for pad and pencil and the hand wrote:—

"She could not stay longer. Dan."

After a wait of some minutes Dan spontaneously suggested by three raps that something was wanted. Asked if it was a change of music one rap came as a negative response. Asked if it was light a negative reply still came and the three raps were repeated until asked if something was wanted of me and the reply was three raps again. Mrs. Milton asked if I should take the hands and the affirmative three raps were given. I took the hands and almost instantly Miss Burton recovered normal consciousness with a jerk.

After a long pause Mrs. Milton said she saw a middle aged person, not a relative that wanted to communicate.

As soon as she recovered Miss Burton asked if we had moved and on being told that we had not she said she felt turned around, possibly a relic of the whirlwind message.

After a pause of some minutes she remarked that she saw something queer and could not make it out. Presently she exclaimed that it was a train of cars. I, recalling Dr. Hodgson's trips with me to the Piper case, asked where the person was go-

ing. No reply came to this either oral or visual, except the statement that she could not tell. Presently she saw something in front of the train. I asked if he had been on that train with any one and three raps came in reply. Then I asked if we were connected with the work on that train. There was no reply to this but a pause. Presently she remarked that everything seemed upside down and could not see what it meant. Then there was a sudden and rather violent convulsion and she was in the trance. After a pause she reached for pad and pencil and on being given seemed to write. As soon as the pencil was thrown down I asked if we should turn up the lights and the reply was one rap for "No." On response of three raps to my question if I should hold the hands she recovered instantly as before. After the next writing I examined the sheet of paper and there was no writing on it. The apparent attempt to write consisted of two intervals of it interrupted by a pause.

On recovery Miss Burton remarked again that her head felt light as if floating. Presently she saw the train again and high hills and mountains all around, and heard something but could not say what it was. In a moment she heard it again and said all she got was "Ad." I then asked "Ad" what. No reply came to this and there was a considerable pause when she finally said she heard a word again. I asked that she give it more fully. In a moment she said it seemed like "Adders" or "Ad-sley." Presently she suddenly fell into the trance with the usual convulsion and the hand soon wrote:—

"There are so many things I want to tell you if there were only time."

There was no signature to this, and after a pause I took the hands in response to Dan's three raps following my question if I should do so, she suddenly recovered as usual her normal consciousness. After a considerable pause she broke out with the statement that the word was Adirondacks. I then asked if I had met the person there and the reply was three raps. I then asked if he remembered what we talked about there, I not being sure whether it was Hodgson or my father-in-law that was represented in the attempt. The answer was three raps, and I asked if we had talked about this work and no reply came, but Miss Burton fell suddenly with a slight convulsion into the trance. In

a few moments she indicated the desire to write and on pad and pencil being furnished wrote:—

"It is best for us to go now We have done all we can for to-night we did not accomplish all we wanted to but it cannot be helped we \* \* must [supposed or undeciphered part erasing it] go now I will try to deliver your message for you next sitting H."

I then brought Miss Burton out of the trance almost instantly.

The whole procedure this evening was remarkably interesting in its psychological features and wholly apart from the question of supernormal incidents which were apparent. In the first place the music showed no tendency to suggest the trance at any time. The pauses were very long and tedious at times, more so than the narrative of the record would imply to the reader, and the sudden precipitation into the trance was always related either to some apparently supreme effort to get a fact or to exhaustion. Even plaintive music which at all other times was quickly and vigorously resented was not disturbing on this occasion. There was not a single effort to do anything physical. No whistling or singing was even attempted and the whole psychological machinery was arranged with reference to this new method of communicating and was consistently managed. The inability to write in explanation of the abortive efforts to get the pictures readily was consistently avoided except once when I got the word "wind." The hands lay passively on the table at all times and were touched by me only now and then to see if they were so. I kept my left elbow close to the sleeve of her dress to watch her right hand. She responded to all questions by oral answers except when she was in the trance and remained normally conscious all the time with the same exceptions.

On the whole the sitting was the best that I have had. significance of the word "wind" and the wheel will be apparent when I say that a personality in the case of Mrs. Chenoweth, calling herself Whirlwind and myself Hurricane in estimation of her rapid methods and mine, promised to come here and to try to give her name. I had been looking for Jennie P——, which was what I had in mind when I got

the letters "P i e" at a previous sitting. I had not thought of Whirlwind as better. But here we have the *whirl* apparently in the figure like the wheel of a windmill and the word "wind" for the second syllable. It is apparently as good a cross reference as one might desire.

Just after the first automatic writing I asked Dan if my friend was present and the answer "Yes" came in three raps. I then asked if he could take a message to another light and the answer was two raps signifying that he did not know, but asked if he would try I received the answer "Yes" in three raps. I then said that I wanted him to get the medium to see the same thing that he had gotten this one to see and that he should also have it written as he did here, not saying out loud what the symbol was, as Mrs. Milton and Miss Burton had not seen the written symbol.

At the sittings with Mrs. Chenoweth which have been mentioned in the "Summary of Facts," (pp. 97-100, 533), it was claimed that they had sittings after I had left and that certain things were done. I then suggested that Hodgson and others take some messages to deliver there. This was agreed. As soon as I could I wrote to Dr. Hamilton to know if he had had any experiments and telling him to write me what had occurred, saying that I had certain statements of the facts told me in Boston, tho not telling him what they were. I requested him to tell me what they were, if he were present, and to have Mrs. Milton tell him, if she had any sittings. I also requested him to have a sitting, as I had sent certain messages. He carried out my suggestions and the following is his report of them. The reader will see that there were no sittings held prior to my suggestions, so that the claim made in Boston was wholly false. The report follows in detail.

May 6th, 1910.

My dear Dr. Hyslop:

Answering your letter of April 30th, received May 2d, I wish to say that I called up Mrs. Milton at once, without telling her why I wanted to know, asking her if she had had any sittings lately.

She said she had not had any since you left. I did not send any message nor did she nor Dr. Smyth, so I cannot understand the message which you received. I told Mrs. Milton that I should like to have a sitting with Anna, and it was first arranged for Wednesday night (May 4th) and later changed to Thursday (May 5th). We got some rather interesting things which I shall describe.

We began at 8.15 and in a few minutes we got the following writing:—"I think you had better take the hands until we get perfect control of her we are going to try to avoid any unnecessary trouble to-night if possible and if at any time she seems to get excited or we do not answer quickly just take her hands and hold them in spite of her resistance Dan."

By following these instructions, that is, holding her hand and, whenever she jerked, taking hold of the other hand, I kept her in light enough trance for her to talk. We had many struggles with Black Cloud, but managed to keep her in this light talking trance all evening. She first saw a big light, surrounded by a lot of little lights, and she and Mrs. Milton frequently felt the cool breeze, which I felt only once. Looking at this light made her very dizzy, she said, and she complained of this all evening. The big light finally changed into a very old man about as tall as Mrs. Milton, with long gray hair and beard and a sort of robe with something "wide around the shoulders."

After a long while she saw an "X" and finally it suddenly dawned upon them that this was a cross. I told her to look closely and she said the old man was trying to tell her something connected with the cross. After some time, she made out an "S" in the upper right hand corner. I thought this was the "I. H. S.," so common on crosses, but this was all she saw. She finally said: "What did you say?", and I said it was the old man talking to her, and that she should try to hear what he said. She replied: "Why, I thought it was you who spoke," and then had much trouble in hearing what he said. She said it began with an "H" and tried to pronounce "Hu": she did not seem to realize that she got the "u," but her mouth made this sound. She was quite puzzled in trying to get this. I said is it an Italian word? She said "No, it sounds more like an Indian word to me," and she said "Hu" two or three times, but was unable

to get it, altho several attempts were made to give her the word.

She was shown two figures, "3" and "6." She was quite certain of all she saw. Later she was shown "M A S" and again tried to see the long Indian name, beginning with "H." She then saw "O N I C," and then wrote the following automatically:—

"We must let her rest a little this is so new to her and it is tiring her a great deal Dan."

We allowed her to rest and then she resented contact and I had quite a struggle to bring her out. Then twenty minutes or so were spent in trying to get that name, which she could not do, and then the following was written automatically:—

"We had better go for this time I have done my best be very careful when she begins to come out do not let go her hands until you are sure she is fully awake \* \* [scrawl.]

[Dr. Hamilton interpreted the scrawl to be an attempt to make the capital H. The fact that supports this view was the manner of holding the pencil which was between the first and second fingers, the note to this effect being on the original sheet.]

I suspected "Hodgson" because she played with the pencil some little time, finally taking it in his characteristic position. When it was written, I could not read it readily and the hand reached up in the air, very imperiously feeling around for the pencil. I laid the pencil in the usual position Dan uses [between thumb and finger], but it was impatiently taken between the other fingers and the following message was written:—

"be very careful when she begins to come back and do not let go her hands until you are sure she is all right H." [This time the "H" is quite clear.]

After holding her hands awhile she was all right and I turned up the red light: she immediately fell forward on her face, and Mrs. Milton said, "Turn out the light," when the hand roughly felt for the pencil and she wrote the following, with her head lying on the table:—

"M W [?] do not turn out the light I believe if we get rid of this influence now we will have no trouble H"

I could not read it readily and the hand waved in the air, her face on the table; and when I handed the pencil, which she put between the first and second fingers, she wrote:—



"now we will have no more trouble H The light is very tired good night H"

In a minute or two she came to consciousness, feeling much more tired than usual, and the sitting was shorter than usual, and we did not get very much, as is apparent.

The play of personality was very interesting, especially the waving of the hand for the pencil and the seeming inability to write with it for the "H" personality in any other way than between the fingers. Calling her the "light" was quite characteristic, as well as the tone of the message different from those of Dan or Lenore.

It was quite amusing to see the quickness with which Anna got the fact that it was a cross, after thinking that it was an "X" for a long while. I did not tell her, but she suddenly said: "Oh, that's a cross." She was very certain of all the letters she saw, altho she saw them a long while before she could identify them. I said nothing about holding the pencil, as I did not suppose she knew there was any difference. She did not remember anything of the occurrence when she came out.

March 14th, 1911.

[As I read the proofs I note that the "old man" here mentioned in the clairvoyant visions shows characteristics of what has been represented as Imperator in many other cases. These are the reference to the robe and what was evidently intended for a cross. The description coincides with a vision in the *Fourth Series* (p. 540), where I first suspected or surmised the possible presence of Prof. Sidgwick.

The word "MASONIC," given as it was in fragments, does not suggest an explanation, unless it be a subconscious association on the part of Miss Burton in connection with the effort to interpret the symbol which was finally found to be the cross.—J. H. H.]

### ADDENDA TO THIRD SERIES.

#### Report of Mr. Smecker.

February 22d, 1910.

At this séance there were present besides myself, Mr. and Mrs. Pitcher, Miss Freeland, Mrs. Smecker and Mr. Ballou, with Mrs. Milton and Miss Burton.

The medium, Miss Burton, was seated in the center of the table facing the windows. At her right sat Mr. Pitcher and then came the others, and Mrs. Milton who, as usual, sat next to the phonograph. No one sat between the phonograph and the medium.

I was placed so that I could see the outlines of the heads of Mrs. Smecker, Miss Freeland and Mr. Ballou in the dim light which came through the spaces above and below the shades of one of the windows.

I had provided myself with a small bottle of lamp black and a stick of black grease paint. The séance commenced in the usual way, the table moving and opening. Very shortly after the singing and whistling commenced the trumpet fell close to me and I took this opportunity to smear the narrow end with black grease paint. Unfortunately, as I immediately discovered, the scent of the paint was very perceptible. I did not take the trumpet from the table to do this and the operation took only a fraction of a second. Immediately after I had done this, the trumpet was taken from the table but there was no further singing or whistling for quite a perceptible length of time. There was some rapping on the table and Mrs. Milton remarked that something must have gone wrong with the influences and asked "Dan" whether he wished the record changed. Dan answered in the affirmative and the record was changed. In the meantime I distinctly heard the trumpet rubbed on the medium and Mrs. Milton volunteered the remark that the spirits were remagnetizing the trumpet.\*

---

\*There is no excuse generally in resorting to such a test as lamp-

After a few minutes the singing and whistling again commenced. Some time after this, towards the middle of the séance and at least half an hour after I had put the grease paint on the trumpet, I attempted by holding my arm in the air vertically and leaning out over the table to intercept the trumpet which was evidently swinging to and fro over the table and to ascertain how far it projected from the medium.

In this way I reached out further and further over the table and nearer to the medium until my elbow was in a line with the cross piece or slide under the table nearest to the medium. I distinctly felt this cross piece with my right hand whilst with my left arm I reached up vertically in line with it. At this point a hand gave me two distinct slaps on my left arm between my elbow and wrist and "Lenore" whispered to me through the trumpet to keep my hands on the table; that by holding my arm in the air I was disturbing the influences. I then withdrew my arm. This is evidently the instance referred to in the message (No. 3) but it took place as I have said at least half an hour after the placing of the grease paint on the trumpet and I did not in any way mark the trumpet at any other time.

---

black and grease, tho I think subjects would resent such methods less passionately were the experimenter to choose less objectionable substances. Spiritualists, however, are exposed to this method as long as they insist upon darkness as a condition. The man of the world, anxious to decide a most important question will not care to exercise the patience of the scientific man studying hysteria and will always yield to the temptation to take the short cut to his end. It is unfortunate, however, that he has the temerity to think that he has any qualifications for investigating such cases. He had better invest his money in scientific work and accept the verdict. He only hinders both a scientific and a humane work when he undertakes with his rough crude methods to settle a question that is one of the most delicate in psychology.

As a good illustration of hasty inferences is the one regarding the rubbing off the grease and lamp black. This is pure imagination on his part. If he had gone about investigating the case rightly he would have found that this is a very constant habit on the part of the medium. It may be ridiculous, but it had no relation to rubbing off the grease as experience has shown, and more, there was none of the grease on the medium's clothes afterward. It would have shown on them if it had been. Even if it would not have shown the slightest experience with the case would have proved that the rubbing is a hysterical phenomenon occurring hundreds of times when there is no apparently rational motive for it.

Early in the evening I had remarked to Mrs. Milton that I would like to try the same experiment reported by Dr. Smyth when he was permitted to feel the pulse of the so-called spirit hands. It was my intention to mark my fingers with grease paint and lamp black so that when feeling the pulse I could make finger prints on the arm held out to me.

"Lenore" was asked a number of times, both by myself and Mrs. Milton, to let me feel her pulse, but she would give no definite answer. In the meantime I prepared the thumb and the three first fingers of my right hand by smearing the tips with grease paint and then daubing them with lamp black. I kept my left hand on the table at all times waiting for the spirit hand to touch it. After that hand had been touched frequently by "Lenore" in the usual way and towards the end of the séance, "Lenore's" hand was slipped into mine and I immediately felt her pulse with my right hand, holding the three fingers on the back of the hand tendered me and the place where I thought the pulse should be. The hand which reached out to me was a left hand.

After the séance closed and when the lights were turned on, I, of course, immediately looked at the medium. Her hands were on the table and her left hand showed three distinct finger prints. As I looked at her hand Miss Burton caught my eye, looked down at her hand and immediately withdrew it from the table. As she did so I caught sight of a thumb print below the wrist just at the place where I had held my thumb. Miss Burton then began to rub her hand on her skirt, evidently trying to remove the black marks. She again brought it up to the level of the table and seeing that the marks were still there, put both her hands behind her back. We then all arose from the table and Mr. Pitcher and I entered into a conversation with Miss Burton on the subject of her trance condition and other matters connected with that, of course in no way mentioning the marks on her hand. She kept her hands behind her back all the time. When Mr. Pitcher was talking to her I tried to edge up behind her to see the marks more clearly, but she evidently noticed it, for she immediately turned away from me and backed toward the wall of the room and stood with her back to the wall in such a position that I could not possibly see her hands. It was perfectly evident to me

that she was trying to keep me from seeing the condition of her left hand.\*

Judging from the happenings at the séance and the subsequent alleged spirit messages, it is quite clear to me:—

1. That Miss Burton noticed the grease paint on the trumpet as soon as I put it there. This accounts for the delay in phenomena until the trumpet had been wiped on the medium, ostensibly for the purpose of remagnetizing it but evidently for removing the paint. Miss Burton did not know how the black marks got on her hand, but knowing that I had marked the trumpet, naturally attributed the marks on her hand to the paint that had been placed on the trumpet.

2. The so-called spirit messages are utterly incorrect in the following respects:—

(a) The trumpet was not marked just before "Lenore" spoke to me about keeping my hands on the table.

(b) I did not wipe the paint off the trumpet as stated in message No. 4.

(c) I did put the black on the medium's hand and not on the trumpet as stated in message No. 2.†

---

\* The insinuation of Mr. Smecker from the observed behavior of Miss Burton after the séance is not the only interpretation of the situation. From what I have observed in her case, when talking about being dressed in protection of herself against suspicion, I noticed that æsthetic feelings were absurdly marked in her and any girl would naturally shy at betraying marks on her hand that might imply untidiness. Besides I have often enough seen her stand with back to the wall and hands behind her back when no such experiments were performed and there was no reason in concealment of anything for doing so. She might well see the marks and conceal them without knowing what they meant, and all this with a perfectly definite consciousness that she would appear slovenly if the mark was seen.

I must add, also, that here as elsewhere, in this particular record, as well as the one which follows, the writers show the effect of a negative bias which is as bad as that in believers, and draw hasty conclusions which are due to pure imagination. Had they the slightest knowledge of abnormal psychology they would have adopted different methods, shown more patience, and would have been wiser in their inferences.

† The contents of the automatic writing should not have been taken seriously by Mr. Smecker in the application he gave it. Whatever evidential value it has is in favor of her sincerity. It only shows that he approaches the problem with the wrong assumptions.

[A diagram of the table and of the hand with representation of the spots made on it accompanies the report, but as no special importance attaches to the phenomena they are not here reproduced.]

### REPORT OF MR. PITCHER.

February 22d, 1910.

On February 22d, 1910, I was present at a séance given by Miss Burton, having previously attended one given by her some ten days or two weeks before. There were six of us present besides Mrs. Milton and Miss Burton.

We arrived promptly at 8 P. M. in the evening and took our places around a table in the center of the dining room. On the table were two papier mâché trumpets, one with a small and the other with a large mouth piece, two tambourines, a pad of paper, a bell, and some clothes line. This table was an ordinary circular dining table of polished oak, rather heavy, weighing somewhere near 100 pounds, and could be extended in the usual way. Miss Burton sat at one side of the table facing the sideboard and the two windows opposite, one window being at each end of the sideboard. I noticed that one end of the crack across the table which marked the line of separation of the two halves, was exactly in front of her, so that if each end of the table were extended, she would be right in front of the opening.

I sat at the medium's right, with my chair a foot away. Mrs. Milton sat at the medium's left, several feet back from the table and close enough to the Victor phonograph, which stood in the corner of the room, between herself and the medium, to enable her to keep the machine playing during the séance. The other five members of the party were arranged around the table from my right to Mrs. Milton at the left. The doors were closed, the shades were drawn, the lights on the chandelier above the table were turned out, we all laid our hands lightly on the table palms down, the phonograph started, and in half a minute or so the table commenced to move diagonally across the room in the direction of the phonograph, its two halves, at the same time, gradually separating. We all kept pace with this movement of the table, by sliding our chairs along the floor. This movement

carried my chair and that of the medium up against the wall behind and to the left of our original positions, so that she was now only two or three feet away from the phonograph on her left, the opening of the table being directly in front of her. By this time my eyes had become accustomed to the darkness and I noticed a very dim band of light across the window in front of me, which would allow me to distinguish any opaque object intervening between me and the window. Miss Burton kept her right hand on the right half of the table, palm down, and just to the right of the opening. I covered this hand with my left hand and continued to do so with a few interruptions during the entire séance. I am inclined to believe that my left hand kept her right hand covered in this manner during the movement and separation of the table, as I do not recollect any muscular straining in her right hand. She must have moved the table with her left hand, or her feet, or both.

By this time, of course, Miss Burton was supposed to be in her trance and occasionally would utter a faint sigh. Mrs. Milton kept placing new records on the phonograph as fast as the old ones were finished. At times a trumpet would be lifted from the table, and a voice purporting to be that of some control, "Lenore," "Mrs. Galton," etc., would sing all or a portion of the chorus in unison with the music from the phonograph. There was a slight quavering soprano voice, a low contralto voice and several others intermediate in pitch, yet all of them having a very suspicious similarity. These voices appeared to issue from the trumpet in different regions immediately above the table, as the trumpet was swung from side to side. By leaning my head close to the medium's, I was able to locate the singing as coming from her own mouth. At times, one of the controls, "Dan," would show his dislike for a certain record, by snapping back the small lever on the phonograph and thus stopping the music. The location of this lever on top of and in front of the phonograph made it a simple matter for the medium to snap it back with her disengaged left hand. Mrs. Milton volunteered an explanation of the different phenomena as they occurred and to all appearances seemed to have implicit faith in their supernormal origin.

When "Dan" thus stopped the machine or other results were



obtained which naturally required the medium's left hand or of her body, I could detect no coördinate movement in her right hand, as it lay on the table, palm down under mine. By holding my left forearm, however, parallel to and along side of her right forearm and keeping the two in close contact, I was readily able to detect the coördinate movement of her forearm, which would naturally result. Thus the shaking of a tambourine, which was undoubtedly done by her left hand, was plainly communicated to the elbow of her right arm, and when she leaned across the table to touch the hands of some one sitting there, her right elbow would be withdrawn from my left arm entirely. She seemed to notice this gentle but persistent contact of my left forearm, for on several occasions she pushed me back from the table by pressing a trumpet against my chest. However, by my apparent faith and by refraining almost entirely from any attempt to catch her in any of her maneuvers, I managed to retain her confidence.

The singing was alternately more or less regularly with whistling, which was remarkably good; this whistling also seemed to issue from the trumpet somewhere over the table. By holding my head close as before, I could easily detect the friction of her breath on her lips. As the mouth piece of the trumpet was two or three inches in diameter, it was an easy matter for her to hold the trumpet in her teeth and sing into it without using either hand for support. I believe she did this at the previous séance. The medium sometimes touched the backs of our hands as they lay on the table, with her disengaged left. Twice she touched the hands of the sitters opposite, one after the other, on which occasions I could clearly make out her form silhouetted against the band of light opposite, as she rose from her seat and leaned forward and into the opening of the table, which very conveniently lessened the distance across. On one of these occasions I substituted my right hand for my left which was holding her right and with my left hand felt of her chair and found it empty. There could be no possible doubt that these spirit hands were the medium's own left hand, and at neither this nor the preceding séance did any one of us notice the slightest difference in size, texture, etc., of the hands, such as that mentioned towards the bottom of page 693 in the report of this case

in the December *Journal* (1909) of the American Society for Psychical Research.

Once she did a very neat trick under "test" conditions. "Dan" had just stopped the phonograph by snapping back the catch. I was holding the medium's right with my left, when all at once she quickly thrust her left hand into my right, so that I was now holding both her hands and after an interval of several seconds, the phonograph began to play. She had undoubtedly set the needle at the extreme edge of the record, had gently released the catch, and had given the revolving turn table of the phonograph a helping push (all this with her left hand), so that by the time the needle had terminated the first circles, which always are at the beginning of a Victor record, the rate of rotation had become the customary one, and the music commenced to play without the acceleration in tempo, which would have resulted if the machine had been started with the needle placed in the middle of the record.\*

The usual rappings singly or in series of twos or threes, were entirely confined to the top of the table in the immediate vicinity of the medium. We were utterly unable to secure any rappings on the floor, ceiling, walls, or chandelier.

The phosphorescent lights formed the most interesting feature of the evening. At the preceding séance, I was not entirely satisfied as to how they were produced. On this evening, however, having a very advantageous position, I felt certain that these dimly luminous flashes emanated from some phosphorous substance located on the tip of one of the fingers (probably the forefinger) of the medium's left hand and that when this finger was folded up in the palm of her hand, the luminosity reappeared. At times I was under the impression that I could detect the out-

---

\* The explanation of the stopping of the phonograph is too complicated. I fear the reporter does not fully realize the difficulty of it under the circumstances. The discovery which I made later shows how simple a thing it is (p. 470). While the combination of actions is conceivable in abstraction of the time and conditions involved they would be more difficult than the writer indicates when the very simple method discovered afterward suffices and suggests that we often allow our imaginations to lead us astray when a frank confession of ignorance would be better than any amount of *a priori* speculation.

line of her finger. I have secured the same results by wetting the end of a match and rubbing this wet end on my fingers in the dark. I did not examine her finger to see whether I could notice any odor such as that which would be produced by a moistened match; still the sense of smell, just as the sense of taste, would probably be easily deceived in the darkness.\*

Towards the close of the séance, the table was raised several inches from the floor, remaining suspended for only a few seconds. Just before this, my left hand was still lying on her right hand on the top of the table near the edge and just to the right of the opening, both our palms being downward. For a few moments, she laid her free left hand on top of both our hands, exerting considerable pressure, so that I understood she wanted me to exert in turn a greater pressure with my own left hand. I complied with her wishes, but evidently she was not satisfied, for she repeated the maneuver once or twice until my left hand was pressing her right hand down on the table with considerable force. This pressure probably served the double purpose of concealing any muscular tension in her right hand and of furnishing the necessary leverage for lifting the table. I did not see any evidence of the medium's rising from her seat and

---

\* No one else has been able to reproduce the lights which Miss Burton usually makes. They may, on this occasion, have been like some remarked by Drs. Hamilton and Smyth, but in most cases they were not of the kind that can be made from matches. I saw them on too many occasions and in too great variety of brightness and condition to readily admit deception on that point, as my report elsewhere may show (p. 73). Besides it is no complete explanation of them to stop with the hypothesis that she makes them with her left hand. That is conceded by both Mrs. Milton and Miss Burton, under the authority of Mrs. Milton. In addition they admit that the smell of phosphorus can be found on her hand after making them and, as my report elsewhere shows, this is a fact and is often noticeable in the air while the performance goes on. The question is whether she prepares for them beforehand, and her normal honesty is against that. But she has been known to go spontaneously into trances during her waking hours and she might thus prepare for them without either Mrs. Milton or herself knowing it. The claim is that energy is used from her body to produce them and that claim, with the accompanying admissions, completely alters the problem. The incident which throws doubt on this supposition is found in Dr. Hamilton's note to the sitting of Mr. Canwill (p. 252).

do not believe she lifted the table in the manner described in the article in the February (1910) number of the *Journal*. She could hardly have done this without making her outline visible against the band of light referred to above. One of our party who sat directly opposite me, stated immediately after the séance, that just before the table was lifted, he felt the contact of the medium's skirts and that it seemed as tho she had lifted them some distance from the floor and then let them drop on his feet. I believe there can be no question but that she raised the table by placing one knee over the other, inserting the upper knee under some convenient portion of the table near the center of it and then lifting her knee by rising on her toes, using both hands to keep the table in a horizontal position. I know personally that, after some practice, this is not a difficult feat.\*

When the séance was over and the lights were turned on, we noticed some black substance on the back of the medium's *left* hand. As soon as we were outside of the house, Mr. Smecker explained the presence of this black substance as follows:

He had brought along with him some lamp black and when he had obtained "Lenore's" consent to feel her pulse and was supposed by her to be doing so, he secretly placed some of this lamp black on the back of her hand. Soon after this séance, Dr. Hamilton received a paper from Mrs. Milton, containing some communications purporting to have been dictated by "Dan" and "Lenore." Evidently Miss Burton, or if you prefer her trance personality, was anxious to anticipate any tale which we might carry to the Doctor, for fear his faith might be destroyed in the supernormal origin of the phenomena attending her séance.

In closing I desire to state that I have grave doubts as to the genuineness of Miss Burton's trance condition. The production of the phosphorescent lights presupposes considerable preparation on the part of the medium before the séance and while she is still in her normal state. Then, too, she takes good care to seat

---

\* The conjectures regarding the levitation of the table are probably the best that have been made, as my own comments elsewhere would indicate (pp. 68-70). The evidence for the conjecture, however, is not sufficient. Miss Burton's skirt is not long enough to fall on any one's feet as indicated and my experiments to reproduce the phenomenon were not successful.

herself, at the beginning of the séance, exactly opposite one end of the crack in the table, so that she can afterwards lean forward into the opening and thus take advantage of the lessened distance across.

These and a few other similar facts lead me to consider seriously the possibility of its all being a very clever deception, and that Miss Burton had gradually evolved her séances by long practice and through slow degrees. Careful and well directed investigation, extending over some time, would alone give a certain answer.

[The following is the account of the evening given by Mrs. Milton after she had discovered the lamp black and grease and before she had heard more directly of the facts. She thought even when I saw her later that Mr. Pitcher was involved in it, but he was not, and we had to remove that impression. It is not dated as it should have been, but it was dictated to Dr. Hamilton in response to a request of mine, after I heard from him as to what had occurred. I neglected to mark the date of the receipt of it. But it was some time after February 22d, perhaps two weeks. J. H. H.]

After attending a séance at my home with Mr. Pitcher and party, Mr. Smecker asked if we would sit for his wife and niece the following week. The request was granted, so it was arranged that Mr. and Mrs. Pitcher would come with them. At the appointed time they came and brought Mr. Ballou with them, making a party of six.

The first request they made was to have the doors sealed, which was done. Then Mr. Smecker said he would like to try some of the experiments which Dr. Smyth made. I told him that Dr. Smyth did not get the phenomena he was asking for at his first sitting and I hardly thought he would, but he could try, so he kept calling for a hand so that he could get the pulse. I told him the evening would be more successful if he would be more patient and took what came. Judging from the length of time they held us (for they were not willing to give up and did not until midnight) I concluded they appreciated it and were pleased with the work done. They had an unusual amount of test work

given them; for Mr. Pitcher said time and again, "I have the medium's hand" or hands, as the case might be. If I remember rightly, the talking machine was turned off while he held both of the medium's hands and I was standing between Mr. Smecker's niece and Mr. Ballou, with a hand on each one of them. I think the table was levitated under test conditions also, as we make a rule of doing so.

Once during the evening, Lenore told Mr. Smecker to put his hands on the table and keep them there. Some one asked him what he was doing with the trumpet and he said: "Trying to stand it up." Later the trumpet was taken to the medium and rubbed over her hair. Some one at the table asked why that was being done. I said: "I do not know unless some one has been handling it and the Forces do not like the magnetism." Excitement seemed to run high at times, everybody or nearly everyone calling for some special work he wanted done.

After the party left we put the room in order and started to get the table for breakfast. I then noticed for the first time a little black spot or mark on Miss Anna's (Burton's) left hand, just above her little finger. I said: "Look at that black mark, what have you been against?" She said: "When I oiled the talking machine, I must have gotten it on the edge of the table," and I started to look for it. I said: "No, it did not come from the machine, that was brought here by one of those men and I feel sure it was Mr. Smecker." Anna said: "Auntie Milton, you don't think those gentlemen would stoop to do that do you?" and I said, "The one that brought it certainly did, but it is so late we will wait until to-morrow and see what Lenore has to say about it."

So we did, and the following afternoon we sat for automatic writing and got messages from Dan and Lenore and they told us where to look for the lamp black. We followed directions and found the trumpet with the black stuff inside and on the rim; we also found the chair seat covered. The chair was the large arm chair and the one Mr. Smecker sat on during the evening. The table was also black and in fact black finger marks were along that side of the table. The rug was black in many small spots. The small end of the trumpet was found under Mr. Pitcher's

chair. Both parts of the trumpet had to be washed in strong soap suds to remove the black.\*

The medium was gowned in a dainty blue silk and it certainly would have been ruined had the trumpet been handled by her. Mr. Smecker expected to find the medium with a black face when the lights were turned on, but the only mark on her was the small black one on the left hand. When the party left the house they did not even thank us for the time given them.

[Evidently the three spots mentioned by Mr. Smecker had been rubbed off at the time he was making his observations after the trance, and the medium either forgot it or wished to conceal the fact. But there was no effort to conceal this single spot. As she was in the transitional state after the trance amnesia might well have occurred.

The following is the automatic writing of Miss Burton the next day after the sitting with Mr. Smecker and Mr. Pitcher. It is very good evidence of the hysteria which should have been the assumption of the investigators before they began, and it also makes strongly against any conscious dishonesty on her part, an interpretation the reverse of what Mr. Smecker inclines to give it. It shows without doubt Miss Burton's entire ignorance even in the trance of the situation and its connections, tho remembering certain incidents of the occasion.

Of course, it reflects subliminal knowledge probably affected by normal conversation with Mrs. Milton after the events and before they consulted the trance personalities regarding the facts occurring in the darkness. Mrs. Milton's questions bring-

---

\* I want the reader to remark the standard of ethics which some people manifest while shouting fraud about mediums. Here is a well-to-do class, "respectable" and professing honesty, but quite willing to smutch or destroy the property of others who are doing them a favor, and all to give them a chance to shout fraud, naively assuming their own gentlemanliness and purity or supposing that this same accusation will never be publicly made against themselves, or if made, will be condoned for the discovery of facts that will appear to be fraud but which are really hysterical phenomena about which the investigators were as ignorant as children. A man is a fraud if he simply fools you, but you are not a fraud if you fool him and injure his property in the bargain! It is legitimate to unravel and explain incredible facts, but the end does not always justify the means.



ing out the writing are not recorded as they should have been. But I give the written messages in their order, remarking only that they have no value except as illustrations of subliminal ignorance quite on a par with the normal and the probable fact that their contents reflect nothing else.—J. H. H.

1. Yes they came with the full intentions of finding out some-things But they did not put it on her hand as you thot [thought] but on the trumpet as they thought if she put it to her mouth it would leave black Lenore.

2. they did not put it on the hand as you thought but on the end of the trumpet because they thought if she put it to her mouth it would be black

3. no he did not put it on then it was put on the trumpet just before I spoke to him about keeping his hands on the table he knew what I meant it got on the medium's hand but I do not know exactly how Lenore.

4. that is what they did they thought they \* \* [know?] it did the singing & whistling so they put it on the end of the trumpet and wiped it off before any one saw it but if you look closely you will see it has been there Lenore.

5. They are going to go to the Dr's with a story but I want you to tell him all about it first and show him these messages so they will know we know them Lenore

6. How can they expect truthful work if they bring treachery to the table and their minds full of it Lenore.

[This last message has a very exact resemblance to the convictions of Mrs. Milton about such things and evidently it reflects the results either of previous conversations or of the contents of her own questions asked on this occasion.]

7. We find we can no more trust them than they think they can trust us or as much because we give them a chance and they give us none when they bring such work to the table Dan

8. We are willing to give them tests but we are not more willing to work with trickery than they are Dan.

# FOURTH SERIES

January 10th, 1911.

Present: Mrs. Milton and J. H. Hyslop.

The present series of experiments was undertaken only for two purposes. First to try for the production of lights under better test conditions than hitherto and secondly to try for some mental phenomena that might lead to an interesting cross reference. The first sitting or two was directed to getting adjusted and hence last night no special attempt was made to restrain Miss Burton or to limit her in the production of any phenomena. She and Mrs. Milton merely knew that I was here to try for lights and mental phenomena. I did not make a practice of holding even her right hand to study the motor phenomena. I only examined it and the left at appropriate times to see what her condition was.\*

She was soon in the trance but it was some time before anything occurred. The first thing was some whistling which was most excellent, as I was not touching her and actually sitting as much as two feet from her. This was followed by singing which was done twice. The only noticeable thing about both of them was the clearness with which the location of the sounds seemed

---

\* In this series of sittings I was able to take good notes of the results at the time and in spite of the darkness. The notes were taken by having a guide to the use of the pencil on a writing pad, so that I got the chronological order of events without having to depend so much on the memory afterward. I was also able to note all important words or incidents that served both as a means of recalling the details and for understanding the significance of the phenomena.

In the experiments for mental phenomena I succeeded in getting almost absolutely every word that I said and every word that the medium said. I left out no important word that I uttered. If I omitted anything it would be such a phrase as "Do you see anything," with which I usually required to start Miss Burton from her lethargy. But I was exceedingly careful to put down every sentence or word that the critic might think possibly suggestive to the subconscious of the medium and he may rely upon the practically absolute completeness of the record.

to be at a distance from her and not at her face or throat. I rose twice to test this and put my hand forward to see if she was sitting in the chair and she was. Once I touched her right hand and found it resting on the table and the touch did not in the least startle her or interrupt the whistling. One thing that enabled me to observe this localization better than at previous sittings was the character of the music in the phonograph. Since our last experiments the Miltons have moved into an apartment where it would be unpleasant to other occupants of the building to make too much noise with the phonograph and it has been adjusted to make less noisy music. In fact the music was toned down to a very light character and if Miss Burton had made any noise by moving on her chair I could have heard it. I was indeed quite surprised by the absence of the slightest noise on her part when the whistling and singing were done. It began very suddenly and without any warning even from picking up the trumpet which was used and there appeared to be a dead silence where she was when I should have heard the movement of her dress from the manipulation of the trumpet and the whistling or singing. Of course her dexterity may have been great enough to prevent this, but I merely note that what would be expected was not observable.

After the loud whistling and singing there was some light whistling in accompaniment of the phonograph. I did not notice it at first, supposing that it was the instrument. Mrs. Milton called attention to it, but the sound of whistling was rarely noticeable in the repetition of the experiment. The only interest attaching to the effort was the apparent difficulty when whistling has always seemed the easy and remarkable thing. Only occasional notes could be detected and Mrs. Milton did not observe as many of them in the second attempt as in the first.

Soon after this I heard a little noise from the movement of Miss Burton's hand and I put my right on her right to find it somewhat flexed and crumpled. I put my hand forward to touch the left hand and found it in the same condition as the right. In a few moments she gave a jerk and apparently awakened. I removed my hand and in a moment she complained of feeling dizzy and funny. I saw that mental phenomena were coming and encouraged her to go on and see what would take

place. Presently she saw a white light like a cloud—no one else seeing anything. Soon I found that she did not respond to questions and putting my right hand on her right I found her in the trance again. I took both hands in mine and she soon awakened again.

In a few moments I proceeded to test her for anæsthesia. I first tried her right hand, asking her if she felt "that," pressing the right hand without saying what I was doing or where, and she replied in the negative. I tried pinching the arm with the same result. I then touched her forehead and she said she did not feel that. I waited a few moments and repeated the experiment in the same places and she felt nothing. After feeling the forehead with no sensation reported I felt the nose putting my hand down over her eyes to do it and she did not feel the pressure on the nose. It was the same with the chin. But when I touched the throat on the larynx and in that locality she felt the touch. I repeated this again and the only sensible spot was the region of the larynx. But she was perfectly conscious.

In a few moments she saw the letter H and P and after a pause some writing which she could not read. Again after a pause she saw the word "here." To encourage her I said: "Now if you can just tell who is here," the letters H and P suggesting Hodgson and Pelham to me, Miss Burton knowing Hodgson by this time but not Pelham. Presently she saw: "We are here." But things were not clear to me. She was evidently laboring under the illusion that H and P were for one person, as the following remark showed after a pause of some moments. "There are two men, but I get the letters as if they were all one. One is P and the other H."

I remarked that I knew who it was and suggested that it would get better. In a moment she heard the words "light" and "bright." In a few moments her silence betrayed the fact that she had relapsed into the trance and I again held her hands to awaken her. A jerk revealed the recovery of consciousness and ability to use the voice.

Then she saw a "real old man" with a long white beard and walking with a cane. I, thinking of Prof. Sidgwick, asked if the beard was smooth or shaggy and the reply was that she could not see plainly. But she soon remarked that his hair was long

and white. Then the following occurred in my attempt to verify my suspicion by answers in raps.

(Was he connected with H and P?)

Three raps for yes.

(Did H know him personally?)

[No reply.] [Found Miss Burton in the trance.]

I then held her hands again and awakened her and the colloquy proceeded, after she remarked that she saw the old man again.

On awakening she saw a wheel whirling around rapidly. I at once thought of last year's experiment with the windmill and asked what was causing the wheel to whirl, hoping that I would get the word "Wind" and confirm my suspicion that it was intended for "Whirlwind." But she replied that she did not know what was whirling it. The vision soon vanished and I got no more of it. But she relapsed into the trance again.

(Did H know him personally?)

Three raps for yes.

(Does he know anything about the thirty-nine articles?)

[No reply.] [Pause.]

(Was he an American?)

One rap for no.

(Was he German?)

[No reply.]

(Was he French?)

[No reply.]

(Was he English?)

Three raps for yes.

Then I found Miss Burton in the trance again and had to awaken her in the usual way by holding her two hands.

She again saw the old man talking and trying to explain something but it was so blurred she could not tell what it was. She suddenly relapsed into the trance again and I, suspecting the need of rest, asked Dan if I should hold her hands to awaken her and one rap came for "No." I asked if he would let me know when to do so and three raps came for "Yes." Then came whistling again after a long pause.

After the whistling there were raps and I asked if they wanted me and three raps came for yes and I then asked if they wanted

me to hold her hands and the raps again signified the affirmative. I held the hands a few moments and a startling jerk showed that Miss Burton was recovering consciousness. She had a little difficulty of speech at first but in a moment was clear. Her vision was evidently distinct as she at once reported seeing a large white building with big doors in front. Then she saw a big safe. After a pause she saw the figure of a man in front of the safe but it was not plain enough to say what he looked like in response to my request to tell. In answer to my request to tell what he was there for there came no reply and I again found her in the trance. On reawakening her by holding her two hands she saw the same figure and he was taking papers out of the safe. She saw some one else there and in a moment saw two others present. She remarked that everything seemed so strange. Then off she went again into the trance, and I asked Dan again if I should let her rest. Raps signified the affirmative and I waited for raps to signify that I should take her hands. After a considerable pause the raps came and I asked if they were for me and the affirmative raps indicated what I should do and I held her hands again to awaken her. On awakening she said the room seemed so light but misty. She saw a tall man sitting at a table with a lot of papers. On my saying I understood it she added that they had never been finished. When I asked what they were about I received no reply. Then the following colloquy followed.

(Does he know H?)

Three raps for yes.

(Did he know P?)

Three raps for yes.

(Did he know P before he passed out?)

Three raps for yes.

(Was P a friend of H?)

[No reply.]

The allusion to the safe and unfinished papers recalled Prof. James to me, as similar allusions had come through Mrs. Cheno-  
weth, and perhaps the public stories in the papers had suggested the same facts to almost every one in this country. But no name was mentioned and I carefully suppressed what I suspected, my questions about the relation to H and P being designed to test

my hypothesis of the presence of Prof. James by the consistency of the replies by raps. Miss Burton did not know what the P meant, having supposed that it was connected with the same person as H, tho forced to say that there were two men involved in the letters. The meaning of P she did not know, tho we may suppose she knew well enough what H meant. The answers to the questions about the relation of the man to P were consistent with the known facts and not known to Miss Burton.

The failure to reply to my last query indicated that Miss Burton had gone into the trance again. In a few moments her hand showed that she wanted to write and I gave her a pencil and pad. The pencil appeared to fall on the table and on my trying to pick it up I found that its end was between her first and second fingers with the other end resting on the table. I removed my hand and she raised up the pencil and tried to write but could not. I felt and found that the pencil was held in the old Hodgson manner. There was then a considerable pause without any writing when suddenly the hand began to write. When finished the pencil was thrown down and I went out of the room to read it. The following was the message.

"She seems to be so tired I do not think we had better keep her long the first time. It will be better to wait, so we are going soon. Dan."

When I came back I expected that we should at once bring Miss Burton out. Raps signified that I should hold her hands. I took her hands and also held her forehead. When she appeared to recover normal consciousness she at once remarked that she saw the name James. I saw that she had not recovered her properly normal condition and encouraged her to go on and asked what else was with the name James, having in mind his sign, but intending that she should think I wanted the rest of the name. She picked up the trumpet and whispered through it to me that this was not the first name. I replied all right and that I understood. She went on and after trying said there was a message he wanted to give but he could not do it. I replied that I could wait. She then relapsed into the trance again and in a few minutes the raps signified that I was wanted and I asked if I was to bring her out. Raps signified the affirmative and



taking her head and hands soon brought her out with considerable trembling of the hands and body as she came out.

One interesting psychological fact to notice is that the recovery of her really normal state showed no motor resemblances to the recovery of the condition in which her clairvoyance occurs. There was never the slightest resemblance to trembling when I held the hands before. A simple jerk indicated recovery. In this case recovery of the properly normal state was accompanied by trembling like a dying animal. Not a trace of this was noticeable in the clairvoyant recoveries.

I noticed in each clairvoyant recovery that, when the jerk occurred, she had some difficulty of speech for a few moments and was not ready for the visions for some moments afterward. It was also observable all evening that the clairvoyant condition was an exceedingly unstable one. She fell into the trance very easily and there was less ability to sustain the clairvoyant condition than at previous experiments. This was possibly due to the lack of practice and to the fact that it was the first sitting with me for a long time.

There seemed to be no disposition during the evening to do anything more with the physical phenomena than was necessary to produce and sustain the clairvoyant condition for mental phenomena. The whistling the second time was evidently for the purpose of getting better control of the situation and to protect the clairvoyance, as she was much clearer for a while after it than before. The whole course of the work during the evening was spontaneous and directed with an apparently rational purpose. At least the coincidences all sustained this view and there was not an incident occurring that did not consist with the hypothesis that the personalities were working in harmony with my own secret desire and hopes. All that they knew was that I wanted mental phenomena, and tho nothing evidential came in single incidents the compact unity of the whole with a vista of what I wanted suggests something very different from the ordinary guessing consciousness. There was no proof of anything supernormal, and all that I can say of the performance

is that it had the correct unity and appearance of efforts on the part of discarnate agencies to say something, tho their efforts were abortive.

January 11th, 1911.

Present: Mrs. Milton and J. H. Hyslop.

The first incident of the evening was some whistling, not very good and only after a considerable delay, tho she soon went into the trance. After the whistling Miss Burton complained of her head hurting. I took hold of both her head and hands and after a while there was a jerk of the hands two or three times and she recovered, or showed a change of personality and said she was all right. She could not remember that she had said her head hurt her.

After a pause some raps occurred and I asked if they wanted me and raps again signified yes. I took her hands in mine and found them crumpled and in few moments she came into the clairvoyant state. She soon saw a light somewhat oblong and in a moment said she kept hearing the name William. Then he was trying to talk and she heard three times a word that sounded like *imp*. I did not recognize the meaning of this at the time and asked that she keep on and she would get it. Later developments suggest that it was for Imperator.

I found her then in the trance. This was always indicated by her failure to respond to a question. It was interesting to notice, as I had found the previous evening, that she always went into this trance, irresponsive trance, without the jerk that I had noticed last spring. The only evidence that I ever discovered was her irresponsiveness to questions. But she always came out of it by a jerk when I held her hands.

I took her hands again and she soon became clairvoyant a second time. She thought she saw a light at the door which was at her left. But there was none there. It was closed and no lights were outside. It is possible that she did not know exactly where she was and saw the dim light that came in below the window curtain at my right. This was adjusted as a precaution. She complained that the light hurt her eyes. There was no reason in the nature of the phenomena we were trying to for

any exclusion of the light. We were not trying for physical phenomena and normally at least she knew this. Apparently, therefore, the complaint was based on psychological grounds and coincided with the evidence on previous occasions that she is extremely sensitive to light in this and other conditions during the performances.

After the light was excluded we went on and she saw three letters and named them as J. H. and I. She added that they were not together and represented three names. I did not recognize them at once, but they probably stand, on any theory, for James, Hodgson and Imperator. She could not get any more, and suddenly lapsed into the trance with resentment at my touch. I had resorted this evening to holding my left hand on her right to help retain the clairvoyant condition, while I made the necessary notes with my right. Hence I discovered the sudden resentment to my touch. I asked Dan then if they wanted me to do anything and three raps signified "Yes." I asked if I was to hold her hands and the same reply came. I seized her hands and there was the usual struggle to exorcise Black Cloud. When she came out from his influence she again complained of her head hurting and I repeated the course described above with the same results. She had no memory of her head hurting her.

After a pause she indicated that she wanted to write. Pad and pencil were given and the following came.

"B. C. does not want us to take control but we will succeed all right soon."

There followed a considerable period in which there was effort to get clairvoyance and whistling occurred to eliminate the conditions established by Black Cloud's influence. Then Miss Burton lapsed into a lethargic trance and Dan made raps to attract my attention and signified by the same, in response to my question, that I should hold her hands. I did so and she soon recovered the clairvoyant state. I then tested her for anæsthesia and found her anæsthetic on both sides of the body as far as the waist except the larynx and about the neck and back of the head. Her forehead, nose, chin and face were anæsthetic. When I touched her on the neck she started, as if suddenly touched in the dark when not expecting it and as I have known her to start before when touched and sensitive.

Presently she called, in a sort of fright, that we should take her hand. Mrs. Milton reached for her left and I found the right groping as if she felt she were falling. She complained that she felt she was going. As soon as this sensation disappeared I asked her if she remembered asking us to hold her hand and she said she did not.

Soon afterward I found her again in the lethargic trance and had to recover the clairvoyant trance in the usual way. When it came on she soon remarked that she kept hearing the name William and said he was trying to tell something, but she could not hear it. Presently she seemed to see something but could not get it clear. Then she saw something white like paper and in a moment saw a cross in the corner of it. Then came a figure 3 and something more not distinct enough to see it, and in a few moments appeared something like the figure 9, and then one word which she failed to get. But a few moments later she said she kept getting something about the band, but could not get it clearly. Then there was a jerk and the lethargic trance again. The 3 and the 9 with the omitted word were evidently subliminal reminiscences of my reference earlier in the *Thirty-nine Articles*.

I soon found Black Cloud in control and we asked him if he would give us some lights. He refused in his Indian brogue, grunting out "No" and "Me no do it." I exorcised him by holding her hands and after some struggling. After he had gone she complained of feeling funny in the arms and head.

A clairvoyant trance followed and she saw a tall man with dark mustache. He appeared rather slender. He seemed to be a young man.

My notes beyond this are not legible, but nothing important occurred. The lethargic trance followed and I asked Dan to let me know by raps when he wanted me. It was indicated by three raps that he would. After a pause raps came and I again held her hands and she soon came into the clairvoyant trance. She soon saw a large oblong light and it developed into a large boat, real large, as remarked. After a pause she remarked that something had happened, and then, as if asking them to make it clear she said: "Give it to me, please." Then she added that the boat was far out and they could not see land. I asked who

was connected with it, having Prof. James in mind, as he died soon after his return from abroad, and soon she said she saw two initials, W. J. This confirmed my supposition of its meaning. I waited. In a few moments she saw two men on the boat but could not see them plainly, and then remarked in surprise that there were so many on the boat, and saw lights. But she could not tell what kind of lights. I asked for the relation of the two men, but no reply coming I found her again in the lethargic trance.

On recovery from this condition she again complained of her head hurting and I relieved it as before, she having no memory of it when the change of personality occurred.

I have omitted from this account two or three important incidents of which I could not make a note at the time of their chronological order. I was too busily occupied with my hands to do this. One was the exorcising of Black Cloud. After some strenuous effort I noticed a silence and touched Miss Burton's hand and found that it was violently jerked away. I saw Black Cloud was in again and said nothing, hoping that he might do something. But nothing occurring I reached forward and found her arms tightly folded across her breast. I had difficulty getting hold of them, and when I did there was a tremendous struggle which required all my power to manage Miss Burton. She tried to get up and away, but I succeeded in pinioning her tightly and after a time there was some relaxation, but fearing that Black Cloud was playing "'possum" I still held on, and Mrs. Milton knowing what I was at, resolved to put on a plaintive piece of music. That this was intended I learned at the end. I soon noticed, after the music began, that her arms began to relax and soon she began to sob from the influence of the plaintive music. I said nothing, not knowing that Mrs. Milton had intended it, but when the sobbing became very marked the music was stopped and Black Cloud was gone.

On another occasion I suspected Black Cloud again and on trying to get her hands I found them behind her back, having been anticipated in the effort to exorcise him. After a struggle he was removed and a little later he was found in control again. As I was beginning to get control of him Mrs. Milton put on an Indian song which Black Cloud does not like, she not knowing

that I was exorcising him, and the song caused a sudden violent jerk and he was well entrenched. The music had to be removed and I had a little struggle eliminating him.

I think it was before the hardest struggle with Black Cloud that the most interesting physical phenomenon of the evening occurred, but not being able to make note of it at the time I cannot place it chronologically.

A little whistling had been done and the trumpet was thrown down by me. I placed my hand on it to see what might occur, expecting it to be picked up and more whistling done. It was soon picked up but thrown down again. Then again it was picked up and pushed at me. I took it and held it in the air. It was again seized and I held on allowing my hand to follow it into the air and it was jerked out and immediately allowed to fall into my hand. I held it a moment and it was pushed. I saw that something was wanted but could not tell what. I brought it down to the table. All this time my left hand was holding her right. There was a long pause, I holding my right hand on the trumpet, the larger end with the smaller end pointed away from me to my right and about thirty inches from Miss Burton. I reached forward with my left hand and found her left passive on the table. I brought it over and held the two hands together. There were a few movements of the two hands but very slight and whenever she seemed to fear getting them free she would hold them together and I had my hand holding both very distinctly. Hers had the fingers intertwined and I held my fingers in her palms and the ball of the thumb and other parts of the hand pressing the fingers. All the while my right was holding the larger end of the trumpet as much as eight or ten inches from her hands, which were resting on the corner of the table. They rather hung over it and were not resting flat on its top. No finger could possibly be nearer than about eight inches from the trumpet. The music was going on and I remained perfectly silent.

Soon I noticed a little jerk in the trumpet and began watching it and her hands. Only occasionally was any motion whatever betrayed in her hands and this largely to correct the automatic efforts to get release. Usually they were perfectly passive. The trumpet kept jerking away from me and repeated

this motion perhaps twenty times, my hand having to follow it. Then it stopped and her hands showed some trembling or tremor, but always insisting on remaining under control and resisting the slightest effort, which was not much, to get released. I said nothing to Mrs. Milton who said she heard whistling. I had not heard it as I was intent on watching Miss Burton's hands and the trumpet. Mrs. Milton did not know what was going on and when she mentioned the light whistling and appeared somewhat tired of the long apparently futile effort at something I remarked, without telling her explicitly what, that something more important was going on. There was a considerable interval in which nothing occurred to the trumpet that I could detect. But I set about trying to see if my pulse beat might have caused the apparent jerk in the trumpet and found no evidence whatever of this, tho at times I thought I could feel my pulse shock on the trumpet. This however, was rare and irregular. After a while again the jerk in the trumpet occurred again. I watched the hands carefully and they were absolutely passive, as before, under my control and no apparent motion of her body. The jerks and movements of the trumpet continued for some time again, jerking away from me perhaps as many as ten times and requiring my hand to follow it. During the whole period and perhaps thirty jerks it must have moved as much as one and a half or two inches, tho this distance is merely conjectural. It may have been much less. I had to observe carefully to assure myself that I was not under an illusion as to its motion and so had no means of reckoning clearly the amount of it. But it had no relation to the pulse beat and was unmistakable motion of the trumpet, unless the sensation itself was an hallucination and I was on the alert for this. The evidence that it was not hallucinatory was rather clear in the interval when I was studying my pulse beat, as no phenomenon at all resembling the jerk of the trumpet occurred.

I was exceedingly careful to observe the behavior of the hands. Both times, when the trumpet was jerking Miss Burton's hands were absolutely passive during the whole performance and no motion of them whatever was detectible, except when the trumpet was perfectly still.



As soon as the phenomenon ceased her head fell forward \* on the table as if she was exhausted. I then felt the trumpet and found no string attached and in fact no string could be attached to it without some sort of paste and also some apparatus to determine the nature of the movement manifested. The trumpet had been moved lengthwise away from me and could not possibly have been so moved by Miss Burton without a pulley attachment as well as a string, unless pushed. But she could not push it and did not push it with her hands. It was physically impossible for her feet to get at it, as I took care to observe at the end of the evening's work. The cross pieces in the table, the legs of the table with their cross pieces and some iron arrangements for regulating the extension of the table made it as impossible for her feet to get at the trumpet as it would be to put her foot through the table. She would have had to put her foot through her arms or through the table to get at the trumpet. Then if she had been able to get her foot to it she would have had to seize the trumpet at the smaller end and jerk it away from herself and myself. She could not get at it where I was holding it to push it. I examined all these points after the séance.

I offer no explanation of the facts. The slightness of the motion and the passive condition of her hands are in favor of the genuineness of the phenomena in some respect, even if only illusion or hallucination on my part. But I should have to extend this explanation to my knowledge of her hands and their behavior unless the hallucinations were supernormally induced. Her exhaustion was also a favorable indication.

Perhaps an alternative hypothesis will offer itself, that of unconscious muscular action on my own part. All we are supposed to know is that Miss Burton's normal action is excluded but my own unconscious action is supposedly not excluded. In fact, I do not know any means by which this hypothesis can be absolutely excluded. There are certain facts which make it difficult or impossible to maintain except with complications which would not easily apply to ordinary actions. (1) I had voluntarily to move my hand along

with the real or apparent motion of the trumpet after its motion had been executed. This I distinctly observed at the time. (2) The phenomenon came without any expectation on my part and when I was hoping that it would continue it ceased and began at a later period when expectation was not more efficient than it was or could be when the phenomenon did not occur. (3) The clear distinction between what occurred when I was examining my pulse for the same phenomenon with the expectation of finding it and it did not occur. (4) The fact that the phenomena were suspended in the midst of expectation and were resumed when expectation would not naturally be more efficient than it had supposedly been in the suspended period. (5) The fact that this was the first occasion when I had observed the phenomena tho there had been abundant situations like it when the same thing might have occurred from suggestion. (6) The coincidental collapse of Miss Burton at the end of the phenomena, an event which often occurs with her coincidentally with a strenuous effort to do something, whether successful or a failure. She could hardly be supposed to know anything about my unconscious muscular action to time her simulation of exhaustion with the cessation of my unconscious action.

I concede that these difficulties do not exclude the possibility of my agency in the matter, but they require holding the hypothesis in a peculiarly complicated form, while the main assurance is that the phenomenon was not produced by Miss Burton.

As soon as Miss Burton recovered her balance, still in the trance she signified the desire to write. Pad and pencil were given and after some difficulty the following was written:—

"I want you to turn on the light so as to see your exact location. Dan."

Before we read this, as usual I asked Dan if I was to go out and read it. One rap came to indicate "No." Asked if anything was to be done the answer was in three raps for "Yes." But a single raps was given in answer to the query if I was to do it. Then a long colloquy occurred between Dan and Mrs. Milton,

conducted through raps, to see what she was to do, it having been indicated that she was wanted. Almost everything under the sun that could be done in the room was tried and denied. Finally, in answer to the question if Mrs. Milton was to go out and read it the answer "Yes" came in three raps. All the while Miss Burton's hands showed annoyance such as misunderstood talk would suggest. When Mrs. Milton came back the light was turned up and I determined the location of the trumpet and the séance went on.

Some of the clairvoyant visions followed this, and I think the severe struggle with Black Cloud. Finally the hand wanted to write and I gave the pencil and pad. After waiting a while the hand wrote in the air and I remarked the fact. A pause followed and then it began writing on the pad when suddenly it thrust the pencil toward me and there was much confusion on my part to find what was wanted. I tried to replace it and it was rejected, pushed away, and finally the hand reached toward my pocket when I took out the other pencil and then found that the point of the first one had been broken off. The following was the written message:—

"I do not believe..."

[Here the pencil was rejected and what I have just described took place.]

"we had better do any more to night and we will do our best to morrow night The mental work seems to tire the medium so much more. Dan."

We then proceeded to bring her out and she seemed not to come rapidly enough and I conjectured that it might be due to my holding her hands, as I had done so much during the evening. I asked Mrs. Milton to hold them. At first there was a little resentment and she seemed to want me to do it and Mrs. Milton asked me to take them when suddenly Miss Burton reached for Mrs. Milton and the latter held the hands. As she was coming out she suddenly and apparently with some difficulty uttered the name of Imperator and that was all.

Twice during the evening Miss Burton suddenly fell forward at the admission of a little light into the room from going into the bathroom to read some automatic writing.

Only the slightest amount of white light came in and was barely noticeable by myself.

Very frequently I noticed raps when I was holding both hands. Mrs. Milton did not know I was holding them and I was not especially trying for them. The situation required me to hold the hands and I asked my questions to know what Dan wanted and the raps came as easily as if her hands were free. Of course I had to assume that her feet did it, but the locality and distinctness of the sounds, while they will be treated as illusory, are not so easily disposed of as the objector may wish to insist, after such experiments as I have recorded. I have no means of refuting the suspicion, but I am sure that the sceptic if he had been present, would have been as much interested in the supposed illusion as in a genuine phenomenon.

After the séance I asked Mrs. Milton and Miss Burton what they knew about Prof. James. Both said they knew nothing except that he was dead, and that he had been interested with me in psychic research. They said that they had read nothing about him and knew nothing about his death or any facts preceding it. I can well imagine that Miss Burton would not read anything about it if she could, as she is too indifferent to such things to read them. Mrs. Milton said she had read nothing about him in the papers.

I asked these questions because the reference to a boat associated with his initials and the presence of two men on the boat and something happening were quite suggestive of him and the giving of Prof James' initials confirmed my suspicion that he was meant by it. For he had returned from Europe with his brother Henry a short time before his death. There is no proof in this of the supernormal, but if we can be sure that neither Mrs. Milton nor Miss Burton had seen a reference to his return from abroad it is an interesting coincidence to have the reference to a boat associated with his initials, even tho the meaning of it has not been completed and has to be conjectured.

The clairvoyant condition, as on the previous evening, was very unstable and hard to maintain. Apparently there has to be a remarkable adjustment of functions to make this

possible. The retention of vocal utterance seems to require sensibility about the larynx and auditory responsiveness, while there is the natural tendency to revert into or to remain in a lethargic trance in which, whatever the visions, no communication of the experience can be made. The instability of the conditions necessary for any particular class of phenomena is one of the interesting phenomena of the case and probably explains the limitations of her mediumship. In Mrs. Piper and Mrs. Smead the trance conditions represent a stable adjustment to a given end, all the various functions necessary to receive and deliver impressions being normally related to each other and only amnesia of their action in the normal consciousness representing the difference between the trance and the normal life. That, of course, carries with it anæsthesia in the sensorium. But Miss Burton seems so inclined to lethargic sleep or catalepsy that the proper adjustment is hard to maintain, and hence the frequent and sudden relapses from any given condition into another. The change has only to be slight to effect this, while in the case of Mrs. Piper and Mrs. Smead, and perhaps other instances, the whole system of functions have to change their action to pass from one condition to another, and hence their superior stability in any given instance.

January 12th, 1911.

Present: Mrs. Milton, Drs. Hamilton and Smyth, Mrs. Smyth and a friend.

The experiment last night was especially arranged for the purpose of getting lights under test conditions. I had long felt that my holding of her hands prevented Miss Burton from doing certain things and this on any theory whatever of the phenomena. So I resolved to carry out some experiments in which it would not be necessary to hold her hands and yet we could have test conditions. I therefore arranged to hold the experiments in the office of Dr. Smyth. I secured a complete outfit of new clothing for Miss Burton which would not only exclude the use of any supposable apparatus or means for producing lights that may have been concealed

in her own clothes but also that would prevent the use of anything that might be concealed on her person. I had her dressed by Mrs. Smyth after a manner that would prevent taking anything from her own clothing and transferring it to what I furnished. I then went up to the dressing room after she had been dressed and saw to the combing of her hair so that nothing could be concealed there. I examined her ears and had Dr. Smyth examine her nose and mouth. Mrs. Milton was not allowed to be present or to come near Miss Burton. When we went into the séance room I saw to it that Mr. Milton never came near Miss Burton and that she sat on the other side of the room in the care of Dr. Smyth.\*

The phonograph was Mrs. Milton's and was used because

---

\* I should perhaps describe more fully the precautions taken against the possible use of concealed materials or apparatus for producing the lights. I asked Mrs. Smyth to purchase for Miss Burton an entire outfit of clothing. Miss Burton was present to see that the things fitted and pleased her taste. But the articles were to be delivered at the house of Mrs. Smyth. There I examined them to see that nothing was or could be concealed in them. The dress had no pockets and was a short-sleeved article made of thin material. The underwear had no openings in front and were sewed up behind so that the occupant had to slip into them and have no room left to obtain anything possibly concealed or concealed in any bodily cavity. The manner of dressing was arranged so that nothing could be concealed in the shoes. The ladies that supervised the dressing were not believers in the phenomena but sceptical of their occurrence. Miss Burton was to remove her clothes in one part of the room and to put on the prepared suit in another part of the room and the attendants were to see that nothing was transferred from Miss Burton's clothing to the new apparel or shoes. I was then to be called to inspect the combing of her hair which I did seeing that nothing could be concealed in that. I examined the ears at the time and then Dr. Smyth examined the nose, ears and mouth. I kept Miss Burton under my eyes all the time until we entered the séance room and at no time was Mrs. Milton allowed to come near Miss Burton to transfer anything to her. Whatever difficulties or objections arise in the situation depend on other circumstances in the darkness which we could not control, and they are indicated in the body of the report.

Her hands were washed on every evening except that on which Mrs. Milton was similarly dressed with Miss Burton. The only reason for not washing them this time was that there was no water in the room that evening. No matches were allowed to be in the room where she dressed and all matches were excluded from the séance room.

I felt it exceedingly important that I should have the same music as usual. But to forestall objections I examined the machine carefully in the afternoon before the séance and after it was brought to Dr. Smyth's office. I examined every nook and corner of it and every piece of it that had to be attached and found absolutely nothing there concealed.

It must be remembered that there was no reluctance on the part of either Mrs. Milton or Miss Burton to this plan of experiment. On the contrary they courted it and Miss Burton appreciated the fun of it quite as well as any one and entered into the spirit of the occasion without any resentment for the necessity of it. The whole course accepted and offered by them possessed as commendable a spirit as any one could desire, and the transparent honesty of it was so clear that I wish we could accept the situation without complicated preparations of the kind and on the simple testimony of the parties that she has nothing about her for producing the lights. The only suspicion that any one can entertain on that matter must be based on the possibility that she prepares herself in some spontaneously somnambulic state and knows nothing of the fact until she goes into the trance at the experiments. That is the only reason for raising the question of their presence and hence for providing against the hypothesis.

I had Dr. Hamilton manage the phonograph and Dr. Smyth was to see that Mrs. Milton did not leave her chair beside him. At the proper times he was to hold her hands and in fact the intention was to have him hold her hands all evening. The object in having her present at all was to avoid as much mental perturbation on Miss Burton's part as possible. Two or three times Dr. Smyth had to leave the room and so left Mrs. Milton alone. To protect the situation Dr. Hamilton moved a chair between the table and Mrs. Milton so that she could not get within less than six feet of the medium and saw to it that she did not come toward her. His management of the phonograph was designed to prevent the immediate approach of Mrs. Milton to the medium.

It was impossible to take notes during the evening to any extent, but in connection with the few instances of mental



phenomena where inquiries on my part were involved I took them. But I cannot report the chronological order of events. Nor is it important that I should do so. I wish, however, that I could have recorded in detail the relation between her motor actions and the events of the evening. They would show a most important evidence of subconscious "honesty" throughout, as I gave special attention to this characteristic.

There was considerable delay in going into the trance. The expectations of the occasion, the change of clothing with all the natural mental perturbation of it, tho this was not visible to the eye before the experiment, and the presence of other than the usual sitters no doubt were factors in this slow process. Twice she had to call for a drink of water before the trance became more than half effected.

At one stage of this oncoming trance she complained that the room was so light. The fact was that it was unusually pitch dark, as I had seen to it that absolutely all light should be excluded so as to prevent any excuse for the failure of the lights on that point. But during the evening I could often notice, when my head was in a certain position and at the left of Miss Burton, a small point of light like a dim star shining through an exposed place in one of the windows. It did not suffice to illuminate anything and was like a pin point admitting stray light. Her head was not where it could be in line so far as I could determine, and I had to be in a certain position to see it at all, often not seeing it. I mention the circumstance, because, if it was the cause of her complaint, it showed remarkable hyperæsthesia, as such a small light must have acted as a stimulus to diffused optical reactions wholly disproportionate to the actual amount of light involved. However this may be I allayed concern by saying that it was pitch dark and that the light she saw was spirit light. Only once afterward did she make any remark about light and I have forgotten its exact relation to other events.

One incident I neglected to record in its place here and Dr. Hamilton called my attention to it when reading over the record. I cannot assign its exact place, but it was in the neighborhood of the time I gave her the drink of water. I remember it distinctly enough and my own interest in the fact and its apparent

absurdity when compared with what had been said under different circumstances. To get the water I had turned up the red light and while this produced a dim light throughout the room, Miss Burton spoke up in her trance and complained of the darkness. When there had been no light whatever in the room some time earlier she had complained of the light as if it blinded her, it being pitch dark, and I had pacified her by saying that it was the spirit light.

When the trance came on the first thing done was whistling which was very good. The second effort at it was accompanied by singing simultaneously. Its exact coincidence with the notes of the whistling was remarked by more than one person present, and the notes, not the vocal enunciation, of the singing were clear. This was repeated several times. A large number of instances of whistling and singing occurred, not simultaneous and the expert excellence of the whistling was in fact astonishing when we consider that the girl cannot whistle at all with any success normally and when we know that she had not trained herself for it. The enunciation of the sounds and the trilling and all other accompaniments of expert whistling were the best that I have heard in the case, and both Dr. Hamilton and Dr. Smyth remarked an improvement in its quality over what they had heard previously, an improvement attributable possibly to the larger experience in it, tho there is no evidence that this has been the cause.

Soon after the first whistling I heard the grunt of Black Cloud and in a moment found that I had to exorcise him which I did in the usual manner by resolutely holding Miss Burton's hands and meeting with the strong resistance of this personality to it, tho Dan had indicated by raps that he wanted me to hold her hands. It was in this way that I found that I had better interfere after I had heard the grunt.

When she came to the normal trance state there was again simultaneous whistling and singing, both excellent again. There followed various illustrations of singing alone, all of which was loud and clear, the words being quite distinct. The voices varied from those of a male voice to that of a little child of the female type. One contralto was quite deep and the male voice was recognized as only that by two present who are very familiar

with music. The male voice was clear and distinct in this respect. The child's voice, however, seemed childish and artificial. In fact the impersonation was not skillful, but in all other cases it was skillful and realistic, tho one type was detectible.

Soon after one of these exhibitions Miss Burton managed to speak out and to request all of us to take our hands off the table. We did so and Miss Burton arose and stood for some time, supposedly trying to do something. What it was I could not determine and as she did not succeed assuming that she was really trying to do something, we never found out what the intention was.

Whistling and singing, with various pauses to rest Miss Burton took up almost the entire evening of three hours, Dr. Hamilton managing the phonograph. Toward the close there was an attempt to do some clairvoyance. I had held her hands to give her energy and she awakened in the clairvoyant condition. She saw water about her and on asking if it was a sea or lake she simply replied that she could only see water all about. Presently she saw the letter E and on my pressing for another letter, to confirm my hypothesis that it stood for a certain person in mind, she got the impression that there were two men, rather she saw them and presently got the letters, initials as she said, W. J. and in a moment the letter H. I then asked if the E. had been a mistake for H., as I suspected from my experience with such mistakes in other cases, and I received affirmative raps to signify that it was this mistake. The letters thus stood for Hodgson and William James. Once she appeared to hear the name William J. After a relapse and recovery of the clairvoyance trance she saw a large stone building and in it a safe with W. J. near it and some word which she could not see or get. I asked if W. J. had ever communicated before and three raps signified the affirmative. The same answer came to the query if he had ever mentioned this safe before, and no reply came to the question if he had communicated with me elsewhere. But I found that she had relapsed into the lethargic trance and could not answer. No further attempt at clairvoyance occurred.

Allusion to a safe in connection with the name of Prof. James has occurred in another instance with which I have been experimenting, but all this may be due to the public knowledge

that a posthumous letter has frequently been mentioned in the newspapers. I have no reason to believe that Miss Burton knows anything about the incident, and in fact it is actually probable that she does not. But casual information on it is possible and it may have been normally forgotten.

I have remarked the delay in the oncoming of the trance and the perturbation connected with the process. This perturbation was very evident in the borderland of the trance and the long delay brought out the spontaneous desire to explain it by automatic writing and this was indicated in the usual way by the hand reaching out for pad and pencil which I gave. The following was written:—

"Every thing is new even to the wearing apparel [apparel] of the medium, so you will have to be patient. Dan."

I agreed and the sitting went on. The conditions were absolutely new, locality, clothes, furniture and to some extent sitters. If there be anything in the constant claim which we have made by real or alleged spirits that they have to get places and objects in some way adjusted to their work it was legitimate to make the claim here. Often during the evening, and especially just preceding a performance Miss Burton would rub her arms, and sometimes mine, with the trumpet to "magnetize" them.

I suggested trying lights two or three times, simply to let the suggestion work. I meant that the performance should largely take a spontaneous form, as both Mrs. Milton and Miss Burton knew normally that I was especially desiring lights. But invariably Dan replied by raps that he did not know. Two raps signified this. That he would try he always answered affirmatively.

It was my intention to let the hands absolutely alone in these test experiments and I rarely touched them at first. I never did so without first seeking and receiving the consent of Dan. If any situation occurred in which I suspected that I might be desired, I asked Dan if I was wanted. Often the answer "No" (one rap) came and I remained quiet. Often he signified by three raps that I was wanted and on being asked if he wanted me to hold the medium's hands he replied affirmatively. But the most interesting instances were those in which Dan, presumably he, spontaneously rapped for me and on asking if I was wanted

replied by the three raps and the same to the question whether he wanted me to hold Miss Burton's hands. Several times when I took her hands I unexpectedly found Black Cloud in possession and had to exorcise him in the usual way. The raps that called me to this were usually made with some difficulty. But it is interesting to remark this spontaneous call and the resistance which was made to my obedience to it. I must remark, however that some of the spontaneous calls were not for me and were so indicated by one rap when I asked if they were intended for me. It turned out often that something was wanted regarding the machine music, such as changing it, increasing or decreasing its loudness, etc., so that my inquiries could not always be interpreted as a suggestion in the direction of holding the hands.

One interesting spontaneous call should have its details. When I did touch the hand at times or held it for certain purposes I noticed that there was slight resentment to it and efforts to release it, tho not obstinately persistent. I suspected Black Cloud's presence, but would not try to resist him. My plan was to hold the hand or hands as little as possible so as not to obstruct any of the phenomena and especially the lights. But finally the hand signified its desire for pad and pencil and wrote the following:—

"I want you to put your hand wherever the light puts her hand."

This was not signed, as may be noticed, and the writing is a little clearer than usual. It is not usual in this case to use the word light for medium. Dan uses the word medium, at least usually. After this I held the hand most of the time. At times there was resistance and at times none. Usually when there was no resistance whistling or singing was going on, tho sometimes resistance accompanied the performance. She would pull her hand away and on my following it she would move it again but never resisting it violently and often succumbing to my persistence. My conjecture is and was that Dan had wanted to prevent Black Cloud from getting in when he would have to be exorcised violently with a loss of energy. In any case I found that the performance went on with less interruption and without

Black Cloud getting us into difficulty except once after the directions mentioned.

I made it a special point all evening to observe the relation between Miss Burton's motor actions and the phenomena. I never detected the slightest evidence of a causal relation, or even an associated and sympathetic action that might have been an accompaniment of dishonest motives. There was no correlation whatever between her actions and the phenomena of the evening. I often discovered automatisms like jerking that indicated a change of personality. These invariably occurred on occasions when I held the hands, during lethargic periods, simply to give her energy, done in response to Dan's admission that it was desirable for the purpose. As soon as she jerked her hands I let them free and I generally found her vocally responsive to the question whether she felt all right or not. But it was not the normal condition. It was a superficial trance, as she was anæsthetic, save perhaps hearing, tho this may have been only subliminally responsive and distinguishing a form of trance from pure lethargy or sleep.

Once during the evening Dr. Hamilton mentioned Black Cloud and instantly Miss Burton jerked her hand away from me, as if this personality could assume control at once. At least apparent suggestion was instantaneous. But I found no special resistance to my resuming control and I simply asked that this personality be not mentioned again.

Two or three times during the evening and after some strenuous effort Miss Burton fell forward on the table, as under similar circumstances in previous experiments. I helped her to recover her normal trance.

Once she spontaneously placed both hands in mine and put my hand to her face. I saw that she wanted me to hold both hands and to cover her lips. I did so and twice we tried to get whistling or singing under these conditions, but failed. It was after one of these efforts that she suddenly collapsed as she has done before and fell on the table.

Often raps occurred when I was holding both hands as they had done on previous evenings. Others did not know I was holding her hands and Mrs. Milton was not near enough the table to touch it.

I noticed early in the evening that her hands were cold and I felt that we would not get lights unless they resumed a more normal temperature. She often rubbed them, whether to warm them or not I could not determine. It was only toward the latter part of the séance that they became warm. They were constantly wet with perspiration, moist perhaps would be a better word, tho wet would apply to some occasions.

Finally the hand signified a desire for pad and pencil and wrote, after the usual difficulty in getting started:—

"I think we had better stop this time. I do not seem to be able to produce the lights but will do it yet. Dan."

I agreed and took her hands and head to help bring her out. The hand reached again for pad and pencil and wrote:—

"We will let the medium rest a little first. Dan."

We waited without my touching her and after some minutes the hand wanted the pencil and pad again, and wrote:—

"We want to try again. We think we can do it."

An effort was made to do something, supposedly producing lights but it failed. I observed, however, that her hands suddenly became cold in the effort and showed considerable moisture. The attempt had to be given up and I brought her out of the trance. She had a pain in the back of the head which I had to relieve by holding my hands on her head.

No test phenomena occurred during the evening. The only thing that could not be explained ordinarily was the excellence of the whistling which, however you suspect subliminal abilities as capable of it, do not reflect normal training and experience. The primary interest in the evening was the evident subliminal "honesty" of the medium, and I was more interested in that than in any of the other phenomena, considering that I could not get lights.

January 13th, 1911.

Present: Mrs. Milton and J. H. Hyslop.

The other parties could not be present last night and I had to have Mrs. Milton present to take charge of the phono-



graph. But it was my plan to continue experiment because I have all along felt that practice under new conditions, on any theory, is necessary to get desired results. But I had Miss Burton dressed as on the evening previous and had her hair combed as before. The conditions were such that the objections would have to rest on Mrs. Milton and I was not particular this evening to eliminate her from the case. On any theory I felt it was important to have her present and I was quite willing to risk the objections which might be due to that presence. But she had no part in the dressing and was not allowed to get near Miss Burton as long as we were in the light. Of course she had abundant opportunities to supply her with anything you may please to imagine in the darkness. But I was not trying this evening to exclude this possibility. I was concerned only in excluding the concealment of articles on Miss Burton's person and in the mere fact of practice for further experiment. The evening's work must speak for itself.

Miss Burton went into the trance much more quickly than on the evening before. The conditions for producing mental tension were less than before and this may have been the reason for the earlier trance. The first phenomenon was whistling. This was not especially good and was probably mere preparation for other work. Some of the whistling and singing were excellent, but it did not seem to me as good as the evening before. I noticed, however, during the evening that there was no tendency to keep up the whistling and singing as last night. It was perfectly evident that the intention was for something else and that the whistling and singing were steps in the development of the desired conditions and it makes no difference whatever what theory be preferred to account for the facts. The changes of personality were very marked during the evening and as I have often remarked before certain things had to be done at times to bring about the proper condition in the trance for carrying out the object of the experiments. The narrative of the facts will show this view of the case.

There were two or three instances of whistling and singing and one of simultaneous whistling and singing—not at all so

good as last night—before any apparent attempt was made to do something else. There followed a considerable pause without indication of what was in mind. I had several times asked if I were wanted and once or twice the raps signified the affirmative and I was to hold Miss Burton's hands to effect an alteration of the prevailing conditions and to bring about the necessary change of personality or removal of the lethargy that so often occurs. Finally the hand signified the desire for writing materials and the following was written:—

"We may not be able to give very many lights tonight but we will do our best. it may take a couple of nights to get more accustomed to conditions. The light is in very deep and we may need you any moment so if we rap four times you will understand."

The red light was not sufficient for me to read all of this, and in fact I did not at all catch the meaning of the part referring to the four raps and the need of myself at any moment. I read the first part easily enough, and simply remarked to the control that I quite agreed and was willing to take my time, having in mind only the fear that they might not be able to get many lights under the conditions. When I went back to the table the hand again signified the desire to write and wrote the following:—

"you will have to take that message where you can read it all. I want you to understand it."

I tried to reread the original message but did not get it all. The light was not clear enough for me to decipher the expression "four times," and when I went back the following was written:—

"you see that is what I wanted. if we rap four times we want you to take the medium's hands. she is very deep."

I recognized what was wanted and said I would be ready to meet the desired request. During the writing of this last message there were three raps and Mrs. Milton, who had allowed the phonograph to stop asked if they wanted the music continued and three raps signified the affirmative. During this the right hand did not cease to do its writing.

After this writing I returned to my place and awaited the course of events. Finally I saw a light. Just before it I noticed a filmy cloud before my vision in the pitch darkness, as if the

retina were simply reacting from the vague after image of diffused light after turning out a lamp. It was extremely vague and so without reason in anything that was going on that I rather expected something was coming. Mrs. Milton also spontaneously remarked the consciousness of diffused light in the room and thought there must be light coming in from somewhere. But there was none whatever coming in. It was soon after this that I saw the first light. I simply recognized it by saying "Good" without telling Mrs. Milton what I saw. She was busily occupied with the phonograph. At rather long intervals, perhaps of twenty seconds and more at times several lights occurred. One or two were quite brilliant and others were cloudy and like the phosphorus light. One was very small and clear, like a brilliant star point, and having no resemblance whatever to the cloudy lights produced by matches on moistened fingers. Besides she could not have gotten such articles into the room, as we had carefully excluded them from it, or from her own person. Of course the sceptic would object that Mrs. Milton could have furnished the material and I do not care to argue against that. I did not tell Mrs. Milton what I had observed until several instances of it occurred and she did not see them. Several more appeared and she could not see them, but two were made in her direction which she noted and which I did not see at all.

Finally after they had ceased and I was waiting four raps occurred and I obeyed the signal and took Miss Burton's hands. There was a quick jerk and I found Black Cloud in control. He had to be exorcised and I did this with patience and tact so that the struggle was not great or exhausting.

After recovery which involved coming into a light enough trance or possibly even the normal condition or one on the borderland of it, Miss Burton complained of her head. I held it awhile and also her hands. Finally the jerk of her hands indicated a change of personality, tho she retained responsiveness enough to answer my inquiry whether she was all right by the statement that she was. I then allowed her hands to rest on the table and removed my own. Some whistling occurred again and lethargy followed it when four raps again occurred to call for my hands. When she recovered it was some minutes

before anything occurred. When something did occur it was the appearance of a light which was very distinct and moved in a curve. Several occurred and only a few of them were observed by Mrs. Milton. I did not tell her at first what I saw, only remarked "That's good" or "Yes." Finally I mentioned what I saw and she then saw two or three. She was as anxious to see them as any one could be and rejoiced in the result as heartily as any one would who may have cherished a doubt about the fact.

There followed a pause and a rest and again a four rap call for me to hold the medium's hands which I did, and when she recovered apparently a normal state, as her vocal responses indicated, she was in the clairvoyant state. I did not know this until she said: "I feel so queer." In a moment she saw a lady at a table writing. Then a pause. I asked if she could get any letters by which I might identify the person. No response to this came. After further effort she suddenly fell forward on the table slightly groaning. I took hold of her and helped her out of the condition and the clairvoyant state returned. She spoke out as if asking the spirit to give the message and said: "You will have to give that to me, please." A pause followed and I asked for initials and tho she saw something she could not get it and said: "It seems so fast. I can't. I asked what she saw and the reply, after a pause, was: "I can't see. I keep hearing something. But it is so fast." Finally, after my request that they speak slowly, she said it was something about papers and that "it would be written, a book." No reply came to my query: "Who says this?"

There was then another relapse into lethargy from which I recovered her again after the four raps signal and she soon saw a large round light and a cross in the center of it. I asked who made that light, having in mind Imperator. No reply came. But after some moments, perhaps a minute or two, she saw a man with a high forehead and a beard. Then she saw another old gentleman with a long white beard. When I asked if she could get any initials to decide who he was, thinking myself of Henry Sidgwick, no immediate response came. Presently she saw him open a door and take out some papers. Then she heard an initial J, but saw no one. Suddenly she collapsed again and I held her

hands. As she began to recover she exclaimed twice: "Imperator, Imperator." On recovery of the clairvoyant state she saw the old man again and I asked for the initials. None came and the long pause and silence showed that she had relapsed again. Four raps were a signal to take her hands and when the jerk came and she had recovered a normal state, apparently coming to normal consciousness I desisted and in a few moments whistling occurred again, evidently to prepare for something else.

Somewhere in connection with the clairvoyant work the following automatic writing was done. I cannot locate it chronologically because I was too busy with attending to Miss Burton immediately after it to note its place. It matters not what its exact place was, as it followed a relapse from the clairvoyant state. The writing was:—

"It isn't so easy to come \* \* back ? and control as I thought. I said I would control better. W. James."

I know of nothing in Prof. James' life to confirm this statement and very much doubt it. It is at least not evidential, and I regard it here, on any theory, merely as preparation for further effort in the direction of communications from him.

After this there was a pause and four raps again called me. I found Black Cloud in possession and exorcised him. The resistance was not great, tho greater than on the first occasion. Then came some singing, apparently by Dan, as it was the recognized male voice, not so good as the night before. After a pause lights again appeared and I gave no indication at first what I saw. I simply said "Good" or "Yes" for some time before telling Mrs. Milton what I saw. The lights were very bright, tho not showing any irradiation or illumination. A few were cloudy and perhaps as large as half an inch square. But many were much smaller and a bright yellow, some almost as clear as a slightly dimmed electric light. They appeared in different places within the limits of Miss Burton's hand. At one time I put my hand forward and touched her two hands lying on the table, and it was so soon after I saw a light that it was almost inconceivable that she could so quickly have put her left hand there and been as passive as she was. In fact it was almost instantaneously after I saw the light that I had my hand on hers. My hand was on the way to hers and almost on it when the light

occurred. I was indeed surprised because I was assuming that the light was made by her hand and did not care if it was so.

When I remarked to Mrs. Milton that I was seeing lights she was surprised and then watched for them herself. Several occurred so that she and I saw them simultaneously and then numerous ones in various positions and with various degrees of brightness. When they ceased four raps came and I held the hands. Soon after recovery some further effort to do something occurred but without success and the head fell on the table. I held her hands and on recovery Miss Burton remarked that everything in the room seemed bright. Mrs. Milton made a similar remark and had several times indicated the same, being much puzzled by it. I suspected the cause of it and said so, indicating that I thought I knew who was doing it, conjecturing that Emperor was involved, as I have frequently found apparent evidence of this in various coincidences. I made the remark, however, to encourage the continuance of the experiment. Presently Mrs. Milton saw a large light over my head. I did not see it, but Mrs. Milton remarked that it looked like lightning. In a few moments Miss Burton reached her two hands to me and I took them in my two hands and held them together, one in each of my hands, on her breast. I said nothing to Mrs. Milton and it was all done so quietly that Mrs. Milton knew nothing about the situation. In a few minutes a large clear white light, not filmy or cloudy, appeared at the right of Mrs. Milton near the phonograph and she asked if I saw it. I said I did but made no mention of the conditions. We waited and in a few moments, a minute or two, what seemed to me to be two large lights flashed out behind the phonograph about six feet away. I saw the outline of the trumpet or horn on the machine. The light appeared as one to Mrs. Milton who saw it pass behind the machine and she was frightened by it as it was as sudden as lightning. I waited for more and Miss Burton evidently tried to produce more of them as she still kept her hands in mine and struggled to do something. When the lights occurred there was absolutely no struggling on her part. She was as passive as a dead piece of flesh and no motor action appeared until she apparently tried to repeat or continue the lights.

The night was foggy and damp, but no storm was about and

no lightning, as every one knows this is rare at this season. But had it occurred it could not have produced the effect observed, since it must not only have illuminated the entire room, but would have had to penetrate a black cloth curtain which completely shielded the entrance of all light and also a thick green curtain over that. But readers may as well dismiss that possibility or fact, as there was no lightning outside. Besides it would not account for the other thirty or forty lights which we saw in proximity to Miss Burton. Mrs. Milton was four feet from Miss Burton and the lights, as I said, six feet from Miss Burton and about two feet from and to the right of Mrs. Milton. I refer, of course, to the four large brilliant lights while I was holding the hands.

I did not tell Mrs. Milton that I was holding the hands of Miss Burton until after the experiment had been completed, and then I only remarked that the conditions were so good that she herself would have to accept the responsibility for the result. She did not understand what I meant until I explained the facts after the séance.

Mrs. Milton had frequently remarked during all this that the room seemed to have a pinkish light behind me, in alternating bands of light and darkness. She seemed to see me several times like a dark shadow in the field. I saw nothing whatever in the room. To me it was pitch darkness all the time.

After a pause Dan tried singing again. After two efforts Miss Burton fell forward on the table groaning and I had to restore her by holding her head and hands. Soon afterward the hand wanted to write and the following came:—

"We will let the medium rest and then I think we had better go for tonight. We will try to do some more tomorrow."

While apparently resting Miss Burton fell forward on the table again and in the process of holding her to give help she recovered normal consciousness very quickly, and seemed none the worse for the evening's work.

The arrangement about the four raps was an entirely new feature in the case and was made spontaneously and without suggestion from any one. On all previous occasions I had to



conjecture the possibility of wanting me and to make inquiry, with frequent responses of "No," one rap. This arrangement avoided waiting for me to suspect the want from the silence or inactivity prevailing.

There were long periods of inaction during the evening and less of the singing and whistling than usual on such occasions. I did not expect any mental phenomena and such as came were not in any respect evidential tho suggestive and consistent with the real, tho not more so than with a subjective origin.

There can be no doubt in my opinion that Miss Burton neither had anything concealed on her person nor could she have obtained it if she had so concealed it. Complicity with Mrs. Milton was not excluded. But Miss Burton certainly did not, by her hands or by any detectible means in her possession, make the lights near the phonograph, so that her agency was excluded from those, whatever we may think of the lights in her own vicinity. I take for granted that these were produced by her own hands and I do not object to that explanation. It does not indicate how she could make them. and Mrs. Milton's complicity seems excluded by the fact that she often did not know they were occurring and was as much interested in seeing them as I when she actually did not see them. There is no proof that Miss Burton made them with her hands, tho I should regard them as quite as supernormal as if supposedly independent, assuming that Mrs. Milton had not supplied the means for the effect after the lights were turned out. The reader may be assured that she did not or would not do this, because she was herself quite as much interested in having the test as any one else. But we have to recognize that the *possibility* or opportunity for confederacy was not excluded in this experiment. Complicity, however, is not involved in the lights when I was holding Miss Burton's hands. Distance excluded this and hence the sceptic must impute it all to Mrs. Milton or myself. The result was good tho not conclusive for any one who does not know the situation and the reliability of the parties concerned. Hysterical and somnambulant causes do not meet the case, tho test conditions were present.

January 15th, 1911.

I learned this evening from a near relative living with Dr. Smyth's family that she had retired early on the evening of this experiment and had not gone to sleep. She was in a room some distance and above the one in which we were working. All lights whatsoever from the street were shut out. A street car with electric lines that often cause lights passed the house, but these casual lights when they occur are not visible from this room. Before the lady went to sleep and coincidental with the experiments in the room below in which we were at work she saw a sudden flash of light before her eyes and knowing that it was unusual, never before having had the experience she set about investigating its possible cause. The only circumstance on which to work was an incandescent electric light in the hall which was shining. But it had a red bulb over it and hence was a deep red light. The light she saw was a white light and not explicable by anything connected with the electric lamp. What she saw was bright enough to startle her and to note the coincidence. I have known similar phenomena before and at a distance when similar experiments were going on.

January 14th, 1911.

Present: Mrs. Milton, Dr. Hamilton, J. H. Hyslop and most of the time Dr. Smyth.

Miss Burton was dressed as before and then also Mrs. Milton with the same precautions. I myself combed Miss Burton's hair, brought her out into the room, saw that she did not and could not bring anything with her from the dressing room and that she had nothing in her hands. She had no opportunity to get anything if she tried. I took charge of her until the lights were turned out and saw that Mrs. Milton did not come near her. Mrs. Milton's hair was taken down and combed by the ladies that saw to her dressing. She wore a dress furnished by one of the ladies brought for the purpose and underwear supplied by myself of the same character as

Miss Burton's. The precautions taken were the same in one case as the other.

Mrs. Milton took charge of the phonograph. The first thing done was some whistling and this was done behind her as well as in front. This occurred several times during the evening and once simultaneous whistling and singing were done behind her as well as in front. I had the opportunity once to notice that she moved her body about to do it and she managed to do it while I was holding her right hand and to turn toward me at that and without my detecting evidence of it in sympathetic movements of the hand that I held.

On this first occasion I was not holding the hand, my plan being not to disturb the hand or hands any more than I could help. At the close of it when I supposed Miss Burton was resting I heard four raps, the signal for me, and I found Miss Burton under the control of Black Cloud and had to exorcise him by holding her hands. The struggle was not great and I soon awakened her.

Whistling again, but not so good followed by some that was excellent. Then four raps again and I found Black Cloud rather firmly entrenched. He was exorcised with considerable difficulty and only by playing a hymn on the phonograph which brought on sobbing.

Soon after recovery Mrs. Milton said she saw a light behind me. No one else saw it. While apparently resting Miss Burton complained of pressure on her hands and thought I was pressing on them too hard. I was not touching them. I said so and she replied that she felt them. I then put my hand on hers and she still complained of it and then removed mine and asked her again if she still felt the pressure and she said she did. I examined her hands at once and found them rigidly cataleptic and her arms almost to the shoulders. Her neck and shoulders were not in the least cataleptic, as is usually the case when this sets in. I rubbed her hands and arms for some time and they recovered their normal condition.

There was more whistling and singing, some of it most excellent, and following them she suddenly arose and seemed to desire to go somewhere. I asked if I could help her and she said she would come back, but seized my hand and I let her go,

following her. She wandered about the room apparently looking for something, tho I held both hands by this time. When she came back there was a pause and then she complained that she could "not find her." I asked who it was and received no answer. I repeated my query and asked if it was the same person she had dreamed about and she said she had not dreamed anything. Before we had gone into the séance room she had told me an interesting dream in which a lady was concerned and I looked for the incidents to come out in the trance. But the dream was here disavowed, as the reader will remark.

After a pause she continued on the same line and said "I want Ellen." I asked "Ellen who?" and after some time she remarked that she got the initials M. H. Seeing that these were the initials of both my wife and my mother I asked what the color of the hair was and received the answer "dark." This was true of my mother but not of my wife, tho the latter's was not blonde, but a golden brown, if I am right in the choice of a term. On asking what relation the lady was to me she managed after some effort to say that it was my wife. To avoid confusion I simply let it stand by remarking that this was good, tho it was not correct for the person said to have dark hair. I knew if it was intended for my mother that it would have an interesting relation to Ellen who has appeared to me in clairvoyant work of Mrs. Chenoweth and possibly in the automatic writing of Mrs. Piper. But the development here left no assurance whatever that the name and initials were anything more than a subliminal memory of my wife and a chance coincidence in the name Ellen.

From this point I cannot give the chronological order of events. I was so occupied with the fluctuating conditions of Miss Burton that I could not make my notes fit in with the incidents whose order depended on making notes. It makes no difference, however, as nothing occurred which makes chronological order necessary, except in the incidents belonging to any particular phenomenon, and these my notes suffice to make clear.

Soon after the apparent clairvoyant or clairsaudient incidents the four raps signalled for my attention to Black Cloud again and after exorcising him in the usual way I held my hands on Miss Burton's a while fearing his return. Finally I asked Dan if things were all right and one rap signified "No," and to test the

matter I further asked if I should remove my hands and to my surprise I received the reply in three raps for "Yes," evidently meaning that I need have no more concern for Black Cloud.

There was more whistling and then a long pause in which something was apparently attempted without success. Presently I saw a light and for a while at considerable intervals there were a number of them, some quite clear and some misty and hazy. But they seemed not to come easily and Miss Burton was so unstable in the trance that much whistling and singing with pauses had to be done to help preserve or produce the conditions for doing anything. At some point of what I have described the hand signified the desire to write and the following came:—

"We cannot seem to keep the medium where we want her tonight and it makes it so hard. There seems to be something the matter with her head."

Mrs. Milton, on my reading this aloud, remarked that she had had trouble with her head all day. I had myself noticed that she was not so deeply intranced as on previous evenings. She groaned often and her hands rarely admitted my contact without resistance that required me to let her alone. But we went on with the work.

After a long and labored effort to get lights the hand signalled for pad and pencil and wrote:—

"I want all but Mrs. M. to put their hands on the table flat and I think we can do better."

Mrs. Milton had to manage the phonograph. This was the reason on any theory for excluding her. We accepted the suggestion, and tho the conditions did not in the least modify the previous situation and tho Miss Burton's freedom was not greater than before, we soon began to get lights. They were varied in quality from an occasional bright clear light to cloudy ones, with one rather irradiating light about the face.

Soon after this the hand wanted to write again and I gave pad and pencil with the following directions, which were in fact superfluous, but interesting as reflecting subliminal appreciation of the situation and the desire to establish what seemed to this subliminal to be test conditions.

"I want the Dr. to run the machine and the other Dr. to

hold Mrs. M.'s hands and I also want you to hold the medium's hands while the change is being made."

The instructions were followed out and then we again tried for lights. Dr. Hamilton was at the phonograph, Dr. Smyth held Mrs. Milton's hands and I released Miss Burton's after the change of position was effected. A few lights occurred and Dr. Smyth asked if I held her hands. I replied that I did not and at once Miss Burton put her hands in mine to try the lights under these conditions. None came and Dr. Smyth again asked if I held the hands. On my affirmative reply Miss Burton reached out both hands, mine still holding them and signified by the place and manner of stretching them that she wanted Dr. Smyth to hold them. We both held her hands but no lights came. Finally after a long and severe effort she had to give up and in a few moments the four raps indicated that her hands were to be held to exorcise Black Cloud. This done I still held her hands on the table, fearing that it was not time to release my hold, and was just on the point of removing my hands when, at my left and behind Miss Burton a little to her right and near the floor, a large brilliant light flashed out fully six inches long and as bright as any electric light, a bright yellow with perhaps a tinge of scarlet, tho this appearance may have been due more to the degree of intensity in the light than to the actual presence of the scarlet. A bright orange would perhaps express it. Miss Burton's body, the table and my body shielded the light from the others. It was slightly in the indirect field of my vision. I was facing Miss Burton so that the light was about 45 degrees from the median plane. There was no mistake about its occurrence and no indication that it was subjective on my part, especially as I had had no subjective lights of any kind during the evening, and when these do occur—and this is very rarely and always coincidental in my observations—they are exceedingly filmy and of the nature of *Eigenlicht* in appearance. Had it been in a position to be seen by others and they had not seen it I might respect the claim for its subjective nature. But it was not possible for any one to see it, so that the evidence does not stand for its subjective nature, however we may think it that.

The interest excited by this report from me started us to get further illustrations and Miss Burton offered her hands to me

for the trial. I held them and a long effort was made to get them. None of us saw a single light. Finally the hand signalled for the writing and the following came:—

“Why don't you keep your eyes open. the lights are not always near the medium and I am sure you could have seen them had you looked the right way.” I read this aloud and said I understood it, adding that we had not seen a single light and that the difficulty was that they were subjective to the medium and did not get all the way through. A rap came from Dan or the control to signify that they did get through. This was, of course, not true so far as our observations could determine, and all four were so seated as to command together every part of the room.

Further trial was made but I do not recall whether it was successful or unsuccessful. Finally the hand indicated its desire for pad and pencil and wrote:—

“I am afraid it is impossible for us to do any more tonight but tomorrow we want Dr. Smyth, Dr. Hamilton, one of the ladies and you to sit with the light and I think also that the weather conditions will be better then.”

There was a little doubt as to whether Mrs. Milton was to be present and in response to the query whether she should stay at home the three raps signified that she should. Then the hand desired to write again, and the following was written:—

“We do not know what we can do but we would like to try.”

I then asked if I should let the medium rest and three raps indicated that I should. I did so and as her head fell forward I took it to help and in a few moments it was raised and I took her hands. She came nearly out when she suddenly went into the trance again and signified the desire to write. Pad and pencil were furnished and the following directions were given.

“I want you to take the light in where she can lie down for a little while. She is not well.”

We let her go into the other room and put her on a couch. Just as she lay down Dr. Smyth forgetfully turned on the electric light for an instant and off at once with the recall of the danger, but the girl threw her hands up to her face with a slight scream and began groaning. In a few minutes she was resting quietly



and after some fifteen minutes she was revived by Dr. Hamilton holding her hands and making suggestions.

During the evening I noticed that her head fell forward invariably when I turned on the dim red light to read the automatic writing, and we could not prevent this by Dr. Hamilton trying to shield her eyes. The red light was much dimmer than the one they use at her own home and not brighter than on previous evenings. It was, in fact, exactly the same light. The real difficulty was her physical condition and the less depth of the trance which allowed hyperæsthesia to prevail more during the evening than on other occasions.

An incident which I cannot place chronologically should be recorded, as showing the character of the subliminal in the case and its entire willingness to try experiments of a test type. I was holding her hand once and she took it to her face and then brought up her left hand to mine indicating that she wanted it held. I took both in mine and she placed them over her lips to shield them while she tried to whistle or sing. This followed a successful effort at whistling without test conditions and while I held one hand. She repeated the effort pressing the back of my hand against her lips, so that if she had been successful the phenomena would have been absolute proof of independent voices or whistling. She failed, however, as might be expected, and I was interested in the facts only as proof that she subconsciously believes in their independence quite as fully as she does normally from reports to her. That is, she actually believes in the subconscious state that she can do the things she thinks are not her own acts and this fact is one of some importance in estimating the case. The alternative view to this is that she is subconsciously aware of the "trick" and then simulates ignorance of it by trying to establish test conditions. There is nothing either to prove or refute this hypothesis.

After the sitting Dr. Smyth remarked to Dr. Hamilton that he himself at one time during the séance became somewhat cataleptic, so much so that he was not able for a time to speak or move tho he tried to do so. He repeated this

fact to me the next day and it is added here to confirm similar reports of coincidental psychological phenomena in other cases, whatever the explanation, whether suggestion or outside agencies. Dr. Smyth is in no sense a hysterical type and not so enamored of these phenomena or so ready to believe them as to be liable to the astonishment which might give rise to mental states which are conceivably to be mistaken for such as described and being himself familiar with catalepsy there is no ordinary reason for being too doubtful about his account of his experience. The phenomenon seems not to have occurred to him before in the case, tho the circumstances might have more readily produced it than on this occasion.

Throughout the entire evening I found it was almost impossible to touch her hand without meeting resistance and I never held it without Dan's intimation or consent. I noticed also that the response by raps was not so frequent or so easy as on previous occasions. Very often I could get no response at all, tho I found the hands sensitive to touch and resenting contact. The mental conditions were more unstable than usual, tho this instability was apparently different in kind from that of the first evening in this series but quite as unmanageable. On any theory this accounts for the limitations of the phenomena during the experiment. In fact I did not expect anything at all to occur.

I was very glad, however, that we did get lights because the conditions were entirely satisfactory and as nothing depended on the quality of the lights the objector will have to make personal investigations to defend any conjecturable explanation of their occurrence. Under the circumstances I do not see how they can be explained in any ordinary way. I can find no possibility by which a normal explanation can be defended. Readers must remember that the precautions taken were not at all for our own satisfaction as to the honesty of the parties concerned. They may just take for granted that Mrs. Milton is perfectly honest and not subject to the suppositions which apply to the hysterical Miss Burton, so that the dressing of Mrs. Milton was only in deference to the scientific necessities of the case and not to satisfy any

scepticism as to her character and complicity. Miss Burton's situation is different, tho her normal innocence is just as certain as that can be in any one, often indicated too in connection with the details of her personal examination, she actually not knowing why we did certain things and naively imagining that they were for other than the real purposes. But being a subject of hysteria we have to suppose that she might go into some trance or semi-trance condition and provide herself with matches or phosphorus without normal knowledge and then use the material when the trance comes on in the experimental room. There is not only no evidence that she does such things, but there is no opportunity in this city to obtain anything but matches for the purpose, and the girl would know no more about where to go or what to get than the most ignorant child. This statement of course does not count where we are supposed to be gullible old fools in such work and besides it is true that we can no more secure assurance, or secure more assurance, on this point than on any other in life. The case, however, cannot irresponsibly be classed with the professional trickster. But the conditions absolutely excluded the use of the only material that can be imagined as accessible to her. There were no matches in the room, these having purposely been excluded from it and I saw to it that she did not and could not bring them in. Besides the character of the lights generally excluded comparison with those producible with matches and her hands could not have been used in those that occurred when I held her hands. I shall not pretend to explain the facts thus far and I do not care either to explain them at any time or to insist that they are proof against objection. All that I require to urge at this point is that it is now the place of objectors to prove their case, as I am not trying to convince any sceptic whatever: I am merely challenging investigation and shall not listen to indolent talk from any one.

January 15th, 1911.

Present: Dr. Hamilton, Dr. Smyth, Mrs. Smyth, and after the first half of the séance, Mrs. R—— a friend of Mrs. Smyth.

Mrs. Milton was excluded from the experiment this evening, as the writing of the previous evening suggested. It had been her desire all along to remain away from the sittings. But I deemed it best to have her present as a help to prevent unnecessary perturbation on the part of Miss Burton, if for no other reason, until we could establish the proper poise in Miss Burton for phenomena of any kind.

We had special care taken in dressing Miss Burton. We had two ladies, Mrs. Smyth and Mrs. R—, both employed at this. One stood on each side of her to see that she transferred nothing from her own clothes to the prepared suit. All matches were removed from the room before she came or went into it. Her hands were washed as usual and on all evenings except the previous one, as explained in an earlier note (p. 568). After she was dressed I was called and I combed her hair and brought her out, watching that she did not pick up a thing anywhere. She was taken by me directly into the séance room from which I had previously removed all matches. I saw to it that ears, mouth and nose were all right. When ready the lights were turned out and Dr. Hamilton managed the phonograph. The conditions excluded absolutely the possibility of admitting into the room any apparatus or artificial means for producing lights.

Soon after she had gotten into the trance raps occurred and it took some time for me to understand what they meant. I asked the usual questions whether I was wanted, whether the music should be changed, or who was wanted and all replies were one rap, the negative, till I asked if it was about the table when I received the affirmative three raps and another query brought an affirmative rap for the articles which we had forgotten to put on it, namely, the trumpet and the tambourine. On asking if the smaller part of the trumpet should be omitted three raps came.

..

Whistling followed presently and was done a second time, not especially excellent. With a view to trying what suggestion might do I said I would "magnetize" myself and used the trumpet to rub my arms. I noted in a moment that she rubbed

her hands vigorously and then "magnetized" herself with the trumpet.

Soon afterward I felt a strong breeze and asked others if they felt it and they were emphatically agreed that it was very perceptible. I had observed very distinct evidence that Miss Burton had caused the breeze with the trumpet. I felt over the table and found it was not there and once or twice it barely touched my hair. This explanation was hardly conjectural on my part, so apparent was the use of the trumpet. After a pause there was considerable whistling, two very long and sustained instances of it which made it remarkable for its persistence without a change of breathing. Soon after this she showed signs of irritation in the throat and on being asked two or three times if she wanted a drink of water she managed to signify by raps that she did, having apparently tried to signify this by voice.

When Dr. Hamilton changed the music he happened to put on a hymn and soon Miss Burton was sobbing from the effects of it and she had to be revived. A pause followed and apparently some effort made to do something, what I did not know. But suddenly the table was tipped and I put my hands forward only to find that hers were not on the table. Again it was tipped, this time as before, away from her and her hands were not on it. I put my foot in front of hers and found her feet were not under the feet of the table. It was quite possible for her to have used her knee under the cross piece of the table to tip it, tho her hands were evidently not the cause of it, as I found them tightly folded on her breast and Black Cloud in possession. I had to exorcise him in the usual way.

Then followed some whistling and singing with no special features to be remarked. Again I found Black Cloud in control and had to remove him as before. There was less resistance this time. After a pause I noted some groans and put forward my hand only to find that Miss Burton's right arm was cataleptic and the fingers clasp the left arm near the elbow. There was not the slightest catalepsy in the left hand or arm, and the right was not cataleptic above the elbow, save perhaps one muscle. Certainly most of the muscles were not this above the elbow. I rubbed the hand and arm for some time and it relaxed to take its place on the table with the left.

Soon after this I saw some lights in the vicinity of Miss Burton and remarked the fact only by the usual expressions and without telling any one what I saw until several had occurred. In the meantime two others had seen two or three of them without suggestion. We watched them a little while and they ceased. We spoke encouragingly of their continuance and presently the trumpet was seized and we were told not to be too anxious as it was almost impossible to overcome this anxiety. We then waited for lights, but some simultaneous whistling and singing occurred which were most excellent. Dr. Hamilton remarked with Dr. Smyth that it was the best he had ever heard. One of the instances contained a feature which he explained to me after the séance, asking me at the time of its occurrence to note the fact. He observed at times that the whistling and singing were synchronous in their notes and at other times they were successive. That is, a note of singing would follow or precede the same note in the whistling. I had not noticed this. But in one of the earlier instances of the whistling I had observed the wavy character of the notes which singers use in their singing. It was not trilling, which is a very common characteristic of the whistling and done in as expert a manner as any one can desire. But it was the regular beating or waving in the sounds as employed by singers or players on the violin. I asked the others present if they noticed this feature of it and they did and agreed that it was not a frequent phenomena in these experiments. I had not especially noticed it before.

Then followed four or five lights again observed by all, and then a pause. Whistling again had to be done to restore the proper conditions for lights. Then lights came again and one especially large and bright was noticed. But suddenly Miss Burton arose and went to the phonograph and after a pause in which we resolved to let her alone, the grunts showing that Black Cloud was in possession, she began to fix the phonograph and to change the music. She tried three pieces before she was satisfied as to what she wanted. During this she would throw the records about or jam them in Dr. Hamilton's lap, violently push the horn out of the way, and slap Dr. Hamilton if she thought he was doing anything undesirable. Finally she came back voluntarily to her seat and after a few minutes lights occurred

again, all in her own vicinity. When she was at the phonograph she had put on a hymn, an act contrary to her usual taste and it had no apparent effect on the phenomena following. It was Ave Maria. Finally the lights ceased and raps called me. I found her hands on the table passive and in a moment she was sobbing. Apparently a change of personality had taken place and the plaintive music brought on the sobbing. Her head fell on the table and she had to be revived by my holding her head and hands.

Then followed some whistling and while it was going on she thrust her hands to mine and I held both of them for some time while the whistling was going on. Finally the trumpet fell on the table and then to the floor. I had not said anything to those present about the condition of the hands until after the trumpet fell, when I applauded the phenomenon and told the others what the conditions were. When the trumpet had been replaced, the hands having been released by me in the meantime in response to Miss Burton's desire, the whistling again occurred and the hands were thrust to me and held as before when the same process of sustained whistling took place as before, the trumpet falling again on to the table. I then told those present what had again occurred. The whistling was most excellent, there appearing to be no obstacle to its excellence any more than if I had not held the hands.

My conjecture is that Miss Burton had placed the trumpet on her arm in such a way that she could rest it there while she put her hands into mine, and then when desired she could use the elbow to let it fall on the table, one end of it resting there from the beginning. Whether she whistled into the trumpet or not was not determinable. After the close of the séance Dr. Hamilton told me that he had observed at the time when he put out his hand that the tambourine was on its edge and the end of the trumpet resting on it. The coincidence of this with my control he recalled from the fact that I had told them I was holding both hands. The location of the whistling and its apparent variation of locality is against the supposition that the trumpet was used for any purpose except to make us think it had been raised in the air independently of her hands. Had she moved her head and on the supposition that we cannot ac-



curately locate whistling sounds, the effect might have been produced without actually whistling into the trumpet.

But immediately after this she placed her two hands in mine and tried hard and for a long time to repeat the phenomena without first starting the whistling, and failed. She tried a second time and failed.

Then whistling followed with free hands and lights again followed this. All were in the vicinity of Miss Burton, and in response to the statement of Dr. Hamilton that he did not see them at first they occurred, as at other times on the left of Miss Burton so that he could see them. He told us afterward that, at various times, he could see them apparently issuing below the edge of the table out of our sight and from the glass door of some shelves in the office at her left. In a few moments the lights ceased and a grunt showed that Black Cloud was in again. I resolved to let him alone and there was some time of silence. In the meantime Dr. Smyth remarked that he felt cataleptic himself, as he had felt the evening before. After waiting long enough, as I supposed, I asked Dan if he wanted me. No raps came in reply. I repeated my query with the same result. I then asked if a change of music was wanted and again no reply came. I then repeated the query to know if I could help and no reply came. Suspecting that Black Cloud had by this time learned what my questions meant, when asking whether I was wanted, as they had always been followed by his exorcism when the replies were affirmative, I resolved on another tack. I asked Black Cloud if he could rap and no raps occurred. I then said I did not believe he could do it, and three very loud raps occurred. Dr. Hamilton challenged him and he grunted out two loud "Noes" and rushed for the phonograph and repeated his former process with the music and adjusting the machine. Finally I heard four spontaneous raps which were Dan's call for me to hold the hands and I at once arose and took the hands. The resistance was not great and Miss Burton soon came into a normal trance.

As soon as she had been seated I asked Dan if I could ask a question and three raps signified "Yes." I asked if I could admit Mrs. R—— into the room and he assented by three raps. Dr. Smyth brought her in, and soon afterward the trumpet was

seized and Mrs. R—— was told through it that she, the control, was glad to have her in the room, an interesting piece of psychological propriety in the case on any theory.

Soon after Mrs. R—— had taken her seat a few lights occurred and then ceased, all of us having expressed our appreciation of them. Further trial resulted in failure, when the trumpet was seized and we were told through it that the lights were not necessarily near the medium and we were told not to watch her too closely and that our concentration on her tended to make them take place near her. It was added that they were trying as far as possible to make them at a distance.

Then began efforts to produce lights again. Soon they occurred at a greater distance, perhaps three feet from where Miss Burton sat. I had my left hand on the edge of the chair and touching her dress. I detected evidence that she was leaning forward and I put up my left hand to find that her body was moving considerably forward to help make the lights. But some occurred behind me while I held my right hand on hers and my left against her side so that she did not and could not lean in that direction to make them. Mrs. R——, who sat at my right had to turn her head to watch them and, as she told me afterward, they were immediately behind me and down at the level or below my chair seat. Miss Burton was eighteen or twenty inches in front of me, did not lean or move toward me, and was under control on the right side of her body.

At this point Miss Burton took off her knit sack which we had put on her before the séance because her dress was thin. I put it on my chair, she having thrown it on the floor. Then came lights again and I noticed her hands were warm. They had been somewhat cold earlier. In a few minutes she was clapping and rubbing her hands and after a pause suddenly rushed to the phonograph again, stopping the machine and changing the music. Soon she came back to the seat and voluntarily gave me her hands and I had her nearly out of the situation when Dr. Smyth mentioned Black Cloud and instantly he was in again. This was manifested by a violent jerk and as violent resistance to me. I remarked to Black Cloud that I would help him and he replied in his Indian grunts "No, me help," and I resolved to let him go. Presently raps occurred and I asked if I was wanted

and three raps indicated that I was. Then the following colloquy occurred.

(Do you want me to hold the hands?)

One rap for No.

(Do you want louder music?)

One rap for No.

(Do you want lighter music?)

One rap for No.

(Do you want a change of music?)

Three raps for yes.

(Do you want a jolly piece?)

One rap for No.

(Do you want a hymn?)

Three raps for yes.

This was a curious diversion for Black Cloud as he can be exorcised by a hymn perhaps more easily than holding the hands. But Dr. Hamilton did not know where the hymn pieces were. Black Cloud in his earlier escapades had scattered them so that it would have taken an hour without the light to find them. He exclaimed that he did not know where they were, and in an instant Miss Burton arose and in the pitch darkness easily and almost instantly picked up a hymn record and put it on the phonograph and soon came out sobbing.

After a pause and recovery of the normal trance lights occurred again and two or three persons saw them over behind Miss Burton at the gas jet, more than three feet from where she was. I had my right hand on her right and my left at her chair seeing that she was not moving. I did not see the lights, as they were behind me. They were large and brilliant. There may have been some illusion as to their exact locality, but as we were not concerned with the question of their independence it makes no difference. We must, however, record the fact that they seemed to be independent. I noticed her groaning at times.

Some one made an allusion to some of them looking like falling stars and immediately the lights began to move in curves for some distance and to imitate meteoric phenomena very distinctly, but in front of her now. I was holding her right hand during all this.

I again noticed groans and putting my hand forward found

her left hand clasping her right arm near the elbow and cataleptic exactly as had been the right arm earlier in the evening. The right was not in the least cataleptic. The phenomenon was precisely like the previous one in all details, except that it was on the left side whereas it was the right side on the first occasion. I relaxed it by rubbing and the hand was placed on the table. Presently, possibly on account of some dislike of the music, Miss Burton sprang up and was at the phonograph again regulating the music. I let her alone for some time. When I thought I had waited long enough I asked if I was wanted. No raps occurred. I repeated the query at intervals and no reply was made. After a pause four spontaneous raps called for me to hold the hands. I arose and took the hands and there was a little resistance at first. Then Miss Burton immediately collapsed and came to her seat, sobbing without any influence from the music which was not a hymn.

I suggested that it was now time to stop the experiments. I had made this suggestion before the last lights were produced and received the negative rap. But this time three raps signified assent. Presently the hand signalled for pad and pencil and wrote:—

“We will be ready to stop soon. We want the light to rest first.”

I let her rest with head on the table and soon she raised it and put her hands in her face. I soon asked if she was ready to come out and three raps signified the affirmative. I then took head and hands and she soon came out. She was taken out to undress and as soon as she was dressed in her own clothes she complained that her head hurt her and fell forward on the sofa. I was sent for and I went in to watch the situation and to bring her out. I resolved to let her sleep awhile and after some minutes began suggestions to awaken her. She had been perfectly lethargic all the while but now soon groaned a little and I said she would awaken when I counted three. She failed to respond both times I tried this. Dr. Hamilton then came in and, assuming that my contact with her so much prevented the action of suggestion I asked him to awaken her. But he was busy in conversation for a few moments and in the meantime I succeeded in awakening her. She complained that her head hurt her and

I held my hand on the back of it and one hand on her forehead. In a few minutes she admitted that it was better and I took her home.

I noticed all evening that the responses to my questions were not at all ready and very often would not occur at all. Only twice were there spontaneous calls by four raps to have me hold her hands, and rarely did Dan respond to my inquiry whether I was wanted. Only once or twice did he signify in response to such inquiries that he wanted me to hold her hands and these were on occasions when it was necessary to revive her or to change the personality, not to exorcise Black Cloud. All evening Dan seemed powerless when Black Cloud was in possession and could not respond to my inquiries when he was in, unless he "stole a march" on Black Cloud and caught him napping.

I failed to note the chronology of one set of lights behind me and in the corner of the room and also near the gas jet. These were remarked by three persons. Dr. Hamilton was busy with the phonograph and did not observe them. The three were agreed as to the locality tho they were seated in different places. Assuming that they were not under an illusion regarding the place the lights were from three to six feet distant from Miss Burton. It was on an occasion when I was holding the right hand, which I did note at the time, and had my left determining whether she remained in the chair. She could have used her left free hand, but she could not have reached to the distance assigned by the observers. They may probably have been in error as to the distance. But it makes no difference, as the independence of the lights is not the question. We were satisfied if lights of any kind could be produced under the circumstances.

During the whole evening the lights were good. I did not see more than two or three that were cloudy or misty like those made from matches.

There were perhaps hundreds of them during the evening and most of them a bright yellow, radiant enough in a few instances to light an area of her dress on her right shoulder.

Some of them were as large as peas, some mere points. But nearly all were the usual bright yellow, some of them quite brilliant, tho not irradiating light in the room, and wholly without resemblance to phosphorescent lights. No one would mistake either for the other. This was the unanimous opinion of the persons present who were familiar with both kinds, and indeed it was this evident difference that has been the chief reason for careful experiment that would exclude the possibility of getting phosphorus or similar materials for the purpose.

I often noticed this evening, as I had done on the two previous evenings, that I could tell when lights were coming some moments before they were distinctly visible. The phenomena that gave me this warning I shall call abortive lights. I would detect an apparent light and attention would only reveal that it was not real enough to speak of it. Several times they were quite incipiently visible, but more frequently I had all the conviction of the presence of the light but not the retinal reaction. They were not subjective lights because they never reached the distinctness of subjective lights which are as visible as the real ones. I simply noticed that they did not occur at any time except just before lights began to appear and when they became visible no more abortive lights would occur. They were phenomena that correspond to subliminal stimuli not intense enough to produce a conscious sensation but cause a reaction sufficient to make the mind think an impression is there, but it cannot be perceived. The points of light would occur in the field of vision but they were not light, if I may so describe the phenomena. They were simply abortive stimuli, or reactions to stimuli that were subliminal. I was not subject during the experiment generally to any subjective lights. Two or three times at the first of the four sittings for lights and at the earlier series, I had noticed subjective lights of a cloudy character anticipating the lights of the medium, but at all other times I was absolutely free from any phosphenes or subjective lights. I therefore watched these experiences carefully to see if they could be compared to subjective lights. Dr. Hamilton re-

marked in himself that he frequently noticed them during both this and the previous evenings. The abortive lights which I have mentioned, however, can be described only as inefficient real stimuli, arousing nothing but subliminal reactions too faint to reach the threshold clearly.

I was able this evening to take good notes, so that both the details and their chronology were fairly good, the notes being sufficiently full to make my memory reliable for associated conditions. The whistling and singing kept up for a long time before the conditions arose for the production of lights, but when these began there was no disposition to return to the whistling or singing except at those crises which required a change of personality or conditions to effect the lights. Only a few times was Miss Burton brought into apparent normal consciousness to be returned to a trance condition for lights. It was not really a normal consciousness, as she has no memory of it whatever when actually awakened. But the resemblance to the normal state is the tone of her voice and her behavior when this state is produced.

The conditions for excluding ordinary causes from the production of lights were good and I think any reader will have difficulty in offering any defensible hypothesis of the ordinary kind. Of course outside readers will not be able to appreciate the actual situation, as we cannot produce a mental or other picture of all the incidents and the rooms in which the preparations were made. They can imagine all sorts of possibilities that are not facts in the case. But those who cannot accept our judgment in it must investigate for themselves. I am not seeking either to convert or to paralyze them. I pay no respect to their opinions or their *a priori* theories. I am concerned only to describe the facts occurring under the best conditions that could be attained and if they can show any provable escape from the ordinary explanations with which we are all familiar I shall welcome it. But I shall scorn all *a priori* and imaginary theories without evidence applicable to the particular case and conditions of place and precaution. We excluded the complicity of Mrs. Milton as we had excluded any conceivable means or artifice on the part of Miss Burton, and we do not question that the



lights, at least in most cases, were produced at the periphery of her sensorium. Her hands were the agents and there was no effort made to prevent her hands from making them. Such instances in which her hands were under control were those in which she spontaneously offered the control. That the phenomena were accompanied by hysteria goes without saying, but they represent effects not usual in that type of subjects.

The results throw a retrospective probability upon all the lights in our previous experiments where test conditions did not prevail. That will be admitted by every intelligent person. They also shed some retrospective light on the possibilities of the raps which had seemed to me in previous experiments to have some evidence for their independence. But whatever we may believe about the independence of certain instances of either lights or raps, or even of certain other physical phenomena, it is certain that most of the physical phenomena outside the raps and lights are produced hysterically and without evidential characteristics for explanations other than the usual mechanical ones. The lights however, challenge the ordinary mechanical explanations, even tho they do not remove scepticism. The raps, if any were independent, also make the same challenge. But beyond these perhaps the phenomena have no credentials for displacing mechanical explanations, even tho we admit an actual instigation from foreign agencies for which in many cases at least there is not the slightest evidence.

I have said nothing in all this about the possibility of confederates in the experiments. Very little needs to be said. I made allowance for this in the place and manner of experiment. The possibility of admitting others than Mrs. Milton, Miss Burton and the sitters named in the record was provided against, and the only confederates to be considered are the sitters other than Mrs. Milton. The reader need not trouble himself about that point unless he finds himself hard pushed for imaginary objections. We shall not waste time or energy in disillusioning him, tho conceding the duty on our part to exclude the possibility of such persons being present or aiding in the results without discovery. The place

and measures taken excluded their admission without our knowledge and complicity.\*

\* After I had completed my experiments Dr. and Mrs. Smyth were invited to the Miltons to be present at a sitting. Both report the following, each giving separate accounts. Mrs. Smyth writes on date of Feb. 4th, 1911:

"We saw many lights, but all of them were near the medium save one. This Dr. Smyth considers important. He was holding the hands and feet of the medium and she was just coming out of the trance. My hands were tired and I was resting them in my lap. A light came from my right hand about three inches long. It was seen only by Mrs. R—— and myself. We were sitting opposite the medium. Dr. Smyth thinks it came from my mediumship and not from Miss Burton's. The lights were like the others we have all seen. Raps occurred on the table under my hands while Dr. Smyth was holding the medium."

In reply to my inquiries Dr. Smyth writes under date of Feb. 15th, 1911:

Feb. 15th, 1911.

My dear Dr. Hyslop:

I am reminded that I am to write you the report of a sitting with Miss Burton Jan. 29th [1911]. Those present were Mrs. Milton, Mrs. Smyth, Mrs. R—— and myself. After the séance began Miss Burton was seen entranced and the usual phenomena occurred. I found myself developing automatic movements and asked that Dan put me in a trance. He replied [by raps] that he would try, after which the phenomena ceased and Miss Burton was deeply entranced and became cataleptic. I took hold of her to aid in breaking the trance. I sat to the right of Miss Burton, Mrs. Milton at the end of the table near the phonograph and across on the opposite side. Mrs. R—— sat to the left of Mrs. Milton across the table from the medium and Mrs. Smyth to the left of Mrs. R—— and on the same side of the table. The table was extended separating the sitters considerably. Toward the end of the séance lights were frequently seen in the presence of the medium. There was no effort at this time to limit the medium's movement. But catalepsy developed again and I seized the medium by both hands to break the deep trance and restore her to a condition favorable to automatism. It was while I was holding the medium by both hands, with her face and body turned toward me that Mrs. R—— spoke up and said that she saw a light like that which had been seen around Miss Burton issuing from the hand of Mrs. Smyth. This statement of Mrs. R's was followed immediately by a statement from Mrs. Smyth that she also saw the light. It was described by both as measuring an inch in length. The light, it was stated, came from Mrs. Smyth's hand which was resting in her lap and at a point where the light was not visible to any one else in the room. No effort was made to have the experiment repeated. The character of the light

January 17th, 1911.

Present: Mrs. Milton and Miss S——.

The experiment this evening was exclusively for mental phenomena. We had intended to have the usual music in conformity with habit as a help but illness in the apartment above the family precluded this and the sitting was held without the music. Miss S—— was present to introduce the trance by singing lightly if necessary and a verse or two was sung, but in my opinion it was wholly unnecessary.

It took only a short time to go into the trance and there was no tendency to take the clairvoyant form of it until I held her hands when I produced it. I asked Dan a number of times if things were going on all right, with the desire to have raps and then to ask if I should hold Miss Burton's hands to get the clairvoyant condition. But no raps came in reply. After a while in further response to similar inquiries on my part the hand signified the desire to write and the following came:—

"We must become accustomed to the new conditions and I think every thing will be all right."

[Soon after this Miss S—— said she saw Halley's comet in the middle of the table and soon saw it above me. She then described it as a light which had those characteristics. It was probably subjective as no one else saw it. After a pause Miss Burton spoke through the trumpet and said: "They will get there yet but it is awfully slow." Some further statements through the trumpet said to me I could not hear. I then held her hands and she came into the clairvoyant trance. What occurred after this I may express in the usual manner of the records with the understanding that there were long pauses intervening.]

(Do you see anything?)

I see so much light. It is bright here. [Pause.] I see a large round light like a wheel and there are points on it.

---

was discussed and it was evident, with Mrs. Milton accounted for, that it could not have been intracellular retinal flashes. The description of both was exactly alike. This would make it a coincidental or collective illusion, unless we accept the supernormal.

JOHN S. SMYTH.

Discrepancy in length of lights due to angle of vision.—J. H. H.

(See if you can tell me what it is.) [Thinking of the wind-mill incident of an earlier sitting.]

Beside it I see a real old man and the figures 3 and 9.

[This reference to 3 and 9 is a relic of my reference to the thirty-nine articles in connection with a previous mention of this old man.]

(Can you give the initials of that man?)

[No reply.]

(What do 3 and 9 mean?)

I get the letter P but I can't see the rest.

(All right. Get the rest if you can.)

I heard the word "point."

[At this juncture the clock struck and it threw Miss Burton into the lethargic trance in which she cannot speak. I held her hands and revived the clairvoyant trance.]

I see a bright light and a man, not large but slender and a close beard.

(Can you get any initials?)

[A long pause followed without any reply.]

Over your head I get the initial M.

(Good. See what else.)

It is so bright and I see so many but they are not plain enough to tell what they look like before they are gone.

(Find more about M.)

I just heard the name Henry.

(To whom does it apply?) [Thinking of Prof. Sidgwick.]

I see the man with a close beard.

(Let him give another initial.)

[Soon afterward the hand signified the desire to write and the following came:—]

"everything is so distinct but she cannot seem to see it. we do not know the reason."

I then found her in the lethargic trance and had to awaken her by holding her hands.

(Do you see anything?)

One rap for "No." [Pause.] I feel queer, as if floating. I see three initials W. H. M.

(All right. I know who that is.)

I see a large bird.

(What is its color?)

Light brown. (What is it like?) [No reply.]

(Get more about W. H. M.)

[At this juncture Miss S—— saw a face distinctly in front of her and I noticed that Miss Burton had gone into the lethargic trance. I held her hands to revive the clairvoyant state.]

(Watch for the light.)

She won't stay any place. [Reference to the unstable trance of Miss Burton.]

[Almost immediately Miss S—— exclaimed that she felt so funny and in a moment I heard a hysterical cry. I went to her and found her in a light trance exclaiming now and then that she felt so funny. Inquiry brought from her the statement that her eyes hurt her and it was so bright. Her forehead was perspiring freely and it was some time before she regained her balance. I asked Dan if he understood this and received three raps in reply. I then turned the care of her over to Mrs. Milton who held her hands and I went to Miss Burton. Her head was buried in her hands on the table. I revived her from this lethargic state and she arose to her feet. I heard her using her hands and found her vigorously rubbing her eyes with them. She groaned now and then. Miss S—— presently complained of her eyes again and the light. Miss Burton continued rubbing her eyes and groaning now and then. Her forehead was perspiring as that of Miss S—— tho nothing had been said. Finally she spoke of the bright light hurting them. It was pitch darkness. She exclaimed several times: "Oh my eyes!" Soon she sat down and I held her hands to revive the clairvoyant trance. I had turned up the red light a little before and soon afterward Miss Burton complained that it was so dark and asked me to put out the light!

Miss S—— saw brown lights near myself and Miss Burton. There was then a pause and the clairvoyance of Miss Burton began.]

I see the initials W. J. and the form of a man. There is something in his hand. He opens it out and it is papers. He closes them and is not ready to do anything with them. He puts them away.

(He can give me one thing that would be good.)

I hear him say something but I can't make it out.

(All right. Get it if you can.)

That's funny. (What is funny?) I get only a part of it and then he says I put them away. (What is he talking about?) About those papers it seems.

[I then found her in the lethargic trance again and let her rest and when I asked Dan if I should hold her hands she came into the clairvoyant trance spontaneously.]

I hear something about a boat and papers.

(Is there anything special he wants to tell me?)

Three raps for "Yes."

(All right. I shall wait.)

I see a large initial F.

(What is it connected with?) [Thinking of W. H. M.]

[No reply.]

(Has that person been referred to before?)

[Pause and in a few moments I suggested that we close the experiment on the ground that mental work was tiring. I repeated this for some minutes and finally Miss Burton sprang from her chair and went to the other side of the room in the darkness. After allowing her to rest quietly awhile I went to her and held her hands. She had found a chair in the corner of the room. I apparently revived her but she suddenly relapsed into the trance and I held her hands again. She apparently came to normal consciousness and said: "A man came here that was shot: he shot himself." We turned on the red light. But instead of reviving normal conditions she arose and started for the door. I followed and found that she wanted to get into the front room to lie down. At first she was startled by the reflection of the red light in the mirror facing the door of the dining-room in which we were. Then she started down the hall and after some difficulty, probably caused by memories of the rooms and relations in the former house in which they lived she got into the front room and threw herself on the couch. We left her there sleeping, as it were, for some time. When I got ready to go I started for the front room to leave. We had left it dark there. As soon as I entered the door I heard Black Cloud's grunt and Mrs. Milton went to exorcise him. I suggested letting her remain quiet. She half arose and exclaimed, "Me no go. Me want help." I took this as a desire for me to help him. I then took her hands

and after some resistance he quietly succumbed and I left her to sleep it out.]

The only phenomena of interest were the coincidental experiences between Miss S—— and Miss Burton, the initials W. H. M. and the initial F., and the allusion to the man who shot himself.

The hysterical phenomena of Miss S—— and coincidences with Miss Burton's similar hysterical actions were due perhaps to suggestion. At least that is the natural explanation of Miss Burton's in imitation of what was suggested by the complaint of Miss S——.

I asked Mrs. Milton after the sitting if she identified W. H. M. in any way and she said she did not. They had no meaning whatever to her. I am certain that Miss Burton would not know what Mrs. Milton did not know about them. From what I know of both of them I would recognize that it would be unlikely for them to ascertain their possible meaning casually, as they are not readers of psychic research literature, Miss Burton being less exposed to suspicion of this than Mrs. Milton.

I recognized at once that W. H. M. would fit Mr. Myers and was all the more struck with it that I have gotten it elsewhere in this form without the F., and then later the F. would be supplied as it possibly was this evening. There did not come sufficient evidence to assure me that the F. was intended to complete the initials W. H. M., but it suggests that hypothesis.

The reference to the man who shot himself has its possibilities. I heard from such a person before in Boston. He killed himself on the Pacific coast and was a man very little known even there and not outside a small place. It is not known in the east that I knew of any such person and I would not have known it but for a report of his psychic experiences. If I get more about him I can have better assurance that it is not a chance coincidence.

January 18th, 1911.

Present, Mrs. Milton and J. H. Hyslop.

We were able to have the phonograph in use this evening,



tho only with very light music. We had to avoid annoyance to the patient in the apartment above. Apparently the music favorably affected the results, as raps called for it when necessary for establishing certain conditions either of mind or body for the results.

It was not long before the trance came on, but it took some time to get any responses. The lethargy was very marked and I could not get raps to indicate whether I should hold Miss Burton's hands for producing the condition for getting her visions. Finally I simply took the hands without Dan's response or consent and after some time revived the condition desired. She said nothing until I asked if she saw anything and then said she saw three lights and immediately afterward remarked that her arms felt so funny. I tested her by putting my hands on and off her hands to see if any alteration of the feelings in the arm would follow and it did not. She complained of their being numb. After a pause she said she saw a light and with it the initials F. M. I said I knew who this was and the course of things took the usual order which I may record as before.

(If you can get all of what it means let it come through.)

I feel as if I were asleep all over. [Mrs. Milton remarked that she herself saw a large light in front of me.]

[Miss Burton relapsed into lethargic trance. I held her hands and revived the clairvoyance.]

(Do you see anything?)

I see a part of a name, three letters. R e c.

[A later sitting would suggest that "R e c" was an attempt to get the name *Rector*. Cf. p. 627.]

(Can you get any more?)

I see the letter H.

(Do you see any other letter?) [Thinking of Hodgson.]

Richard.

(That is what I thought it was.)

[Pause.]

(Is F. M. a friend of his?)

Three raps for yes.

(All right. I understand.)

I hear a name that begins with Fred. It is longer than

Fred. [Pause.] Let me have it please. [Pause.] It is a short name with five letters.

(That is right.) [Thinking of Myers.]

Now I hear another name. Some one that is telling me is here.

(What does it sound like?)

New... no that's not it.

(What is the first letter?)

[Pause, and struggle at getting something.]

(Do you hear it?)

I hear it but I can't get the sound of it.

(All right. You will get it.)

The first letter is M.

(What does the next sound like?)

[There was then a pause and after a little excitement she burst out excitedly.]

The first name is Frederick.

(See if you can get the last.)

Three. wait. M.... Oh my.

(All right. Go on.)

[Pause.] M—y—e—r—s [Spelled out.]

[Miss Burton then fell with her head on the table and I took her hands to strengthen her. Soon there were raps and inquiry showed they were for music. Soft music was made and I soon found her sobbing and we had to change the music to eradicate this. I then held her hands to revive the clairvoyance.]

(Do you see anything?)

I see one bright light. [Pause.]

(Do you still see the light?)

Yes. [Pause.]

(Do you still see it?) [Music stopped.]

No I can't see any now. [Music started.] It is getting so black. [Pause.] I feel as if I was falling.

(All right. I shall hold you.) [Taking her hand.]

[I found her hands trembling and they continued to do so for some time. She exclaimed again in the midst of this that it was "so dark." Finally a jerk indicated that she was changing personality and in a moment she said she was all right and I removed my hands.]

(Do you see any light?)

Yes I see something but I can't make out what it is. [Pause.]

I see part of a train.

(What part?)

You seem to be going a short distance on a train in two weeks.

(Who says that?)

I get the initial R. H.

(All right. I shall watch.) [Pause.] (What is it for?)

To... [Pause.]

(Have you planned this on the other side?)

Three raps for yes. [Pause.] Trying to communicate.

(All right. I understand.)

I heard a name like Newbell. [Pause.] Not that, not that. [Pause.] Newball.

(All right. I know the name. Go ahead.)

Newba....

[The hand then signified the desire for pad and pencil and I gave them and it wrote the name: "New balld" or "New bolld." I then said this was all right, recognizing that it was intended for "Newbold," an old friend of Dr. Hodgson's, but without reading the name aloud and not insisting on the accurate spelling of it. Immediately her head fell forward on the table and in a few minutes was raised. I let Miss Burton rest a short time and then four raps called for me to hold the hands. I took them and revived the clairvoyant trance.]

Henry, I heard the name Henry.

(Keep that up.)

I see a large initial J.

(All right. What do you see with it?)

Wait I .... James and Henry.

(I understand.)

That isn't right.

[Then the hand excitedly reached for a pencil and I gave it. The following was written:—]

"I had to get it through backwards."

(All right I understand.)

At this stage of the work the family dog in the kitchen pushed the door open and came into the room disturbing the situation, and as we had sat long enough I suggested closing the

experiment. After several suggestions three raps signified assent and I proceeded to bring her out by holding her head and hands. After the first jerk of her hands she complained of her head and I suggested that I would help it and held one hand on the medulla oblongata and the other on the forehead and made suggestions until she said her head was all right. I then held her hands again and with the usual trembling she finally came out.

The getting of the initials F. M. and the name Fred. and Frederick Myers confirms the supposition that I made regarding the initials W. H. M. and F. at the previous sitting. Its value here depends on the likelihood that Miss Burton had casually or otherwise learned of his name and relation to the work and to other names here mentioned. I would say that *a priori*, from what I know of the girl's temperament and tastes, that she would not be interested enough in the subject to read a line on it or to seek the necessary books for information. But I cannot rely upon that mode of deciding the case. Inquiry of Mrs. Milton shows that she never heard of the man until I asked her about the meaning of the initials W. H. M., when she said they had no meaning to her. In conversation with Mr. Milton, she tells me, he said there was a Myers that had left a letter to be given through a medium, but Mrs. Milton hushed him up before he had uttered the name, fearing that Miss Burton might hear it. Mr. Milton did not recall any initials in connection with it and supposes that he must have seen the fact in some newspaper which might have been a casual source of Miss Burton's information at the same time. Her indifference to such things would weaken the probabilities of such an hypothesis, tho not removing the possibility of it.

For determining the probabilities further, whether for the increase or decrease of them, I went to the public library and find that none of the family have cards for books. The library issues cards to people who take books to read. Inquiry of Mrs. Milton results in the statement that years ago Mr. Milton had cards for the library but has not had any for some years. Mrs. Milton had none and Miss Burton once

had a card but never used it. She reads only light fiction. The publications of the English Society are in the public library. Four of my own books are in the library so that the material is present for casual or other knowledge, were the parties disposed to seek it. The absence of cards for the use of books confirms Mrs. Milton's statements about their actual use of them, at least within recent times. I ascertained that cards, when given, last for three years, but there is no way to determine when the cards of these parties expired.

I also examined the cards in the Proceedings of the Society and found that only Dr. Hamilton's and another person's records showed the use of them. This other person was not of the Milton family.

I also found Mr. Myers' Human Personality, etc., in the library and had all the numbers on the card examined for the name of Miss Burton and the Miltons, and their names were not among those who had used the book.

The effort to get the name Newbold and the forms in which that effort embodied itself were interesting. It is the name of a special friend of Dr. Hodgson and has been frequently given through Mrs. Piper and Mrs. Chenoweth in connection with Dr. Hodgson. He is still living and it was very pertinent to have him associated with the initials R. H. He is the author of one English Report on Mrs. Piper and is possibly mentioned in my books. Of that I am not certain. He is frequently mentioned in Prof. James' last Report published by the American Society (Vol. III), which Miss Burton and the Miltons have had no opportunity to see in the public library and probably no other chance. I am very strongly inclined to believe, however, that Miss Burton is absolutely ignorant of the name and its relation to Dr. Hodgson. The getting of it in the sitting is at least a stronger incident than the name of Mr. Myers, tho I am disposed to think that the name of Mr. Myers represents supernormal knowledge, and if so that of Newbold has stronger claims to the same interpretation.

The name of Henry James has less claims to this recognition. If we did not have to reckon with the possibility that the subconscious of Miss Burton as manifested in the

physical phenomena reveals the appearance of very clever trickery we might set aside this probability in regard to the circuitous manner in which the name Henry James was obtained. But this clever form of presenting it may arouse suspicions. Besides Henry James is known to the popular mind in this country in a way to render casual knowledge of him and his relation to Prof. James more easily supposable than either Mr. Myers or Prof. Newbold, and so I cannot urge this case with the same force. Mrs. Milton, however, says that she never heard of Henry James and knowing what I do about the intellectual interests of the family I can well believe it, and I think it entirely probable that she has either never heard of him or has never even had casual knowledge of his relation to Prof. James. Other explanations of its occurrence here are free to all.

I should perhaps add to these notes that I have in this record, as in the previous one, marked only the significant pauses. There was always a pause of more or less length between any statement or question of mine and a message from Miss Burton, but it did not have any special significance, only that of general difficulty. I have marked the pauses which indicate where important difficulties arose.

January 19th, 1911.

Present: Mrs. Milton and J. H. Hyslop.

Miss Burton did not go into the trance this evening before seeing lights. She remarked herself that she seemed so wide awake. Finally after a long wait she exclaimed that she saw long streaks of light and a man on a crutch and only one leg. There was a pause and on being asked if she still saw him she replied "No." Presently she heard the name Frank and thinking that it was intended for a certain person I asked that I get the remainder of the name, but it did not come. In the course of the effort, however, she said she saw the word "cunning" three times, but could not get the last part. Apparently there was more to it and if I could interpret it as suggested by the attempt to get a name in connection with the Frank I had in mind it would be significant. But the analogy is remote and Frank is so common that the case has to remain where it is.

(Was "cunning" connected with Frank?)

[No reply.]

[I then found her in the trance.]

(Shall I let her rest Dan?)

[No reply.]

[I then held her hands to recover the clairvoyant condition.]

(Do you see anything?)

Nothing but white. It seems so white. [Pause.] I see big white clouds moving from me all the time.

[The music had not been going at the moment and three raps occurred on the table.]

(Do you want music?)

Three raps for yes. [Pause.] On one cloud is a man with a high forehead and at a desk and his hand to his head pondering over something.

(Can you get his initials?)

I can't. He has gone. [Pause.] I see the initials R. H.

(All right, R. H.) [Pause.] (R. H. do you want to tell me something?)

Three raps for yes. [Long pause.]

[Finally I thought I heard a rap and asked if anything was wanted. One rap came for "No." Then in a moment she spoke.]

There isn't anything to hurry for. [Pause.]

(Are things all right?)

[No reply. I found she was in the lethargic trance and held her hands to recover the clairvoyant condition.]

[Pause.] There is something in that box I want to tell you about.

(What is it?) [Pause and no reply.] (Who is trying to tell?)

[No reply. Pause.] Something in it, a box and key.

(Who is telling it?)

Why . . . Richard.

(All right. What else?) [No reply.] (What is Richard telling it for?)

Something in there.

(What is in it?)

[I found from the failure to respond that she was in the



deeper trance again. Her elbows were resting on the table and her hands against her face. I laid my hands on hers and tried to bring her into the clairvoyant trance and found presently that she was cataleptic in both arms to the elbows. Her head and neck showed no signs of it. By rubbing her arms some time I relieved the catalepsy. Then she put her head down on the table and I allowed her to rest awhile. After a rest raps came spontaneously for music, as indicated in answer to my question if that was wanted, and then came four raps spontaneously for me to hold her hands which I did to recover clairvoyance.]

(Do you see anything?)

One rap for no [followed by statement "Not now."] [Pause.] I see a light over the table and a man with black hair and blue eyes.

(All right. Get all you can. I want to know who he is.)

He is gone, I can't see him. [Long pause.] I see a large initial W. There is another letter there but I can't see it plain. [Pause.] No I see H. [Pause.] I can hardly breathe.

(Do you see any light yet?)

[No reply and found her in the lethargic trance with her hand on her throat.]

(Well, what is it?)

There. [Pause.] Hurts there. I can hardly breathe.

[By a few suggestions I relieved the situation and restored the clairvoyant condition.]

I see a white light over your head.

(Find out all you can about it.)

I get an initial M and E. They are different initials.

(That may be just what I want. Stick to it.)

Now I see L.

(Go ahead.) [Pause.] (Still see it?) Yes.

[Pause. Lethargic trance.]

(Shall I hold the hands?)

Three raps for yes. [Held hands and recovered clairvoyance.]

I see two lights, one near you. It seems they both passed out almost at the same time. [Pause.] I see M. E. again.

(All right. Tell me who says it.)

Now I see Ellen.

(What Ellen is it? Ellen who?)

[Lethargic trance again and held hands to remove it.]

I see a bright light again.

(Is it connected with Ellen?)

Three raps. I can't tell. Three raps.

(Get all you can. I would like the last name.)

[Music stopped.] Three raps. [Call for music.]

I see a lot of letters all mixed up. [Pause.] I see s o n.

[Pause.] I see a large H. Oh! ....

[The janitor had made much noise in the cellar a few moments before and the continuance of it acted as a disturbance.]

(Do you still see a light?)

Yes I see so many letters. I hear a name that sounds like Hedge. No that isn't Hedge. [Long pause.] What is all that noise. [In cellar.]

I see ....

(What is it you see?)

H o ... Oh dear; [Pause.] Hodgson.

(All right. Do you want to tell me something?)

That light is so bright. Tell .... [Pause.] I see Ellen again.

(All right. Stick to it.)

I come .... [Relapsed into lethargic trance and I held hands.]

Oh that light is so bright.

(Is it the same person as before?)

Three raps. I can just see the light.

(Get enough for me to be sure who it is.)

\* \* \* \* \* [Several words inaudible.]

(What was it. I did not hear.)

I told you.

(I did not get it.)

Must tell something but I don't know what it is.

(Whom must I tell?)

Who ..... Who ..... Ellen. Ellen.

(Either tell Ellen who, or to whom it is that I am to tell something.)

Ellen ....

(Ellen who?)

Something all mixed up. I heard Hodgson Hyslop.

(Say whatever comes.)

[A long pause and further noise in cellar, and as it was late and results had been poor I resolved to stop.]

(Hodgson, had we not better stop?)

Three raps for yes.

[I then took hold of her hands to restore her to normal consciousness and as soon as the first change of personality came she resisted further recovery to say that she must get it before she came out. I suggested that we could get it the next evening after much difficulty she yielded and began to come out, but with frequent lapses into a lethargic state. As she came out she uttered the name Winifred which is the name of my daughter who was ill last spring. In a moment a sudden start brought her into normal consciousness.]

Inquiry of Mrs. Milton brought out the fact that she, Mrs. Milton had seen the name of my daughter last spring in the papers and she is quite confident that Miss Burton knew the name. I know that Miss Burton knew of her illness. It is more than probable that she knew the name.

There is no assured evidence of the supernormal in this sitting. The name Frank was suggestive but had no associates to identify it. If the word "cunning" had been a little different and what it might be surmised to have been an attempt to get, it would have been conclusive. But there is no clear clue to its meaning.

The W. H. probably refer to Mr. Myers, as they are associated with the initials M. E. which develop into Marjorie and Ellen which are closely associated with Mr. Myers in the next sitting. There is no assurance of this view, but it is the only one whose coincidences are clear. The possible meaning of Ellen will be seen later. In any case it may be affected by the fact that the name Mary Ellen had come at earlier sittings. Cf. p. 398.

It was a curious confusion to see the name Hedge, as a little later it was clear that it was a mistake for Hodgson.

Miss Burton knows the name Hodgson well enough and has given it before, as this report frequently indicates.

The most interesting thing of the evening was the conflicting or different answers to certain questions by raps and oral utterance at the same time. Once three raps answered my query and she spoke simultaneously that she could not tell and was instantly corrected by affirmative raps again. On the other occasion the raps signified that a person was present which the visual experience did not reveal.

The allusion to the box and key and to difficulty of breathing definitely suggests a certain person not indicated here but to whom reference has been made before. But there are not enough incidents to make me sure whether it is more than chance coincidence. I have had reference through Mrs. Chenoweth to a drawer and key in connection with that person and also to the difficulty of his breathing, so that the incidents have possibilities here. That is all, however, and we can have no assurance unless something more should come to give them point.

I may also add that a few days after this sitting G. P. purporting to communicate through Mrs. Chenoweth, made a similar prediction about my being on a train. Cf. p. 641.

I observed very marked lethargy all evening in Miss Burton. The pauses or lethargic conditions between question and answer were very long and the inertia against receiving and delivering anything was worse than I have ever observed them. I noticed at times that a clairvoyant vision remained fixed and was less evanescent than usual. Some of the pictures were flashes as such pictures usually are. But this evening there were more of them apparently fixed for a time than I have generally observed, tho I have noticed them before. They have suggested to me a mental analogy to catalepsy. If we could describe them as psychic catalepsy and thus recognize in mental states something analogous to motor catalepsy we might have an intelligible explanation of the long periods of silence and failure to get messages through, whatever their source.

Perhaps either confirmative of this possibility or as a consequence of the condition we have that misadjustment of

functions which was illustrated in the ability to give an answer by raps which the answer by speech simultaneously contradicted or which manifested differences of knowledge in relation to the situation. That is, the raps showed a knowledge which the visual functions did not show, and perhaps because the lethargic or cataleptic conditions of consciousness or the brain centers, so to speak, would not raise the ideas in the subconsciousness above the threshold even of the subconscious.

At one stage of the sitting I took Miss Burton's left arm and hand, finding it against her face and the right hand and arm on the table. It was my purpose to bring her out of the supposed lethargic trance. After holding it a moment she said: "Did you touch my arm?" I replied that I did, surprised that she had remarked it, for I found that the right arm was anæsthetic and I had supposed that she could not speak. I touched her left arm again and she felt the touch a second time, but the third time she did not respond and seemed to be in the lethargic trance. It is the first time that I ever remarked this anæsthesia in the arm under these conditions.

January 20, 1911.

Present: Mrs. Milton and J. H. Hyslop.

Before the trance came on Miss Burton exclaimed: "Do you see that light?" Mrs. Milton remarked that she thought it must be the light under the kitchen door tho this was directly behind Miss Burton. But Miss Burton at once remarked that it was over the table. This was within my vision and I saw nothing. In a moment she exclaimed: "There it is again over the table." Soon afterward we all noticed a breeze and no evidence of how it was produced. I saw no reason for disturbing the initial stage of the oncoming trance. There was then a pause and soon the phenomena took the form that enables me to put them in the usual manner of the record.

I see four white lights. [Pause.] Among them is the word Ayers. [Pause.]

(Do you see anything further?)

[No reply.]

[Suspecting that she had suddenly gone into the lethargic trance I began queries to see if I was wanted to hold her hands and received no raps. I then undertook it on my own responsibility and soon recovered the clairvoyant condition.]

(Do you see any light?)

[No reply.]

(Is Hodgson present to-night?)

Three raps for yes.

(I would like a special message from W. J. Will you try?)

[Pause.] (Do you hear that, Hodgson?)

Three raps for yes. [Long pause.]

(Do you see any more?)

No. It seems so cold in here.

[I felt Miss Burton's hands and found them the normal temperature and asked her if she felt anything. She said that she did not and I asked her if she still felt cold and she replied that she did.]

[Pause.] I see the initials W. H. M.

(Is that the same person that gave the name Ayers?)

Three raps for yes.

(That is all right.)

One rap for no.

(I understand the mistake.)

[It is interesting to observe the misunderstanding of my first remark after the assent to the name Ayers, whose real meaning I had suspected when it came. Saying that it was "all right" was indicating to the subconscious that the name was right and the spontaneous correction takes places *against* the suggestion. My last remark made my position clear and nothing more was said by Miss Burton.]

I see the initial E and it seems to have something to do with the other initials.

[Head here fell forward on the table followed by groans, one or two of which signalled that it was coming. I soon touched her head and hands and she jumped. Presently after a few minutes' rest she raised up her head and I held her hands to recover the clairvoyant trance.]

(Do you see any lights?)

One rap for no.

[I found her sobbing, however, due to the plaintive character of the music and hence it is probable that the one rap was not a reply to my question but a protest against the music and we acted on that assumption, changing the music. I then held her hands and restored the clairvoyant trance.]

(Do you see anything?)

Not now.

(Hodgson, are things all right?)

Three raps for yes.

(If you can't get her to see the message write it.)

I heard a name just now. Marjorie.

(Who said that?)

I see M and E.

(All right. Find out who said Marjorie.)

[Soon after this the hand indicated a desire to write and I gave pad and pencil with the following result.]

"It seems so hard to get anything through. H."

[I then recognized this and said that I quite understood the fact, and explained that if I could only get who said Marjorie and the one thing I desired from W. J. I would be satisfied.]

(You can try can you?)

Three raps for yes. [Pause.] Three raps again [for continued music, as this was coming to its end].

I see Myers written and with it a large rose.

(Good, I understand that.)

The hand soon lifted and I kept mine on it to find it writing in the air. It soon fell down limp on the table.

If I could find my eyes. I can't see through it. There is something white in front of it.

[I then found her in the lethargic trance and had to hold her hands to recover the clairvoyance.]

Blooming, blooming. [Evident echo of the word "Rose."]

(What does that mean? Is it connected with Rose? What did Myers mention a rose for?)

[I again found her in the lethargic trance and while holding her hands they began to tremble considerably. In a few moments she reached for pad and pencil and I gave them with the following result:—]

"That's all we could get through and you understand."



[Soon after this I found her attacked by catalepsy in both arms and it soon extended to the neck and upper part of the body. It took some time to remove it. In the meantime her head had rested against the horn of the phonograph and as she began to recover normal motor conditions she knocked the horn down and there was some trouble readjusting it. The red light was turned up to help effect this and in a moment she spontaneously seized the pencil and wrote: "In the light of the... In the light of the ..." possibly meaning that she was herself in the way of seeing how to put the horn in its place, which was the fact. But I did not understand it at the time and asked for an explanation of it by suggesting the completion of the message. After several urgent suggestions by repeating over what was written, the hand tried to seize the pencil and evidently to put it between the first and second fingers exactly as described in former experiments (p. 401) and the upper end of the pencil was thrown back on the table, the fingers holding the point. In a few moments a dexterous movement got the pencil between the first and second fingers to hold it as held by Mrs. Piper and wrote as follows:—]

"There is some one here who is very strong but does not understand the use of the \* \* [probably attempt at 'aura,'] and we can do nothing."

[I immediately found her in what I thought the lethargic trance and took her hands to restore the clairvoyance, but without any indications of a change of personality. Presently I heard her say a word which I thought was the word "blind." I asked if that was the word. No affirmative reply came, but after a pause she went on.]

What about helping. I could not see when I was here.

(Who is it?)

[Lethargic trance again and I had to hold her hands to restore the clairvoyance.]

(Do you see anything?)

No, not now.

[I here resolved to test her for anæsthesia and found her hands anæsthetic. I tried the forehead and found the same. Also the nose and found that region anæsthetic. To my surprise it was the same with the neck under and back of the ears.

Then I touched the throat in the vicinity of the larynx and found it *slightly* sensitive with a sort of doubtful assurance on the part of the subject, as if she was not clear about it. In a moment this was clearly anæsthetic. After a pause she began.]

I see so may wires. They are crossed and tangled.

(Is that the trouble in the communication?)

Three raps for yes. [Pause.] I see a man working with the wires and the more he works with them the more they get tangled.

(Do you know the man? Have you ever seen him before?)

I don't know. [Pause.] I see a light back of me.

(All right. Get all you can.)

I see a large R.

(All right. Go ahead.)

R... E... C...

(Do you see anything more?)

No [uttered]. Three raps for yes.

(Mrs. M.: Yes, they said.)

No I said [uttered]. Three raps for yes.

(All I got is R. E. C. Can you give me the rest?)

[Pause.] Now I see O. R. and there is something before that.

[Pause.]

(Well, the rest.)

Three raps for yes.

(I am not sure what the name is yet.)

(Mrs. M.: I got the letter.) [But she refused to utter it, and in a moment Miss Burton excitedly named it.]

T....

(Now I have R. E. C. O. R. and T.)

Well I don't put it that way.

(All right, how do they go?)

[Hand signified the desire for pad and pencil and they were given and the following came:—]

Recort. Recort. Recotr. [Three spontaneous-raps signified that I was to read it. I did so after turning up the red light and saw what was intended.]

(‘Recort, Recort.’ I understand what it means.)

[This was said purposely to watch for the reaction. At once the hand seized the pencil in the light and wrote:—]

Rector.

(Good, that is right.) [After reading it at the light.]

[Miss Burton then went into the lethargic trance and I took her hand. In a moment she showed fright and her hands began to reach for protection.]

Where am I going.

[I saw what was the matter, namely, that the effort was to modify the trance after the type of the Piper and other cases. I told her that she need not be afraid and that she should just let herself fly. I would take care of her body and her spirit would be all right. In a few moments she quieted down and after a pause her hands jerked and she came into a change of personality and reached for the pencil and wrote:—]

"I could control her will with time and help. R [?]"

(I know that.)

The hand again seized the pencil and wrote:—

"There are so many conditions to be overcome. It makes it so hard just now. R [?]"

[As the signature was not clearly legible I indicated that I was not sure what it was and the hand seized the pencil, paused a few moments and then wrote:—]

R.

(I thought it was that.)

[There was then a long pause and as the difficulties had been intimated I deemed it best to end the sitting.]

(Had we better stop?)

[No reply.] [Pause and question repeated. Pencil seized and the following was written:—]

"I believe we had better stop altho we have not been able to get very much through. the Light is very much exhausted [exhausted] and must rest for a little. R."

[The last part of this was not very legible in the dim red light and I could only say that I got its meaning, having read only part of the sentence at the end. The hand seized the pencil and wrote in the light more clearly the following:—]

"altho we had have not been able to get all through that we have tried to the light is very much exhausted [exhausted] and she must rest a little. \* \* [scrawl.]"

[After resting her awhile I took her hands and in due time

she revived sufficiently to get up and indicate that she wanted to go and lie down, as inferred from the situation and her manner. She was let go into the front room where she lay down and went to sleep.]

After the sitting Mrs. Milton described to me how she herself got the whole word Rector. She knew that I got "Rec" and then "or" and said she saw the word written with a gap in it and finally the letter "t" was quickly inserted in the right place and she saw the whole word in a stream of light. She kept absolutely still, save to say that she got it, until the end of the sitting and I had supposed that she had gotten only the letter "t."

I might myself have suspected what was meant before the writing, but I was thinking of another name, altogether associated with the name Marjorie and hoping that it would be given to explain the pertinence of this name. But in any case I was resolved to make the medium clear up the confusion and the reader will see that it was done.

Marjorie was the name of the sister of a person closely connected with me and she died thirty years ago and I have perhaps never mentioned her since, and I knew if I got the name of the person that I thought might mention it, I would not only be able to interpret the incident, but have a most excellent evidential name. From the situation, however, and the connection I am rather inclined to think that the name has a wholly different interpretation than I had conjectured. The following facts will probably make this clear.

I again get the initials W. H. M. in this sitting, and Ayers corrected to mean Myers. In association with these initials I get the initial E. with the explanation that "it seems to have something to do with the other initials." Then later in more or less close association with M. E. I get the name Marjorie. The M. E. is the same expression that I got at earlier sittings and that worked out into Ellen which could not be clearly explained with all my effort to get it. Now Eveleen is the name of Mr. Myers' wife, still living, and my opinion now is that the Ellen all along was an attempt to give her name, which it was not possible under the circumstances

for Miss Burton to have known. It is probable that the possible view or conjecture I had made about the name Ellen before is wrong, tho I had not felt any assurance about it when given. I have gotten her name through Mrs. Chenoweth and so also have I gotten the name Rose through Mrs. Chenoweth in association with the name of Mr. Myers. That is why I indicated in this sitting that I understood it. I do not at this writing recall what its meaning was there. The whole thing now looks like an attempt to give the name of Mrs. Myers, possibly to strengthen the case against any doubts about previous knowledge of Mr. Myers himself.

I have since ascertained from England that the name Rose, for which the allusion to the flower might symbolize, is possibly a reference to Mrs. Thompson, the psychic with whom Mr. Myers had worked when living and whose name is Rosa or Rosalie. The reason for this conjecture is the fact of getting the name Rose in connection with him through Mrs. Chenoweth.

The getting of the name of Rector was a remarkably interesting performance, especially that it was gotten simultaneously by Mrs. Milton and Miss Burton. It was wholly unexpected and the manner in which it started with the letters "R e c" shows what was most probably intended by the same letters in the second of the mental series (p. 612) that were closely associated with the name "Richard" which may have been an attempt to give the name Rector and interpreted "Richard" because that had been given long before and was known to Miss Burton as the name of Dr. Hodgson.

I asked Mrs. Milton after the sitting what the name meant to her and she replied that she did not know and that it seemed a queer name to her. I found that she had never heard of it before and had not known that it had been connected with Stainton Moses and Mrs. Piper, or that it was associated with Imperator anywhere. She did not know who Stainton Moses was and did not seem to recall the name at first. Dr. Hamilton had told her he was a medium. She asked me who Imperator was and I had to explain. She had not known that I had gotten it through Miss Burton, having been occupied with the phonograph. Her ignorance of it

throws light upon the incidents connected with the giving of the cross at various times during these experiments and makes many incidents evidential which I had not treated as such. Her ignorance of it would assure us against probable or possible knowledge on the part of Miss Burton.

Further in regard to this Mrs. Milton asked Miss Burton when she had her cards for the library and Miss Burton said she had not used them since they lived in the "Peter's Flats" (pseudonym), and Mrs. Milton says that this was six years ago. This was about the time of the beginning of Miss Burton's mediumship and four years before I came into contact with the case.

The condition of Miss Burton just after Rector got his name through is interesting as coinciding with claims made in the Piper case. Her sensation of "going" somewhere, coinciding also with the same conceptions and statements in Mrs. Chenoweth when trying to deepen her trance, indicates an effort to establish the conditions which would enable this group to accomplish their object. The language of Rector's writing is coincident with the ideas expressed in the Piper case and tho it has clear affinities with the ideas expressed through Miss Burton, there are certain ideas in it here not altogether her own. "Conditions to overcome" and the allusion to "tangled wires" is a conception given through other cases and often referred to in Mrs. Piper and others under the analogy of "spider webs." Most significant in this and any other connection is the capital "L" in the word "Light" used by Rector. That is the usual, if not invariable, form of writing it in Mrs. Piper's script and very frequently with Mrs. Chenoweth. Miss Burton could not possibly know it with Mrs. Chenoweth, as the latter does not know it herself, and under the circumstances it is hardly possible for her to have known it as a habit of Mrs. Piper.

The names of Rector and Imperator, therefore, appear to be remarkably evidential, that of Rector unquestionably so. Also if "Ellen" be a mistake for "Eveleen" it also is evidential, and certainly the whole psychological play conforms to the laws which determine the Piper and other phenomena and must have the same explanation.

The reader should again remark the insistence of the visual or auditory consciousness that she had not seen anything when the raps insisted that she had done so.

### PORTION OF RECORD OF SITTING WITH MRS. CHENOWETH.

January 23d, 1911.

I finished my experiments with Miss Burton on Thursday night, January 19th, and arrived home on Saturday, the 21st. I left that night for Braintree, where I was to lecture on the 22d, and stopped long enough in Boston to see Mrs. Chenoweth to ask if I could have a sitting on Monday morning. It was agreed. I had purposely refrained from writing to her while absent and said nothing to her about having been experimenting. I wanted to see if any cross references would occur at the sitting while matters were fresh and there was no chance for even casual knowledge of what I had been doing. The two places were situated nearly a thousand miles apart.

I shall not quote the entire record here, as parts of it are wholly irrelevant to the Burton case. But I shall select those parts which do refer to it and give details.

The sittings with Mrs. Chenoweth had been interrupted partly by a little breakdown and partly by my desire to omit them for a while. After the usual preliminaries and some irrelevant matter the automatic writing began the reference to the situation and went at once to the object of my experiment, without a hint from me that I expected or desired it. Dr. Hodgson purported to be the communicator.

"While there are many things to be said about the break in the work I will leave that to be discussed when we have more time.

(That's right. I want other things to-day.)

Yes I know it and if we can get the message through it will be our decided success (Yes.) for we planned to do it and all the effort to make definite and plain connections between the two centers has been made. You will understand my meaning, (Yes.) and reference to the other work.



It was hard at first but since the things were clear and succinct and we felt there was improvement in expression. W. J. William James was most anxious and active and is as eager as a schoolboy to try his experiments. He did not lose enthusiasm for the truth in the last years of his life, whatever may be said or felt by those who were near him. He was disappointed and lost some opportunities by the decisions of the light, but his mind was open to receive and eagerness was there. One of the influences for deterring activity was the many new developments in normal psychology. Do you know what I mean?

(In general, but not in detail.) \*

Some specific instances of psychologic influence involved and yet simple made some of our work seem less important as spiritistic impression than before and yet he but waited for the one clue to make complete the chain of evidence for the spirit hypothesis, and he did not live long enough to get that, but his interest is just as keen now and he desires to prove for himself the evidence and so will strive to give it. All this is to explain some efforts which he has made at the other place.

(What place or center do you mean?)

Not N. Y., that is, not the usual place in N. Y. There is another place to which I refer where some experiments have been tried and the effort of W. J. has been noted. Imperator also has

---

\* Mrs. Chenoweth did not know that I had been experimenting elsewhere. She might have guessed it, as it might be natural to think I was doing this all the time. It was exceedingly hard at the sittings of Miss Burton to get anything through. I never witnessed experiments where it seemed so hard. What I did get is clear and succinct, as readers may note, whether intelligible and verifiable or not.

The description of Prof. James' mind is accurate enough but not evidential. There had been developments in normal psychology which affected his ideas on the subject and Mrs. Chenoweth knew absolutely nothing about them. She has never seen a book on psychology and would not understand any of the work in that field if she had. The allusions to the "decisions of the light" are very pertinent in regard to the course taken by Mrs. Piper which prevented Prof. James from having further opportunities for study. This was perhaps a matter of general knowledge, tho the real significance of the words "decisions of the light" was not known to the public.

been making new records and is as busy as if he were planning a new work.\*

Do you remember that I told you about the definite way in which Imperator planned the work at the Piper light, the detail, the large and comprehensive way in which he worked as by a chart and not in the intermittent style of Phinuit and the ordinary control.†

(Yes, I understand, but I do not know to what place you refer.) [Said to bring the communicator back to the subject.]

That will come in a moment.

(All right.)

I had to refer to the past experience because my mind had turned that way for a moment and I recalled the definite plans of Imperator for this work.

(Good, I understand.)

at the place where he has been directing the work on occasion. There were two direct influences in the body but those are subdued by results to a degree. We have been with you to another light. You know it.

(Yes.) ‡

\* My experiment to which reference is made was not in New York, either the city or the state. The reference to a place, "not the usual place in N. Y." where Prof. James is said to have been noted is very suggestive, as I have some records of his alleged appearance there. It is a group of private gentlemen who have been experimenting and several of the Hodgson group have purported to be there. The reference to the new Imperator records is not clear. I know three cases, privately, in which he purports to be working. Mrs. Chenoweth knew absolutely nothing of these things.

† Dr. Hodgson did tell me while living about the whole preparation in the Piper case for the comprehensive work done there by the Imperator control. Its distinction from the "intermittent style" of Phinuit, who was the control superseded in the Piper case by the Imperator group, is a very accurate account of the matter in a few words. Mrs. Chenoweth knew nothing of all this, tho she had the opportunity to see the Piper records. She never saw any of them, however, having refrained from reading them purposely. But Dr. Hodgson's long account to me of the development which the Imperator control gave to the case with a view to systematic work was not known to any one but myself.

‡ The place where "two direct influences" have been "subdued" is not clearly identifiable by me. I had had a sitting with one in which the

Not the child of whom you spoke to this light.

(Good.)

I want to put that bit of evidence in here, for maybe you might think the subliminal drawing on normal knowledge. You understand.

(Perfectly.) \*

But this was another place and light and yet a sort of familiar one, not very but a little. You understand again.†

(What kind of phenomena?) [I desired a reference to physical phenomena, especially lights.]

You refer to the speaking or writing. It was the trance phenomena in most respects, but there is a phase of another sort developing. It was very clear and good as far as it went but strangely enough we could only get about so far; for there seems to be some action of the mind more like fear than anything else and stages of consciousness of the work and what it involves, which makes barriers for us to overcome.‡

---

Imperator group, purporting to control and communicate, had great difficulty in overcoming certain obstacles and just before I went to experiment with Miss Burton I had several sittings with the case and the last two showed marked improvement and later records show great promise, certain obstacles having been conquered. The distinction of another light from this, apparently, confirms the possible interpretation which my remarks suggest, as the work with Miss Burton immediately followed.

\* I had told Mrs. Chenoweth of some messages about herself that I got through a child in New York before this sitting. Hence no evidential importance attaches to the allusion here.

† The reference to the light being "a sort of familiar one, not very but a little" is correct enough, as readers of previous sittings with Miss Burton will recognize. Dr. Hodgson had purported to communicate there.

‡ The description of the situation with Miss Burton is quite accurate. The phenomena were trance phenomena. There was some speaking and writing, but these are not so characteristic of it as the language about them here would imply. The features that I wanted mentioned were not indicated or implied. But the "phase of another sort developing" might apply to the clairvoyance in the case, as this is only in its incipient stages. The efforts, as readers of the record will see, were nearly always abortive. What the cause was could not be clearly determined. But it may have been the subliminal or subconscious fear which I frequently observed in the case and made special notes on it. One interest-

(Do you know what occurred in getting anything through?)

Yes we were all conscious of some of the things that were given and felt a joy in the success and when right that one will tell. It was not I, that much I know, for I tried and failed on two, no three occasions. That does not mean that I got no sign through, but the signal success was by another. What long waits there were. Do you recall?

(Yes I do.) \*

It was rather unusual; for in most cases there will be a semblance of effort and struggle and all that sort of thing. But it was dead silence and still for a time, and then the work was resumed. It is a good light, but rather slow in all things, more phlegmatic in temperament than this you know.

(Yes.) †

All these things have a bearing on the work. There seemed to be no fear of you personally.‡

ing case of it was associated with Rector's effort to communicate (Cf. p. 628). It is probable that the trance was not deep enough and that Miss Burton is subconsciously afraid to go deeper. She is often more or less conscious or semi-conscious of the work. Many of the phenomena point distinctly to this. That certain barriers there have to be overcome is apparent both from observation and from the communications themselves at times. Mrs. Chenoweth knows nothing of all this.

\* Dr. Hodgson was not signally successful at this last series, as readers of the record can easily see for themselves, on any theory of the facts. The signal success was by another. How far all this is evidential must be left to individual judgment.

† This is all remarkably accurate. The case is very unusual. I have never witnessed anything like it, and there was constant lapses of effort, where usually there are "semblances of effort and struggle" to get messages when they do not come through. The "dead silence" and complete lethargy for long periods is one of the dominant characteristics of the case, which is not adequately indicated by the record. There would be "long waits" and silence of ten or fifteen minutes at a time, and more often five minutes. What we got consisted of little oases in the midst of these "long waits." The girl is exceedingly lethargic and phlegmatic. It is, in fact, the dominant characteristic of both her physical and mental make up.

‡ There was no fear of me personally. The only fear manifested was in the trance when some apparent effort was made to put her into a deeper condition, and this occurred only at those times when the Emperor group were apparently trying to effect something.

Do you know anything about a ring or round drawing that was done there?

(No, I do not.)

Imperator holds in his hand a ring signet and makes a sign with it as if he had made effort to say or do something with it there.

(Yes, I hoped that something of that kind would be done.)

Your wife was present at those sittings and made an effort to send a message.

[A long account follows of what my wife was said to have tried to give but none of it came through at these sittings. As Miss Burton came out of the trance she mentioned the name of my daughter who had been ill. But Miss Burton knew the name and that she had been ill. Finally Hodgson gave up and G. P. followed with better success, after Hodgson said George P. would talk.]

Good morning Hyslop.

(How are you, George?)

Here we are after the battle as fresh and energetic as any old campaigners could wish to be. Such a variety of experiences we have. First we leave this light in a death panic and we are rushed all over the earth to see what happened. We have to answer all sorts of questions and in the meantime report wherever we can to give you a bit of information and peace, and then we are taken to a light so different and strange in all the work and so amateurish also, but we make a good fight to prove we are not dead. Then we hasten to N. Y. and rush to B— Boston and talk the lining out of our throats and then return to the test and we are at it again. We think the earth is a place of rest compared to any heaven we have ever been permitted to enter. It is one race from post to post to prove we are not astral shadows.\*

---

\*This account by G. P. fits well enough my movements after leaving the sittings with Mrs. Chenoweth which ended in a temporary breakdown. I had seen three psychics and travelled long distances to see two of them and rushed to Boston immediately after my return. All this Mrs. Chenoweth did not know, tho I imagine that it might naturally be guessed that I was active in this way by any one.

(Good, can you tell me something about the things that happened where Hodgson has talked about?)

Some of them yes. It was not so bad as I made it when I said amateurish. It was that but there was good strong and steady interest for us to work with and we are glad to go and get even a little through. I was there and so was some one whom you were glad to greet. Jennie P—— was there also.

(What did she do?) [Thinking of the whirling wheel mentioned.]

The same sort of work as here only not quite as rapid but just as sure and firm. She is quite a character, for she adjusts herself to conditions readily. She made a lot of talk about the man. Do you know about a man connected with the light who was not present at the sittings?

(No, not a word about that. I got only one word that suggests Jennie P——.) \*

Look at what I say. She talked with us about a man who was not in the sittings with the light. Do you know if there was such a man?

(I know nothing about it.)

All proper in a way that had an influence. You do not seem to know what I mean.

(Why I understand you mean she talked on your side about a man not present at the sittings.)

Yes do you know if there was a man who knew of the sittings and was interested?

(Yes, more than one was interested.)

Yes but connected with the light and eager to have the work go on.

(Yes.)

That is the one that Jennie P—— talked of and did not like and tried to say to us that the work would be better without his influence than with it, nothing bad but unfortunate and a bit bombastic. Do you know now?

(Not exactly.)

---

\* There was no assured evidence of the presence of Jennie P——. I conjectured that the whirling wheel was a symbolic reference to her as the "wind mill" incident of the earlier sittings indicated it (Cf. p. 527). But I obtained no clear proof of it.

It is some one who has his strong ideas and thinks he knows how everything ought to go, and he is not so superior as he thinks. I am giving her ideas to you. She likes a full and free and untrammelled influence. It is not an old but young and new and good. Not a child you know. What do you know about the house where the sittings were held?\*

(I know nothing.) [I supposed the reference was to its history, etc.]

Do you remember hearing a clock strike?

(Yes I do.)

We heard that and refer to it as there is never such a sound here.

(I understand. Did ...) †

Do you remember a picture that hung where where your eye lighted on it?

(Yes, what of that picture?)

It is a picture of a person I mean. I saw it and the eyes were the sort which follow. Do you know what I mean?

(Yes.)

Then there was a picture, a scene of some sort farther away in the same room. You may not have seen that picture as it was not in your range of vision as you sat there, but I saw it. The room was not as large or as many windows as this, but pleasant and sunny, home like, more like a sitting room with family influence about it you know.

(Yes.) ‡

---

\* All this talk about the man not present at the sittings is not clear. At least I cannot assuredly state who is meant. But the facts point to the grandfather of Miss Burton who has very positive convictions about the phenomena, and some things have happened to influence the mind of Miss Burton. None of the facts apply to Dr. Hamilton or Dr. Smyth, who were present at some of the last sittings. The grandfather was never present and was very much interested in the outcome of the experiments.

† There was a large clock in the séance room which struck the half and full hours. It was very loud and even annoyed the medium in the trance and I wished very much that it could have been removed. There is no clock in Mrs. Chenoweth's séance room.

‡ As I was sitting on the sofa in the sitting-room I faced a picture, water color, of a lady, which had an interesting history, believed by the



There was a sound of dishes or dining room noises once in a while. You know that also.

(Yes.)\*

Good outlook free and airy. All these things Jennie P—— and I took in to tell you.

(Good.)

For we felt perhaps the things that were done and said would not be told as explicitly as we wished. You see we keep thinking all the time of various conditions that may arise.

(I understand.)

Who was the older person?

(Do you know?)

The woman I mean. Do you remember about one?

(Older than who?)

The light. We saw her also. She was a little fearful and scared.

(What about?)

The whole thing, but impressed and pleased at the end. You would not be half a psychic if you did not know that.

(Yes.)†

Now I don't know how much more I can say. What is the hour?

(Ten minutes till twelve.)

I have a word more to say about a train ride. Have you not been riding on a train with another man to whom you were talking on these matters.

---

family to be a spirit painting. Out of my range of vision, when looking at this picture and at my right some distance, was a painting of a scene, a landscape. This, as I said, was in the sitting-room, not in the séance room. The room did look out on a pleasant view and was a bright sunny room with fewer windows than Mrs. Chenoweth's séance room, and also was much smaller than Mrs. Chenoweth's room.

\* There was no sound of dishes in this sitting-room, but the experiments were held in the dining-room where the large clock was, and the sound of dishes would apply to that, save that there was none of this sound during the sittings. It is possible that the reference is symbolical.

† Mrs. Milton is apparently meant by the "older person." She was quite anxious about the outcome of the sittings and probably felt anxiety to the point of fear. She showed decidedly pleased feelings at the end.

(No, not at all.)

Then it is a prophecy. Then I see you riding and talking with a man about these things and it is rather a pleasant experience. It seemed to be coming this way, and I thought it had happened.\*

\* \* \* \* \*

[Omitted portions about W. J.]

(Can you mention who else came at the other light on this last trip?)

You mean besides W. J., R. H., Jennie P——, your wife and myself, and Myers was there and of course Imperator.

There was another I do not recall. I think your father was there.

(No trace of him.)

I was not sure whether he got through or not. Did you hear from any of the guides here.

(Yes, oh no.) [I first thought of the Imperator group and then of the guides of Mrs. Chenoweth.]

Not any word from Starlight? She was to try. The other to whom you refer is S, is it not?

(S? What does that mean?)

Pause. I only see S—— Is there not an S who was there?

(I think so. I shall have to look at my records.)

It must have been Moses, for some of his guides were there.

(Yes good. Which of the guides?)

Doctor and Rector. Rector tried to do some work.†

\* \* \* \* \*

[Omitted portions.]

---

\* Miss Burton (p. 614) referred to a prediction of seeing me on a train in two weeks.

† There was no trace of Starlight in the Burton experiments and none of any of the other guides of Mrs. Chenoweth, unless the letter S was intended for this. I took it to refer to Sidgwick, as it had been so used in the Chenoweth sittings as published records indicate.

The record shows that both Imperator and Rector communicated through Miss Burton (pp. 581, 627), but there is no trace of Doctor, Rector did try to do some work and succeeded, as the record will indicate.

## APPENDIX.

### Other Automatic Writing.

Mrs. Milton did not keep much of the automatic writing which she received, not having appreciated the psychological interest of the phenomena. Her whole interest in it was based on the assumption that it was what it purported to be and she accepted it without raising any questions about its possible source in Miss Burton's subliminal. Indeed she had probably never heard of the subconscious, until the experimenters spoke of it, and she certainly did not believe that such a source was a considerable one. She took the layman's view of the phenomena, which is to accept the communications as they come and to assume that there is no adulteration of them in the process of delivery. She was seeking consolation and advice, when trying automatic writing with Miss Burton, and not interesting herself either in the psychology of the case or in the general scientific problem involved. The consequence was that she did not preserve much of the automatic writing, and without approaching the case in the properly scientific spirit it is not probable that there was much of it would have interested the student of psychology, even in the history and development of Miss Burton's case. But of this we cannot know assuredly. There may have been many a casual instance of it that coincided with material coming through other automatists and if they had been preserved, considering the meager education of Miss Burton and her ignorance of the literature of psychic research and spiritualism, they might have been the best defence of the case that the foster mother could have presented in its favor. As it is she has made no provision against the verdict of the sceptic based upon subconscious impersonation and all the phenomena attributable to secondary personality. But she gave me a few samples of it which she happened to keep and I give a few as illustrations of what occurred in the privacy of the family experience.

"Oh it is so beautiful over here it is \* \* \* \* some day I will draw you a picture and show you how it is Maude."

[The hand writing then changes and "Dan" is the communicator with another topic for his message.]

"We are very glad that you are all here and I assure you we will do all we can for you this is something new and it will be a little harder but we will do our best and if you get tired of the messages we will play the instruments for you Dan."

[Then the writing returns to the same personality as the first instance.]

"Clara tell Maud I will be there to-morrow night and when you [are] eating and the hillis [hills] are beating their soft music just think of me a Happy new year to all Maude"

[The next is from Lenore who gives a brief account of herself which explains the impersonations of certain other occasions.]

"Anna, you want to know who I am my name Lenor [e] and I was a spanish dancer and I spoke [a] different language if you will just be patient I will show you how I danced some day Lenore."

[The next is by Dan again and represents a type of matter which he never attempted in my presence.]

"I will tell you a little about our life while the strength is gathering We live in perfect harmony over here there are no misunderstandings and ever one has their own duty to perform and we speak with our mind some have the care of children and they progress but they can all come back if they want to there are some after they pass over have no one on your side who they can come to and they are guides to the one they are drawn to I will not tell on [of] myself until some of the others have a chance Dan."

This is very inferior work for a supposedly acute subliminal and it is equally unserviceable for evidence of anything else than dream fabrication. Its naïvete and the abrupt movement from idea to idea are the only psychological characteristics that can suggest coincidence with matter given through other psychics, tho these are meager incidents. But the statement that "we speak with our mind" is the one statement in the whole mass of messages that is

striking and suggestive, tho we must concede the possibility that it might be the subject of natural conjecture of any mind, however meagerly educated, when it comes to form ideas of its own about a bodiless existence. The form of expression throughout is naive and much more barren in capacity than Miss Burton's normal mental power, as her letters show and this is so much in favor of its genuineness, tho insufficient to prove it or even render it probable.

### **Further Instances of Automatic Writing.**

After the above experiments, during which I was called home on account of the illness of my daughter, there was some automatic writing which has a psychological interest. Mrs. Milton and Miss Burton knew the cause of my sudden departure, as I told them over the phone. I did not tell them the serious nature of the illness, but they knew as well as I what the risks of typhoid fever were, so that there is nothing in the contents of the messages that would interest the seeker for evidence of the supernormal. There are just two points of importance in it. The first is the correctness of psychological trend in it at the points at which there was no reason for the limitations manifested, if we are to estimate it from the view of remarkable and resourceful powers of the subconscious. The second is the mechanical difficulties manifested in the automatic writing which are not excusable on the ground of inexperience. With the usual controls it was just as easy as on all other occasions. One instance of it had a special interest of its own.

The messages are little bulletins sent to me about my daughter and were in response to inquiries for the purpose by Mrs. Milton, not at my request, but out of a spontaneous interest in the situation. They reflect her own belief in the phenomena and that is one incident to be considered in the estimation of the case. She did not record her questions and hence I give the messages, with their dates, as sent to me.

Feb. 6th, 1910. "There is a lady who is very anxious to send a message and we will do all we can to help her but it is going to be hard for her Dan."

[The only evidence that this was intended for me is in the next illustration where the name labelled it sufficiently. Probably the oral conversation suggested the connection, but that is not recorded.]

"Dear daughter [very scrawly and would be doubtful but for the hints which a few of the consonants give] everything is all right. I tried to tell you It is so hard now Many [Mary. Evidently not read and so was repeated.] Mary [illegible in fact and interpretable only in light of what follows.] Mary Mary."

[The writing in this was unusually scrawly and while it has the technical resemblance to all her automatic writing it shows unmistakable signs of more than the usual mechanical difficulties. It is, in fact almost wholly illegible, and one not familiar with the usual automatic writing of Miss Burton would hardly read a word of it, and with the familiarity he finds some difficulty which he does not find with the usual automatic writing. The psychological contents show a recognition of the situation and the abrupt break in the message and recognition of the difficulty support the superficial evidence in the writing.]

[The next is another trial and followed the above instance immediately, whether in response to inquiry or a request to try further, is not recorded.]

"M [?] try but it is hard everything seems to be confusion [confusion] here Dan."

"everything is all right now She is better Dan."

[The writing is very scrawly and the first two words had to be conjectured and the reading tested by comparison with the same words elsewhere and the evident intention of the lines for each letter determined in this manner. The writing shows great difficulty and the nature of the situation would suggest that sort of assistance to the communicator which we are familiar with in the Piper and other cases.]

Feb. 11th, 1910. "Clara, you can help her a great deal treat her in strength she will need that now Maude."

[Accompanying this Mrs. Milton got a little poem written in a semi-automatic manner and which counsels her on the value of prayer in the treatment of the case in mind, my daughter. The psychological interest in the fact is that her mother who claims

to communicate through her often herself wrote a great deal of poetry and Mrs. Milton's messages very often, perhaps nearly always, come in this way. She also does "mental healing" within the family circle, not publicly.]

Feb. 11th, 1910. "Oh! It is all so much confusion [confusion] and so had [hard] for us to tell all we find but she is resting more comfortable and we are doing all we can for her I think everything will be all right Dan [?]."

[The signature at the end is doubtful as the interrogation in square brackets indicates, but if it is anything it is "Dan." The writing is a little more scrawly all through than is usual with Dan.]

Feb. 24th, 1910. "Yes she is better and she will get well We could not give Prof. Hyslop the kind of mental work he would have liked to have because his wife was with her daughter so much altho she tried to tell him but did not have the strength He will understand whn [when] she tried to tell him But everything will be all right now R. H."

[This apparently refers to the time when I purported to get a clairvoyant message from my wife through Miss Burton (p. 404), but it is interesting to remark here that it comes through the personality of R. H. (Dr. Hodgson). It may refer at the same time to the apparently further attempt to say something about the children before I was called home and to which the control made reference in the automatic writing mentioning my "lady."]

Feb. 27th, 1910. "Clara dear I know you wonder why I dont write or manifest in some way more often. It is not because I am not here I am around here so much when you do not feel my influence I am so glad to be able to come this way it is just as much of a comfort to me as it is to you and the dear little children I am with them so much If I have the strength I am going to write. Alonzo Ma."

[This has no reference to me and my affair but it was in response to an effort to get something for me.]

Feb. 28th, 1910. "She \* \* watched now and then with careful watching she will be all right it is so hard to night but I we [?] are helping all we can R. H."

The fever will break soon.



March 2d, 9.35 P. M., 1910. "She seems about the same. It is so hard for us to get there the conditions are all confused and the messenger who gave the last message is not here now We cannot seem to bring him tonight Maude."

9.45 P. M. "Anna Dear you do want a message so bad and B. C. says I do nothing but talk this isnt talking is it But B. C. says he is going now and I cant write any more Lenore."

In this last message the word "confused" is spelled correctly. In two earlier ones (p. 645) "confusion" was spelled "confussion." This latter spelling coincides with that of Rector in the Piper case which also occurred a few times with Mrs. Smead. Noticing the coincidence I wrote to Dr. Hamilton to try an experiment with Miss Burton, concealing the purpose, to test how she would spell the word in her normal state. I asked him to dictate a passage to her containing the word "confusion" in it several times and failing on this to have her read a passage containing it, and also to spell it among some others. But the first experiment succeeded so well that there was no need of further trials. He dictated to her the following passage which she wrote as quoted here:—

"The confussion resulting from a change in rooms will cause confusion among the sitters and controls. Confussion is to be avoided when good results are desired."

The first time she wrote the word she wrote it correctly, "confusion," and then hesitating erased it and wrote it "confussion," writing the other two instances as given.

It is apparent that this coincidence with the Piper case is purely casual and that the spelling is purely a subliminal affair.

[The following message has an unusual interest as showing that, occasionally at least in her normal waking hours, Miss Burton is liable to have a spontaneous incursion, of the trance and to do something in it of which she is not conscious. Her own letter explains it and is confirmed by Mrs. Milton.]

March 8th, 1910.

Prof. Hyslop,

Dear Sir:

I enclose a message received last evening. I started to write a letter, and when Mrs. Milton found me, this message was

written. I hope your daughter shows improvement as the message would indicate.

Respectfully,

Anna Burton.

Mar. 7th, 1910. Dear Aunt Mary—This is about the tenth letter I have started to

She is some better watch carefully now We are sure it will be all right R. H.

[At this point discovered by Mrs. Milton, who asked a question.]

(Maude, will Mame and the children come for spring vacation?)

I think they will Maude

I cannot come to stay long at a time R. H.

#### EXPERIMENTS IN LOCALIZATION OF SOUND.

New York, Mar. 3d, 1910.

In order to test the question of localizing sounds I resolved on some experiments with my son, 17 years of age. I blindfolded him and had him sit on a chair about two feet from my roller-top desk. In order to prevent the influence on hearing of any movements by myself I took a light stick about one-quarter of an inch in diameter and nearly three feet in length. This enabled me to make raps at considerable distances in both directions at his side and in front of him without moving anything but my arm. I proceeded to make raps at different places on his right and left and in front of him on the desk. I endeavored to make them exactly like the raps I heard in my experiments with Miss Burton. When on the wood they were sometimes much sharper than hers, but when made on the felt cover they were more nearly like them, indeed were exactly like them, as I remember. There were two things to be observed. The first was the direction of the raps from the sitter, as I must so regard my son. The second was the locus of the sound, that is, the exact place in which it occurred. I would expect the general direction of the sounds to be more accurately determined than the exact locus, especially if the locus lay in the median plane, and it would be more or less a median plane or line in any direction

from the head in a straight line. The angular locus would be more accurate than this.

I made 33 experiments in all. Of these 25 were in front and at the sides to left and right, and 8 were made behind him on the mantelpiece. In the 8 cases behind him he was invariably in error regarding both the direction and the locus, if we can say anything at all of the locus. He thought all but one of them was on the desk and this one exception he thought above his head. I had varied the position of the raps on the mantel and he varied the locus on the desk accordingly, but no importance attached to this variation save the fact.

Of the 25 experiments in front and on the sides 20 were absolutely correct in respect of both direction and locus, 2 were correct in direction but not in exact locus, 2 were wrong in both direction and locus, but not far wrong, and one was half right in direction but wholly wrong in locus, assuming the direction correct. This makes 80 per cent. of the 25 correct and the others not entire errors in this group. Of the total number, 33 in all, 60 per cent. were correct. The uniform error of those behind him is not explicable, except from expectation that they would be in front or on the sides, as the others had been.

March 12th, 1910.

I tried some further experiments in localizing sounds first with my son and then with myself as subject. I should have remarked in connection with the first series that my son has defective hearing in his left ear. He had to have an operation on it for inflammation of the inner ear a few months ago. He is now doctoring for it. The right ear was also affected and we feared an operation would be necessary for that. This fact will show that he came to the experiments somewhat handicapped.

I had him blindfolded and sitting by a small table about two feet from the door. I sat at his right, my intention being to make raps on the table and elsewhere, as occasion required, and to give them as nearly as I could the quality of those I heard with Miss Burton. I provided myself with a lead pencil with rubber eraser on the end, my purpose being to muffle the raps. It produced the desired effect and I made raps possibly a little less distinct than many of the raps by Miss Burton. For dis-

tances out of my reach I used the same cane or stick as before. The raps with it were perhaps more sharp than with the pencil, but I endeavored to muffle them as much as I could. The pencil, however, muffled them well. The raps with the stick varied from three to six feet away.

With my son there were thirty-one raps in all and he was correct in localizing all but one of them. This statement, however, must have the qualification that the locus was not always perfectly correct, tho the angular direction was always so save in the one wrong case. This one instance was placed rightly outside the median plane and on the side of it in which it was produced, but the locus of it was too far off to call correct in any respect. All the others were perfectly correct in the angular position and sometimes varied six or eight inches from the exact spot in which they were made. In some cases, perhaps 20 per cent., the place was assigned with perfect accuracy when the spot varied from two to six feet away. There was in most cases just what we should expect, namely to have the general locus correct but the exact spot a few inches from the guessed one, this varying more in the median than the angular direction. On the whole, however, he was so accurate in localizing the sound that I felt it useless to continue the experiments beyond the thirty-one.

My own experiments, with closed eyes, numbered twenty-six. Of these twenty were exactly correct, often as accurate as they could have been with my eyes open. Of the six that are regarded as wrong two were right in the general direction but so far out of their right locus as to be called wrong. Two were made behind me, but were localized by me in front. One of six I could not locate at all and so have reckoned it with the errors, tho that is not strictly the case. One was made above my head and to the right but was located on the table three feet below where it was made.

The twenty successful cases were perfectly correct in angular location and most of them quite accurate as to exact locus. I think they were often a little more distinct than the raps by Miss Burton and this may have been a help to locate them more accurately. But the raps I produced for my son were not more distinct when made with the pencil.

After this series was finished I tried a few with my son making them very distinct and the accuracy was perfect in angular direction and exact locus and no mistakes. I then tried a few that were very indistinct and he was wrong in these.

One thing to be reckoned with is the errors when raps are made behind the subject. This would seem to mean that, if made behind the person judging of them we might locate them in front, as both of us did, and be entirely wrong, tho always right when they are made in front of us. But in a séance we do not know where they are made and have no means of determining it except by our inferences.

This precaution, however, does not apply to such raps as I heard Miss Burton make. I always sat with my face toward her and she could not produce any raps behind me. In fact there was no object to strike behind me, and no possibility of doing it, as I held her hand or hands too constantly for that.

### EXPERIMENTS WITH LIGHTS.

New York, May 9th, 1910.

In order to ascertain whether I could reproduce the lights which Miss Burton manifested I went to Mr. W. S. Davis for advice and suggestions, he being an old magician of some standing and he could mention nothing but luminous paint and ordinary matches. But he referred me to a Mr. J. W. Sargent who is a practicing magician. Mr. Sargent called on me in response to a letter of inquiry and he knew of nothing but luminous paint and phosphorus in oil. He referred me, however, to Mr. Martinka, the dealer in magician's goods. To him I went to-day and found that he knew of nothing but luminous paint and phosphorus. He had never heard of electric bulbs for the purpose. He did not even have the luminous paint in stock and also had nothing else. He referred me to Schwartz, a dealer in toys of all sorts with the expectation that I might find there some electric devices that would serve my purpose. I found a small electric lamp made for inserting in neckties with wire and dry cells attached. But it is impossible to produce with it any such effects as Miss Burton produced in her lights. The cells occupy the space defined by a box two and a half inches

long, the same width and three-quarters of an inch thick. The wires are long enough to enable a man to put the lamp in the necktie and to make the light from the middle of the waist under the coat or vest. It is impossible to use it in the way Miss Burton had to make the lights, tho she could easily have concealed the battery in a pocket in her dress. Of course, the device might be made or adjusted to the proper needs, but this particular device would not do the work. Even if it did the light was not like those of Miss Burton. Her lights did not illuminate the surrounding space. This light will illuminate a dark room for forty or fifty feet. I have tried it and could read by it a few feet away and recognize a face ten feet away and see a door thirty feet away. Within certain limits it would serve for a lamp. Hence, tho it might be manipulated as were her lights, which it could not, the nature of the light was wholly different. There was either no illumination at all in Miss Burton's lights or so little that no trace of its effect on any surface could be detected at any distance from the point of occurrence with a few exceptions. In this respect her lights were like those of phosphorus, but not of the same color or cloudy appearance.

But while Schwartz could not give me any device of a simpler kind or suitable for the purpose he referred me to a manufacturer of electric novelties. This company does not make anything for conjurers in this field, tho making electric lamps down to the size of a wheat grain. They had never heard of their use by conjurers or others persons in the manner which I wished to investigate. I bought the smallest lamp they make and it is the size of a grain of wheat. It required two and a half or three volt cells. But the only cells that I could get were about seven inches long and about two and a half inches in diameter, and it required two of these to supply the three volts. It was impossible to use them for the lamp for any but stationary purposes. It may be possible to contrive cells for this lamp, but they would have to be concealable in a pocket and wires would have to be arranged much as in the lamp described. It would be extremely difficult to manipulate the affair in any such way as Miss Burton had to employ to produce her lights. I would not say that it was impossible at this stage of my experiments, but I could not do it with the device as I got it from the manufacturer.

Besides again the light is wholly different. It is a bright white and illuminates a considerable space. There is no resemblance whatever to the lights that Miss Burton produced. No such effect is producible by it as she manifested in any lights she produced. Hers were much nearer like phosphorous lights than they are near these electric lights.

I also got some phosphorous oil which I was told might produce lights. I find that it is worthless for any lights that either resemble those of Miss Burton or that will continue for more than a second or so. Exposure to light will cause an interesting illumination in the bottle, but when put on the fingers it will not often produce any light at all and when it does it is not clear, is very cloudy and lasts but for a moment. It was absolutely worthless for the purpose.

I finally got two cells for trying the small lamp mentioned above and tried the light in a dark place. It made sufficient light to read by within eighteen or twenty inches, and the light was not as bright as it would be with a larger voltage. The color of the light was nearer that observable with Miss Burton, not being as white as the electric light usually is when more intense. It was a very bright yellow, but radiated light distinctly and illumined a considerable space. In fact it illumined the whole of the closet so that any one could be recognized in it, and in a larger room the light could be seen on the wall eight or ten feet away. There was absolutely no resemblance to Miss Burton's light, except in the yellow tinge of it. She could not have produced her lights with the same kind of lamp, unless special improvements in the nature and use of it were devised. I do not know what they could be. The electricians seem not to know anything about it.



**MEDICAL EXAMINATION OF ANNA BURTON BY DR.  
LOUIS MILLARD (Pseudonym),**

**Professor Nervous and Mental Diseases, ——— University, At-  
tending Neurologist to the ——— and ——— Hospitals.**

March 10, 1911.

Age 22; single. Occupation—Does housework at home. The history of her previous health seems without special medical significance, excepting that last year Dr. John Smyth removed some enlarged and inflamed cervical lymphatic glands which were suspected of being tuberculous. She attended common school until reaching the fifth grade. She states that she was deficient in mathematics, but was better in such studies as geography. The family history gives one sister dead of "Spinal meningitis," and two sisters died of "Consumption." The mother is dead, having had heart trouble.

**Physical Examination.**

This examination occurred at the office of Dr. John Smyth, who was also present. Repeated questioning of Miss B. failed to elicit any subjective symptoms. She claimed good health, and related no symptoms in the past that would be relative in determining possible peculiarities of the nervous system and mind. Whatever disturbances of the health she had had were of "colds," enlarged glands, etc. Direct inquiry brought the information that she had not experienced any weakness nor paralysis of any muscles, no sensations of numbness, tingling or paresthesiæ of the arms or legs; no vomiting; dizziness; faintness; anuria or polyuria; special sense disturbances; digestive disorders; hyperesthesiæ; etc., etc., which so often attend hysteria and other psychoneuroses.

Dr. Smyth, who had seen her professionally could add nothing along these lines.

This part of the examination, then, was considered to have produced only negative evidence.

In appearance Miss B. is of medium height, and slightly be-

low the average weight. This is estimated, scales not being employed.

The hair is a very dark red, eyes dark brown. The fat polster is below the average. Musculature average.

The skin is sallow, dull and slightly mottled. It lacks tone. The palms are moist and cold. The reverse end of a pencil and match drawn across the skin of the back readily produces a marked red line. The skin, therefore, shows a condition of deficient vaso-motor tone.

Examination of the cranial nerves proved negative. The field of vision was only taken roughly.

The deep reflexes and the skin reflexes were equal and normal on both sides.

Tests of deep muscle sense, tactile, pain, thermal, pressure and position senses were normal. There was no astereognosis. Station and gait were normal. Muscle strength was equal and good everywhere. No assymetries of the muscles or other structures were noticed.

No tremors existed, nor ataxia.

The heart, lungs and other viscera seemed normal.

The pulse rate was between 80 and 90. This slight acceleration may have been due to the examination. The thyroid gland was not enlarged.

Blood-Pressure (Tycos sphygmomanometer) was 115 (systolic). Hæmoglobin percentage between 90 and 100 (practically normal).

Temperature by mouth normal.

Mentally, the subject appeared to be average. Considering the degree of her education, probable limited experiences in the world, and social station, I cannot say that she is either above or below in intelligence of that which should be expected.

She was well composed, amiable, and answered questions intelligently and intelligibly. While frank, she was not loquacious. Speech was good, both as regards substance and expression, but not at all suggesting any brilliancy or profundity. Articulation and enunciation were clear. No mannerisms were noted. Perception, consciousness, thought, apprehension, attention, memory, orientation and emotions apparently were clear and normal. The expression was calm, almost serene. There was, however,

a slowness in replying to questions, not extreme, but slight, and an absence of voluntary conversation, which suggested somewhat a certain degree of mental sluggishness, but this idea may have to be discounted some because of the self-consciousness possibly arising from being subject to examination.

At any rate I do not think for a moment that there is sufficient indication for suspecting any pathologic psychic state. Thus this examination failed to disclose any sign of either mental or physical disease. No abnormal evidence was noted excepting the small vaso-motor weakness, described above, and that deviation is so extremely common in people of many classes and conditions, even in comparative good health, that no especial importance can be attached to it as elucidating any profound mental phenomena. It is most commonly found, tho, in neurotic individuals, as in neurasthenia, hysteria and the anxiety neurosis. It is not uncommon either in tuberculosis. This girl approaches the Phthisical type, and when it is recalled that two sisters died of consumption, and she, herself, probably had tubercular glands, it would seem that danger threatens in that direction, and may explain the accelerated pulse, tendency to "cold," perspiration, etc.

The examiner was aware at the time of this investigation of the mysterious phenomena produced by the subject, Miss B., and hence the examination was of such a character as to be relative in the attempt to scientifically explain them. But at the same time the examination was to a great extent detached and independent from such considerations. That is to say, Miss B. was examined routinely in a physician's office, much as one would in a fairly complete investigation of a private patient's condition, but in addition, special attention was directed to determining, if possible, any deviations from the usual of the mind and nervous systems, and as stated, the results were negative.

LOUIS MILLARD, M. D.

### BOOK REVIEW.

*Time and Free Will.* An Essay on the Immediate Data of Consciousness. By Henri Bergson. Member of the Institute and Professor at the College of France. Translated by F. L. Pogson, M. A. The Macmillan Company, New York. 1910.

One wonders why authors choose "time and free will" as conceptions for a title to the immediate data of consciousness. A book is supposed to treat of its title as the subject of analysis and discussion, but here the real title is in the second part of the author's language and the impression is that time and free will are those immediate data. But we do not go far before we find that the real data are something else. It seems characteristic of all our philosophers in this age to be paradoxical and to suppose that paradoxes constitute philosophy. Nothing can be farther from the truth. Paradoxes will do for conversation and the drawing room or for wit, but not for information on the nature of things.

However, I am assuming here that psychic researchers are interested in philosophy. This is not always the case. This work is of no special interest or importance to the problems of the Society. It has only the remote connection which all analysis of consciousness will have for students who must investigate its phenomena in unusual forms. There is no other interest for us. But the book is a careful examination of the primitive or elementary data of consciousness with the assumption that we usually think they are all expressed in terms of extension or space. I do not happen to believe that this assumption is more than half true, except for the qualification that it applies only to communicable knowledge. But apart from differences of opinion on a question which contains a most important truth or half truth I can say that the careful and critical character of the work is beyond all praise and all students capable of understanding its nature and object will profit by the reading of it, even tho at many crucial points they will differ from the author and perhaps feel that he has not seized the fundamental distinctions between perceptual and communicable, real and symbolic knowledge.

### EXPLANATION OF CUTS.

Figure I is a representation of the hall room, sitting-room, the kitchen and the dining-room in the Milton residence in which many of the experiments were made. The circle represents the dining table unopened and the dotted line represents it after opened which it usually was during the experiments. The phonograph is represented in the corner of the room by the horn on a box. The position of the sitters is represented by the smaller circles.

Figure II represents an experiment in the Milton home, the others having occurred in the office of Dr. Smyth. The arrow shows the trumpet falling. It did not strike the table but fell on the floor. Dr. Hamilton was holding the hands of Mrs. Milton, as shown, but Miss Burton jerked her left hand away and all evidence was destroyed. She was entranced.

Figures III and IV represent the same experiment which was an attempt to take a photograph of the trumpet suspended in the air. The claim was, of course, that Miss Burton had nothing to do with its levitation. It was supposedly an instance of telekinesis, according to Mrs. Milton and those who accepted the spiritistic interpretation of the physical phenomena. There were two cameras placed at different points in the room to get a double picture of the trumpet in the air.

Both plates show blurs where the trumpet was, the blur being due to the flash of light lasting too long. For Figure III the camera was pointed largely at the ceiling so that in case the trumpet did not appear in the other plate we should know whether it was up too high or fallen under cut of the lens. The trumpet is represented by the blur only. Figure IV shows the blur also and the group of sitters, the medium, Miss Burton, partly standing in her chair. As the trumpet was seen by Dr. Hamilton during the flash he at once appreciated the fact that it would have been comparatively easy for the control to have the entranced medium toss up the trumpet and then rap for the signal.

Figure V represents a photograph taken when the tambourine was in the air. It shows at the corner of the mirror where the arrow points. Miss Burton was tied, as can be seen, to the chair and her hands in front, tho not visible. The chief value lies in what the next cut represents as having probably occurred in this one.

Figure VI represents another experiment like that of Figure V. Miss Burton is tied to the chair and her hands tightly tied in front. The development of the plate showed the tambourine just above the head of Dr. Smyth and Miss Burton's hand released and in the act of throwing the tambourine. Had the flash not occurred at this instant Miss Burton's hand would have been found tightly tied and the case considered a splendid proof of telekinesis. This led to the necessity of holding the medium's hands.

Figure VII represents an experiment again in the office of Dr. Smyth. This picture was taken while the experimenters were holding the hands of both Miss Burton and Mrs. Milton. Dr. Hamilton did not know that the medium was standing up until he saw it in the picture. But he had both of her hands under his hand and Dr. Smyth held the hands of Mrs. Milton. The tambourine fell too early and can just be seen under the arrow between the sitters. Evidently Miss Burton or the control had seized the tambourine in her teeth, as later experiments show, and flipped it into the air after rising to her feet.

Figure VIII shows a similar experiment, Mrs. Milton not being present. The control insisted on repeating the experiment after she had been partly brought out of the trance and hence she was returned to the séance room. Her hair was taken down because the weather was so warm. She can be seen to be strictly under test conditions so far as her hands are concerned. These can be seen under control. The tambourine fell too quickly for the flash to catch it. It can be seen just under the arrow in front of Dr. Smyth and under the arrow. It is represented by the white blur. The position of Miss Burton's head should be compared with the next cut to render probable what occurred.

Figure IX shows the same conditions as Figure VIII.

The tambourine again fell too quickly and is represented by the blur under the arrow. Dr. Hamilton held the hands of Miss Burton and Dr. Smyth those of Mrs. Milton. The position of the head and the open mouth of the medium suggest what actually took place.

Figure X shows what probably happened in the two previous experiments. Miss Burton's hands were held as usual and the flash came too quickly to catch the tambourine floating in the air. The picture shows it in Miss Burton's teeth.

Figure XI shows an experiment in which the conditions were still better, tho the sequel showed that they were not conclusive. Dr. Smyth insisted that a handkerchief should be tied over the medium's mouth, tho both he and Dr. Hamilton knew that the tambourine could still be seized through the handkerchief, as they had succeeded in doing this themselves. But they wished to ascertain how far the medium could and would go in the experiments. During the experiment Dr. Smyth asked the controls to touch him with a hand while he held both of Miss Burton's under his. The controls groaned and failed, but they could lift the tambourine. It was thrown to one side and the flash sprung, possibly by her right arm in some way or by her foot, as the experimenters had found that the weakening of the spring allowed them to work it with their feet and of course the controls could do the same.

Figure XII represents an experiment in which Dr. Smyth presses the button for the flash. In this he insisted that he be allowed to spring the flash himself while Lenore, one of the trance personalities, is playing the tambourine. After much argument they say they can do it, but that he must tap on the table with his left hand and then wait a few seconds before he pushes the button. He agrees and they plaintively say that they trust him to do it right, but he pushes the flash as soon as he raps and again the picture shows what was not expected by the controls. The tambourine is seen in Miss Burton's hands. The medium is entranced in this instance as in all that have been submitted.



y  
f  
-  
t  
-  
l  
-  
s  
t  
d  
-  
h  
-  
n  
-  
d  
s  
t  
r  
s  
o  
o  
n  
e  
f  
r  
o  
s  
y  
n  
t  
s  
e



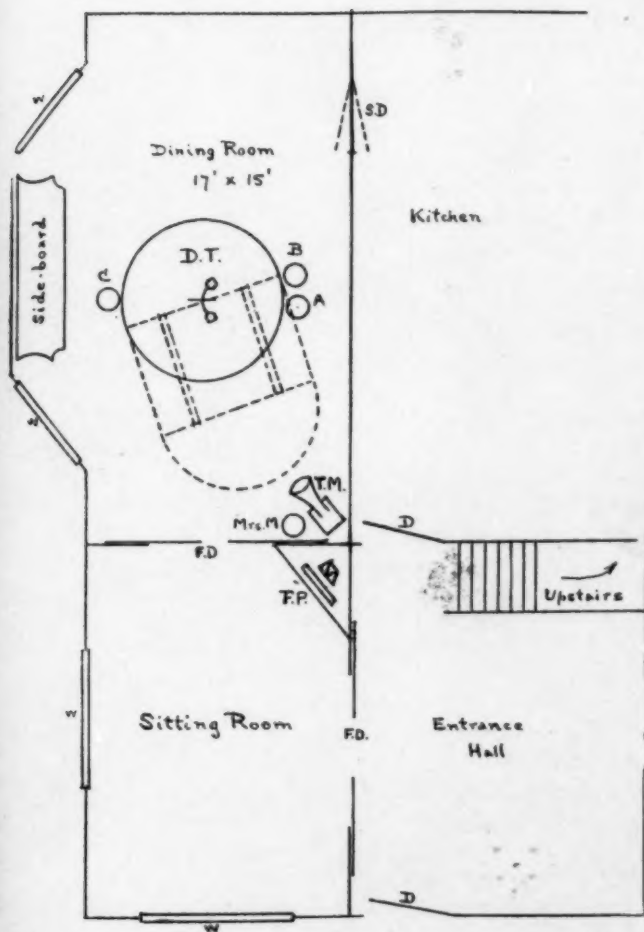


FIGURE I





FIGURE III



FIGURE IV

FIGURE IV

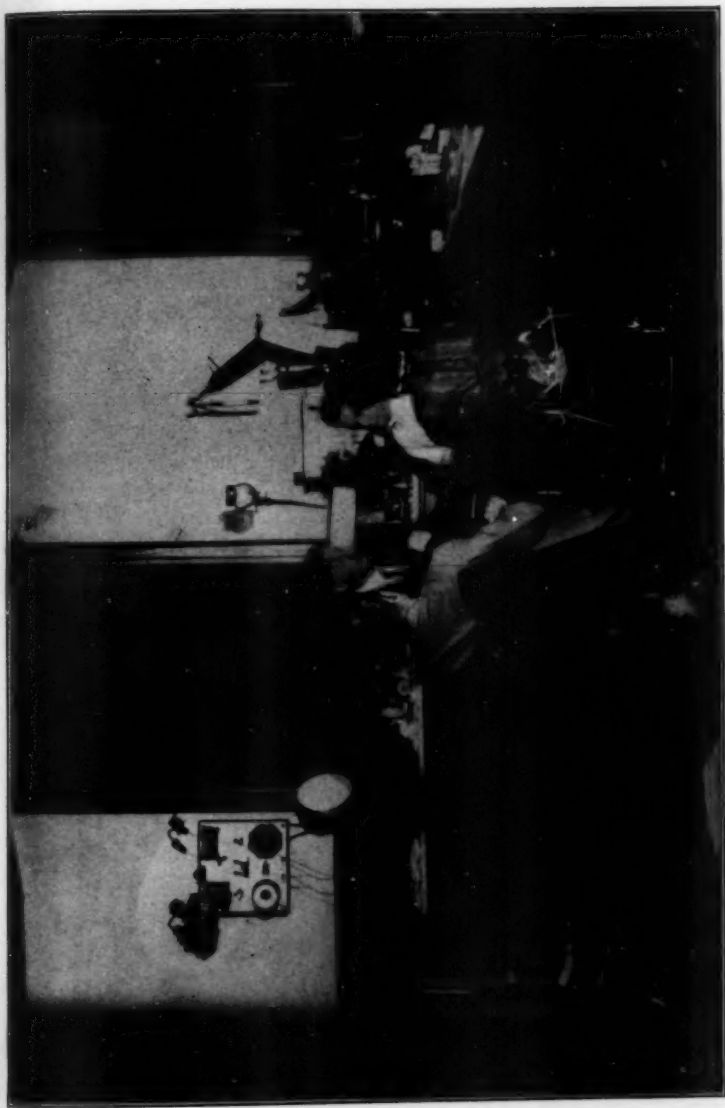


FIGURE V



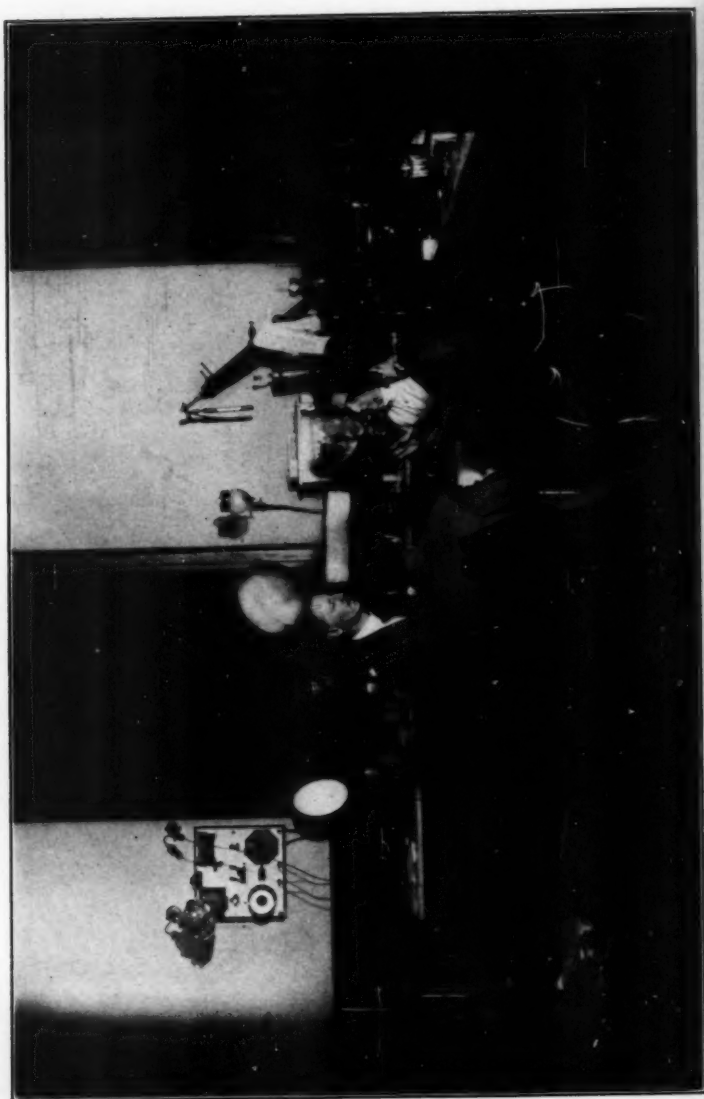


FIGURE VI

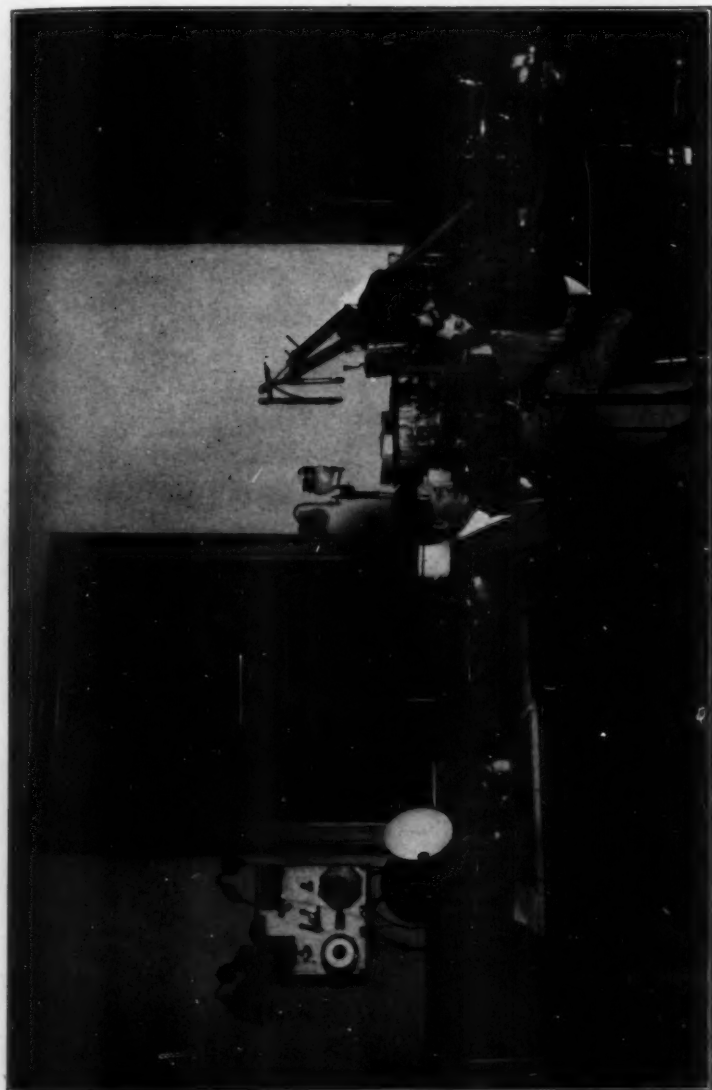
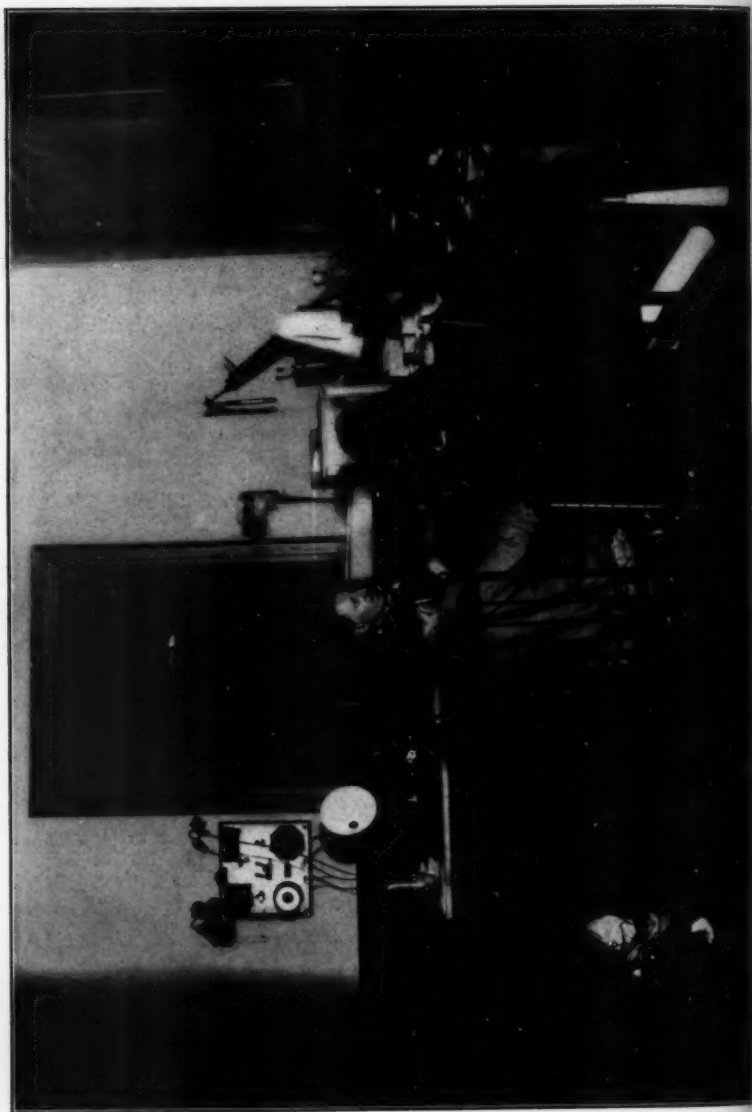


FIGURE VI

FIGURE VII



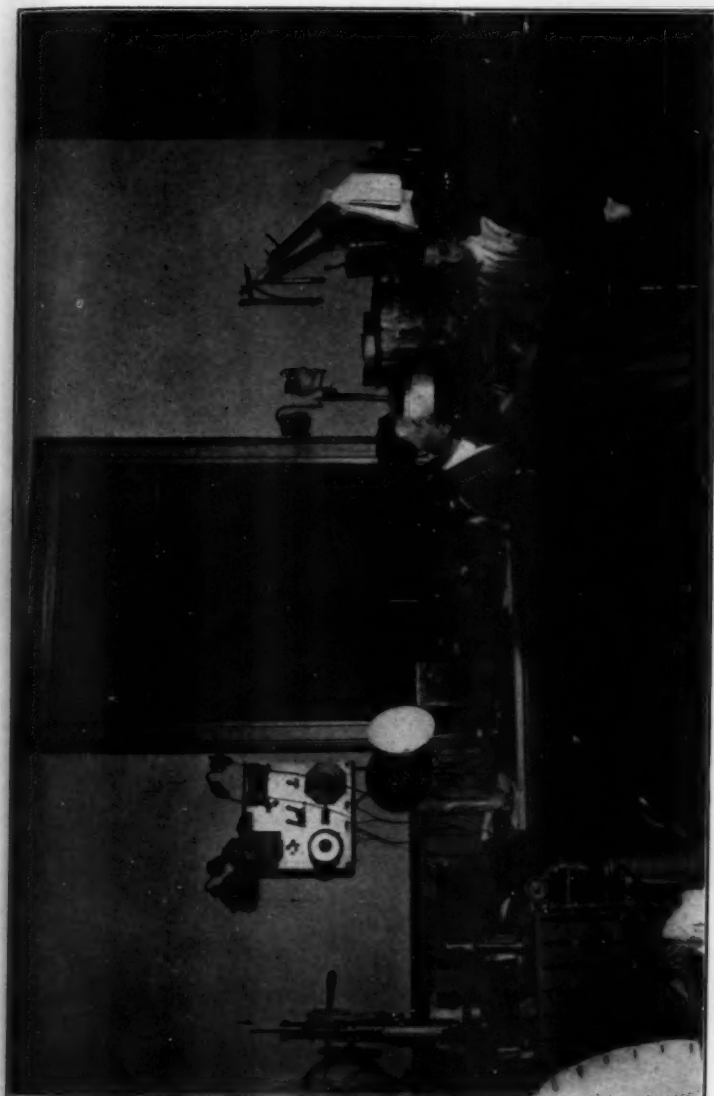


FIGURE IX

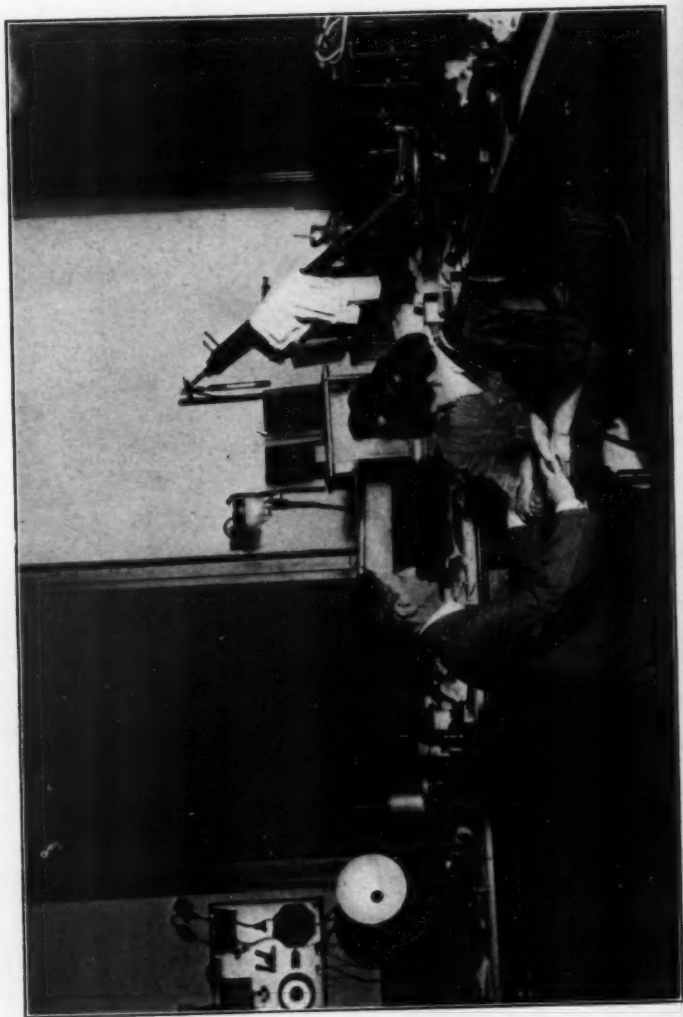


FIGURE X

FIGURE X

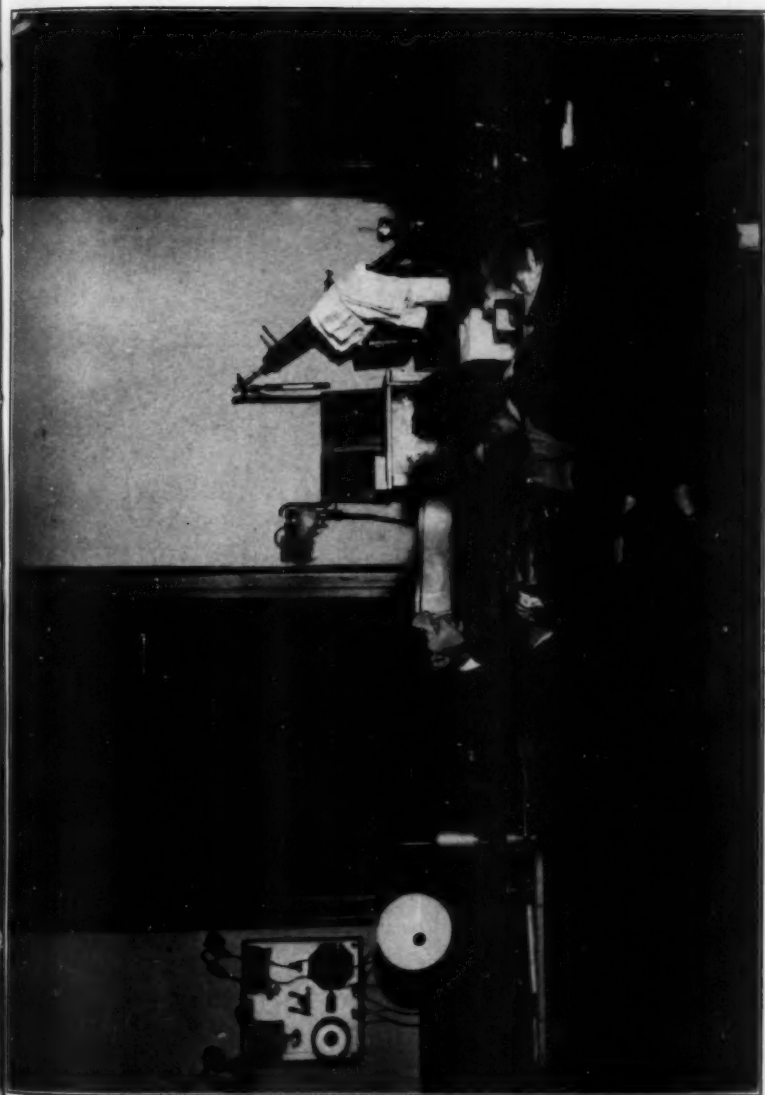


FIGURE XI

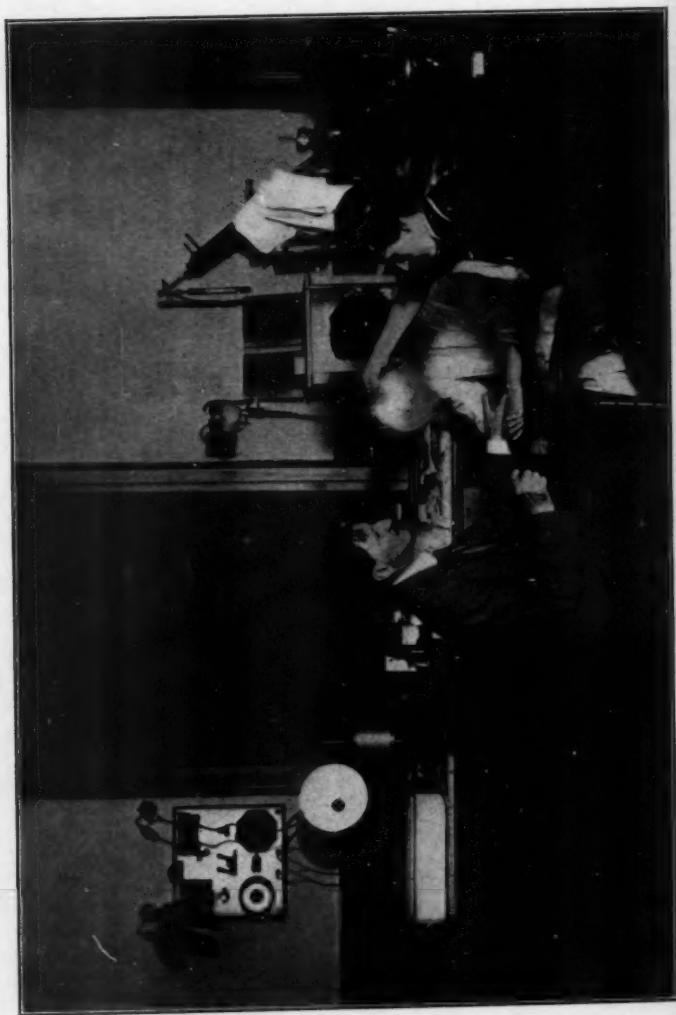


FIGURE XII







PROCEEDINGS  
OF THE  
AMERICAN SOCIETY  
FOR  
PSYCHICAL RESEARCH

---

EXPERIMENTS AND EXPERIENCES IN TELEPATHY.

By Miss Miles, Miss Ramsden and Miss Statkowski.

I

1. Introduction.

The following record was received from Miss Hermione Ramsden about the time the account of telepathic experiments between her and Miss Miles was published in the English Proceedings (Vol. XXI pp. 60-93). I wrote series of questions on the basis of it and sent them to both Miss Ramsden and Miss Miles. There was a long delay before I received a reply. Their replies, however, came and follow in due order. They came before the last paper was published in England. After the paper had been published I addressed another series of inquiries and the replies to them follow in their place.

During the summer of 1911, I signified my desire to publish the material and Miss Ramsden repeated and enlarged the answers to the questions which were addressed to her regarding her experiences. A different set were sent to Miss Miles and the answers will be found in their place.

To get a full understanding of the facts readers should consult the English publications for details. It is impossible to give them here. At the same time this record largely concerns the facts here recorded, tho many questions asked had reference to general matters connected with the English Report and are intended to throw light upon the processes associated with the telepathy. These marginal incidents and

other phenomena in the lives of the two ladies were uninvestigated in the Reports of their experiences and I cannot but think it a great mistake to take such a course. It is often in the marginal associates that you will find the clue to the perplexities of the phenomena and I had this in mind when I made my inquiries, and readers who examine the facts carefully will find evidence that this judgment deserves consideration. The possible significance of these marginal associates will be discussed in my comments and analyses of some of the phenomena. It is not necessary here to remark more than the need of inquiries in that direction with all cases.

Also during the summer of 1911 Miss Miles sent me a careful record of some further experiments with Miss Ramsden and Miss Statkowski. They are embodied in this Report, as they illustrate much the same psychological conditions and phenomena as in the earlier record with Miss Ramsden. Where there has been any success at all, weak and negative incidents are as important as positive ones.

The reader must not suppose that the inquiries made of Miss Miles and Miss Ramsden were for necessarily evidential experiences, and he must not suppose that the answers represent, in all cases, if any, facts that are to be taken as more than subjective ones. They are not told by the writers themselves with any belief in their veridical nature. What we wished to know was whether there were any marginal experiences which would connect the telepathic phenomena with other tendencies that would prevent their classification with telepathy. In other words, we wished to know if their psychic accesses were limited to telepathy and if any phenomena occurred which were not telepathic and even not evidential and yet assuming the mental type of the genuine we should have something that would throw light upon the processes involved in the telepathic phenomena while we connected them with the larger field of the supernormal. Sensitive subliminal processes seem to be necessary to enable the supernormal to occur and hence possibly all psychic experiences will be connected with subjective tendencies that do not always issue in the supernormal, but are conditions of it when it does occur. It will be found by the reader that the

ladies here reporting have had other phenomena than telepathy in their experiences and this suffices to suggest an articulation on a large scale without assuming that all their experiences are veridical.

I have included both sets of answers to inquiries by Miss Ramsden because they protect her memory well. The slight difference in one or two incidents does not affect the main facts and are otherwise a protection.

## 2. Miss Ramsden's First Report.

July 19th, [1906.]

During September, 1905, I tried a course of experiments in thought transference with a lady in Norway; the result, altho not very successful, was quite sufficient to prove that some fragments of thought had been communicated. I then suggested an experiment with a friend in Copenhagen. It was to be on September 24th at 1 o'clock by English time, which is 2 o'clock by central European. I was to be the agent, and I was very anxious indeed that the experiment should prove a success. After fifteen minutes of intense concentration, I said: "Are you there? Do you hear me?" Then to my utter amazement I heard his voice calling my name and quivering with laughter: "Er du der? yeg kan ikke høre, tale lidt høiere ... dine usynlige traade." "Are you there? I cannot hear, speak a little louder ... your invisible wires..."

This expression "invisible wires" is one that I had *never* thought of, and certainly could not have invented in *Danish*, so I was perfectly convinced that it was a genuine instance of telepathy, and if my friend had been a spirit instead of a living man, nothing could ever have altered my conviction. I wrote the same day and told him what had happened. He did not answer for a long time, then he wrote to the effect that he considered "Spiritism" very dangerous and silly, that he had not thought of me when I asked him to do so, tho, of course, he had thought of me earlier in the morning when he read my letter, "and then I suppose I thought of your *invisible wires*, and I used that expression in speaking about you to ...." Thus the expression, at any rate, was a genuine

case of telepathy. Before I received this letter, while I still believed the experiment to have been a complete success, I tried with another friend who lived at Newmarket. This time I heard a little voice that sounded indescribably far off. It was like the "soundless voice" described by Rev. P. H. Newnham.—I had not read about his experience at that time—It was not in the least like my friend's voice, or indeed any human voice. Now and then it died away and became inaudible. I sat with pencil in hand and wrote down what it said:—

September 28th. "Mymee ... winter, doing up wardrobe .. punished Nellie told not to motor car .... republican news to-day ... Princess Charles of Denmark ... King displeased ... your friends .... sandwich ... Lord Cane wanted me to take Nellie (her pupil) in a motor car. I wouldn't go .. etc., etc. blue ribbon word indistinct gauntlet ... rabbit ... assizes ... now it is your turn tomorrow, goodbye." [Lord Cane is a pseudonym.]

This turned out to be a strange mixture of truth and falsehood. She had begun by calling my name. That was right. She wanted to tell me that she had given up her place as governess and was going home. She had been thinking of her winter clothes. The motor car was nonsense. Neither she nor I am acquainted with anybody with the name of Cane, but there is a Lord Merton Cane, an old man, as I afterwards ascertained. She had been reading in the papers about the political party in Norway that wished for a republic and she wanted to discuss it with me, but purposely did not choose it as a subject for experiment, because she knew that I would naturally also be thinking about it. She had been hemming a blue veil, had also just written to a shop to order some gauntlet gloves. Some one had been talking with a judge at luncheon, and was at loss for the word "*assizes*" and she made a mental effort to think of it.

The next day, Sept. 29th, I was to be agent and as I had not received any letter from her I was in ignorance as to the success the day before. After trying for 15 minutes, I again heard the "soundless voice", only much fainter:—

"I can't hear. Such a pity. I wonder if you heard me ..

. Packing . . . off tomorrow . . . so sorry I shall miss your letter . . . mother's health . . . Nelly has a cough, doctor advises change of air . . . off to Sudbury. So busy, tired, cannot do any more tonight, goodbye."

This was correct in as far as she could not hear me! But she did not attempt to tell me this. She was thinking of leaving, and was anxious about her mother's health—this I knew. It was *not* true that "Nelly" was ill, and the most extraordinary part of it was that neither she nor I nor "Nelly" knew that any such place as Sudbury existed. Afterwards I found it on the map to the south of Newmarket.

These are the only three occasions in my life when I have heard a voice, and they occurred the same week—Sept. 24th, 28th and 29th.

HERMIONE RAMSDEN.

### An Example of Psychometry.

An English lady living in Sweden has lately come to London. She sent me three letters to "psychometrize" for her. The first was a failure—it turned out to be a year old—the second was very successful, and the third was mixed with the others. I am only just beginning to practice psychometry, and I made the mistake of holding the three letters one after the other instead of allowing some hours to elapse between each. The second letter was as follows:—

"I see a house in ——— with snow on the roof. I see a church, characteristically Scandinavian in architecture, and I would not be surprised if this letter were from the daughter of a former English Chaplain at ———, or from one who often stays with them. *I get a name like 'Heddington' with a coronet.*

"The writer lives in a town and her outlook is upon chimneys. There is something connected with machinery, perhaps it is only a motor. She is not married, nor is she engaged. Her age is between 30 and 40. She is fairly energetic, but I do not think her energy results in much. She has no fixed occupation."

All this was correct, except the part underlined [part in



italics]. The lady was the daughter of a former chaplain at——. The church I described was not her father's church, but a Swedish church close to which her mother was buried. She had just come from San Francisco which might account for machinery. Age and other details correct.

The only weak point is that I naturally thought of the lady to whom the letter was addressed, in connection with—— and the English people residing there. But the postmark was English, and I knew nothing about the chaplain and his family.

But the really curious part of the whole thing is that the name "*Heddington*" with a coronet refers to the third letter, which was from Mrs. Hamilton King, the poetess, author of "*The Disciples*". Before her marriage she was a Baillie Hamilton, and Lord Haddington—hence the Earl's coronet—is the head of the family. I read "*The Disciples*" many years ago, and was not even aware that the author was still alive; there was certainly no reason why I should connect her with Sweden or with my friend. The letter was signed only by initials and I did not look at it until afterwards, when it conveyed nothing to my mind.

### 3. Questions Addressed to Miss Ramsden and Miss Miles.

1. Were you able to indicate in any cases how much time existed often between the time you got a fact and the time when she had been thinking of it? For instance, was the agent thinking of it at the time you got your impression, or, if not, how long after her thought did you get it? But I would like to know what relation to time the coincidence has in some cases.

2. If any more apparitions of the living occur, I would be pleased to have you inquire most carefully exactly where the person was at the time and what his relation to his environment,—whether in an exposed situation, danger, possible liability to danger, illness, etc.

3. Could you record some of the experiences which you say occur while your "brain is awake and the senses still dreaming?" These are hypnogogic in nature and they would

throw a flood of light on certain matters that I shall not now mention, for fear of making suggestions that I wish to avoid I should be greatly pleased by a large number of them, and if you know anyone else who can report similar experiences, I should appreciate their knowing my desire for the same.

4. Are there any resemblances between your mental impressions in your premonitions and those accompanying the telepathic coincidences recorded? That is, do you visualize them in the same way in both cases?

5. Could you adopt any means of making a verbatim record of a few experiences with Vango? If you could take a stenographer with you and make a record and have a few records made with other "sitters" in his case, I should be willing to pay the costs of the records.

6. You say you never felt a "recognized presence:" Do you feel any presence, at all? That is, do you feel unrecognized presences?

7. If you have had such feelings, how frequently, and do they occur at any stated times?

8. Can you find any special relation between your getting sleepy in telepathic experiments and the character of the message?

9. Have you ever obtained any evidence that the telepathic message was obtained earlier than its delivery or emergence in normal consciousness?

10. Do you ever have any feelings that you are influenced or guided in any actions by outside forces? That is, do you have any "intuitions" that seem to be intromitted from without to help you in any perplexing difficulties?

11. I should like to see a series of experiments like the one you mention of trying to get from Miss Miles the date of her sister's wedding. A whole series would be interesting, but they would not, if questions are asked and answered, illustrate the selective telepathy which I discussed. They would show an interesting psychological fact, but not the selective telepathy which has to be supposed in the Piper and similar cases to eliminate other hypotheses.

4. Miss Ramsden's Replies to above Questions.

Christiana, Norway, Jan. 9th, 1908.

Dear Professor Hyslop:

Miss Miles and I have now changed roles, she is to be percipient and I agent. We have had one success already. With regard to your questions:—

1. I do not think that *time* is of any importance; what is important is that the subject transferred is one that really has made an impression on the agent's mind. Our first attempts (see "Sphinx", etc.) were made at exactly the same time. The other times Miss Miles sent messages whenever something especially interested her, and this generally happened in the afternoon during the hours of 4 and 6, while I received the message at 7, if at all. But on one occasion last summer, in the series not yet published—[they have been published, however, since the writing of this letter, *Journal Eng. S. P. R.* Vol. XIII pp. 243-262]—Miss Miles was abroad with my mother, and at 5 o'clock I had a sudden and most vivid impression that they were in a church. This proved to be correct.

The difficulty in making experiments at any exact time is that we find it almost impossible to send a message except one that has reference to the subject which has been uppermost in the agent's mind all day.

2. I did make all the inquiries you suggest.

3. I have, as I have said, had all my senses hallucinated at different times in these hypnogogic experiences, (1) Seeing: in the cases already mentioned, and one other which occurred long ago. I awoke suddenly and saw a perfect circle of light and in it a colored picture of a cottage. With the eyes shut, I often see perfect pictures, but only twice were they telepathic, and that was owing, I think, to my having appointed a later hour (11 to 11.30 P. M.) to receive impressions from Miss Miles. These pictures I afterward drew and they will appear in the next series of experiments. [Cf. above reference.] (2) Hearing: I was on board ship, crossing from Hull to Christiana, after a very bad passage. In the morning I heard the anchors go down and two men talking at the door of my cabin, something to this effect: "How very annoying? Here we are stuck in the fog and goodness

knows only how many hours *or days* we may be anchored out here at the mouth of the fjord." Presently the stewardess came in and I asked when we should arrive. She looked astonished and said: "We *have* arrived, surely you heard the anchor being lowered?" Thus it was quite impossible that the conversation I heard can have taken place.

Another time at home, there was a storm in the night and I heard my sister in her room, next mine, making vain attempts to shut her window. I called out: "Can I help you?" to which she replied; "Not unless you let the horses loose"!! Next morning I asked what she had really said; she denied having said anything or having heard me, but it was quite true that she had struggled some time before she was able to shut the window.

(3) I have twice in my life had the unpleasant experience called "nightmare", feeling that a heavy weight, like a dog had jumped on to my bed.

Last year, I had been reading the account of some séances for materializations and suddenly I awoke and felt a child's hand in mine, (it was *not* my other hand asleep). There was sufficient daylight in the room for me to see that there was nothing, and then it "dematerialized" slowly. *None* of these experiences have ever startled me in the least. I was always sufficiently awake to criticize my sensations. I have asked other "psychics", but they all indignantly deny ever having had any "meaningless" experiences of this kind. They say they can always trace them to a telepathic origin, or prophetic, etc. The only explanation that I can think of is that they may be the *end* of dreams, altho I awake without having any recollection of having dreamt. I shall be very interested to know your opinion.

4. No. [Answer to fourth question.]

5. I am afraid I cannot manage it, because Vango enters into such very private matters of purely personal interest. On New Year's day, I went to a séance given by Ronald Brailey, another spiritualist and psychometrist. I gave no name, just walked in. He immediately began to talk on a purely personal matter and prophesied future events. I think he was entirely wrong with regard to time, but I am

told that no clairvoyant ever is correct with regard to dates. His description of persons and everything that could be read from my mind was absolutely correct, as with Vango; and he appeared to be *quite normal* all the time. What chiefly impressed me was that he asked *no questions* at all.

One curious point about Brailey is that what he told me then agrees exactly with what he wrote to a friend of mine last July, when she sent him a piece of my hair to psychometrize, only that the events he then foretold ought to be taking place *now*, whereas on New Year's Day he prophesied that they would take place between next July and December! I did [not] ask him to prophecy, nor did I indicate in any sort of way what I wished him to tell me. I expected him to describe people who have died as he was doing for others at the séance.

6. I have sometimes a disagreeable sensation of a "presence", as if a room was haunted, but I have no proof that it was not imagination.

7. I have it chiefly at my home. The house is not more than 45 years old, but has always had the reputation of being haunted. It is built on the site of former houses. A maid of my grandmother's is supposed to haunt one little back staircase. Her footsteps are often heard. A footman of ours who died of dipsomania about 7 years ago haunts the room in which he died and has often been seen, lately by a visitor's maid who mistook the apparition for a living man. It has been proved to me that no living person could have appeared at the window as she says he did. It is impossible to collect satisfactory evidence on this matter, as no servant would consent to sleep in the room again if it was proved, and that would be very inconvenient! I notice that whenever a house has the reputation of being haunted, there is always more than one "ghost", in fact nearly every one who subsequently dies in it, is said to haunt afterwards. I have never seen anything, nor felt anything *definite*.

8. No. [Answer to eighth question.]

9. No, but I feel quite sure that the message arrives at the time it is sent. It only emerges at 7 o'clock because I will it to do so.

10. I sometimes have a feeling compelling me to do certain things but I cannot recollect any special instance just now. I have *never* felt that any spirit was guiding or influencing me.

11. I will try when I have the opportunity, but Miss Miles must not know what it is that I wish to ask her; otherwise it would not differ much from our ordinary experiments.

When I wrote of the *externality* of certain impressions, I meant when I heard a voice, or saw a vision. Surely in so far as one is able to think of other thoughts at the same time, the vision or voice may be termed "external", altho it may be subliminal? Or a kind of double consciousness? When I heard the voice I had the feeling very strongly that some one was speaking to me.

By "day-dreams" I only meant letting one's thoughts wander. If I shut my eyes at any moment, I get my impressions like telepathic ones. Many people who are not the least psychic tell me that they always see pictures when they shut their eyes, or if they look in a crystal, but they can never trace any meaning in them.

Yours sincerely,  
HERMIONE RAMSDEN.

##### **5. Answers of Miss Miles to the same Questions.**

1. The first actual experience of thought transference dated from my first series of experiments with Miss Ramsden. I had never tried with anyone before. We succeeded at once. I am sure it was owing to her determination and then we were quite in touch with one another. She had always talked with me on occult subjects, for I have been so interested in them all my life. I had psychometrized letters for her for some years.

I have frequently received messages from some unknown sources to give to people in my surroundings, most often when I have been telling fortunes or psychometrizing for them. Occasionally when some one desires a message from one who is dead, I can frequently visualize the deceased person and a message is given me which I repeat to the inquirer. The person nearly always understands the message

however unintelligible it is to me, and the descriptions are generally quite correct. I can do this anywhere in broad daylight, and sometimes with the room full of people, as long as I can get away into a corner. The rest of the people are nothing to me. From constant practice I can so concentrate my mind that the rest of the world sinks into oblivion.

2. When I transmit messages no special condition is necessary. When once the mental telepathy has been established between Miss Ramsden and myself, it never seems to fail. We get impressions transmitted every day and sometimes messages seem to go when I am quite unaware of the fact, e. g., the transmission of subjects of conversation. During our first two series I felt Miss Ramsden's presence strongly. She never seemed to be away. Now during our last series just completed which has not been published, I did not feel her presence half so strongly. Sometimes we try without success for at those times we cannot get into touch with one another, nothing comes right. Then we stop altogether.

Referring to the conversation that took place at the meet between my brother and his friend Captain Spicer, the facts are just as related. I thought they would be of interest and I added them. Probably no casual observer would have noticed anything out of the common. I have known Captain Spicer all my life. My brother married his sister. The people I am constantly in touch with are quite accustomed to see me looking into space and are astonished at nothing I do in the occult line. Having hunted all my life from my home Burtonhill near Malmesbury with the Duke of Beaufort's hounds, I thought by gazing intently at the pack, that method might give force to the transmission of the image.

3. I always visualize so vividly that the images are quite like reality. They are often pictured in colors, wherever I look, all day long; especially coming events are so distinctly impressed on my mental vision, that they become a positive nuisance. Impressions of great events in my life occur with such persistency [that] I cannot [get] rid of the visions for days at a time. I see such events in crystals and water bottles as well as in other things. Once I tried with an ac-



quaintance and we both saw exactly the same visions. Miss Ramsden heard our description and took down notes at the time. Afterwards many of these events were verified. A frequent method is to ask questions and get answers in pictures.

4. I sleep so soundly that thunder storms take place without my being disturbed by them. I also have the faculty of sleeping at any moment I wish, for only ten minutes at a time, if necessary. My dreams are generally nonsense. Sometimes I have had dreams of coming events. They are generally very vivid. When they really mean anything I always know.

My Father and my Mother and my Uncle are liable to appear in my dreams when changes are overshadowed in my life.

5. I tried only once with Miss L——. She was agent and I was percipient. She thought of an oval. I saw this and nothing else. She is now dead. Professor Barrett is always telling me I must be percipient. I have just tried with Miss Ramsden and have had one success which will be published. I am going to continue to be percipient.

6. From my childhood I have had nothing else but psychic experiences. My friends found I was a good subject for being willed. I concentrated all my mind on what they wished me to do, made it a blank. They used to make me write letters, sing a song, pick out a certain book, and do all manner of things. This took place most frequently at Blaise Castle. My grandmother lived at Henbury. We used to spend some part of every summer there with her, and were frequently at Blaise spending afternoons there.

Later on we used to try table turning with such success that an immense table would move round and round with the greatest ease, one of my brothers and myself just touching on top. When I go home to Burtonhill I look in amazement at the weight and size of it.

We all went to Pau one winter. There I was always doing automatic writing. People used to come and consult, ask mental questions and they would get answers. One evening I remember in particular. To amuse the company

we tried table turning. My sister who was quite a child and myself touching it quite lightly. It was moving round so fast although two men sat on it. The extra weight made no difference. We could hardly keep pace with it. I was much amused to hear from her on her return to Pau, about fifteen years later, that they still talked of what took place in 1885.

In 1892, my Father died. We left Burtonhill for good, the first serious event in my life. The breaking up of my home and entire change of residence happening in one year brought out all the clairvoyant faculty that had been dormant.

Every night I seemed to get into a trance. Every morning I came down looking as if I had seen a ghost, till I got so wearied I longed for peace. In the day time the house would suddenly disappear. I would seem to see right through from one room to another.

Since that time I have been able to see in crystals, psychometrize letters or articles for people, tell fortunes at bazaars for my friends. It was in 1890 I first began to find water. Professor Barrett has all the records. He is very interested because I can visualize the spots first where the water is long before I come to it. But that faculty came on only about 1896, I should think, and now the rod is of very little use. I have found sovereigns for him under the carpet, seen them through the carpet. Frequently I see dead or living people around the inquirers, if a good deal of power is present. In 1892, when my father died, I saw my uncle quite distinctly. This was my first apparition of the dead.

Every event in my life I visualize beforehand. I told Professor Barrett what had happened to Miss H—— and described the kind of place where she was discovered, a fortnight after she disappeared. Her family were very anxious to know. A friend wrote me a letter asking whether she was dead or alive. I got answer immediately. All this was retailed to the family. The body was not found for two months later.

I have endless events all written down and evidenced, too numerous to mention.

A year ago, October, November and December, I was

constantly troubled with knockings on the furniture. Miss Ramsden, Professor Barrett and Miss L——, all heard them at different times. Knocks were evidently given for their edification because loud and soft ones were heard close to where we were sitting. They stopped after January and now they only recur when I have been feeling weird, as when I am sitting or talking to a strong medium.

The knocks occurred at intervals during the time I was doing telepathy. At night I would hear a sound that seemed to me like an incarnate spirit fairly trying to articulate something. This weird sound would continue on one note in a thin squeaky tone, rather like a vibration on a string or wire is the only way I can describe it. I have talked to other mediums and they know and have heard exactly similar sounds.

I have never sat with a professional medium, but I have sat with friends once with extremely good results. For instance a chair was pulled away from the table. I felt all the power was concentrated in myself. I could make the table do what I liked. I made it rise a foot off the floor. Also I made it come to me without contact. But the whole story is too long to write in detail. At both these sittings I became luminous. Sparks were seen coming out of my hands by nearly all present, I saw them myself. I have tried once or twice since, but nothing much happened.

For the first time in my life I have been ill this spring with an attack of influenza. But now I am better than I have ever been. I think those constant knockings in the previous autumn were meant as warnings. People have said to me when your fingers prick then the power is coming. Those are exactly the sensations I get when I turn tables and I get spasms from head to foot, sort of shocks. These I have always had, but they do not tire me. I am very strong physically and have never been in bed one day all my life till the illness above mentioned. I never knew what it was to feel tired or to have headaches, until my attack of influenza. When I am at all down then the powers fail. They are at their best when I am full of vitality and spirits, and at work

like painting, drawing, etc., doing things from morning till night.

7. I have never sat with a professional medium at a séance because I always have my doubts. I have gone to Vango who described my Mother and Uncle to the life, gave his name Thomas and told me all about their characteristics and what they did in life.

8. I cannot the least describe my sensations. When purposely sending a message I am thinking of it all day. There seems an invisible cord attached to Miss Ramsden. When the power is once fairly started she seems to get any message whether I am thinking of her or not. It seems to go on the whole time. Then as I have said before sometimes we cannot get into touch at all. I think that depends a great deal on whether we have anything on our minds or not.

9. I find when living intensely in my surroundings and doing something fresh every day that I like, there is no difficulty in sending ideas and messages, but to sit down at a stated time when you are not at all interested in your subject and try by force of will to convey an impression it is well nigh impossible. But I always notice that the more I visualize places when I am talking about them, the quicker Miss Ramsden gets the idea. You must either be intensely interested in your subject or visualize it a great deal. That is the reason I waited till I revisited Henbury, which I had not seen for nine years, before beginning my second series of telepathy, because I knew I should be living every moment of the day in my surroundings and be staying with very congenial people at Blaise Castle with whom I used to do the willing game years ago. That was most successful.

10. I am occasionally aware of a presence, but only when great events are coming or else when some one wishes to talk with any one on the other side. If I go into a haunted house or the Bridge of Sighs at Venice I can hardly stop there. At the last place I heard only one remark from all: "Pray for us". This was nearly twelve years ago. I saw people in Venice walking about in red medieval costume, I subsequently saw a painting in a gallery in which they had the same costumes.

**6. Second Set of Questions Addressed to Miss Ramsden.**

The reading of the paper in the Proceedings of the English Society in which Miss Miles and Miss Ramsden published their results in telepathic experiments led me to write to Miss Ramsden and to propound the following questions. The replies of Miss Ramsden will follow them.

1. How did you discover your telepathic power?
2. What was the type of phenomena that first appeared?
3. What is the nature of the impressions at the time?  
Are they simply internal mental states or are they apparent phantasms or images?
4. Do you dream or are you a sound sleeper? If you dream what is the nature of your dreams?
5. What is the general condition of your health, weight, and physical condition generally?
6. Is the capacity related to any accident in your life resulting in an injury, shock, illness, etc.?
7. Have you ever seen any apparitions of the living?
8. Have you ever seen any apparitions of the dead?
9. Have you ever had any premonitions?
10. Have you ever had any experiences in clairvoyance?
11. Have you ever heard a "voice", such as you mention in your account, other than on that occasion? If so describe the nature and frequency of it.
12. Was the "voice" in any way recognizable on that occasion?
13. Have you ever sat, or experimented, with a psychic? If so what were the results in detail?
14. Have you ever in your life been conscious of a presence about you?
15. Have you ever done any automatic writing? If not have you tried it?
16. Have you ever had any experiences or sensations as if you were out of your body?
17. Do you feel sensitive, agreeably or disagreeably, in the presence of others?
18. Have you ever been able to estimate character in some way not explicable to yourself?

19. What are your sensations at the time of the telepathic experiments?

20. Have you ever been in a trance?

21. Do you have to assume any special mental or physical condition in order to perform the experiments?

22. Have you good powers of concentration or attention that may easily lead to abstraction or absent-mindedness?

23. Are you an intense active mental temperament or calm, passive and restrained?

24. You refer to the transference as in some way related to sound. Can you specify more in detail what you mean and what the experiences are that are meant in this?

25. Were you conscious, at the time of the experiments, of any apparent assistance in the results?

26. Are you clearly conscious of your surroundings when experimenting, or do you seem to be apparently looking on something else?

27. Do you get sporadic impressions materially distinct in content from the main stream of consciousness and not explicable by association with it?

28. Had you any feeling like the intrusion of foreign thoughts during the experiments?

#### **7. Miss Ramsden's Answers to above Questions**

1. In 1904, I had one or two curious experiences of being able to read people's thoughts as though they had spoken them, but the facts are too long and too complicated to record in detail. In 1905, I read a book called "Thought Transference" by Northcote W. Thomas, in which the author said that there was great need of further experiments in thought-transference at a distance, and this gave me the wish to try. First I deliberately worked myself up into a state of faith by reading books on the subject, learned and unlearned without distinction. O'Hashnu Hara's course of lessons in telepathy were a great help, I remember especially her advice with regard to "letting the mind run down", i. e. instead of trying to suppress thoughts, just stop until they have exhausted themselves, then wait in expectation for the telepathic mes-

sage. The writer is a professional fortune-teller, and these lessons have since been published in volume form.

2. My first attempt was with a friend in Norway, the type of phenomena was much the same as in the later experiments, except that we tried sentences. The result of these experiments was more nearly allied to "hearing" than to "seeing". [Compare answers to questions 11 and 12.] I was very much surprised to find that what I received often consisted of fragments of sentences, and not ideas, except in a few cases, and hardly ever was the real meaning of the message understood by me. One day the impressions received were a letter "D", and the name of Ibsen's play "When we Dead Awaken". My friend had been reading an old letter from a relation of mine whose name began with D., it was written to her mother, both having died; she wished to impress me with the thought of how their acquaintance had led to our friendship. These experiments were done without any idea of publishing them, and we took no trouble to make them evidential.

3. My impressions are seldom vivid, except, in a few cases where the fact is especially mentioned. I close my eyes and wait for the "message", if none comes, I suggest to myself subjects of inquiry; when I know that Miss Miles is on a visit, I try to see the house and garden, and find out whether there were children. In a few cases, which were noted at the time, these attempts "to see" were rewarded by an actual vision, resembling the so-called "hypnagogical illusions which many people experience in the moments before going to sleep; but in these experiments they are never externalised, they are merely pictures seen with the eyes shut. At other times the visualization is no more than a shadow which only partially assumes a shape, the rest is imagined. Sometimes impressions can be received more freely by not trying to visualize at all, but allowing the imagination to have full sway, this was how I received the impression of the garden and surroundings of Blaise Castle, and the little bridge and steps which suggested "a Japanese landscape". They were no more "seen" with the eyes than we "see" a well-known



scene when we recall it to memory.\* I hope that I have succeeded in making my meaning clear, because the difference between these two ways of seeing is very great. The view of Blaise Castle itself was seen (with the eyes shut) as an actual picture, likewise the bridge on the Meuse, compare expt. 2, in the *Journal of the S. P. R.* for June, 1908. I have never had what I should describe as an external visual impression, except in the moments between sleeping and waking, but, on the other hand, in 1905, I heard a voice on three occasions in the middle of the day, while trying telepathic experiments. See answers to questions 11 and 12.

4. I am a sound sleeper; on the few occasions when I do dream, my dreams are usually impossible and absurd; I have a dream country, to which I return in my dreams, the same as when I was a child. There is a house with a room in it to which access can only be obtained by climbing up through the chimney, it is a most uncomfortable and unpleasant dream, but I know exactly how it originated: it began after reading a story of the French Revolution, in which some ladies concealed themselves up the chimney on one of those broad ledges which are still found in old houses.

I have had a few premonitory dreams. See answers to question 9.

5. Not very strong, but I have never had a serious illness. I do not suffer from "nerves". Weight: between ten and eleven stone. Height: 5 foot 8 inches.

6. No. The capacity for doing telepathic experiments was deliberately developed from motives of purely intellectual interest; but, on the other hand, I have found that the practice of telepathy tends to develop clairvoyance, and some friends of mine have had the same experience. (See enclosed account of "An externalised Vision of a lady, seen by Miss Tipping".)

7. Yes, in October, 1906. I awoke suddenly and saw a cousin, who had lately been staying in the house, sitting at a table near the window, apparently writing letters, with the

---

\* This method of obtaining impressions was suggested by reading "Seeing the Invisible", by James Coates, London. L. N. Fowler & Co. 1906.

moonlight shining full on him. My first feeling was one of surprise that he should be sitting in my room so unceremoniously; then, remembering that it was the middle of the night, and that he was in Ireland, I reflected that it must be a phantom and began to hope that he had not died. I shut my eyes and opened them again to make sure that I was not dreaming, he was still there, but gradually became transparent and then faded away. At the time of the vision a number of thoughts rushed through my brain. I had an indescribable feeling that there was *no presence* in the room, that I was alone, that it would be useless to speak to it. I wrote next day to his wife, although I felt sure that all was well, and she replied that there was no reason for the apparition, he had neither been thinking, nor, as far as he could remember dreaming of me.

A week later, I had another vision of the same kind, I awoke suddenly and saw an Irish harp hanging from the ceiling near the window.\* It was hanging by a string. It was the night of Oct. 29th-30th, 1906, and one of the impressions which I believed (erroneously, as it turned out,) that I had received from Miss Miles the evening before, was a harp. Two months later, I attended a dark séance for the first time in my life at the rooms of the London Spiritualist Alliance. Some "magic powder" was burnt, and other people saw visions, I saw nothing. But one lady saw a harp. I draw no conclusions from this, but merely state it as a curious coincidence.

In June, 1907, I awoke suddenly and saw a sponge bag hanging by a string from the ceiling in the light of the dawn. I fully realised the absurdity of the vision, and laughed, when it gradually grew transparent and faded as the other visions had done. The only explanation which seems to me at all satisfactory is that we sometimes wake by degrees; in my case the brain wakes, while the senses are still dreaming. I have had all my five senses hallucinated at different times in these moments between sleeping and waking, but never more

\* "Seen and Unseen", by E. Katherine Bates. Greening & Co. 1907. On p. 47 the author describes a vision in which she saw a bird at the end of a perpendicular string.

than one sense at a time. The instant I call another sense (than the one which is hallucinated) into activity the vision disappears. I have heard conversations which have never taken place, yet believed myself to be fully awake at the time; and I once felt a child's hand in mine, which dissolved into nothing while I held it.

I never found that these experiences were telepathic or of any psychic interest until June, 1909, when I saw the white light, and on that occasion I *knew* that the vision had a deeper significance.

8. No, never.

9. Yes, I have had several premonitory dreams, the first took place when I was sixteen years of age, I dreamed that I saw a man who was unknown to me lying dead in his bed. This was followed by some confused dreaming, after which it seemed that my French governess said to me; "Look at my hair, it has turned quite white!"—That night her father died suddenly of heart failure, and when she returned to us six weeks later, almost her first words to me were those of my dream.

In January or February, 1905, I dreamed that I was alone in Venice, walking by the side of a small canal, following a dark man who was an utter stranger into a restaurant in the middle of the night, and feeling rather frightened. This dream was fulfilled to the letter, I had a series of mishaps on the journey owing to the railway strike (April 1905), I arrived at 12 P. M. at Venice, was not met at the station as had been arranged, did not get a letter from the friend who had promised to engage a room for me, had never been to Venice before in my life, was unable to speak the language, had eaten nothing since the morning, found room in a small hotel with great difficulty, all hotels being crowded owing to the strike, and was obliged to go to a restaurant—following the waiter—at 1 a. m. At the time I recognised the canal and the door of the restaurant and had a strange feeling of its having happened before, then I suddenly remembered my dream.

Since then I have had many premonitory dreams, of a more or less symbolic character, which have been only too truly fulfilled.

10. It is difficult to fix a boundary between telepathy and clairvoyance, it seems to me that all psychic phenomena have a tendency to merge into one another, but I have had several successes, and also many failures, in what is called "psychometry", i. e. holding an article and describing the owner and scenes from his or her surrounding.

11. In 1905, I heard a voice three times in the same week, while I was doing my preliminary experiments in thought-transference, the account of which I sent you. I have never heard a voice before or since, although I have often tried to hear one.

12. The first day it was the voice of a friend at Copenhagen whom I had asked to experiment with me. It sounded perfectly natural, just like a voice through the telephone calling me by name, and saying in Danish: "Speak a little louder, I cannot hear . . . . your invisible wires." I interpreted the missing words to be: "there's something wrong with your invisible wires". I cannot describe how vivid it was, I could hear by the amused tone of voice that he thought it was silly nonsense. I could not obtain any satisfactory corroboration from that friend, so I tried with a lady who was living at Newmarket, of that you have the account in full. On those two last occasions it was a "soundless voice" that I heard, like a little whisper all on one note, it seemed quite close and at the same time it sounded a hundred miles off. To one who hears it for the first time it is a most impressive experience.

Compare "Phantasms of the Living", Vol. I. p. 134, note Miss Weale's account of having heard the voice of Dr. Pusey. For other instances of a *recognised* voice, see Vol. II. pp. 103, 105, 122-3.

For other instances of the "soundless voice", read Rev. P. H. Newnham's experience, Vol. I. p. 481. This phenomenon is also mentioned in Du Prel's "Philosophy of Mysticism".

13. I have often experimented with psychics, but although the results were very good, the only occasion on which I obtained really convincing proof was that following the vision of the white light. At other times, accurate des-

criptions have been given of persons who have died, but this is to my mind no proof of spirit communication because I have often received equally accurate descriptions of living friends whose letters, or other articles belonging to them I have handed to a psychic for that purpose. I have made some careful experiments of this kind, and with professional mediums, also with Miss Miles. In experimenting with the latter, I collected a number of articles such as pens, thimbles, safety pins, watch chains, from relations and servants, allowing her to choose one while I sat on the other side of a screen, our object being to test whether I should be able to recognise the owner of the articles from her description, and also whether her knowledge was really gained through contact with the article, and not through reading my mind. The result was quite satisfactory, she not only gave accurate descriptions of the owners, but also detailed information of which I was entirely ignorant, but was afterwards able to verify. Cf. vision of white light, p. 712.

In the case of really good, professional mediums, I have never come across one who made a mistake as to whether the writer of a letter, or owner of an article were alive or not, but when, at their request, I began asking questions, I generally found that the result was mainly due to thought-reading, the answers given being those which I expected, however incorrect they afterwards proved to be. I have often observed that psychics unconsciously blend the impressions which they receive from the sitter with those which they believe that they have received from a discarnate mind.

14. Yes, but only very seldom.

In my dreams as a child, there used to be another kind of presence, scarcely spiritual, but more like a second self, and I have felt the same mysterious presence in my waking hours, both then and since. In dreams it acts as interpreter, giving explanations, often nonsensical, to the impossible happenings or dream-life. In waking hours it comes but seldom, but when it comes, it professes superior knowledge and power to foretell the future, it is not always friendly, but comes with mocking words in moments of acutest sorrow when the brain is over-fatigued.

15. I have often tried automatic writing, and failed: I have also tried writing down impressions as they come into my head, some people consider this method as good as automatic writing, but I dislike doing it, because the writing generally consists in prophecies of evil to come, and the proportion of truth to falsehood is about 50 per cent.

My experience of psychic phenomena as a whole is that the *externalised* impressions, such as automatic writing, hearing voices, and seeing visions, etc., are just as liable to be wrong as the other kind of impressions which are not externalised.

16. No, never. I wish that I had.

17. Yes.

18. Yes.

19. Quite normal; I sometimes become sleepy, but when I do so, it does not mean that the experiment is more successful, but often the reverse.

I believe that the only thing required for a successful telepathic experiment is *intense concentration*,\* combined, of course, with faith. Encouragement is essential.

20. No, but in my younger days I used often to have suddenly a strange feeling as if I was not really there; it was not a physical sensation, like fainting, it was only a feeling of terrible unreality. I had to make a supreme effort to bring myself back to normal consciousness by saying: "It is *me*, it is really *me*, I am really here, etc., etc." If other people were there, I felt ashamed if they passed remarks, as they often did, asking what was the matter and why I looked so pale, yet I was perfectly able to go on talking and acting in the usual way, even while the sensation lasted, which it never did for more than about two minutes. After that I "came back". I often wondered whether, if I "let myself go" I should find myself out of the body altogether, and I determined to try next time, but when the opportunity came, I was as incapable of doing so, as I imagine a drowning man would be incapable of not struggling in the water.

I never have the feeling now.

---

\* See "Raja Yoga", by Swami Vivekananda. New York: Longmans.

21. No, except that I find that it is fatal to the success of the experiments if I have been giving my whole mind to something else just before, especially if I have been looking at pictures, as these are apt to repeat themselves on the closed lids and may easily be mistaken for telepathic impressions. When I am in practice I need only close the eyes for a few minutes and the impression comes at once, but in the beginning it was very different. I pictured to myself consciousness as existing in three layers: first, normal consciousness, then dream consciousness, when all idle thoughts come and go, leaving impressions which are difficult to distinguish from genuine telepathic messages. Lastly, universal consciousness, which I thought of as a great, calm sea, existing deep, deep down, where all is One. Thoughts of this kind are certainly a great help, although the reason may only be that they help to concentrate the attention. I have sometimes experienced a feeling of having become one with the friends with whom I was experimenting—of seeing with their eyes and hearing with their ears—it lasted only for a mere fraction of a second, but, whenever it occurred, the experiment was more than usually successful.

22. I am not absent-minded in the ordinary way, but when I am deeply engaged in reading or writing, it is as disagreeable to me to be spoken to, as to be suddenly awakened from sleep. As a child, I was very absent-minded.

23. I have always been under the impression that my mental temperament is extremely active, but my friends consider me peculiarly calm and passive.

24. Nothing further is meant than the *idea* of sound: in Expt. 1. (*Proceedings*, Part LIV.) I got the impression of the S sound, also Sph. as in the word "Sophia". In Expt. 2. there was an impression of sound combined with an association of ideas, viz. "Luzac", this was an attempt to get at the word "Luxor", which in its turn ought to have suggested the Sphinx. Compare this with the second experiment in the second series, p. 75 when I got the nonsense word "latme", followed by Latimer, which successfully led up to the word Bishop.

25. Yes, in the above-mentioned expts. especially, I felt



as if "something" were trying very hard to help me, this feeling was strongest on the occasion when I heard the voice. I believe it to be the Subliminal Self, in some way connected with what Du Prel, in his "Philosophy of Mysticism", describes as "the sundering of the ego" in dreams, when it often happens that "something", or an invisible "some one" speaks and explains things. Compare my answer to question 14. It is probably a minor development of what a medium would call his "spirit guide", but I find myself unable to accept that interpretation of it.

26. I am no less conscious of my surroundings while experimenting, than I am while reading an interesting book; there is nothing abnormal in the condition.

27. I do not quite understand this question. I often get sudden ideas, but I believe them to be my own, unless otherwise specified. I have, in the course of my life, had a few quite spontaneous messages from friends at a distance who were thinking of me, but not otherwise trying to impress me. The experiments in telepathy have made me very sensitive to impressions of this kind.

On one occasion recently, while writing a letter to the sister\* of a very dear friend of mine who died three years ago, I seemed suddenly to hear my friend say, in just her own natural manner: "I do *wish* you would write to —", naming an old lady with whom I was not in the habit of corresponding regularly. I wondered why she wanted me to write to her, and then I got the faint impression that she was ill, so I wrote — just an ordinary, friendly letter. Four days later, I received an answer. The old lady was in great trouble, her favourite brother was dying of the same illness of which my friend had died, and she thought I knew, and had been thinking me very unkind not to have written before.

The message came like a thought, there was no voice, although clearly worded, but that peculiar stress on the word "*wish*" had been eminently characteristic of her.

28. During the experiments, I always have a number of nonveridical impressions, as you will have seen; it is possible

---

\*The sister knew nothing about the old lady and her brother's illness so it was not telepathy from her.

that some of these are not as silly as they appear, they may be impressions from other sources. I have sent you an account of the only occasion on which I received a fairly intelligible message from an unknown source. See explosion at Aldershot, p. 710.

After answering these questions, I should like to add that I am often six months without having psychic experiences of any kind, and that before the commencement of the telepathic experiments I scarcely ever had any at all.

#### **An Externalised Vision of a Lady, seen by Miss Tipping.**

The following account of a vision seen by Miss Tipping is of peculiar interest because it points to the conclusion that the practice of telepathic experiments is apt to induce other forms of clairvoyance. Miss Tipping has never had any experience of the kind before, but during the last four months she had been making experiments with her sister; in a letter to Miss Ramsden dated March 20th, 1911, she writes as follows:

"We have made experiments at a distance and they are generally correct, I have preserved some of them for you to see. I followed your suggestion of conveying news, which was fairly good, but it was rather more difficult to connect the ideas. We are now trying words, and they come very well, but it is so curious to get them backwards sometimes.

"My sister had a curious experience the other night which I think rather interesting. We were reading—or rather I was reading aloud, when she started and said: "Did you see that?" I replied, "What?" Then she said: "I saw a lady dressed in blue silk with black stripes running round, not down, and the dress was made very full at the waist. She was tall, with brown hair, a lovely complexion, and appeared to be reading. But the curious part was that she came through the bureau, passed by me, turned and looked, and then passed out through the wall at the back of me".

The house in which this vision was seen was built in Queen Anne's reign, I never heard of it being haunted. It

was also used as a Writers' Club which Thackeray, Dickens and many men of note frequented.

**K. Tipping.**

**8. Second Set of Questions Addressed to Miss Miles.**

1. In the telepathic experiments with Miss Ramsden, did you merely feel her presence or did you *see* her, to use that expression? If so, or whatever the source of the impression, please to give as many details as possible.

2. Do you ever feel as if you were out of your body?

3. Do you feel in any way aided, as it were, when the telepathic experiments go on? That is, do you feel any other presence than Miss Ramsden?

4. If you see; that is, have an apparition of Miss Ramsden, is it clear, or does it seem obscure and filmy?

**9. Answers of Miss Miles to above Questions.**

1. I had a general impression of her presence at the other end of the line, but I did not see her, whilst I was sending the messages. To do that you must be in a sympathetic condition with the person who is receiving them.

2. I did not feel out of the body at the time. But I have known what the sensation is at other times on occasions when I have been much strung up. Once or twice I have appeared to friends when I have been thinking of them very much. But this has always been without my knowledge.

3. Knocks come during telepathic experiments and I always associate them with helping presences, but I do not identify them.

4. See answer to Question 2.

**10. More Recent Experiments.**

During these last series of experiments with Miss Statkowski we adopted quite a different method of transmission of ideas and we found that it answered perfectly. Miss Statkowski said she was always too tired of an evening to be percipient, so I told her to look and get into a receptive mood at ten o'clock the next morning. I soon found that

it was quite unnecessary that I should think of her at ten o'clock as well. I forgot all about it. I found that this made no difference. When once the idea had been fixed on by me and projected, as it were, the percipient could grasp it whenever she liked, even so long afterward as the next day, but it had to be early in the morning before further ideas had been thought of by me.

I

59 Egerton Gardens, October 2d, 1908.  
Postmark Chelsea, 12.15 P. M., 39th, 1908.

I went to the British Museum, saw the room containing the mummies brought from Egypt. Also the mummified cats, dogs and lambs. The room seemed full of spectres and ghosts. I was glad to get away.

**Miss Statkowski's Independent Statement.**

9 Queens Square, October 2nd.

A woman's face with something white on her head: a folded embroidered towel, like some Italian Contadina, an old picture.

T. S.

Postmark, London, W. C., 2.15 P. M. Oct. 3, '08 B.

**Miss Miles' Supplementary Notes.**

There is a very curious kind of mummy incased in a kind of square stone coffin. It has its knees drawn up right under its chin. This was a change in the posture to all others and interested me much. I am sure it was this mummy that suggested the opposite drawing in Miss Ramsden's letter to me.

**Miss Ramden's Statements.**

4th Oct., Bulstrode, Gerrard's Cross, Bucks.

Dearest Clarisse:

What is the special thing you said you were going to do on Friday? Last night I was *forced* to think of you and got quite excited when I saw the sun with rays shining full upon a naked foot sticking up in a tub. Cf. Fig. I.

**Miss Ramsden's Supplementary Statement.**

Miss Miles, Miss Statkowski and I had been trying for about a week to obtain cross correspondence, Miss Miles being the agent. My attempts had been entirely unsuccessful and consequently I became very impatient and unwilling to continue the experiments. I wrote this letter on Sunday, Oct. 4th, 1908.

Hermione Ramsden.

**Miss Miles' First Statement.**

59 Egerton Gardens, October 3d, 1908.

Postmark Chelsea, 12.15 A. M., October 5th, 1908.

I went to a photographic exhibition: you would most probably see curious birds on their nests.

**Miss Statkowski's Statement.**

9 Queens Square, October 3d, 1908.

Postmark London, W. C., 1 A. M., Oct. 5th, 1908.

A luminous ball, sphere or planet like some planet seen through a telescope: thick darkness around. Very dark black forest. Then the luminous thing appearing again. I felt a cold wind coming from this black forest.

**Miss Miles' Supplementary Statement.**

I looked a long time at some photos of the planets through a stereoscope. I pictured to myself how cold and uninviting they looked for habitation and wondered if any mortal beings were there.

III

**Miss Miles' Original Statement.**

59 Egerton Gardens, January 27th, 1909.

Postmark Chelsea, 5.15 P. M. January 29th, 1909.

I went to Broadoaks to see my sister, Mrs. Geoffrey Lubbock for the day. I wanted to see my nephew a fortnight old. There was such an awful fog in returning. I left Byfleet at 5.50. Never reached Waterloo till 8.30. The trains

were stopped on every line by the darkness. Foghorns were being let off every minute. I only hoped there would not be an accident. People were craning their necks out of the carriages to see ahead. The fog was like a thick blanket everywhere. [Forgot to be posted yesterday.]

**Miss Statkowski's Statement.**

9 Queens Square, January 27th, 1909.

Postmark London, W. C., 8.30 P. M. Jan. 28, '09 B.

Something large and black. A railway engine. Several black cannons standing on a battery or fortifications with smoke above them. Battle or way. Anxious officers looking into the distance.

**Miss Miles' Supplementary Statement.**

The fogs all over England were terrible just then. This was about as bad a one as I ever remember. I came by tube from Waterloo to Brompton Road, so there was no difficulty in reaching 59 Egerton Gardens from the London end of the journey.

**Mrs. Geoffrey Lubbock's Confirming Statement.**

January 27th, 1909, Broadoaks, West Byfleet, Surrey.

My sister Clarisse came to see me for the day from London. She left by the 5.50 train in a thick fog.

**Marguerite Lubbock.**

IV

**Miss Miles' First Statement.**

59 Egerton Gardens, January 30th, 1909.

Postmark Chelsea, 12.15 A. M., 1 Feb., 1909.

In the evening I went to Covent Garden opera to see Siegfried. It interested me much as I had never seen it before. My seat was in the Amphitheatre Stalls. You might have seen Mémé the man with long shaggy hair, or the dragon in the cave with fiery eyes and smoke issuing from its nostrils. The awakening of Brünhilde by Siegfried was very fine.

**Miss Statkowski's Statement.**

9 Queens Square, Saturday night, Jan. 30th, '09.

A whirling through space at tremendous speed. Wind clouds. A broad landscape seen from high in bird's view, hills, fields, small forests of pine trees. A flight in a balloon. T. S.

Postmark London, W. C., 2.15, Feb. 1, '09 B.

V

**Miss Miles' Statement.**

Hotel Mercedes, Fountainbleau, June 2nd, 1909.  
(At Hotel Meurice, Paris: written next day at Fountainbleau.)

Postmark Fountainbleau. Illegible date.

A bird's eye view of Paris, Seine and bridges in foreground. Eiffel Tower and large wheel in the distance.

**Miss Statkowski's Statement.**

9 Queens Square, 2, May '09. [Error for June.]

I saw something like that, a whole sea of tree tops covering the slope of a steep hill and house or castle at the top. Then a large white butterfly, shiny and silver white. A lot of strings or rays coming from a round centre. Can't make it out. T. S.

**Miss Miles' Supplementary Statement.**

The postcard is directed to the Hotel Oxford and Cambridge, Paris, where I was staying with my friend Miss Cust. It was redirected from there to Hotel Mercedes, Fountainbleau. Postmark London, June 3, 12 P. M. [1909.]

The wheel is represented by the disk and rays. The hill described is the one seen in the distance overlooking Paris surmounted by a church. This looks like a castle against the skyline. I had bought a number of hat pins at the Louvre in the morning. Some had shiny butterflies on them. These hat pins with various insects on them were the rage in Paris at the time.



**Confirmatory Statement by the Girl who was with Me.**

Clarisse and I had tea on the roof of the Hotel Meurice. There is a tea garden and the drawing on Miss Statkowski's card is exactly like the corner of the roof where we were sitting. Cf. Fig. II.

**Adelaide P. Cust.**

**VI**

**Miss Miles' First Statement.**

59 Egerton Gardens, June 10th, 1909.

Postmark illegible.

I went to the Horse Show at Olympia. Coaches and jumping formed part of the programme. My seat was exactly opposite a bank of red roses: also a large basket of flowers. After the performance I walked round the stables and looked at the team of Suffolk Punches, the high jumps that cleared 7-4, the darling little Shetland Ponies in their miniature boxes.

**Miss Statkowski's Statement.**

9 Queens Square, June 11th, '09.

Postmark London, W. C., 1.15 P. M. June 11, '09.

A cave or entrance into a tunnel between high rocks like the gorge at El Kantara going to Biskra. The whole thing trembles like a cinematograph. High rocks: something huge, either huge ruins, Egyptian Temple or some weird natural straight rocks. Tiny white figures moving about.

**S. Statkowski.**

**Miss Miles' Supplementary Statement.**

The cave or entrance into a tunnel exactly coincides with the entrance to Olympia. The tan and sand seen everywhere might have suggested the desert. The natural straight rocks must have been the high jumps obstacles. Tiny white figures moving about and the whole thing trembling like a cinematograph is a very good description of the scene.

VII

**Miss Miles' First Statement.**

59 Egerton Gardens, June 22nd, [1909.]

Postmark Chelsea, 5.15 P. M., 23, June, 1909.

A. I went a journey into the country with my sister, Mary Coventry, to see the family lawyer at Malmesbury about her affairs. We sat in a small room, many papers and documents about. Then we went to the bank and saw Mr. Daswell. Finally had tea at the Kings Arms before returning to town. We arrived at 10.10 Paddington.

**Miss Statkowski's Statement.**

9 Queens Square, June 23d, 1909.

Postmark London, W. C., 6 P. M. June 23d, '09 A.

B. The inside of a round or octagonal Church, a hall made of big grey stones, mediæval looking. I hear singing measured and grand like a choir. Cf. Figs. III and IV.

**Tamara Statkowski.**

**Miss Miles' Supplementary Statement.**

The round octagonal Hall must be the market Cross. The glorious old Abbey is quite close. It is used every Sunday. The whole of Malmesbury is mediæval looking.

The card A shows that Miss Miles had gone to Malmesbury on the day June 23d.

The B card refers to mediæval things and to an octagonal building. One of the buildings at Malmesbury is as picture. The interior of Malmesbury Abbey is shown in another picture.

**II. Experiments by Miss Ramsden and Miss Statkowski.**

In 1909, we tried a series of experiments which lasted from Aug. 19th to Sept. 3d. I was at Kissingen in Bavaria, and Miss Statkowski was staying at Market Harborough. In the course of this long series there were only four doubtful successes, the rest were failures. We were very anxious to succeed, and I am quite unable to account for our failure. I

was acting as agent, and there was no lack of subjects to impress the imagination. On one of the occasions which I consider a partial success, I attended the Sunday morning service in the Russian church (to which Miss S. belongs), and wondered whether she would recognize it from her impressions. Her description was as follows: "Sunday, Aug. 22nd, '09. A heavy downpour of rain, like a curtain or veil, high green trees seen through it. (Correct.) A gothic doorway and high arches." ("Gothic" is singularly incorrect.)

The next day, when I was thinking of something quite different, she wrote:

"Monday, Aug. 23d, '09. A tall man, like an Oriental, with a turban and long drapery falling from the turban over his shoulders down to the ground. A white mass of something, can't see what. Either a lot of white snow, or a lot of white drapery. A black, solitary cross in the middle of it."

The priest wore green and gold over white. There was a large cross but it was gold.

The three following cases were not considered "up to our usual standard of publication", but in my own opinion they are peculiarly interesting, although the circumstances under which they took place do not admit of further corroboration.

## I

In June and July, 1907, a long series of experiments took place between Miss Sybil Blunt (as agent), living at Salisbury and afterwards at Beaconsfield, Bucks, and Hermione Ramsden (percipient), at Ardverikie, Kingussie, Scotland. There was not a single real success in the whole series, but there were two very curious incidents, one in connection with Miss Blunt's sardonix ring, the other in connection with an explosion which took place at Aldershot.

These experiments were undertaken with the intention of transferring words, i. e. proper names, instead of visual impressions.

Monday, June 24th, 1907.

The word which Miss Blunt thought of was "Bryans-ton".

Miss Ramsden's impressions were as follows:

"7 P. M. I felt you were thinking of me at  $\frac{1}{4}$  to 7.

The Latin name of a flower, reddish brown in colour. Onyx or od. x. oxonifolia, four? larynx. All this is a single impression, it must be a word beginning with O., organic." etc. There were several other words but all incorrect.

Note by H. R. "The same evening I received a copy of "The Westminster Gazette" for Sat. June 22nd which a friend happened to send me, and in it I discovered a poem signed "Sardonyx". At the sight of this word I had the peculiar feeling of recognizing it, and immediately jumped to the conclusion that Miss Blunt had written the poem and had tried to transfer the word "Sardonyx" to me. I did not know that it was the name of a precious stone.

Miss Blunt writes in corroboration as follows:

"Beechcroft, Beaconsfield, Bucks.

"On June 25th, 1907, I received a post-card from Miss Ramsden, dated Monday, June 24th, on which were a number of telepathic impressions, amongst them "onyx". The next day I received a letter from her, mentioning a poem out of the Westminster Gazette, signed "Sardonyx". She asked me if I had written it, as she seemed to "recognize" the word.

On Saturday, June 8th, I lost a signet Sardonyx ring that I treasured very much as it belonged to an aunt of mine who had the same initials as myself. Miss Ramsden did not know this, neither did she know that I had a Sardonyx ring.

Sybil A. Blunt."

Note by H. R.

Miss Blunt and I had only met two or three times before beginning these experiments, we were therefore not at all well-acquainted at that time.

The following post-card from Miss Ramsden is dated Saturday, July 13th, "A ring like a man's signet ring, with a square stone. I think you have found your Sardonyx ring."

To this Miss Blunt replied:

"On Saturday I did not find my ring as you say, but I went back for the first time since I lost it to the place where I fear I left it! This is rather wonderful, don't you think? S. A. B."

Towards the end of the summer the ring was found on a garden path at Miss Blunt's own home.

## II

On Tuesday, July 9th, 1907, during this same course of experiments, H. R. sent the following on a post-card to Miss Blunt:

"T. Kailey-Thompson or Cavey, Cavie Thompson. Dynamite. Gunpowder explosion arrow shot. Aldershot?"

"*The Tribune*", of the same date, contained the following:

### REMARKABLE MISHAP AT ALDERSHOT.

#### Soldiers injured by an explosion.

"While the troops of the third Infantry Brigade were engaged yesterday in demolition exercises at Frith Hill, Aldershot, an explosion of an unexpected character occurred with serious consequences.

"The troops, some thousand in all, had been paraded to witness the Royal Engineers of the Brigade demolish a portion of a field work by undermining and blowing up. Brigadier-General Campbell was in command, and had the men drawn up about a thousand yards away from the scene of operation.

"Whether it was that a new explosive was being used, or whether it was the manner in which the mine was laid, has not transpired, but, to the surprise of all, the force of the explosion, instead of being downwards or upwards, as was expected, was expended in a lateral direction, scattering stones and debris among the troops, many of whom were hit by the flying missiles. . . . . It was found that ten soldiers were hurt. . . . ."

#### Note by H. R.

I am quite aware that this case is not strictly evidential

because I received the impression on the day when the account of the explosion appeared in all the papers. But I was living at a place in Scotland where we do not get our papers until after 5 p. m. I wrote this at about 6.30 or 7 p. m. The only newspaper brought to me was a London paper of the day before, i. e., "*The Tribune*" of July 8th, while the "*Scotsman*" for the day was never brought into the room where I sat, until after dinner, at about 9 p. m. It was then that I read the account of the explosion for the first time. My post-card to Miss Blunt was already in the letter box.

But the chief interest of this case lies in the fact that Miss Blunt denied all knowledge of the explosion, and her "message" had been something quite different. Now the question arises, from whom did I receive the impression? Did Miss Blunt read the account of the explosion—possibly on a board advertising the contents of one of the daily papers, in which case it may have failed to reach her normal consciousness,—or was some one else the unconscious agent? I incline to the former supposition. The impression evidently did not come from the scene of action, as it occurred the day before, and I was not acquainted with any one at Aldershot. We looked carefully through the Army List but although there were many Thompsons, we failed to discover a name like Cavey or Kailey, the nearest was Paley, a captain of that name was at Aldershot on the 7th of August following, I do not know if he was present at the explosion.

### III

The following was a successful attempt to obtain knowledge from another person's mind, without having previously suggested an experiment of the kind.

On Monday, August 31st, 1908. I was at Bulstrode, Gerrard's Cross, Bucks, when my mother left in the early morning to join Miss Miles in Belgium. She was expected to arrive at Ostend at 8 p. m. In the evening a sudden and very violent storm arose which caused us considerable anxiety. At 11 p. m. I concentrated my mind in the same way as I am in the habit of doing during telepathic experi-

ments, I thought of my mother and tried to get an impression of the thought uppermost in her mind at the time, hoping thereby to ascertain whether she had arrived safely at her destination. The result was that I suddenly saw, as in a flash, on my closed eyelids, a very vivid picture of a very ugly bunch of flowers, squeezed into a round shape rather like a pincushion, and this vision was accompanied by a feeling of intense weariness and irritation. I would have preferred to see a cab with luggage on the top, or the interior of a hotel, but it was impossible to get any further impressions, so I consoled myself with the thought that my mother could not be in any danger if this were the thought uppermost in her mind. I wrote to her the next day, but my letter has unfortunately been lost, the following is her reply:

Post-card from Lady Guendolen Ramsden:

"I laughed over the bunch of flowers! Quite true, there was a bunch painted on the can that made me so angry that that evening and next morning, although feeling ill, I kept remarking how *hideous* it was, so unsuitable, and such waste of energy and money which might have been spent on cleanliness. Lovely weather now. Sept. 8th."

I have often tried experiments of this kind, both before and since, but, as in this case, the results are of such a trivial nature that they seldom admit of proof, also I find that the desire to obtain an impression must be very great, otherwise the experiment is not likely to succeed. H. R.

### A SIMULTANEOUS VISION OF A WHITE LIGHT.

From my Diary, June 11th, 1909.

I lunched with Tamara Statkowski at her club in Queen's Square, and met Mr. King. While we were talking, he described a very beautiful, fair-haired girl whom he saw standing beside me, she seemed to say "Emilie". I told him that I never had a friend of that name who died.

June 14th. (I was at home, 20 miles from London.)

At 12.15 p. m. as I was falling asleep, I was suddenly aroused by a very brilliant white light which fell in a slant across my room from the ceiling to the ground, where it



seemed to gather into a shape, but it was gone in a flash before I could see what sort of shape it had. I immediately thought of Mr. King, and felt convinced that he knew about it. I then got up, fetched pencil and paper, and wrote down what I had seen because I wished to convince myself next morning that it had not been a common dream. Cf. answer to question 13, p. 695.

June 16th.

I went to Clarisse Miles' tea-party in London, and knowing that she had invited Mr. King, I told her about my vision in order that she might be witness that I had seen the white light before he told me of it, as I knew he would. I said that I should not mention it to him until he had told me all about it. Clarisse was not at all impressed by my story and said she did not suppose that Mr. King had anything to do with it, and that he had written to say that he did not think he would be able to come. I said: "I know he will come, and I *know* he will tell me about the white light".

At about 6 o'clock, Mr. King arrived, and his first words to me were: "I have got a message for you. A few nights ago, I had been sitting up rather late, suddenly I saw you and the same beautiful fair-haired girl was standing beside you, and a very pure white light came down and enveloped you, then it assumed a corkscrew shape and was slowly drawn upwards."

I then told Mr. King that I also had seen a white light at a quarter past twelve on Monday night, the 14th. In answer, he drew out his pocket diary and showed me the page, Monday, 14th on which he had made a note of his vision.

Mr. King advised me to try to obtain the actual message through Julia's Bureau, but hitherto I had not been able to identify the young girl, and it was necessary to obtain something which had belonged to her, in order to establish direct communication.

On the 18th I went to Scotland, and gradually the knowledge dawned upon me as to whom it was.

On Tuesday, December 14th I was given the message through Vango. Further details are too private for publication, I will only add that the message contained facts of

which I was entirely ignorant, but which were fully explained and verified before the end of the year.

**Hermione Ramsden.**

To the best of my belief, the facts, recorded below, are as stated by Miss Hermione Ramsden.

**Robert King.**

The facts here stated are quite correct.

**Clarisse Miles.**

### **SIGNIFICANT COMPLICATIONS OF THESE TELEPATHIC PHENOMENA.**

**By James H. Hyslop.**

The English Society published a number of telepathic experiments by Miss Miles and Miss Ramsden (*Journal* Vol. XII pp. 223-232; Vol. XIII pp. 243-262, and *Proceedings* Vol. XXI pp. 60-93). They are the first large series of experiments that exhibited marginal phenomena of any considerable importance. By marginal phenomena I mean incidents associated with the main idea transmitted but no part of the intention of the agent or communicator. They are the first elaborate reports of incidents that suggest the *selective* telepathy which has been so persistently assumed and used in explaining mediumistic phenomena and for that reason challenge our attention and interest. All previous experiments of reporters represented or limited the data determining the coincidences to the contents of the present active state of consciousness. There was no attempt to look for associated mental elements and so far as the records show there cannot be said to have been any of these. There were subconscious interfusions of the percipient's own memories with the foreignly transmitted ideas, but they were the natural associations of the percipient. The associated and un-associated memories and ideas of the agent did not manifest, or were not observed, in the products reported. But in the results here recorded by Miss Miles and Miss Ramsden a large number of the coincidences reported were not a part of the intended message sent. Things in the environment

of the agent or events occurring on the same day seemed as likely to be caught by the percipient as the intended message.

Readers will have to go to the records to understand clearly what I am thus summarizing. I cannot undertake here to quote exhaustively to illustrate the facts. I can only reduce to general expression what the facts represented. This access of the percipient to the marginal data in the mind of the agent, if "in that mind" rightly describes the facts, is what suggests that the telepathic process may as well catch subconscious and dissociated matter as well as the conscious and intended. That is the only conclusion that we can naturally adopt, after admitting that the supraliminal or present mental state has been transmitted and that the subconscious data are equally beyond chance to account for them. The transmission assumed in one case is simply extended to the other. The most natural course is to apply a single process to the different contents acquired at the same time. This would seem to justify the larger telepathy which has been so extensively used in destructive criticism of mediumistic phenomena generally.

We must not fail to observe, however, that the telepathy made to cover the phenomena reported by Miss Miles and Miss Ramsden is not selective as it has to be conceived in the Piper and similar cases. It simply gathers into its folds rather capriciously and without organic unity the facts apparently unassociated in the agent's mind. In Mrs. Piper and others there is an organic unity in the connected facts showing intelligent selectiveness with reference to a particular identity of a given person. The facts exhibit the same laws of association that the consciousness to which they formerly belonged would use in recalling, reorganizing and transmitting them would employ. There is no trace of this sort of process in the data of Miss Miles and Miss Ramsden. There is a fragmentary access to various facts belonging to the agent's mind, or connected with her physical environment and possibly not in her mind at all. The fragments are like those of imperfect perception applied to a panorama which is changing or which only appears itself in fragments before us. There may be something of the same analogy in

the mediumistic phenomena, but when the significant facts are put together they constitute an organic unity which the phenomena of Miss Miles and Miss Ramsden do not constitute. I have no doubt that incidents may be found in their experiments where some natural association has affected the result, but the totality of the phenomena do not show such a cohesive unity as do the mediumistic incidents representative of personal identity of the dead.

It may be well to remark that the next number of the *Proceedings* will deal with some reasons possibly affecting the incidents claiming to be communications with the dead and that may apply as well to telepathic phenomena, especially that telepathy may be the process of communicating with the dead in one of its forms. I shall not enter into any account of the process which I expect to discuss there, but it involves the probable occurrence of marginal associations in the contents of actual consciousness rather than latent mental states. If that be true and if it be necessary for communication that it should be an actual conscious state, whether mnemonically attended to or not, the fact will eliminate the telepathy which has figured as an alternative to spiritistic communications, and make it necessary always to inquire when irrelevant coincidences occur, whether the irrelevant matter had been in the field of consciousness at all in connection with the relevant incidents, even tho that connection involve some hours difference in time. What I have found is that, if marginal associations be in the communicating consciousness, the same thing may take place that often occurs in ordinary conversation. The current of intercourse may be interrupted to mention or discuss the marginal subject. Usually the marginal states are neglected in conversation and the observer or listener is not aware of their existence. But if they are liable to transmission they conform to the law of coincidences of present active mental states. It is this that makes the marginal incidents in the records of Miss Miles and Miss Ramsden so interesting and in the end it may make them especially important, especially if reasons be found to believe or suppose that a cooperating consciousness is involved.

However this may be, it is not my primary purpose to lay too much emphasis upon this difference. What I want more distinctly to do is to call attention to what seems to me a defect of method in dealing with the phenomena of telepathy, a defect which the record of the experiments by Miss Miles and Miss Ramsden enables us to remark all the more definitely.

In all the earlier experiments of the Society the experimenter limited his observations to the coincidences which established a causal relation between agent and percipient. He made no attempt to study the correlated coincidences or the psychological characteristics and marginal phenomena in the life of the subjects. In merely settling the question whether there is any such things as telepathy it is not necessary to take any account of marginal experiences. We may abstract from them. That is, we may disregard them, since we are not seeking to determine the nature of telepathic phenomena, or the processes by which they are effected. It is merely a question of fact as to the existence of a causal relation between mental coincidences where we had supposed there was none. But when we come to understand the meaning and relation of telepathy to other supernormal phenomena it is quite different. In the earlier investigations regarding telepathy it was not the object of the experimenters to establish or present it as a rival hypothesis to other explanations of the supernormal. It was merely a question whether information could be had by the mind without the use of the normal processes of sense perception: or perhaps to state it more definitely, whether the thoughts of one mind could be communicated to an other independently of normal sense perception. The establishment of such a fact was not an implication that a different kind of facts was explicable by it. It merely determined the error of the assumption that the acquisition of knowledge was limited to normal sense perception. It did nothing more. But the occasion was immediately seized by a large class of investigators to use the hypothesis for explaining large groups of facts which had no internal resemblance to those which originally proved it. No attempt was made now to

take account of the synthetic associates of the facts which proved telepathy or of the difference between those which it merely named and those which were now brought under the term without recognizing the radical difference between them.

If telepathic phenomena had exhibited no associated abnormalities or supernormalities the case might have had some justification, and so far as the record of earlier experiments is concerned this seems to have been the fact. But the records of the experiments of Miss Miles and Miss Ramsden show a very different status of affairs. The synthetic associates often show as much evidence of the supernormal as the intended messages, and are such an integral part of the whole as to complicate explanations. It will not do to say that we merely extend telepathy to cover them. That is true. But it is not remarked that we change the conception of that term to the same extent. The feature that had determined the conception of telepathy originally was the coincidence of present active mental states which conformed, in their characteristics, to all we know of physical coincidences. That is, present active causes produce their effect at the time of the coincidence. It is this exact coincidence that is the evidence of the causality, and merely dormant conditions are never treated as causal. But when including the marginal and subconscious states in the data affecting the coincidences we are departing from all the analogies of causation when extending telepathy to cover them. It may be a fact that subconscious states can be transmitted, but the determination of our conception of telepathy by coincidences of present active states makes it a violent departure from this idea to treat the subconscious as identical with the normally conscious, without showing that this is the fact or proving that the same law holds for both.

I am not disposed to dispute the view that subconscious states are essentially like the conscious, provided we regard them as active. But as mere latent memories we must distinguish them clearly from present active states. The extension of telepathy apart from proof of its subliminal character does not do this.

So far, however, as the argument here is concerned I may concede the likeness and the extension. What I want primarily to remark is that this only determines *classification*, not causification or explanation. We started with the term telepathy as a mere name for a group of facts *not* explained. It was not a name for any explanation or known process. It only classified facts with certain characteristics, whether the term was confined to present active mental states in the coincidences or was extended to include marginal knowledge.

But when it comes to seeking causes of the coincidences the matter is wholly different. The associates of the coincidences which determine the conception of telepathy at first, if they show connections with phenomena that would not of themselves suggest telepathy at all and which do not have the primary characteristics determining it, must at least intimate that even telepathy is but a part of a larger whole and that causification or explanation must take account of this larger whole.

This is the basis of what requires to be done with all future telepathic phenomena. As remarked above, this was not necessary in the initial stages of the investigation, because we were concerned, not with causification or explanation, but with the mere proof of a fact not ordinarily explained. But having advanced to the use of telepathy to explain away phenomena that had no superficial characteristics of the proved telepathy, it behooved the investigator to take account of all the associates of his presumably telepathic phenomena. In other words it is especially important to see if the subjects under investigation, the agents and percipients, have had any other psychic experiences, whether supernormal or not, and to what extent such experiences are frequent or associated with those which appear superficially to be telepathy alone. I have found in all alleged telepathic coincidences, where I could ascertain the facts at all, that there have been many things omitted from the account in the interest of emphasizing the one incident which proved a coincidence apparently causal and not casual. Indeed the reporter usually assumes that nothing else is of importance.



when the fact may be that the telepathic part of it has very little importance compared with the synthetic associates in determining the ultimate cause.

Now to make this concrete let us examine the record of Miss Miles. No hint of her general experiences appears in connection with the account of the telepathic experiments as published in the English *Proceedings and Journal*, except that Professor Barrett remarked that Miss Miles was a dowser. No inquiries whether she had other experiences seem to have been made. The replies to my inquiries show how wide the variety of them was the fact. It is apparent that she had far more mediumistic and other experiences than telepathy. She had done automatic writing. She had performed the part of a medium or psychic communicating with the dead. She has practiced psychometry. She has remarkable powers of visualization. She has practiced table tipping and apparently been the agent in telekinesis. She has felt the sensations or "magnetic currents" of which we so frequently hear in psychically disposed subjects. She has had premonitions. She has been an excellent dowser and has performed this in the usual way with the "divining rod", tho developing the power to do it by clairvoyant visions. In the telepathic experiments with Miss Ramsden she remarked an invisible cord attached to Miss Ramsden. This coincides with the frequent mediumistic statement that a cord holds the medium's spirit to the body while she is in a trance. It seems to imply that Miss Ramsden's spirit is in the same condition as that of an entranced medium when she does her work, whatever the explanation. In these experiments also Miss Miles reports coincidental raps! These are phenomena in mediumship that do not lend themselves readily to telepathic explanation, so that just to the extent that these associates ally the conditions and the facts to other types of phenomena to that extent is telepathy a mere part of a larger whole and not to be made to cover the entire field in its explanatory power. It becomes an evasion of the issue to neglect these synthetic correlates when studying the facts illustrating the existence of telepathy. The whole truth has to be reckoned with in explanation, tho this is not the case in

determining the existence of a group of facts which are not evidential of spiritistic communication but which are evidence of something supernatural.

The experiences of Miss Ramsden are not so rich in variety, but they extend far beyond telepathy in some instances, unless that term is to have no definite meaning whatever. Many of them have that peculiarity that connects the marginal incidents closely with the telepathic process, whatever that is. The curious circumstance that she asks questions as if in conversation shows an associative link with what might be regarded as telepathy, and that the contents should have represented something that the presumed agent had not tried to send is certainly suggestive of a telepathic access to subliminal data. I have in mind the incident of the "invisible wires". The agent had not intended to send this message and in fact paid no attention to the request of his correspondent. But his thought and remark to some one else came through as the alleged telepathic message. Now as long as we take no account of our ignorance of the real process and as long as we imagine the connection and description to be complete in the idea of direct transmission and possibly by some sort of undulation or analogous phenomena, we assume nothing else associated with the process and imagine that we have the whole of it in mind. But here in this case it was not the thought of the agent's mind at the time the experiment was to be performed that came through. On the contrary it was the thought that he had in the morning when he received the letter. This was latent in his memory and the investigator of the facts takes into account this latency and nothing but the superficial phenomena involved. He naturally supposes that Miss Ramsden's mind gained access to the agent's subliminal for the information obtained. We picture to our minds the process as necessarily connected with the intentional effort of Miss Ramsden to get into rapport with the friend at the time appointed for the experiment and that she had read the memory of the agent at that time. But this conception and supposition of the process is not at all the only one conceivable in the case. We may suppose that the agent's thought had been

transmitted at the time he entertained or mentioned it and that it lay in the subconscious of Miss Ramsden until the concentration of her mind on the experiment in the afternoon enabled it to emerge into consciousness. That is, we may treat it as an instance of deferred reproduction of an impression that had arrived in the morning, in conformity with the mechanical and supposedly rational law of telepathy that it should act at the time that consciousness can be supposed to be really dynamic. This would bring the phenomenon within the range of the ordinary experiments in telepathy and use the natural laws of association and recall for explaining the time of its rise into consciousness. Such a view excludes the idea of reading the memory, whatever perplexities it may have. But it assumes the possibility of a process which psychic researchers have not as seriously reckoned with as they have that selective telepathy which they have extended into infinity without adequate evidence. I do not mean to imply that there is any evidence for the hypothesis or conceit which I have mentioned, but I may say that this view of transmission at the time the idea is in consciousness conforms to mechanical laws, even tho it assumes an infinitude as large as the other theory. But it assumes that all thoughts have equal efficiency for producing an effect on any or all living minds, and leaves to the connection between the subliminal and the normal, with the known laws of association and reproduction, the function of determining what shall emerge to determine the coincidence.

I imagine, however, that few people will treat seriously such a conception of the telepathic process. I have no patience with it myself, not because I know enough to deny it, but because it totally lacks evidence. It is simply one of those things that we can imagine in the light of our ignorance of facts to deny it. Some facts render it exceedingly dubious. One of them is the comparative rarity of the coincidences which ought to take place on the hypothesis of the transmission of all human thoughts to all other minds. The ordinary selective telepathy does not assume so universal a transmission, but imagines that the percipient selects or picks out from the subliminal of the agent the desired information.

But if this universal transmission occurs we should naturally expect a larger emergence into normal consciousness of the material so transmitted. We should not expect the phenomena to be so rare or to be limited to experiment, crises in the life of the agent, or the casual thoughts of the agent about the percipient. The fact is that the coincidences center about these last ideas and show something like intelligent purpose, no matter what its source. The limitations in the power of the percipient, however, to the thought in some way associated with one or the other of the situations indicated and its inability to read any minds on subjects generally, especially to the practical advantage of the percipient, suggest that we have not secured the final explanation of the phenomena by our selective telepathy, however it may be conceived as less extravagant than the alternative mentioned. Both of them have perplexities that may well stagger the believer. The rarity of the occurrence on the one hypothesis, when the conception would demand its frequency, and the limitations of the process on the other hypothesis, when its extension to the whole area of mental states should be recognized or constant, are a perplexity that cannot be ignored. The finitude of both in fact is incompatible with the infinitude of them in conception. Is there any way to escape this dilemma? Can we represent the process as a really finite one compatible with the usual explanations of science which never appeal to the infinite in any clear conception of its problems.

There is one fact to which no one seems to have called attention, or to have remarked. No one has imagined that Miss Ramsden's letter to her friend may have something to do with the phenomena. Not that the letter of itself is a causal agent in the result, that is, causal as producing telepathy. But the fact that the thought conveyed to Miss Ramsden was closely associated with the arrival of the letter ought to suggest a resemblance to the phenomena of those coincidences in which the thought of A may be received by B at a time closely related to the arrival of the letter and not with the time of its writing. There is an important difference in this case, but there is also an important resemblance.

Disregarding the difference for the moment, the characteristic to be noted is that the friend's thought transmitted is closely associated with the arrival of the letter, no matter what the process of transmission may be. There are on record many cases where the receiver of letters gets the contents of them, representing the thoughts of the writer, but these thoughts are not transmitted, or do not seem to be transmitted, at the time they are in the mind of the writer or agent, but they emerge in the mind of the receiver or percipient at the time of the arrival of the letter, or near this time. This temporal relation suggests that the process is not telepathy at all, but clairvoyance, whatever that may mean. But in the case of Miss Ramsden we have her getting the thought which the supposed agent had at the time of the arrival of the letter while he had no intention of sending it at that time. In the other cases the agent also had no thought of sending the message at the time of its actual arrival, so that clairvoyance or telæsthesia seems the proper description of the process. But we cannot easily suppose clairvoyance on the part of Miss Ramsden, unless we extend its capacities to any distance and at the same time complicate it with telepathy and time relations.

The relation between the arrival of her letter and the message received is exactly like the coincidences of other cases in that respect and differs only in the circumstance that the contents of the letter are obtained in the other cases in mind. Miss Ramsden's incident represents the message as coming at the time she tried the experiment, long after the thought had been in the mind of the agent, but the connection of that thought with the arrival of the letter is precisely like the connection of the other cases with the arrival of the letter, except that there is complete silence regarding the possible agent and percipient in them, at least usually.

Perhaps an important incident to be remarked is the appearance of the "soundless voice" which Miss Ramsden mentions in connection with her experience, showing another accompaniment which recalls the raps of Miss Miles, as well as other associates. She adds that it did not resemble any human voice and this before she had been willing to recognize

the existence of genuinely spiritistic phenomena. At the time of writing the account she was not specially sympathetic with a spiritistic theory of any phenomena, so that it was a desire to suggest this interpretation that led to the mention of this part of the incident. It is an accompaniment that has no suggestion of telepathy in it, tho it is worthless as evidence of spirits. It is simply one of those psychological associates that coincide with what we perpetually find in mediumistic phenomena.

Now let us suppose that discarnate agents are the intermediaries in the process, as messengers. We have the suggestion of this means in some automatic writing of Mrs. Verrall *Proceedings Eng. S. P. R.*, Vol. XXIV, p. 254, and *Journal Am. S. P. R.*, Vol. V, p. 188). Here the alleged communicator actually claimed to be the messenger for telepathic coincidences. Assume this as possible, and we would have this idea at the basis of both types of phenomena in mind, that of Miss Ramsden and that of those instances in which the percipience of the message coincides with the arrival of the letter. In one the supposed agent is only the agent to the messenger who is the percipient first and then acts as an agent on the living person, Miss Ramsden, for instance, who becomes the percipient, the friend having no direct agency in the matter. The messenger follows the letter and perceives or transmits information according to the situation or possibly relies on clairvoyance for the information. May not this conception be identical with the use of articles with mediums? I simply throw out the query. The telepathy is thus first between the living and the dead and not directly between the living. The messenger knows nothing of time, as we always remark in these phenomena. The Piper records exhibit that *ad nauseam*. All that he can do is to be governed by the relation between the letter of Miss Ramsden and the thought of her friend. All that he may know is that some sort of connection is to be established and not the time of it, and so gets the thought closely related to the arrival of the letter and transmits it to Miss Ramsden at the only time when it can be perceived. That is when she puts her mind on the subject. I have had

a similar phenomena in my own experiments. Several times the percipient obtained what I had first thought of but did not write down for transmission, and others who were conscious of what we actually tried to transmit did not know what I had thought of. The supposed messenger had perceived what I intended and made no effort to obtain what I had finally resolved on and so the coincidence was with my first intended thought and not with the later one. It was clear in these cases, if the coincidences have any significance at all, that the knowledge of the others regarding incidents transmitted had no necessarily causal influence on the result. It may have had a strengthening influence, for all we know, where the messenger may have found it necessary to feel assurance, but it certainly had no effect in these instances. But the conception which I am tolerating for the moment as an hypothesis fits the situation much better than any other, and it involves a unity between all sorts of coincidences that otherwise would seem perplexing and anomalous.

Not less significant of possible outside influence and agency in the result, if only cooperative, is the answer of Miss Miles to my query about such assistance. She gets raps and feels assisted! Raps do not suggest direct telepathy and the association of them with the phenomena only shows how much else may be complicated than has been noted by those who reported the facts. Raps are a part of the general phenomena of mediumship and not observable in any records of telepathy that the Society has reported, except the present case, and even in this one it would not have been unearthed but for my inquiries. The absurdity of their accompaniment of telepathy is evident, at least as a rational part of the process. But as a part of the larger view in which the discarnate are cooperative agents they are quite rational. So would be the feeling of assistance.

Miss Ramsden's psychometric experiment points in the same direction. This is all the more interesting from the fact that she does not think psychometry has anything to do with spiritistic agency and has reported her facts with reference to other ideas of the process. But the reader should notice that a part of the incidents was associated with the



burial place of a person who might easily be supposed to have been the agent in the entire result. The mother of the person who wrote the letter was buried at the place and near the church seen in the vision. The ordinary conception of psychometry would not explain that datum in the result. What we are perpetually meeting in all these phenomena is some relation to the dead, tho in many instances this is not apparent until we discover cases where that relation is specifically indicated and where certain non-evidential aspects are similar to incidents in imperfect cases in which we should not superficially discover the relation.

Far be it from me to say or suppose that the hypothesis which I have mentioned has any scientific evidence, that would commend it to the sceptic or any one else requiring adequate evidence. It has only the merit of coinciding with the finitude of the phenomena and with the possible influence of the dead on human life and thought, as superficially indicated in many of these phenomena. It offers a perfectly conceivable explanation of facts on a large scale and covering the whole field of the supernormal. But we have not advanced far enough to do more than wonder if it be possible and simply watch it as a provisional conception of the problem. It is certainly not more perplexing than the other assumed alternatives. But it does give unity to a larger group of facts than any form of telepathy while making them intelligible in their fragmentary and apparently capricious character.

What we have to explain is not the mere coincidences between two persons' thoughts at the time, but the marginal facts that are not only not a part of those thoughts but that often have associations wholly different. Then when we find the telepathic phenomena are not isolated in the lives of the agents and percipients, but that the above gamut of psychic experiences may be connected with their lives it is no adequate explanation to present nothing but telepathy as the cause. There are cases enough where nothing but the telepathic coincidence is noticed or remembered, but these cases may be themselves mere fragments of the actual facts associated with the effort to get a thought through. The best

successes prove to be fragments. Miss Ramsden's experiments show this fragmentary character and so do mediumistic phenomena generally. Whatever the explanation Miss Ramsden's records show the same disjointed results as in the case of Mrs. Piper, Mrs. Smead and others. But hers show more complexity than those telepathic coincidences which report nothing but the contents of the present thought of agent and percipient. They show a wider content and bring us at times against the influence of the dead, tho not nearly so distinctly as in the experience of Miss Miles. The larger field must offer the explanation and not the narrower, and it makes no difference what that explanation may be.

It is time in the work of psychic research to look for these accompaniments of telepathic phenomena. If they never showed either marginal associates with the incidents serving as evidence or the existence of other supernormal phenomena in the life of the subject it would be different. But the constant occurrence of these other phenomena in the same lives demands of the scientific man the investigation of their unity and the process that will be the primary agency in their explanation, whatever the subsidiary hypotheses involved.

When I speak of the cooperation of the dead in telepathic phenomena, I do not mean to say or imply that the living are not agents in the results. I am simply raising the question whether what we may call the *insulation* of the living from each other may not prevent direct intercommunication telepathically, or if not the insulation the usual condition that prevents rapport and the necessary efficiency and transmission. This, however, is speculative, except the idea of insulation, which, if not speculative, has analogies in the sciences. If telepathic communication can take place without the intervention of foreign agents their association with it is superfluous, and if the appearance of their presence is occasional or frequent it suggests the need of such influences, whatever the part played by them. Of course there may be cases in which outside assistance is not needed and there may be cases in which it is necessary. The latter type, if it exists, would considerably limit the influence of telepathy as an objection to spiritistic theories. That goes without saying,

and the cases to which the association of telepathy with other psychic phenomena is frequent, unmistakeably connect telepathy with more than the limited functions of the ordinary critic of spiritistic hypotheses. But the living may be quite as necessary in the result as the agency of the dead. It is even possible that the dead could not effect the coincidence without some cooperative condition of the living, just as some cooperative condition is necessary for communication with the dead. Let us examine the possibilities in this.

In the first place it is to be noted that telepathic phenomena, if known to the agent and percipient, must take place when the normal consciousness can be aware of the result. If both are asleep or under hypnosis the cleavage between those states and the normal consciousness would prevent the discovery of the coincidence. Possibly it might prevent or render much more rare the existence of the coincidence. But it is certain that neither subject would ever know the connection, unless at the rare moments of connection between the deeper subconscious states and the normal life, and these might involve the very conditions which I shall explain a little later. Apparently the only chance for telepathic coincidences in sleep and hypnosis will be when the agent and percipient are under the control of other observers. Otherwise the facts would be buried in the depths of one or the other's mind or both. On the other hand, it is possible that there is no direct connection of telepathic agencies with the supraliminal or normal consciousness. You may assume telepathy if you like in the Piper case, but there is much, if not overwhelming, evidence that the trance personalities do not have a direct connection with the normal states of Mrs Piper. What they derive must filter through the subconscious to them. The same cleavage is quite apparent in many cases of secondary personality. Taking this as a fact we see the necessity for some condition in which a connection can be sustained to get messages through to normal life. Let us suppose this to be the *hypnoidal* state of Dr. Sidis. This is a state below normal consciousness, but above both sleep and hypnosis. It may be said to be the bridge between the two, the one that connects the deeper

states of somnolence and hypnosis and may have to be preserved in all cases where the subject can become aware of what is going on below the surface.

This would imply that, possibly, telepathic phenomena might require a hypnoidal state for a success, tho just as possible in deep trances provided you can get automatism of some kind to carry the message through to the observer or to transmit it to paper for the discovery of the subject. Possibly Miss Miles and Miss Ramsden are in a hypnoidal condition, as more or less necessary to achieve the results. Now on that supposition, who produces the hypnoidal condition? What is necessary to sustain it? What combination or complication of agents is necessary to produce the transmission? The apparent presence of cooperating agencies would suggest why this phenomenon occurs when we assume the presence or necessity of a hypnoidal condition. They may be required at least to sustain the condition for telepathic nexus, in normal consciousness for one reason and in a trance for another. In such a conception they might not even be aware of the thought transmitted. On the other hand, so far as we know, they might be necessary to obtain and transmit it, tho I see no incidents or facts that would make such a view intelligible or probable.

I have no assurance that the conceptions which I have suggested can have anything more than the character of a hint to students. I do not pretend to believe them any more than I disbelieve them. I am trying only to suggest a point of unity in this whole exasperatingly complex set of phenomena. If we could take the usual conception of them indicated by the separation of the various classes of psychic phenomena each type would have to seek its own separate causality, but we have found in the whole history of this subject that, as a matter of fact, the phenomena are by no means so isolated as the exigencies of argument or the prejudices of the observer would make them. They are all more or less connected and their explanation must be found in a cause equal to the complexity of the facts. Telepathy limited to the simple processes required by the description of the facts in past experiments does not suffice and will not account for

the alliances with mediumistic phenomena so constantly noted and which as constantly represent the presence of foreign agencies in some way, if only as messengers or cooperative forces.

While the above material was in press I was holding experiments which accidentally brought me a record that I publish as corroborative of the view here taken, in so far as such a record can be corroborative at all. It came unsought and my queries were put as natural ones in the situation which had been created without instigation from me. Further comment will be reserved until the record has been dealt with.

## **SITTING WITH MRS. CHENOWETH.**

### **Introduction.**

I was conducting some experiments and apparently by accident Mr. Myers purported to communicate on the date of the record below. I saw no special reason for his doing so except what might be inferred from his claim that he was not so attached to the old that he would not accept the new. From what was said it appeared that the communicator was referring to something in a piece of work I have been doing for some weeks and that had his view of the subliminal for its subject. Through another psychic I had a reference to the same thing, and as it was not so clear as I desired I did not make a special note of it. I noted what was said, but when I came to write the notes out I could not decipher them well enough to make what was actually said clear enough for any reasonable account. So I simply disregard it. The renewal of the subject here through Mrs. Chenoweth without any knowledge on her part that it had been mentioned elsewhere or that my mind was occupied with his theories made me take better notice. In the course of it the communicator casually referred to telepathy and I seized the opportunity to put some questions while his mind was on the subject. The result will speak for itself.

The reader must remember that Mrs. Chenoweth has

never read a single line of Mr. Myers' writings in the Proceedings of the English Society, never having seen a volume of them. She thinks that she has seen the outside of some book of his, but is not certain of this, and thinks she has never read anything that he ever said. She saw the portrait of him that has been widely published, but knows nothing whatsoever of his views on any subject of psychic research. She may have casually learned that he believed in spiritism, but she knew nothing else of his special views. This fact will give some weight to what is said about them in the writing.

### RECORD.

Mrs. C. Present J. H. Hyslop. Nov. 28th, 1911. 10 A. M.

[Subliminal matter omitted.]

[Automatic Writing.]

I [Pause. Letter made in Myers' style] do not want to take a moment of the time but I have wished to assure you of my presence here on several occasions since the work began and as you know it is not my plan to [Pause] give you too large an expectation of work to be done but it [neglected to read 'it'] it I will not make prophecies but say only that we understand the needs and the demands and will do what we can to promote the work. I feel it is good indeed to have a sympathetic receiver on the earth end of the line.\*

(I understand and hope some day to call for you to do a special work I have in mind.)

I am aware of it and shall respond heartily but we all feel the importance of the proceedings now on. I only say God speed you God speed you and may you rest in the confidence that I am not so wedded to the old that I cannot [cannot] find the power in the new. Old friends [friends] old scenes old associations should be steps to higher and broader conceptions.

---

\*The Myers personality through Mrs. Chenoweth has adopted a certain way of making the capital letter "I" to indicate his presence and writing, and also with it a special way of making the letter "M" when signing his name at the end of a communication.

(Yes.)

and not anchors which hold the ship of progress and truth in pleasant harbors where never a sail is torn by wild storms and never [read 'new' and hand pointed till read 'never'] the waves and tides test strength and capacity.

I wai... [Pause and I read 'was'. The hand made the 'I' in the normal manner and I would say nothing.] I [made in Myers's style] wait your statement which I did not give you time to make.

[I had wanted to ask a question, but as the writing went on I kept still and waited.]

(I was going to ask why you made reference to new ideas and not standing by the old. Is there anything in my present work that called it out?)

[For some weeks I have been writing on the subliminal and engaged in a long criticism and modification of Mr. Myers' view. Mrs. C. knows nothing of it.]

Yes and some of your plans as well and also some of the present work has been a departure from the old methods in vogue when I was active in the Society.

(I understand. Go on.)

There are some things which are a radical departure which are really but the outcome of experiences of yours and those steps already taken toward the change are of interest to me. I am amazed when I consider the great odds you have had and how you have kept steadily on in spite of it all.

(Thank you.)

I am not referring to the change of attitude toward some phenomena but the actual demonstrations. You are aware of my effort to make myself a part of the sittings at some of the places other than here.

(Yes I am.)

I felt that Hodgson and James would make valuable additions to our staff of experimenters but they had to go through the work in the same laborious way and while it was second nature to Hodgson it was almost too much for James. He always has to have freedom [sheet changed] freedom in everything and to be put to tasks of this kind made him nervous actually nervous in



the old way. We laughed at him and told him he ought to be able to take his own medicine.

(Good.) \*

but it is easier to point the way than to walk in it. We are happy and content though and do not want you to feel the burden of the whole work.

Heartiest greetings to you and your confrères and my friends in both Societies.

(Thanks. Give mine to all on your side.)

yes yes. Myers ['M' made in special way by separate strokes as always signed by him.] My sign.

(Yes, I understand it.)

I do not forget that.

(No, I noticed the first sign as soon as it was written and had no question of the identity.) [I referred to the capital 'I'.]

I knew you did. Now that was not telepathy but just as you know that you are understood when you speak and look for a response in the face of your listener. I [made in normal way and erased] Hurry does that.

(I understand.)

I saw a difference in your spirit body and its expression and knew that I was understood.

(Yes, how did you know I had a statement to make when you noticed it?)

I saw your hand move as if to write which is the first premonitory move you make when you talk or question. I saw the spirit hand not the one with which you write. We are on a fine subject now, fine differences and right there I make distinctions between telepathy and knowledge. Telepathy [pause] includes a carrier of some sort and is not knowledge at first hand.

(I understand and . . .) †

---

\* Professor James was always what is known as a "nervous man" and it is possible that Mrs. C. may have known something of the fact. From what I know of her life and habits I would doubt her knowledge of it. But I cannot make any special point of it if she did not know it. The allusion, however, to this and to his desire for freedom is correct.

† Mrs. C.'s eyes were closed and there was no way to know my expectation but to read my mind or infer it from the slight noise that my coat sleeve might make in moving as if to write.

The better and more perfect the carrier the more exact the message.

(What is the nature of the carrier?)

Usually a familiar guide or spirit especially if there is any perceptible distance. Telepathy in the same room of [so read and erased] or compartment is often confounded with natural power of spirit to see or feel. Have I made any suggestion which may help you.\*

(Yes indeed, and I shall ask what about carrying thoughts by means of etheric waves?)

That is possible but not often done. Let me illustrate. (Yes.) a bottle may be tossed on the ocean and reach a shore but if you wish that bottle delivered to a person of your acquaintance you give it in charge to some one who will take it. When thoughts are considered by etheric waves there is always a station established at each end of the route and the difference between that method and the carrier is just the same difference as a letter and a telegram. The one in charge at the sending station sends it exact if wishing to and the receiver acts in the same way but you have an element of trust or capacity in that method just the same as in the other. One is no better than the other except perhaps in a matter of ease. Time is not of such importance or equivalent value as with you.†

---

\* Mr. Podmore gave the same explanation of telepathy through Mrs. Smead and all who have read his books would think it not very characteristic. Readers will know that I have often suggested this possibility but I have never been prepared to defend it with evidence as a fact. It has always seemed to me a possibility and that the evidence for it was very slight.

The weak point in the statement here is that Mrs. C. inclines to that view herself, tho not dogmatically attached to it. Her views of the general subject make it easier for her to believe in spirit agency as connected with telepathy, tho she would defer unhesitatingly to science and its methods in that matter.

† The allusion to time in the matter is more than usually significant. Those who are familiar with the cross references and cross correspondences in the English experiments have noted the wide differences in time between the sending and the delivery of such messages. Mrs. C.

(Are the etheric waves purely symbolical as the sound waves are with us?)

Yes and much that is not understood is classified in wrong ways. I wonder if I am making it plain.

(Yes.)

There is the sea and the shore and yet always there must be consciousness higher than the pervading ether to make use of ether. The master is man whether in spirit or not.

(Do you have to agree on the ether symbols as we do in language?)

We learn the whole gamut and play on that. that is plain is it. The key is all. The same vibration produces always the same result.

(I understand.)

[Pause] Your father may wish to help you send a message to England and he finds the key of England and the Society there and gets an operator of that Society or a member and the work begins. When the member if psychic receives the psychic call the response is made. Should there be definite hours [not read] set...hours...for the reception of messages the operator will wait for the opening of the office. Do you catch the meaning in these terms.

(Yes perfectly.)

I see it so plainly and see always the mediator. is that a term you can understand that I am convulsed with laughter when I see the ego exaggerated to such colossal proportions as it would have if all stories could be believed. To me the ready response to the vibratory influence of a person near at hand is as wonderful and remarkable as to have such traveling especially ascribed to it. The same is true of the clairvoyant states. The spirit of the light does not actually travel but the pictures are produced by a master operator who has advices of the present situation. What men do with mechanics is done with men in the spiritual realm but so much refined and so perfected that it is almost incomprehensible. How have I succeeded in clearing the idea.

---

knows nothing whatsoever about this fact and nothing about the experiments except what public interest may have casually brought to her and that interest does not exist in the circle of her acquaintances.

(First rate. And I ask another question. Do you remember what capacities you ascribed to the subliminal?)

Do you refer to the capacities of sight and sound?

(No, you spoke of certain capacities which assigned limits to a spirit theory.)

are you referring to some theories of the past or to some I have advanced since I came here.

(I refer to the past and to views in your articles in the Proceedings of the English Society and in your large work published after you passed over.)

Yes I gave almost unlimited power to the subliminal and the evidence seems to warrant [warrant] it but I dd [did] not know as now that the subliminal is largely dependent on oher [other] subliminals if that term may be used for a spirit for the subliminal is but the withdrawing of the spirit to its own sphere where it expresses more freely and about the things it is conversant with.\*

(Yes and do you remember what you said about genius? If so please to state it here.)

[Pause] You have some particular statement of mine in mind I know that. My idea was that genius was the capacity to receive the influx [written without the cross mark for 'x' and read 'influ' expecting 'influence', when the cross mark was added making it 'influx'] from another condition or from spirits. Inspiration made evident in works. I wonder if that is what you refer to.

---

\* As Mrs. C. knows nothing of Mr. Myers' special views of the subliminal these allusions to the unlimited powers assigned to it when living and to its "withdrawal to its own sphere" for knowledge are very characteristic. So also is the indication that the subliminal is a spirit, or the spirit. Mr. Myers made that rather clear in his discussions. For him the subliminal was the spirit and lived in more or less contact with the etherial world, especially in sleep and trance. Those familiar with his conceptions will readily recognize them here. The measure of evidential value depends on the clearness with which they are defined here and Mrs. C.'s ignorance of them. They are perhaps not so clearly indicated as is desirable for impressing the sceptic and we have to accept the word of Mrs. C. regarding her ignorance, if we assign any value to the facts.

(Yes, and I understand it. Let me see if the phrase "subliminal uprush" means anything to you.)

The same just the same. the spirit or subliminal seeks its own sphere and gathers [gathers] there from person or environment the particular power with which it returns to harden into expression yes [to reading of 'harden' which was delayed] but I put too much stress I fear on the power of the subliminal to gather [read 'together'] to combine and not enough on the personelle of the leaders and teachers who seem omnipresent through the universe and who come in large or small capacity as the human is able to receive.

(I understand.)

I think it somewhat resembles the small fry of creation who seem to think the sun was created for their joy and growth. True [True] it was but they are coincidental with other growing things so with man and the race is toward the infinite.

(I understand.)\*

I did not intend to monopolize this sitting. Do you not see how my theory has been expressed here for we have each been used by some power outside to bring this statement to the world. Each having other plans but hitting [hitting, read 'putting' and erased] striking the key which unlocked this door where the expressions were lying in wait for us.

(I understand and I encouraged it because I wanted a chance and it came.)

Yes good it is and I am content and glad. Myes [either 'M' with 'yes' or the 'r' omitted from *Myers*. The 'm' made in three straight lines.]

[Subliminal]

Oh dear! Where did I go?

(I don't know.)

You act as if you didn't care.

(I don't care if I get the right things.)

Well you didn't I suppose.

---

\*The communicator very clearly gives Mr. Myers' view of genius. It is interestingly put as an "influx from another condition or spirits" and allows for two sources, just as his theory did when living. The prompt recognition of his own expression when I did not say it was intended for the same thing has its interest.

(Yes I did.)

Did you really? (Yes.) What are all those like communion cups?

(Who gave them to you?)

A man. (Who?) Did any one have to do with the Church of England? I mean in England, not your family. I see these communion cups.

[Pause] Do you know if Mr. Myers was an Episcopalian?

(No I don't.) \*

Well, I don't either. Take my hand. [I did so.] I staid too long. [Pause and awakened.]

[Soon after awakened she remarked that it seemed to be a queer sitting and I asked why and she could not tell, but asked if I got what I wanted. I replied that it was not what I intended or expected but that it was all right.]

In addition to the explanatory footnotes there are some general observations on the record to be made affecting the probabilities of genuineness. In the first place the discussion of telepathy cannot of itself carry any evidential weight. If it did not happen to be a natural preconception of Mrs. Chenoweth it would be more suggestive, but her sympathy with that explanation throws us upon other considerations for defence or apology, and these must be the evidence for the presence of Mr. Myers at all. If we can accept that presence it will be probable that the discussion of telepathy and genius are not wholly impersonations. I do not forget that the subconscious of Mrs. Chenoweth is a factor even in matter that does not represent her previous knowledge. My conception of her function in the result is that she is the red glass through which the white light is seen. She does not always, if ever, instigate the message subconsciously, which is to say that it is not fabricated. But when receiving an outside impression or stimulus she colors and moulds it all uncon-

\*I had the impression when this message came that Mr. Myers had been educated for the ministry, but inquiry does not sustain it. On examining the *Dictionary of National Biography*. I find that Mr. Myers' father, whose name was also Frederic, was a clergyman in the Church of England, Episcopalian. The Supplement to this Dictionary has an article on Mr. F. W. H. Myers, the son, and there is no hint of his education in this direction of any such affiliations in his later life.

sciously, as every one will a story or a fact received from others. Hence it must not be inferred, when I am apologizing for a foreign element in the result, that I regard it as pure. I think that it is so highly colored that, unless we allow for this fact, we cannot make out a case at all, since most minds have a prejudice for purity of messages or nothing. This is a mistake on their part and they must learn that messages are perfectly interfused with the subliminal mental processes of the medium, modifying the subliminal processes as much as they modify the messages. With this view of the case we may understand the character of the phenomena.

For general readers I shall remark that the style of Mr. Myers in all the communications through Mrs. Chenoweth is very different from that of Dr. Hodgson, Jennie P, or Whirlwind, and George Pelham. The subconscious of Mrs. Chenoweth gives certain common expressions and coloring in all of them, but when the records as a whole are read it will be found that the impersonation of Mr. Myers carries distinctive features of his mind more than of the other communicators. I think readers of this record will detect some characteristics in the literary and poetical coloring of the illustrations chosen by him and some of them seem to me to have a Myersian flavor, and in forming that judgment I have tried to discount the instances for distinct subliminal influences. The Myers personality always shows more familiarity with French concepts than any other communicator except Professor James. It is apparent here in the use of the terms "confreres" and "personelle" which do not come from other personalities. The individual notes show other instances of more definite characteristics of Mr. Myers, especially that Mrs. Chenoweth knew nothing about them. Assuming then that we have Mr. Myers present, tho having his personality colored by the medium through which his messages have to come, we shall have a measure of protection for the views expressed about the process involved in transmitting messages between living minds. The emphatic "always" in one instance was more positive than Mrs. Chenoweth would express normally, but I shall not make a special point of that. All that we require to do is to recognize that



the evidence for the personality of Mr. Myers independently of the communication about telepathy makes it probable that the latter is not wholly subliminal but reflects some influence transcendental to it.

There are statements in the view expressed that are not at all clear, tho I seem to have recognized them as clear. That was due entirely to my policy of not urging a course which experience has taught me may lead to confusion. There is a hint of what is meant by the communicator even in statements that are not perfectly clear, and there was not time in this sitting to take up details, as Myers had not come to take up the hour, tho my questions resulted in his doing so. I may have opportunities to thresh out the subject in further experiments and with a detail that was not possible here, so that the primary interest in the case is the consonance of the statements with similar ones through Mrs. Smead by Mr. Podmore last spring, where there was less reason to discount it on the ground of subliminal production, tho that was not excluded then. The main point, however, is to mark the agreement of the facts with the evident processes of cross references and cross correspondences in which the method would naturally identify itself more or less with ordinary telepathy with the difference that coincidence in time marks the latter more distinctly than it does the cross references and cross correspondences, and the unessential nature of the time relation is here indicated.

But after all we cannot urge the point of view beyond a possibility and the interest which it excites on its own account where there is at least some evidence that the personality purporting to make the statement is actually communicating. What is said coincides with facts which do not consciously claim to have that explanation but are yet consistent with it and perhaps point distinctly to its possibility. That is all that this paper would suggest, and not endeavor to prove.

Scarcely had the record been made purporting to come from Mr. Myers throwing light upon the problem when another sitting brought the following spontaneous reference to the subject again. There is much else in this record that is

not relevant to the issue, but I do not mar it by selections. There is nothing evidential to it throughout. As remarked before, Mrs. Chenoweth believes it possible or probable that spirits are involved in telepathic communications between the living, but she has not formed any such conceptions of it and its complications and reservations as here appear in the record purporting to come from one of the controls, tho I think her mind capable of it if required to think it out cautiously. But what is said has a great psychological interest in any case, especially that it is associated with a large amount of the supernatural in other records. It is here used simply to illustrate what is perpetually claimed when any chance to communicate is given. We do not know how much of it is subliminal. It may all be this, but that fact does not justify discarding its publication. It represents a perfectly possible view wherever the spiritistic hypothesis has a right to consideration on better evidence. The future must decide whether it has any reason for better recognition than a purely psychological interest. Most interesting is it to remark that it is an open question whether any telepathy takes place without spirit help, if we may reckon with spirits at all. The attitude of mind on that matter taken by Jennie P. is entirely scientific and dispassionate. There is no dogmatic affirmation or denial of its absolute limitations. But we are told that some "intelligent spirits" deny a certain kind of telepathy. This is not a natural conception of Mrs. Chenoweth, as I happen to know, so that subliminal reproduction of normal ideas does not apply, however we may assume fabrication and dreaming. But I let the record stand without defence or criticism, as it is not necessary to attach any other interest to it than its psychological consistency, the pertinent analysis of the matter, and its entire accord with all that we know.

Mrs. C. J. H. H.

Dec. 19th, 1911. 10 A. M.

\*\*\*\*\* [Omitted portions.]

[Automatic Writing.]

\*\* [Scrawls in which M is apparent, and then pencil fell.  
Apparent change of control.]

Good morning. we had to let the energy [not read] ooze out of the fingers [not read] before ... energy fingers ... before we supplied our own. Starlight left some of hers and we let the bottle dry [not read] dry. You see what I mean do you.

(Yes I do.)

It is all a different kind of energy and one must out be ['be' not written in its order] before the other can express. I think I am clumsily [read 'densly'] expressing ... clumsily ... what I mean but if [not read] you gather ... if ... the conception from my words you will understand why the deeper trance produces different expressions. The original and usual energy is drained [not read] drained and new is supplied and between the two conditions the trance ensues and then there is more like a normal state resulting but not a normal state necessarily of the light but of life our life. do you see.

(Yes I understand.)\*

the trance is passive and the communication makes active in its own right. I have often wanted to say this to you but the time was not quite right for it and then too the active is so hard to distinguish from the really [not read] normal ... really ... state of the light. We [read 'be'] may be using ... we [read 'be'] we may be using [not read] using at the time [not read] at the time for all activity has a close relationship and resemblance and that may [read 'near' doubtfully] may be our own may bear close resemblance to the light and yet never have the least dependence on that light or be sustained by it. Do you see what I am trying to tell you and how important it is in the working out of your problems.

(Yes I do and will ask why, if the light does not affect it, there does appear a resemblance in language used to what the light would normally use?) \*

---

\* Starlight a little control for a different type of sittings had come in the subliminal in response to the mental request of Mrs. C. I have often observed in this case that Jennie P. has to come in and renovate things, so to speak, before trying other communications.

\* The talk about the trance is not perfectly clear. But I think one point is worth remarking and it is that the claim is apparently made that there is a close connection between the different stages of the trance and that the activity in all these stages is the same. This I think a correct

The resemblance in language [not read] in language is no more striking than the differences and two people talking together will naturally fall into the same methods of expression the form of speech and the likeness of speech is more marked where [read 'when'] where light [read 'thought' owing to superposition on 'where'] is used constantly ... light is used constantly by one or more spirits in a group and they naturally borrow from each other quite unconsciously and quite independently just as two members [read 'numbers'] of a ... members ... family. The light as often borrows from the spirit as the spirit yet it is an independent action. do you see.

(Yes I do, and would ask if the process involves mutual conversation between the spirit and the light?)

not always. it is oftener than subtle and more undefined combinations and contact of personality which comes from proximity. Do you see.

(Yes, is that anything like telepathy between the living?)

Yes something like it but telepathy is usually involved [not read] involved with a communicating spirit. It is seldom that two people are pitched to the same key except at rare [read 'a race' at rare intervals and when that occurs there is true telepathy which is spirit communion without interpreter. You may have known of such instances where two souls were pitched to the same vibration and the knowledge of one even to the finer and more subtle expressions became [read 'because'] became the knowledge of the other. It is often the case in magnetic attraction to a degree but the communication is imperfect and incomplete and cannot be classed with true telepathy nor can true telepathy be classed with spirit communications carried over distant countries [not read at once] coun ... [read] yes [to reading] you see what I am trying to explain. I mean I know that you see what I am trying to tell you.

---

view of the relation between the normal and the various stages of subliminal action. It is not the normal view of Mrs. C. She believes normally that all messages are colored by the medium's subconscious activity or by her mind when normal, but I have constantly noticed in her mediumship that the subconscious resents the view that it has anything to do with the messages, or if not the subconscious, the controls that manifest resent this.

(Yes I do, and I ask if true telepathy must be done when persons are more or less close to each other?)

You mean proximity of course. [Evidently asked to distinguished between 'close' used to define relationship and 'close' in space.]

(Yes.)

No not always. It can be done in very rare instances apart but those cases are so rare and so hard to prove that it is almost [not read] nil [read 'not'] nil [read 'nil'] and is denied by many intelligent spirits and ...

(You mean, then, that rarely true telepathy takes place at great distances.)

Yes exactly. What is called [not read] by that name... called by that name is usually a combination of telepathy and spirit help.

(I understand.)

It is much easier for a spirit to carry a message between two people who are attuned than between two who are on different keys. That you must have already observed and right here let me say something else. Spirits communicate best through the lights which are keyed to their own pitch for instance some spirits have much better [superposed] better success in communicating at some places than others and the process of the work which G. P. and I do is to equalize and harmonize and then express. He and I are on the same key and so we tune our power to the work. He to the light I to the spirit. Do you see. The [not read] more ... The more we work the more adept we become and can change the key to suit the occasion. Some spirits come who are already near our pitch. These [read 'there'] are all ... These are all terms which I have happened to use to suit my convenience [not read] convenience. Yes [to reading] but I think you can understand the application to the general work.\*

(Yes it is clear in general terms, but if you could describe exactly what the attunement or keying is I should be glad.)

I will try but it is not an easy matter. It is from the spirit-

---

\* Of course there is nothing evidential in the talk about telepathy, but we may note its consonance with what purported to come from Mr. Myers tho it throws a little more light on the conceptions in his message.

ual aspiration. I do not mean for a moment anything to do with religion when I say spiritual for G. P. and I are not trying to foist any particular religion on the world but call it an aspiration for truth which all men feel in a degree. The only difference is what they desire to know the truth about. Some want it about one thing and some about another and some about only one thy ['thing' and not read] and ... thing ... and some about ten or twenty or more or *all*. [underscored.]

When one wants to know the truth about one thing only we may call that the [not read] the a of the key board and two will be B—. Do you see and on till you have a thirst or aspiration to know universal truth which is God himself. We [superposed] We make effort to find the key by the aspirations of the applicant to communicate. Suppose the communicator aspires to speak the truth and know the truth only about two things material [not read] material money success in financial affairs and health [not read] health and wealth. When we know that is the chief factor or that those are the factors we know the key in which they belong. others are all affection [not read] affection love interest in others pride and others religion and so on. You may go on indefinitely but it is the attribute of the spirit striving to see and interpret as we are. Have I made it plain.

(Yes perfectly.)

Now take for instance your wife or your father. the common aspirations \* \* ['be' or 'we'] you both ... which you each have for a number of things brings you into more complete harmony than if she were for pride or material [read 'natural'] material welfare to the eclusion [exclusion] of knowledge and a search for the truth.

In the case of the sitter last week both the sitter and the spirit were seeking the same identical matter to know the truth about it and the key was the simplest to find and that made the work slip along easily. Whenever a sitter comes with a definite purpose to get something which a spirit is just as definitely interested to give you will get *good* communications. It is where the [read 'there the'] where there is a divided interest that the matter fails. The sitter often tries to make the spirit communicator interested in something he does not care a rap about and de-

sires to talk of something else and they are out [read 'not'] of ... out of tune.

Sometimes however if you have a record of what such a spirit communicator says it makes strongest evidence of spirit communion for it is often proven [read 'however'] proved that the spirit has given evidence of presence at other places or of past events [not read] events which was its spirit aspiration at the time and so overcome [not read] overcome the influence of the sitter. But what is true of the spirit being able to overcome the sitter is also true of the sitter being able to overcome the spirit at times.

(Do you mean that the sitter's thoughts and purposes may come back to him as if his mind were read by the light?)

No that was not what I meant altho it may be true at some places but what I meant was that a sitter may insist in words and by requests that a spirit talk or communicate about things which it is not especially interested in and so will make mistakes and false [read 'fake' questioningly] false prophecies and various [not read] various contradictory remarks which belittle the whole work.

(I understand.)

Education is what is needed for the public and it must come. Everybody is not fit to talk with spirits any more than a man from the shoe shop [read 'store'] shop is able to direct an opera.

(I understand.)

Every man for his task and every one for his right keyed communicator for the best [read 'vast'] best results. When that is done the intermediate [so read] intermediary [read 'intermediating'] intermediary work of G. P. and Whirlwind may be dispensed with and each spirit communicate with his own friends through a light until then we stay to equalize and harmonize as I said before.

That is what the familiar control is always taught to try to do but it [not read] is ... it ... a hard task and many of them grow saucy and independent or foolish [foolish] or deceptive. It is all in the growth and study of a wonderful revelation [read 'evolution' and hand pointed till read 'revelation'] yes and evolution also.\*

---

\*I doubt if readers would have anticipated the explanation which



(Then spirits or spirit control may practice deception.)

Did you have any doubt of it. Are the men in the world all truthful James or Isaacs.

(I understand, but the reason for the question was that sometimes involuntary messages and involuntary effects are produced in the light and I felt that we needed a standard to distinguish between unconscious and conscious deception.)

There are both kinds of course. That are many mediums who are not truthful but mediums nevertheless and while it may be a spirit speaking the spirit may through inclination [not read] inclination or laziness resort to deception and have no idea of the wickedness [not read] wickedness of untruths [not read] lies yes [to reading] any more than a little child does who says he is going to push the engine off the track and then in an hour says he has pushed the engine off the track. It is all untrue that he has not hurt anybody because nobody believed him but a great mass of people believe everything a little spirit says.

Who said try the spirits. Saint Paul. Well it is as true of the returning spirits as of bodily spirits Any one who thinks that only the godlike [not read] Godlike and true return is bond [read 'bound' and not corrected] to have a big surprise and any one who believes that only the babes and idiots and nigger talking controls return is bound to wake up and find himself in a quandary about the lofty teachings of the spirit communicators after he has studied your records and mine. J. P.

The exculpation of controls involved in the last part of this record coincides with the statements made last year through Mrs. Chenoweth regarding the process of communicating and which will appear in the next *Proceedings*. I cannot comment on that here. But it involves the general idea that marginal associations are as likely to be transmitted as

---

Jennie P. gives of the "key" in sitter and communicator. I certainly had not dreamed of it when I asked the question, and I do not think that it answers the inquiry fully, tho it does throw light upon much in this subject. Jennie P. claims to be French and hence possibly the choice of the word "aspiration" for what I would call *desire*. This last idea, I think, expresses what she means. The account is entirely rational but awaits confirmation in a large and comprehensive series of experiments.





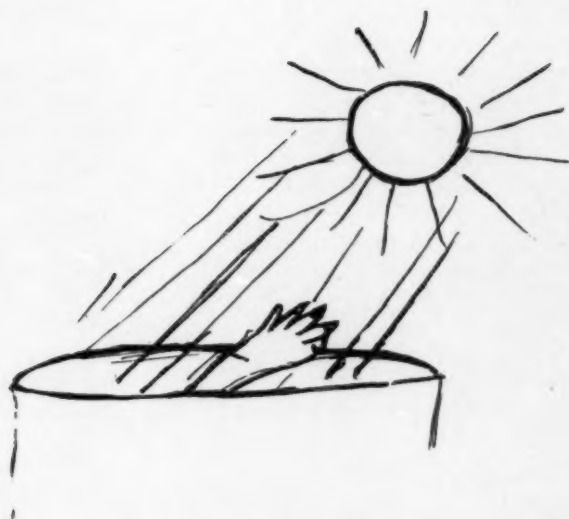


FIGURE I.

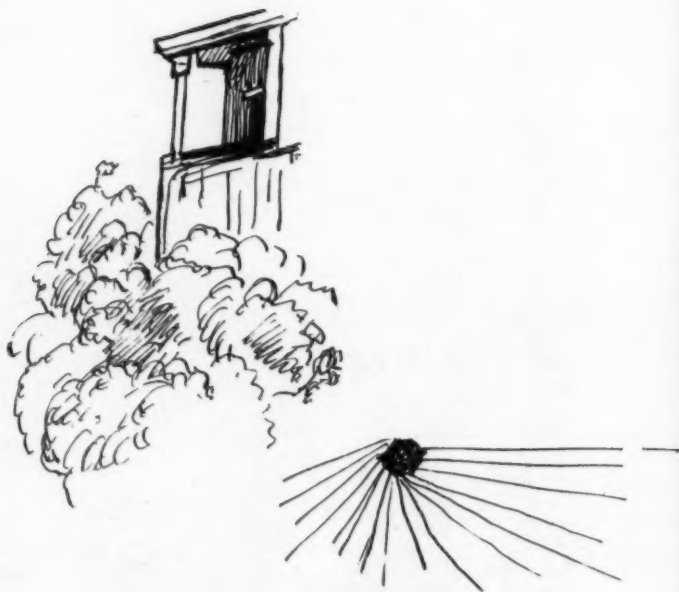


FIGURE II.



FIGURE III.

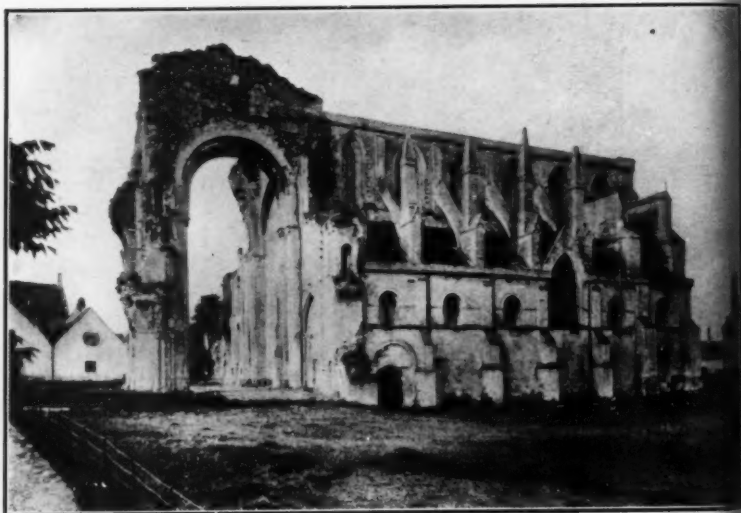


FIGURE IV.





the  
sci  
tie  
wh

sis  
liv  
ma  
co  
hy  
ou  
th  
tra  
ab  
th  
no  
ce  
th

the central and intended thoughts. The whole mass of consciousness may be transmitted to the controls and their abilities depend on the excellence of their judgments in selecting what they suppose is intended by the communicator.

But the primary point of interest in this record is the insistence by another personality that telepathy between the living is usually complicated with spirit help, a view which many facts had suggested to me long ago, tho we may still concede the necessity of the living as well as the dead. The hypothesis accords with the normal insulation of the mind in our embodied life and with the constantly alleged fact in these phenomena that this insulation is set aside in sleep, trance, and certain forms of hypnosis, and perhaps when abnormal situations arise when the supernormal is effected through normal consciousness. But this is speculation, and not necessary to a theory that telepathy is affected by transcendental agencies. The utmost that we can claim is that the view should be examined.

## INDEX

- Actions, Muscular, studied, 53-60; movements of trumpet, etc., 53; dissociation of motor action, 54.
- Adirondacks named with vision of train of cars, 530.
- "Aggie", "Agnes", names spoken, 386.
- Agnes, name gotten by Miss B., 474.
- Aldershot, Explosion at, 710-11.
- Amnesia, 122; remarkable, 134, 141; in Whirlwind incident, 168-69.
- Anæsthesia and consciousness mixed, 412, 477; do contact and control produce? 413; defeats production of phenomena, 413; poor sittings follow manifestations of, 463.
- Anæsthesia, Sensory, in the dream life, 116, 119.
- Anæsthesias and Hyperæsthesia, 35-36, 37, 107, 258; followed a jerk of the hand, 36; anæsthesia of right side of body of Miss Burton, 42, 126, 255, 456; indubitable evidence of hysteria, 42, 58, 111, 133; tested many times, 116; situations created by, 121-122; partial, 125; alternation of, 126-28; sudden occurrence of, 139; partial, 139, 140, 412; of arms and legs, 456, 476, 501, 511; "gloved", 502; in right arm, 623.
- Aphasia, 123; in Whirlwind incident, 168-69.
- "Apparitions of the living," Relation of, to his environment, 678.
- Apparitions, Personalities involved in the visual, 477.
- Apple, Attempt of Miss B. to get an, 334; "Dan" raps replies to questions on, 335.
- Arm, A long, materialized, 238-9.
- Auditory imagery, Dissociation of the, from the visual, 123.
- Auscultation showed vocal vibrations with regular breathing, 359-60.
- Automatic convulsions, 56, 128-30.
- Automatic functions, Participation of the subconscious and the, 176.
- Automatic speech partakes of the medium's characteristics, 149.
- Automatic writing, 10, 18, 107, 154; best in a red light, 32; partakes of the medium's characteristic, 149; Dr. Hodgson controlling the, 156-57; play of personality in, 161-62; helps to bridge the chasm, 167-68; by Miss Burton, 302-3, 308; reading of, by Dr. Smyth and Mrs. Milton, 303-4; with pencil held like Dr. Hodgson, 309, 328-9; from "Dan", 339; different from Dan's, 385; characteristic of Dr. Hodgson, 385, 387; sitting in the light for, 399-404, 447; about Miss B.'s headache, 431, 400, 401, 403; whistling and singing during, 449; unsigned message suggesting Dr. Hodgson, 450; not evidential, 455; correction made in pitch darkness, 461; super-imposed, 497; unsigned, 588, 590; signed R., 622; early records of, not preserved, 642; instances from Maud, Lenore and Dan, 643; Hyslop on, 643-4, 644-7; bulletins sent to Hyslop during illness of daughter, 644-8; letter and message from Anna Burton, 647-8; communication from Myers in, 732-8.
- Automatisms frequent, 37, 106; sympathetic, 58; throw light on the phenomena, 60; proof of, 128-30; extent of, 130-31; effort to restrain, 130; motor, 131; evidence of hysteria, 133; implies non-responsibility for trickery, 143; possible consciousness of, and of their foreign source, 176; evidence for, great, 313.
- Ave Maria selected by Miss B., 597.
- "Ayers" seen with lights, 623-4; initials W. H. M. given with, 624; for Myers, 629.

- Bain, Mrs., Dr. Hodgson purported to communicate through, 325.
- Bell placed in Dr. Hamilton's hand, 197.
- Bells, Ringing of, 9, 11, 184, 191, 197, 198, 205; by Mrs. Galton, 11; placed on table, 17; two rung, 44, 188.
- Bertram, Dr., present at materializing séance, 252; failed to recognize medium, 254.
- "Bess", "Hess" or, 313.
- Black Cloud, the first guide, 10-15, 262; grumbling of, 12; favored having light, 11, 17, 305n; moves piano, 14n; causes hyperæsthesia in Miss Burton, 35; trance personality, 87; essential for certain phenomena, 88; only one able to speak through Miss B., 123; resentment of, to contact, 138, 139; exorcism of, 138; hyperæsthesia in presence of, 142-43; amnesic consciousness of Miss B. representing, 143; hyperæsthesia of, 144; might play tricks, 170; struggles of, to control Miss Burton, 171-72; took dynamometer and handed it back at maximum, 218; present, but not in control, 241; asked by Dr. Smyth to close séance early, 246; questions to, answered by raps, 248; connected with certain physical phenomena, 262; apparent anger of, 302; five yells from, 333; objected to Indian song, 359; writing signed B. C., 368; determination of, 369; attempts of, to give lights, 395-6; "meo", 396; "bad to work with" wrote Dan, 397; struggle to get B. C. to leave, 408-10; voice "go Black Cloud", 409; takes on his own nature, 409-10, 462; utters few words at a time, 414; recognized by gruff grunt, 444; does not like Miss B.'s locket, 453; when present touch is resented, 455, 459; got rid of, 461; control of, shows evidence of trickery, 463-4; violent struggle to throw off, 470; played possum, 470; Dan on efforts to keep B. C. from jumping in, 504; in control, exorcised after struggle, 506; many struggles with at Dr. Hamilton's sitting, 533; in control, exorcised with severe struggle, 558-61; grunt of, heard at Dr. Smyth's, 571; found in possession, 574, 575, 586, 587, 595, 596; grunts from, 596, 598, 599; nearly exorcised, back again on mention of name, 599; wanted a hymn, 600.
- Blake, Mrs., Case of, 55; conscious of unwillful motor actions, 125; light experiments with, 272, 273.
- Blunt, Sybil A., Experiments with Miss Ramsden in transferring words, 708-12; the lost sardonix ring, 709-10; note on ring, 710; told of Miss Ramsden's vision of a white light, 713; confirmed the statement, 714.
- Body, Movements of left side of, with immobility of right side, 40-1, 51, 54-5, 236-7.
- Bone playing, 11, 188; attempt at, failed, 333.
- Book review: *Time and Free Will*, by Henri Bergson, 657.
- Boston Common, Iron fence on, 94, 159, 524.
- Box and key, Reference to, 618, 622.
- Brailey, Ronald, Miss Ramsden's experience with, 681-82.
- Breath, no stop for, in whistling, 517.
- Breathing, Difficulty in, 619, 622.
- Breeze blowing in face, felt by Hyslop and Mrs. Milton, 438, 453; felt by Dr. Hamilton, 445-6; but not by Hyslop, 446; Dan asked who caused, 483; all felt a, 483; felt by Hyslop and Miss B., 493, 510, 595.
- Brick house, Vision of, a, 96.
- Brother-in-law of Mrs. Milton saw a long arm, 239.
- Bulb put in hand of control, 231.
- Burton, Miss Anna, believes in herself, 1, 124; honesty of, 5, 58, 179, 263, 593; examined in normal state, 6; previous consideration of case, 7; case of, richer in variety than that of Palladino, 8; hysteria of, the primary interest, 8; account of, 8-9, 18-19, 181; development of the phenomena, 9-15; tied to table, 11; moves piano, 13; raps near bed of, 17, 181; education of, limited, 19; attitude of friends of, 20; hysterical simulation the interpretation of actions of, 26; excessive modesty of, 26;

had no training in conjuring, 27; question of remuneration, 27-28; no reason to distrust, found, 28; tests for trance insured existence of hysteria, 29; whistling ability of in trance state, 29; abnormal conditions of, 30-31; collapse of, under white light, 34, 120, 139, 305, 341, 342; anæsthesia and hyperæsthesia of, 35-36, 58-60, 258, 304; claimed to see lights, 36; jerking of hand of, preceding a phenomenon, 36; studying the muscular actions of, 39-40; motor dissociation of, 40-41; rising without detection, 40, 51; no evidence of telepathy in, 41; handkerchief tied over mouth of while Oma sang in trumpet, 44; manipulating phonograph, 44-45, 80-81, 114, 124; tying of, with thread, 47-48, 200; convulsions and exhaustion at close, 48; testing temperature of, 48; the enlarged gland experiment, 49; shocks from flash light, 50-51; photographed standing, 51; saliva of, phosphorescent, 52, 234, 243; severe tests of, for anæsthesia, 58, 59, 121, 251; table levitation, 68-69, 251; lights not produced fraudulently by, 70; color of lights produced by, 71; often failed to produce lights, 72; hands of, in some way connected with the lights, 73-74, 115, 252; Dr. Hyslop's experiments with, for lights, 74-76, 234; collapse of, after writing H. and Pelham, 91; after writing Mary, 92, 159; clairvoyant vision of, 92, 159; had read no spiritualistic literature, 93n; Dr. Hyslop began experiments with, 94-97; attempt of Dr. Hodgson through, 94-96, 156-57, 159, 523-25; saw a vision of a cross, 99; account of, came through Mrs. Chenoweth, 99; ignorant of George Pelham, 100; and of Fred. Myers, 100; got name of Newbold, 101; wrote name of Rector, 102, 106; ignorant of Emperor group, 103, 161; frightened at name of Stainton Moses, 103; semi-consciousness of, an obstacle to Emperor group, 104; sub-conscious fear in, 104; normal honesty of, 106; has had no experience in conjuring tricks, 108;

actions of, simulating teleological functions, 113-15; working phonograph, 114, 124; behavior of, in materialization experiments, 115, 253-4; condition of, in trance state, 121; varying anæsthesia of, 122; aphasic condition of, in trance, 123-24; conscious of detection, 124-25, 237, 240, 241; of actions not initiated by herself, 125, 127-8, 130; unconscious of touching herself, 35-36, 125, 255, 456; alternation of anæsthesias and hyperæsthesias in, 127; automatism of, proved, 128-30; efforts of, to perform feats honestly, 132-33; subconsciously aware of exposure, continued after collapse, 134; instability of trance of, 136; folding of hands by, 137; non-resistance of, to contact, 138; manner of awakening, from trance, 138; motor paralysis of vocal organs of, 138; manifests a variety of hysterical personalities, 142; exempted from suspicion, 143; a non-discoverable personality of, 144; case of, instructive, 150; implicated in the phenomena, 150-51; relation of case of, to the spiritistic theory, 152; ignorant of color of Mrs. Hyslop's eyes, 159; phenomena connecting case of, with the Piper, Smead and Chenoweth cases, 167; Whirlwind incident, 168-69; hypothesis of unconsciousness of, 170; complex explanation of trance condition of, 170-71; resents Black Cloud's control, 171-72; indications of dissociation of functions in, 175; possibly normally conscious of the automatism and its foreign source, 176; may represent a combination of foreign and subjective agencies, 176-77; at the mercy of dissociation, 177; an ideal instance of variable conditions, 178; abortive mediumship of, 178; movements of larynx of, 43, 44, 61, 62, 184; right hand held by Dr. H., 184, 187, 188, 192, 194, 202, 235, 237, 238; pulse of, 185; freedom of hands of, 185, 188; both hands held, 187, 188, 198, 204, 205, 206, 213, 214, 215, 228, 232, 245,

382; movements of hands of, 185, 186, 187; left hand held by Dr. Smyth, 187; mouth of, tied with handkerchief, 187-8, 214; early trouble of, in speaking, after singing or whistling, 191; change in depth of trance of, 191-2; mouth of, bandaged by controls, 192, 200, 206; held by Dr. Hamilton's right hand, 200; tied with twist, 200-1; communication from mother of, 208; in a deep trance under a strange control, 211-12; resisted restraint of Mrs. Milton, 212; tied with rope by controls and mouth bandaged, 213-14; heard two voices, 214; hands of, held by the controls, 215; roused from trance, 216; muscular strength of, tested with dynamometer, 216-17; held dynamometer, 218; standing in photograph, fig. 4, 220, 229; explosion a severe shock to, 220-1, 230; collapsed at blinding flash, 222; led by Dan to chair in dark kitchen, 222; manner of walking in trance, 222-3; little effect of second flash on, 223, 233; tied by controls, 224; collapsed at flash, 225; hands of, tied loosely in fake tie, 225-6; claimed rope hurt, 226; hands of, unwound, 226; ignorant of what photograph showed, 227; failure of, to fire flash-light, 230-3; mouth of, shown open in photograph, 233; secondary personality of, scorns Dr. Smyth, 235; brighter and smarter in trance than in normal condition, 235, 243; clumsiness of, 236; movements of, perceived by Dr. Hamilton, 236-8; something done with both hands held, 238; dropped head on table, 237, 273, 275, 294, 333, 335, 342, 348, 349; often found involved in phenomena, 238; dislikes cabinet, 239; acted from suggestor of Dr. Hamilton, 240; old "band" of, holding back, not appearing, 241; failure of, to get results after exposure, 242-3; gave left arm for spirit's pulse, 243; Hamilton on hysteria and secondary personality of, 244; less attempt of, to hide personality, 246; Canwill held right hand of, 248; tied at the Canwill sitting,

251; needles run into arm of, 251; lights by, 252; impersonations by, 253-4; trickery of, 254; failed to move table, 255; honesty of waking intelligence of, 255; trick of trance personality with, 255-6, 362; Dr. Smyth saw table-lifting by, 256-8; collapsed at being found standing, 257; clairvoyant vision of man in room, 258; attempts to give Dr. Smyth super-normal kiss, 259; mental processes of the chief object of attention, 261; sensitiveness of, to light, 262; interest in, as an hysteria, 263; right hand of, held by Dr. Hyslop, 265, 285, 314; left hand of, free, 265, 285; muscular contractions and catalepsy of right arm of, 275; head of, falls forward when resting, 275, 276, 358, 374, 377, 382, 383, 386, 392, 394, 403, 415, 419, 420, 421, 575; isolated or segmental motor action of body of, 275-6; tied with new rope, 285-9; untied by Hyslop, 286-7; trumpet held out of reach of, 291; throat and larynx of, held during whistling, 295-6; and both hands of, 296-7, 298; during singing, 298-9; spontaneously offered conditions in trance, 295; resented touch, 295, 297; no whistling near, but slight groans heard, 296, 297; tried to give a name, coming out of trance, 300-1; automatic writing by, 302-3, 310-11; honesty of subliminal of, 303-4, 308; not conscious of her body, 304-5; left hand of, acted synchronously with the right, 306-7; in catalepsy, 307, 382, 412, 424, 429; held pencil like Dr. Hodgson, 309; trembled at light, 310; held Dr. Hyslop's hand to her throat while singing and whistling went on, 311-12; Hyslop's head against hers, 311-12; Hyslop watching, 314-15; put both hands in Hyslop's, 316, 344, 365, 371, 375, 376, 382, 390, 395, 396, 397, 411, 421, 422, 429, 430, 439, 441, 443; moved them to her face, 317; raps produced with both hands of, held off table, 317-18; lights about, 319, 327-8, 395; talked through trumpet to Mrs. Milton and Dr. Hamilton, 319;



voice of, contradicted answers by raps, 320; reluctance of, to test conditions, 320; raps near while normal, 320; independent singing apparently near, 321; no trace of sound from throat of, 323; Hyslop's hand on forehead of, during whistling, 323-4; failure of, at bone playing, 333; five yells from Black Cloud through, caused collapse of, 333; came out of trance with headache, 339; disordered physiological condition of, 340, 346; tested with a shielded bull's eye lamp, 341-2; left hand of, associated with the phenomena, 340; "Dan" asked to drop head of, on Dr. Hyslop's shoulder, 342-3, 349, 374, 394, 397, 407, 423, 466, 499, 507, 511, 514; subliminal resentment of, at Dr. Hyslop's touching breast pin, 343; vaporous lights around, 343, 351; resented Mrs. Milton's touching her hands, 344; rang cymbals and bells on tambourine separately, 345-6; saw a large light, 346; said "no good" to light made by Dr. Smyth, 351; in better health and more alert, 353; no movements of head of, detected, 354; stopped phonograph, 355; right hand gave no evidence of trickery, 356; seized and held pencil like Dr. Hodgson, 357; Hyslop's hand placed on throat of, 356, 417, 419, 420, 421; scrawl, possible Ho, 358; automatic writing, 353, 359; touched own face, 362; getting adjusted to Dr. Hamilton's touch, 363; sprang to her feet, 363; no muscular action by, when table opened, 363-4, 369; movements of hands of, held by Hyslop, 364-6; walked across room, 368; willing and unwilling, 369; spontaneous experiments, 370-6; whistling and singing, 370-1; raps with hands and feet controlled, 371-5; indications of teleology, 374-5; unsuccessful experiments, 375-7; winced at red light, 377; could not have lifted table, 379; head of, against Hyslop's, 382; perfectly passive, 383; left hand of, placed on Hyslop's left holding pencil, while paper in his right was pulled, 384-5; writing, 385; slowness and

apparent honesty of, 389-90; raps preceding trance condition of, 399-400; raps not near, 399, 400; ready for writing or dark séance, 404; startled at movement of Dr. Hyslop's hand, 405; table moved toward, 405; whistling not located near, 406, 426; right hand and head of, passive, 406-7; singing located near face of, 407, 442-3; wrote messages from Dan, 408-10; resisted the going of Black Cloud, 408-10; hyperæsthesic, 409; singing nearer, than the whistling, 400; conduct of, under test conditions, 412-14; dissociation of left side from right under control, 413; seems aphasic under control of Black Cloud, 414; hands held, has vision of Mrs. Hyslop's face and name Mary, 415; moved right hand out in the air, 424; temperature of, rises during sittings, 425-6; menstruating, 426; failed to produce lights, 429; subliminal headache of, 431-2; resentment of, to Hyslop's touch, 432-3, 445; failures due to menstruation, 433; passive motor condition of, 434; cough of, like that of Mrs. Piper and Mrs. Chenoweth, 434; body of, trembled while breeze was blowing, 438; collapsed, 439; rose from chair, 444-5; leaned forward, 446; showed no signs of trance, 446, 448; vision of man with beard, 453; removed locket when Black Cloud came in, 453; movements of hands of, to face, 454; partial anaesthesia of, 456-7; æsthetic in face, 458; unusually sensitive, 458-59; head of, fell on table, 459, 468, 484; apparently clairvoyant, 460; anticipated detection and turned body, 460; moved about, 461; got rid of Black Cloud, 461; became passive, 462; actions of, suggested trickery, 463; collapsed at turning up of white light, 468, 470; violent struggle of, to get hands loose, 469-70; cataleptic for a long time, 470; struggle to get rid of Black Cloud, 470, 484; effect of plaintive music on, 471; effect of exposure of phonograph trick on, 472-3; saw a light and vision of lady

with dark hair, 473, 475; got names Agnes and Mary, 474; letters E I P, 475; became anæsthetic, 476, 487, 493, 494; could not go into trance at Dr. Smyth's office, 479; lethargic at home, walked to sofa, 479-80; eyes of, open in the darkness, 480-1, 515; in trance in daytime, 481; heard talking, 482; got name Piper, 482; said she felt a breeze, 483, 493; tried for name wanted by Hyslop, 483; efforts to talk through, 485; lethargic, 488; earnest effort of, to give tests, 492; Mrs. Milton's mention of rope caused collapse of, 492; saw cross lights, 494, 495; saw a light, with something in it, 495; seized pencil and wrote messages signed H., 496; honest volunteer efforts of, to stop phonograph with hands and feet under control, 498-9, 507, 509; had read no psychic literature, 499-500; exclaimed "Black Cloud! go away, you hurt me", 506; saw lights, 512; foot of, found against table leg after loud rap, 512; vocal organs of, did not produce humming, 513; buried face in Hyslop's shoulder, 514; whistled with Hyslop, 514; trembling of face and hair of, 515; dropped breast-pin on table, 516; free from control gave lights, 518-19; labored effort to do something, 520; messages from H. and Dan, 521; can not whistle in her normal condition, 522; saw light like a large canvas, 523; iron fence and park, 524; room with drop light, and Morris chair, 524; man with brown beard, 525; red brick house, 526; wind-mill, 526-7; conveying name Whirlwind, by drawing, 527; questions and answers as to control, 528-9; saw a railroad train, 529; gave word Adirondacks, 530; saw old man with white beard in a robe, 533; saw a cross, 533, 535; got word Masonic, 534; wrote with pencil held in Hodgson manner, 534; left hand of, smeared by Smecker, 538; right hand of covered by Pitcher's left, 541; Pitcher's story of her movements, 541-5. Anæsthetic, 552, 558; saw

letters H and P, "real old man", and whirling wheel, 552-3; man with papers and name James, 554-5, 580; got William and Imp, 557, 559; saw letters J, H, I, 558; saw large boat, two men, and initials W. J., 559-60; heard William, 559; Black Cloud in control, 558-61; hands of held, trumpet moved, 561-4; fell forward at light, 565; had little knowledge of James, 566; clothing of, completely changed, 567-9, 585; complained of light and darkness, 570-1; relation of motor actions of, and the phenomena, 570, 575; saw lady, old man, papers, initial J, 580; uttered "Imperator", 581; B. C. exorcised, 581; lights produced, 581-3; while hands were held, 583; hands of, cataleptic, 586; arose and walked round room, 586-7; Ellen and M. H., 587; in unstable trance state, 588; Hyslop saw bright light behind and near, 589; ordered in writing to lie down, 590; her subconscious belief, 591; head dropped at red light, 591; adjusted music in phonograph, selecting Ave Maria, 596-7, 598, 601; picked out hymn record in darkness, 600; saw light like wheel, 607; saw old man and figures 3 and 9, 608; initials W. H. M., 608-9; complained of bright light, 609; man who shot himself, 610; got Rec, 612; Fred and spelled out Myers, 612-13; saw train, R. H., 614; wrote Newbold, 614; name Frank, 618-19; R. H. and Richard, 618; M. E., 619; Ellen, 620, 621; Hodgson, 620; conflicting answers oral and by raps to questions, 622; marked lethargy in, 622; saw light over table, 623; lights and word Ayers, 623-4; W. H. M. and E., 624; Marjorie, 625; Myers and rose, 625; catalepsy in both arms, 626; gets Rector with difficulty, 627-8; Hodgson on barriers to be overcome in case of, 635-6; lethargic and phlegmatic, 636n; G. Pelham on the sittings with, 638-40; describes Miss B., 640.

Burton, Anna, Medical examination of, by Dr. Louis Millard (pseud.), 654; physical examination, 654-6.

Burton, Hattie, a new guide, 235, 243.

Burton, Mrs., control, 228, 229.

Cabinet sittings, 240, 241-2.

Cameron, H. T., Statement of, 14; séance at house of, 290-4.

Canwill, G. B., Report of sitting by, 248-52; Raps, 248; touchings, 248-9; whistling, 249-50; singing, 250; combined whistling and singing, 250; whispering, 250; tambourine playing, 250; rope tying, 250-1; table levitation, 251; other phenomena, 251-2; conclusion: three phenomena inexplicable, 252; lights, 252.

Catalepsy, 139; limitations of controls in, 173; in Mrs. Smead, 175; of Miss B. noted by Dr. Hyslop, 307, 382, 412, 424, 429, 492; after phonograph exposure, 470; of right arm, 595.

Catalepsy, Psychic, 622-3.

Cataleptic pauses, 139.

"Charley" heard in a whisper, 313.

Chenoweth, Mrs., Apparent cross reference through, 94, 97, 98; sittings with, 97-98; saw a cross, 99; account of Miss Burton through, 99; summary of sittings with, 103-6; anæsthesia in trance of, 121; stability of trance in, 136; Mrs. Hyslop communicated through, 159, 404; spells Light with a capital, 103, 161; phenomena of case of, connected with Burton case, 167, 309; shows no hysteria nor dissociation, 177; qualified for automatic actions, 177; pencil held as in Hodgson control of, 358; two names associated in sittings with, 386; Miss B's cough like that of, 434; agreement for cross references at sitting with, 477; methods used through, employed with Miss B., 478, 486; reference to sittings with, 532, 622; portion of record of sitting with, 632-41; Hodgson communicator, 632; description of Prof. James' mind, 633; work of Imperator, 634; another place and light, 635; not successful, 636; G. P., on the rush to give proofs, 637; Jennie B.—on man

not present at sittings, 639; Miss Burton's room described, 639; Mrs. Milton and Miss B., 640; predicted ride on train, 641; other guides named, 641.

Chenoweth, Mrs., Sitting with, Mr. Myers the communicator through automatic writing, 731-9; had no knowledge of Myers' writings or views, 732, 737n; eyes of, closed, 734n; views of, on telepathy, 735n, 739; knows nothing of the relation of time to the experiments, 735n; the subconscious of, a factor, 739.

Clairvoyance, Apparent, of Miss B., 459; very unstable, 566.

Clairvoyant visions, best in a red light, 32; vision of Miss Burton, 92; whole group of, 94-97; existence of, 107; unstable condition of, 122-25, 172-73; dulled sensibility in the, 136.

Clock annoying to Miss Burton, 105; large, at Mrs. Milton's, 639.

Coincidence, Relation of, to time, question, 678; answer of Miss Ramsden, time of no importance, 680.

Collapse of Miss Burton, 34, 91, 92, 120, 127, 134, 439, 575; sign of shock, 120; after exposure, 134, 470; ends performance, 171.

College professor, The, as investigator, 151-52.

Combs removed from hair of sitters, 12.

Communicators, Personal equation in the, 162; in the Piper case, 171.

Condition, Unstable, of psychic, 173.

Conditions, Complexity of the, affecting the possibility of obtaining the supernormal, 168, 171, 178; appearance of purpose in control of the, 171; implied in the term hysteria, 174.

Confederates, Precautions taken against, 43.

Confederates, Provision against, 183, 191, 196, 200, 203; possibility of, 605.

Conjurer, Disqualification of the, 5-6.

Consciousness, Instability of, in clairvoyant visions, 136; must

- subliminal or supraliminal, attend production of physical phenomena, 413; sudden disappearance of normal, 477.
- Contact and control, Do, produce anaesthesia? 413.
- Control, voluntary offer of, for tests, 140; effect of contact and, 413-14; tends to cause mental conditions which make results impossible, 413.
- Convulsive movements, Premonitory, 128-29; efforts of Miss B. to control, 129-30; true interpretation of the, 132-33, 141; momentary, indicating change or difficulty, 394.
- Cough, Abnormal, of Miss B., 434.
- Cross, Vision of a, by Miss Burton and Mrs. Chenoweth, 99-100; slowness of Miss B. in recognizing, 123, 494, 533; Hyslop thinking of, saw blinding light, 450-2; several visions of, seen by Miss B., 494-5, 500; marked on paper, 502; many references to, evidential, 631.
- Cross references, Undoubted, 106.
- Cust, Adelaide B., Confirmatory statements on tea garden in Paris, 706.
- Dan, guide, brings a cheerful influence, 10; advice from, 12; tone trumpet, 13; wanted lights out, 17.
- Dan Rulland, trance personality, 87, 262; appears in raps and automatic writing, 88; holds a pencil like Dr. Hodgson, 89, 90; communication signed H., 91, 158, 402; writes "Pelham", 91; Mary, with blue eyes, appears, 92; automatic writing by, 95; admitted medium did things when out of the body, 125, 127, 335; directed awakening of Miss B., from trance, 138; admits difficulties, 162; Whirlwind incident, 168-69; might play tricks, 170; controls Black Cloud's possession of Miss B., 172; controls that others may work, 173; control of imitated by another, 212; tests of, with dynamometer, 218; removed medium to kitchen after collapse at flash-light, 222; wanted another picture, 223; lost the control, 223-4; consented to tying medium, 224; held up the trumpet, 225, 227; accused by Mrs. Milton and controls of deception, 227, 233; announced presence of Mrs. Hyslop, 303; wanted darkness, 305n; turned on electric light, 308; wants phenomena in light, 310-11; questioned without replying, 310; gave two lights, 327-8, 396; raps answers to queries regarding moving an apple, 335; apparent ignorance of probable processes, 335; automatic writing from, 339, 368, 375-7, 397, 400, 401, 405, 409, 410, 411, 418, 454-5, 475, 491, 495, 496-7; questioned, 399; giving directions, 400; requested that B. C. go, 408; wrote B. C.'s influence was not good, 410; never speaks, 414; answers questions with raps, 417-18; proposed going, 423; wrote of Miss B.'s headache, 431; of her poor condition for writing, 449; asked to explain trouble, 460; written replies, 461; directed Hyslop to hold trumpet, 467-9; on the Black Cloud control, 470-1; trying a new method, 476; object of, at variance with Black Cloud, 487; wanted more strength present, 498; wrote "will give another test," 503, 507; on difficulty in keeping B. C. out of control, 504; on B. C.'s control, 506; on efforts to give results, 516; messages on trickery in sitters, 549; raps and writings from at sitting at Dr. Smyth's, 571, 573-4; messages from, 576; gave permission to admit Mrs. R—, 598; seemed powerless with B. C. in possession, 602; remarks on the hundreds of lights, and raps, 602-6.
- Darkness, The apparent necessity for, 31-35; for the physical phenomena, 32, 263; why demanded not known, 33; limitations of investigation by, 37; much discoverable in spite of, 38-39; dispute of controls about, 302; wanted by "Dan", 305n.
- Deception convertible with term fraud, 110, 112.

- Detailed record (Dr. W. H. HAMILTON and Dr. J. S. SMYTH) 183-260.
- Detailed records.—Part II. (JAMES H. HYSLOP), 261-641; Introduction, 261-3; First series, 263-352; second series, 353-433; third series, 434-549; fourth series, 550-641; Appendix: Other automatic writing, 642-8; experiments in localization of sound, 648-51; experiments with lights, 651-3.
- Discarnate agents, messengers in telepathy, 725-6; co-operation of, does not exclude the living as agents, 728.
- Dissociation, All sorts of, in the case, 414.
- Dissociation of functions, 115-16, 117, 121-22, 124, 140; *Mêlée* of, 125; anæsthesia in, 140; in Whirlwind incidents, 168, 170; indications of, in Miss Burton, 175; no, in Mrs. Chenoweth, 177; Miss Burton at the mercy of, 177-78.
- Dissociation of motor activity, 472.
- Dissociation of motor and sensory sensations, 141.
- Dizziness, Frequent complaint of, 136.
- Dogmatism of academic notary must be eliminated, 152.
- Domuria, Signor Pietra, whistling of, 12; the agent in expert whistling, 262; whistling of, 267-70, 295, 321, 393.
- Doors sealed and wedged, 183, 191, 196, 200, 203.
- Dream life, State like the normal, 175.
- Dreams, Phenomena of, 116-20.
- Drum poorly played, 191, 192.
- Drum-sticks rubbed legs of the Drs., 192.
- Dynamometer, Registering of muscular power with a, 135, 141, 216-17; trance personalities tested with, 217-18; Dr. Hamilton found needle of could be moved, 217; notes on the test results, 218-19.
- Echoes in room, 347; or duplication of the music heard by Hyslop, 381, 382, 512-14.
- Echolalia, 128; in connection with dream state, 143; Mrs. Piper's, 144, 175.
- Efforts, Honest, to give results, 517.
- Electric bull's eye lamp with sheath used, 340-1.
- Electric light turned on by "Dan", 308.
- Ellen, Name, confused with Eveleen, 102, 160; and initials M. H., 587; and Hodgson, 620-21; associated with Myers, 621, 629-30; evidential, 631.
- Environment, Necessity for considering the, 164.
- Esperance, Mme. d', Case of, 5.
- Eveleen, name of Mrs. Myers, 102, 629.
- Evidence, The standard of, 153-54; a psychological one, 155.
- Experimentation greatly handicapped, 37.
- Experimenters, Duty of, 165-67.
- Experiments and Experiences in Telepathy; by Miss Miles, Miss Ramsden and Miss Statkowski, 673-714; Introduction by James H. Hyslop, 673-5; Miss Ramsden's first report, 675-7. An example of psychometry, 667-8. Questions addressed to Miss Ramsden and Miss Miles, 678-9; Miss Ramsden's replies, 680-3; Answers of Miss Miles, 683-8. Second set of questions, 689-90; Miss Ramsden's answers, 690-700. An externalised vision of a lady, seen by Miss Tipping, 700-1. Second set of questions addressed to Miss Miles, 701; Answers, 701; More recent experiments, 701-2. Miss Statkowski's Independent statement, 702. Miss Miles' Supplementary notes, 702. Miss Ramsden's statements, 702; Supplementary statement, 703. Miss Miles' First statement, 703; Miss Statkowski's statement, 703. Miss Miles' Supplementary statement, 703; Miss Miles' Original statement, 703-4; Miss Statkowski's statement, 704; Miss Miles' Supplementary statement, 704; Mrs. Geoffrey Lubbock's confirming statement, 704. Miss Miles' First statement, 704; Miss Statkowski's statement, 705. Miss Miles' statement, 705; Miss Statkowski's statement, 705; Miss Miles, Supplementary statement, 705; Confirmatory statement, 706. Miss Miles' First statement, 706;

- Miss Statkowski's statement, 706;  
Miss Miles' Supplementary statement, 706. Miss Miles' First statement, 707; Miss Statkowski's statement, 707; Miss Miles' Supplementary statement, 707. Experiments by Miss Ramsden and Miss Statkowski, 707-8. Experiments between Sybil Blunt and H. Ramsden, 708-10. Remarkable mishap at Aldershot, 710-11. Simultaneous vision of a white light, 712-14. Significant complications of these telepathic phenomena, by J. H. Hyslop, 714-31.
- Experiments in localization of sound, 648-51.
- Experiments, Spontaneous, 370-8.
- Experiments with lights, 651-3.
- Exposure, Prompt renewal of experiments after, 120, 134.
- F., Initial, seen, 610.
- Facts, Summary of the, 30-108; I. Physical phenomena, 30-87; Help prove hysteria, 30; those which claimed attention, 31; music and darkness required, 31-32; no whistling without music, 32-33; medium's collapse in white light, 33; the red light, 34; anæsthesias and hyperæsthesias, 35; unstable and varying states of medium, 35-36; experimentation handicapped, 37; automatism, 37-38; study for sympathetic muscular actions, 39-40; motor dissociation of sides of Miss B.'s body, 40; no telepathy or clairvoyance, 41-42; indubitable evidence of hysteria, 42; whistling when hands were held on the larynx, 43; singing and whistling with mouth covered, 44; touching tip of finger, 45; lights seen, 45; pulse of a "spirit," 45-46; the "spirit kiss," 46; slamming table about room, 46; stopping the phonograph, 46, 50; materialization of a face and mole, 47; whistling in trumpet, 47; skirt raised when both hands of medium were tied, 47; temperature experiments, 48; feeling enlarged gland in "spirit's" throat, 49; table levitation, 50; dangerous shocks from attempts at flash-light pictures, 50-51; of tambourine throwing, 51; phosphorescent saliva, 52; the trumpet smeared, 52; explanation of table levitation, 52, 68-70; the phenomena selected, 53; Dr. Hyslop's study of medium's muscular actions, 53-59; dissociation of motor action, 54; sympathetic motor action in jerking of hand, 55, 60; a signal of change in personality, 56; automatic convulsions, 56-57; proof of "honest" subconsciousness, 58-60; no causal relation between her motor actions and the phenomena, 59; test for anæsthesia, 59; a problem to prove the phenomena accompanied by trance deception, 60; simultaneous whistling and singing, 61-68; efforts to locate source of the sound, 63-65; whistling with both hands under control, 66-68; production of lights, 52, 70-76; facts objection to claim of existence of supernormal lights, 76-77; incident of rope-tying, 78-80; starting and stopping phonograph while both feet and hands were held, 80-81; the raps, 81-83; localization of, 83-85; independence of raps, 85-87.
- Fatigue, Complaint of, in the mental phenomena, 136-37.
- Finger, Touching tip of, in darkness, 45.
- Flashbag, Prosch Smokeless, used, 220.
- Flash-lights asked for by investigators, 207; two, taken, 209.
- Flash-powder, Means of burning, too slow, 219.
- Forces, Directions given by the, 9; asked for music, 10; tied and untied medium, 11; managed things, 11; musical, 12; strength of the tested, 13; face of one of the, seen, 14; wanted lights put out, 17; tried automatic writing, 18.
- Frank, name heard, with "cunning", 617-18, 621.
- Frank, name of sister, written by Mrs. Galton, 203.
- Fraud, Case of apparent, 4.
- Fraud, The charge of, 20-21; as absurd as spirits appear to be, 21; hypothesis of, an evasion of scientific interest, 22; has a psy-



- chological interest, 22; only dogmatism cries, 22; duty in determining question of, 25; trance deception distinguished from conscious, 109-10.
- Fraud, Conscious, The hypothesis of, 109, 111; inadmissible, 174; no reason to suspect, 263.
- Functions, Dissociation of motor and sensory, 115-16, 121-22, 140; play of half active and half thwarted, 176.
- Galton, H. P. signed Mrs. Milton's report, 16; not satisfied regarding cause of the phenomena, 181.
- Galton, Mrs. Maude B., deceased sister of Mrs. Milton, 9, 11-12; bell-ringing by, 11; Miss Burton came to, at age of twelve, 18-19, 181; on will power of the sitters, 192; wrote name on pad, 193; touched finger tips, 193; gave spirit kiss, 195-6; acknowledged Dr. Hamilton smelled medium's breath, 199; wrote name Frank of her sister, 202-3; test of, with dynamometer, 218; not actively present, 241; poorly impersonated by Miss Burton, 253.
- Genius, Myers' definition of, 737, 738n.
- "Gladly" written, 368.
- Gland, The enlarged, experiment, 49, 135, 207-8.
- "Grandpa, Influence of", 368, 638, 639n.
- Grease and Lampblack used, 52, 152.
- Greek cross drawn, 99.
- Groans, Existence of, 65, 140, 141; slight, heard by Dr. Hyslop, 296, 297, 298, 307, 312, 315, 322, 328, 332, 333, 340, 342, 372, 376, 394, 399, 402, 403, 421, 429, 440, 459.
- Guides, Names of, 10.
- H. and P. seen, 552; questions and replies, 553-5.
- H., R., initials of Dr. Hodgson, 100; H. and Richard, 612, 618-20; mentioned by George Pelham, 641.
- Halley's comet, seen by Miss S—, 607.
- Hamilton, Dr. W. H. (pseud.), discovered marks of hysteria, 1; held hand and fingers on larynx of medium, 44, 184; tried to catch hands at tambourine, 44, 188; tip of finger of, touched in the darkness, 45, 193; felt pulse of "spirit" wrist, 45-6, 194-5, 199, 208, 235; felt spirit face and mole, 47, 199; skirt raised as he tied medium's ankles with thread, 47-8, 201; touched with warm hands, medium's being cold, 48, 204; thermometer used while both hands of medium were held by, 48, 205-6; felt enlarged gland, 49, 207-8; held both hands of medium, and followed table with right, 50, 215; protected foot of table and held Mrs. Milton's hands, 68, 282, 283; saw medium's fingers illuminated, 72; Hyslop tried rap experiments with, 87; saw medium wipe light-producing substance from her thumb, 115; noticed Miss B., unconscious of touching herself, 125; noted a characteristic of Dr. Hodgson, 158; on character of notes made, 179; revised account approved by, 180; usually touched fingers of medium, 184; convinced of vibration of vocal bands, 184, 186, 206; noted pulse of medium, 185; pencil taken from hand of, 187; hands and fingers touching, 187; held hands of medium, 188, 198, 204, 205, 214, 215, 228, 232; tested medium with stethoscope, 189; touched mouth of medium, 192; cross-willing with Dr. Smyth, 45, 192-3; pad taken from hand of, 193; light thrown at, 194; received a spirit kiss, 195-6; hand of, placed on lever of table, 197; pulled across table, 197-8; asked for whistling in trumpet lying on table, 198; detected catarrhal breath of medium, 198-9; touched by hands, 200; satisfied with first tying, 202; hand of, placed on table, 202; pad dropped on head of, 203; experiment of, with trumpet, 204; pushed backward and forward, 204; took temperature of medium, 205-6; trumpet held over ear of, 206; got raps under disturbed conditions, 209; pushed back, 209; interrupted experiments by moving hands, 210;



requested whistling in trumpet, 211; suspected a strange control, 212; held hands of medium with foot on her feet, 213; arm of tied to that of medium, 214; hands of, slapped and held by controls, 215; tested with dynamometer, 216; tested the trance personalities, 217-18; Black Cloud took dynamometer from, 218; tried experimental photographs, 219-21; saw medium rise at flash, 220; held Mrs. Milton's hands, 221, 223; felt over medium tied with rope, 224, 228; photographed trumpet, and tambourine, in the air, 225; found medium's hands tied with foot of loose rope, 225-6; tied own hands and tossed trumpet, 226; tambourine raised from hands of, 229; often hit by, 229; showed control how to use push-bulb, 231-3; admitted honesty of controls, 233; experience with spirit hand and breath of medium, 235-236; hit by controls swinging trumpet, 236; detected medium's movements, 236-8, 240, 241; thought he saw a long arm, 238-9; pulled into cabinet, 239; rang bell, 239; took tambourine, 239; tried power of suggestion on medium, 240; noted movement of stand in cabinet while holding Miss B.'s hands, 241-2; letters of, to Dr. Hyslop, 242-4; on failure of medium to get results, 242-3; on hysteria and secondary personality, 244; cannot explain all the phenomena, 244; held hands of medium, 245, 246; called up central for the time, 247; read and confirmed the records, 261; at table lifting, 281-284; responsible for Mrs. Milton at tying of Miss B., 288; ropes under hand of, till tying began, 289; held lips and hands of Mrs. Milton, 298; said Black Cloud insisted on having light, 305n; remarked synchronous movements of medium's hands, 307n; brought rheostat to sitting, 308; located whistling, 309; turned up light, 310; got a breath like Miss B.'s, 312, 319; took trumpet from behind phonograph, 315; located singing from Miss B., 315-16;

rams, 317; read automatic writing, 318; not at sitting, 320; asked that a light touch his hand, 388; saw Miss Burton stop phonograph, 355; changed place with Dr. Hyslop, 359; Miss Burton's adjustment to presence of, 363; tested in office for localization of sounds of raps, 378n; felt jar of table from raps, 439; noted strength of whistling, 441; confirmed Hyslop's memory of whistling, 445; smelled Miss B.'s breath and hair, 445; noted unusual condition of Miss B., 459; saw lights, 462; on poor sittings, 463; heard Lenore sing, 504; located whistling near raised trumpet, 505; noted Miss B.'s right hand drawing back left, 507; letter to Hyslop describing a sitting, 532-5; noted excellence and peculiarity of whistling and singing, 596; noted trumpet resting on tambourine, 597; saw lights, 598.

HAMILTON, DR. W. H., Introductory explanation of the case, 181-2.

HAMILTON, DR. W. H., and DR. J. S. SMYTH.—Report, 179-260: Introduction, by James H. Hyslop, 179-80; Introductory explanation, 181-2; Detailed record, June 1-24, 1908, 183-216; dynamometer experiments, 216-18; Notes and recapitulations, 218-33.—General report of investigation Sept.—Dec. 16, 1908, 234-44; addenda, 245-8; reports of sittings, 248-60.

Hamilton, Dr. W. H., and Dr. J. S. Smyth.—Summary of record of, 43-53; whistling when hands were held by larynx, 43; precautions taken by, 43-44; summary of record of, 44-53; feeling "spirit's" pulse, 45-46; materialization of face with mole on it, 47; temperature experiment, 48; enlarged gland, 49; levitation of table, 50, 215.

Hand, left, Trumpet supposed held by, 54, 437; hypersensitive, 126; free, 436; thrust swiftly into Hyslop's, 469; violent efforts to release, 469-70.

Hand, right, Attempts to release, 56-57; anæsthetic, 126; temperature of, changed during séance, 435;

- jerked automatically, 435; continual control of, 435; no attempt to produce phenomena with, 436; jerk of, anticipated a phenomenon, 436; more frequently passive, 437; jerked away, 444.
- Hand, spirit, Manipulation of the, 235-6.
- Handkerchief, Medium's hands tied with a, 10-11; mouth covered with a, 44, 187-88, 192, 214, 221.
- Hands, cold and warm, touch of, 48, 204.
- Hands, Jerks of, indicating change of personality, 56, 59-60, 128, 185, 377, 477.
- Hands, Varying positions of, in lethargic state, 128, 138, 186; manner of holding, 205; synchronous movements of, 306-7; no attempts at tricks with, 375; temperature of, rises during sittings, 425, 435; quiescent and body passive, 432, 434, 436; action and movements of the, 436; had no causal relation to events, 436; found at throat, 443; spontaneous offer of control of, 444; movements of to face, and other, 453-4, 464-5; not offered with Black Cloud in control, 459; violent efforts to release, 469-70; both under control, 496-7; cataleptic, 586; sensitive to touch, 592.
- Hand-writing in the air, 401.
- Hara, O'Hashnu, Lessons in telepathy, 690-91.
- Headache, Periodic of Miss Burton, 430-1.
- Heaviness, Bodily, in anæsthesia and trance, 137.
- Heddington, with a coronet, 677-8.
- Hemi-anæsthesias, 126, 501, 511; alternating, 139, 501, 511; apparent purpose of, 515-16.
- Henry, name, suggesting Prof. Sidgwick, 100; proved to be Henry James, 101.
- "Hess" or "Bess", 313.
- "Ho" written, 358.
- Hodgson, Dr., Method of holding pencil of, 89, 90, 156, 309, 357; attempts message through Dan, 91; message characteristic of, 92, 157-58, 329, 358-9, 402, 404, 418; and picture of iron fence, 94, 159, 524; of his room, 95-96, 159, 524; attempted description of, 95-96, 159, 525; on experiments with Miss Burton, 98, 99; asked to get a cross reference through Mrs. Chenoweth, 99; communications from, on the Burton sittings, 103-4; cross reference to by G. P., 106; first attempt of, to control automatic writing, 156-57, 384-85; difficulties of the control of, 162; "this is the way I write", 309; name of, party spelled out with raps, 324-5; automatic writing, signed R. H. and H., 329, 350, 385, 402; incidents suggestive of, 385, 387; conscious writing of Mrs. Milton's signed by, 388-9; Hodgson-Pelham incidents, 404; unsigned message suggestive of, 450; messages in first and third person, 450-53; impatience a characteristic of, 477; "she is not on our side", signed H, 482; seemed to be the communicator, 486; wrote he was trying to show her something, 494; Dan said H. was confused, but trying to tell something, 495; message signed by, 496; message signed H, 521; name given, 620-1; references to Burton sittings through Mrs. Chenoweth, 632-7; on Wm. James, 633; work of Imperator, 634; difficulties at Miss B.'s, 635-6; Myers on, as an addition to staff of workers, 733.
- Honesty, Normal, of Miss Burton, 5, 58, 106; everything depends on, 457.
- Honesty, Subliminal, 132-34; evidence of, 133, 134; only alternative to, 142-44; circumstance in favor of, 171; Hyslop's opinion of, 303-4, 308, 341, 389-90, 455, 499, 507, 509, 520, 570, 575.
- Humming accompaniment heard, 428-9; duplicating music of phonograph, 512-13, 518; not produced by Miss B.'s vocal organs, 513, 518; not heard by Miss Milton, 513.
- Hurricane, name given Dr. Hyslop by Jennie P., 94, 483.
- Hylolight used, 184; ruby hylolight turned on, 209.
- Hyperæsthesia of Miss Burton, 35, 41; of left side of body, 42; may be convertible with normal anæsthesia.

- thesia, 143; under Black Cloud's control, 464.
- Hyperesthesia, Tactual, of the Black Cloud control, 139; visual, to light, 139.
- Hypnoidal state, The, 729-30; telepathic phenomena may require a, for success, 730.
- Hypothesis, The spiritistic, *see* Spiritistic hypothesis, The Hyslop Charles, 96, 313.
- HYSLOP, JAMES H. — Conclusion, Three hypotheses: Fraud, Trance deception, and Spirits, 109-78; fraud and hysterical phenomena, 109; trance deception, 109-10, 111-144; conscious fraud, 111; our ignorance of the sub-conscious, 112; automatic and teleological phenomena in trances, 112-13; actions of Miss Burton simulating teleological functions, 113-15; not a normal condition, 115; dissociation of the mental functions, 115-16; the phenomena of dreams, 116-20; Miss Burton's trance analogous to dream life, 121; Miss Burton anaesthetic, 121-2; and aphasic, 122-4; collapse of Miss B., when discovered, 125; anaesthesia and hyperesthesia of Miss B., 126-8; her automatism proven, 128-30; its extent, 130-1; her subliminal honesty, 132-3; quick resumption of experiments after exposure, 134; some interesting phenomena, 134-5; summary of incidents proving hysteria, 136-41; another personality assumed, 142-4; The Spiritistic hypothesis, 144-78; A challenge, 144-5; the manifestation of the supernormal, 146-7; the false conception of the problem, 147-8; participation of the subject in psychic phenomena, 148-50; the Burton case instructive in this view, 150-1; a case of materialization, 151-2; Burton case a mixture of spiritistic and sub-conscious agency, 152; personal identity the standard of evidence, 153; physical phenomena no evidence of the theory, 154-5; the play of personality in the mental phenomena, 156; instances of, 156-62; real value of the present record, 163-4; the supernormal cast in the mold of the subconscious, 164; suggestibility, 164-7; limitations in estimating results, 167; complexity of the conditions affecting the possibility of obtaining the supernormal, 168-9; hysteria the promise and preventive of communication, 170; a complex explanation, 170-1; appearance of purpose in the control of the conditions for separate phenomena, 171; control of Black Cloud, 172; unstable condition of the medium, 172-3; limitations of the control, 173-4; the supernormal approximated, 174; dissociation of functions in Miss B., 175; participation of the subconscious and the automatic functions, 176; combination of foreign and subjective agencies, 176-7; Miss B's hysteria the symptom of abortive mediumship, 178.
- HYSLOP, JAMES H. — Detailed records, Part II., 261-653. Introduction, 261-3; notes from memory and at sittings, 261; limitations favorable to results, 262; the personalities, 262-3; first series, 1909, 263-352; Miss Burton, 263; the phenomena, 263-4; held right hand of medium, 265, 281; efforts of, to discover sympathetic muscular movements of right arm and hand of Miss B., 266, 267, 269-70, 271, 276; independent whistling, 267, 278; whistling by Pietra clear and distinct, 267-8, 278; felt of medium's left arm with right hand, 271; left hand of, placed on Miss B's shoulder and neck, 272; asked for lights, 272-3; touched an object and Miss B's head fell, 273; efforts to raise table caused muscular movements in Miss B's right hand, 274, 281; left hand of, raised and "kissed", 274-5; left put on Miss B's lips and right "kissed", 275, 299, 326; noted few movements of right hand of Miss B., 275; did not perceive fall of Miss B's head to table, 276; movement of hands stroking his own, 277; found Miss B. could touch phonograph, 277; whistling clearly an accompaniment to the music.

278; localization of the simultaneous whistling and singing, 278-80, 299; noted lifting of the table several times, 281-4; pressed Miss B's hand hard, 282; account of rope-tying of medium, 285-9; untied Miss B., 285-6; remarks, 287-9; left hand of, touched in odd positions, 289-90; seance at house of a stranger, 290-4; experience with trumpet, 291, 293; experiments in positions and sensations of hands, 292-3; touched on back of head, 293; felt medium's left hand rap, 294; urged Mrs. Milton for more distinct tests and elimination of darkness, 295; talk about phenomenon rebuked through trumpet, 295; experiments in holding Miss B's throat and larynx while whistling went on, 295-7; groans heard by, 296-7, 309-10; both hands held, 296-7, 298; saw several lights in front of Miss B., 300; Miss B., tried to give a name to, 300-1; the best sitting, 301; attempt at materialization a failure, 301-2; describes automatic writing, 302-3; on Miss B.'s subliminal honesty, 303; Miss B., not conscious of her body, 304; sensitiveness to light of Miss B., 305; hands raised felt pulse in air with free right, 305-6; noted medium's left hand acted synchronously with the right, 306-7; catalepsy, 307; jerk of medium's right hand, 307; could not locate whistling or singing in Miss B.'s throat, 309-10, 312, 322; tried to learn if wife was singing, 310; had head against Miss B.'s, 311-12, 315-16, 318-19; on attempt at getting trumpet from behind the phonograph, 314-15; had medium's right hand, 315; left hand on her shoulder, 315; heard sounds from Miss B's throat of singing and whistling, 315, 316; this doubtful and disproved later, 317; whistled with finger on lip, 317; heard indistinct sound of tambourine, 318; locating whistling and singing, 321-4, 330-2, 354-5; moved nearer to Miss B., 321, 322; hand of, on forehead of Miss B., during whistling, 323-4; lights issued

from forehead of, 327; automatic writing to, 328-9; touched hand holding tambourine, 330; watching for movements of trumpet, 331; touched by the, 332; lights from hand of, 336-7; held head of medium, detected no singing in throat, 338; held both hands while raps answered questions, 338-9; tambourine placed in hand of, 339; thought detected singing in throat, 340; tested Miss B's sensitiveness with light from electric bull's eye lamp, 340-2; not sensitive to out of trance, 345; Miss B's head dropped on shoulder of, to rest, 342, 343, 349, 374, 394, 397, 407, 420, 421, 423; touched breast pin of Miss B., 343; urged bringing Miss B. out of trance, 343-4; tried to hold both hands for lights, 344; cymbals and bells on tambourine rung separately, 345-6; on localization of sounds from phonograph, 347; left arm on back of chair, 348, 395; detected two voices in singing, one in Miss Burton's throat, 348-50.—Second series, 1910, 353-433: Miss Burton in better condition, 353; "man wants to speak to", 353, 358; studying her subconscious processes, 354; head of, struck by tambourine, 356; hand of, placed on Miss B.'s larynx, 356-7, 417, 419, 420, 421; changed place with Dr. Hamilton, 359; twinkling and cloudy lights seen by, 359-60; discussion of trance deception, 361-2; discovered no muscular action when table opened, 363-4, 369; phenomena noted while holding both hands, 363-5, 366-7; tied pillow to foot of table, 369-70; satisfied with spontaneous experiments, 370-8; controlled hands and feet of medium, 371-3, 411, 416, 423; tried to lift table, 379; detected no movement of Miss B., during singing and whistling, 379-80; felt for trumpet in front of Miss B's face, 380; heard duplication of music on his right, 381; a second time, 382; paper in right hand of, pulled, while left hand covered by medium's left held her right, 384.

390; paper taken from, and written on under hand of, 385; writing signed H., 385; pencil picked up and held like Hodgson, 385-6; had raps when holding both hands, 387; left arm of, on chair back, touched, 387, 396; discussion of apparent honesty of Miss Burton, 389-91; experiments holding trumpet, 391-4, 422; hands of, touched by Lenore, 395, 396; lights when holding one hand, 396; judgment of, in localization of sounds, correct, 398; impressed for an honest subconsciousness, 398; located raps at sitting for writing in the light, 399-400; read automatic writings, 401-4; Miss B. startled at movement of hand of, 405; stood over Miss B. to localize whistling, 406, 416-17; held trumpet placed in right hand in air, 407, 408; Miss B.'s resistance to touch of, in ejecting Black Cloud, 408-9; found singing nearer Miss B. than the whistling, 410; left hand on Miss B.'s shoulder, right on her right, 410, 417, 419, 421, 422, 426-7; located whistling, 410-11, 419; studying muscular action of Miss B.'s hands, 414; raps assented, 415; released hands before table moved, 416; studying throat movements and sounds in, 419-21; heard two whistlings, 420, 421; felt of own throat while whistling, 425; requested whistling at right, 426-7; head touched, 427; heard humming accompaniment, 428-9; touched trumpet with nose, 437; felt breeze blowing in face, not coming from Miss B., 438, 483, 493, 510, 595; olfactory sense of, injured, 445; attempt at telepathy and cross references, 450; blinding lights seen after thinking of Imperator and desiring to have cross written, 451-2; placed fingers on Miss B.'s lips, 454, 457; detected no sound in Miss B.'s throat, 457-8, 464; noted Miss B.'s unusual sensitiveness, 458-9; and turning away of her body, 460; saw peculiar subjective lights or phosphenes, 462-3; hands of, taken voluntarily to lips, 454, 464;

felt trumpet held by him tremble, 469; struggle of to hold Miss B. when phonograph was stopped with rope, 469-70; and in effort to get rid of Black Cloud, 470-1; on the personalities involved in Miss B.'s visual apparitions, 477-8; and the new method tried, 480; examined phonograph, 480, 481; on Miss B.'s eyes being open in the darkness, 480-1; on attempts to talk through or to Miss B., 485-6; on getting name Piper, 486; on failure of music to entrance Miss B., 486; Dan's use of expression "by thought", 487; suggested having lights, 487; heard hundreds of raps, with no movements by Miss B., 489-91; on effort of Miss B. to give tests, 492, 507; saw bright yellow lights, 494; on Miss B.'s efforts to keep her hands under his control, 497-9, 507, 509; tested localization of raps, 500; on Mrs. Milton's experience of being "drawn from", 499, 500; notes remarkable hemianæsthesias, 501; with head in front of Miss B. did not hear singing by Lenore heard by the others, 503-4; held trumpet pushed out by Miss B., 505; exorcised Black Cloud, 506; on clear rap for "No", 508-9; felt vibration of table at rap, 509; whistled in trumpet, 514; stopped for breath, 517; saw lights, 519; thought he smelled phosphorus, 519-20; observations on subconscious honesty, 520; tested matches for lights, 522-3; account of the Windmill or Whirlwind sitting, 523-31; interpreted Miss B.'s old man as Imperator, 535; notes on Smecker's report, 536n, 539n; on Pitcher's report, 543n, 544n, 545n; note on the ethics of fraud shouters, 548; Fourth series, 550-641; Object of series, 550; notes taken, 550n; visions seen by Miss B., 552-5, 557-9; trouble with B. C., 558-61; holding both hands noted movement of trumpet, 561-2; remarks, 563-7; precautions for sitting at office of Dr. Smyth, 567-9; account of whistling and singing, 570-3; vision of W. J. and safe,

- 572-3; Miss B.'s perturbation from new surroundings, 570, 573; spontaneous call, 574; detected no causal relation, 575; subliminal honesty evident, 576; concerned only in excluding concealment by Miss B., 577; saw several lights, 578-9, 581-3; not produced by lightning, 583; Miss B. did not produce the lights, 584; relative of Dr. Smyth saw light, 585; saw bright light behind Miss B., 589; on her subconscious belief, 591; magnetized self, as suggestion, 594; exorcised B. C., 595; questioned B. C., 598, 600; awakened Miss B. with difficulty, 601; remarks on lights, raps, etc., 602-6; account of Miss S.—'s experience at sitting, 607-9; initials and visions of Miss B., 610-11; Rec and Myers received, 612-13; Newbold and Henry James, 614; the Miltons' non-use of books from library, 615-17; answers oral and by raps conflicting, 622; going on train, 614, 622, 641; on psychic catalepsy, 622-3; on names received, 629-30; on Miss B.'s sense of "going", 631; evidential names, 631; notes on record of sitting with Mrs. Chenoweth, 633-41; remarks on other automatic writing, 642, 643-4; on bulletins received during daughter's illness, 645-8; experiments in localization of sound, 648-51; experiments with lights, 651-53.
- HYSLOP, JAMES H.** Introduction to Experiments and Experiences in Telepathy, 673-75; Questions addressed to Miss Ramsden and Miss Miles, 678-79; second set of questions to Miss Ramsden, 689-90; to Miss Miles, 701; significant complications of these telepathic phenomena, 714-31; the marginal phenomena exhibited, 714; not selective as in Piper and similar cases, 715; do not show a cohesive unity, 716; a defect of method in dealing with, 717; the synthetic associates show evidence of the supernormal, 718; all the associates of the phenomena must be taken into account, 719; what Miss Miles' record shows, 720-1; Miss Ramsden's experiences extend far beyond telepathy, 721; "invisible wires" suggest telepathic access to subliminal data, 721; or agent's thought may have lain dormant in her subconscious, 722; a dubious conception, 722; thought conveyed to Miss R. on arrival of her letter, 723-4; incident of the "soundless voice", 724-5; suppose discarnate agents are the intermediaries, 725; the Piper records show elimination of time, 725; personal experiments, 726; Miss Miles' feeling of assistance from raps, 726; Miss Ramsden's psychometric experiment, 726-7; what this hypothesis offers, 727; what Miss Ramsden's records show, and Miss Miles', 728; psychic research must look for the accompaniments, 728; coöperation of the dead does not exclude the living from being agents, 728; insulation of the living from each other, 728-9; trance personalities have no connection with Mrs. Piper's normal states, 729; the hypnoidal state of Dr. Sidis, 729-30; the hypnoidal condition, 730; a cause must be found equal to the complexity of the facts, 730; telepathy does not suffice, 730.
- HYSLOP, JAMES H.** Introduction to Report by Dr. W. H. Hamilton and Dr. J. S. Smyth, 179-80; character of the notes, 179; honesty of Mrs. Milton and Miss Burton, 179; irrelevant comments revised from the record, 180; appearance of inexplicable phenomena, 180.
- HYSLOP, JAMES H.** Preface, 1-6; Introduction, 7-29; Summary of the facts: Physical phenomena, 30-87: Their help in proving hysteria, 30; experiments of the physicians, 31-35, 43-53; anæsthesias and hyperæsthesias, 35-39, 41-43; study of muscular actions of Miss Burton, 39-41, 53-60; on whistling and singing, 60-70; production of lights, 70-74; special experiments and sittings for, 74-76; discussion, 76-78; on rope tying incident, 78-80; on starting and stopping phonograph with both feet and hands



- held, 80-81; on the raps, 81-87. Mental phenomena, 87-108: On the work of Dan Rulland, 88-89; Hodgson's way of holding pencil, 89-92; on Mrs. Milton's and Miss Burton's knowledge of spiritualistic literature, 93n; experiments of, with Miss Burton, 94-98, 99, 100-2; sittings of, with Mrs. Chenoweth, 97, 98, 99, 103-6; undoubted cross-references, 106; important points of Burton case, 106-7; problem and interest of case, 108.
- HYSLOP, JAMES H.** Sitting with Mrs. Chenoweth, 731-41: Introduction, 731-2; Record: Myers, writer, promises assistance, 732; amazed at work accomplished, 733; reference to Hodgson and James, 733-4; telepathy includes a carrier, 734-5; difference between letter and telegram, 735; time not of importance or equivalent value, 735; man master whether in spirit or not, 736; how the mediator works, 736; the subliminal is the withdrawing of the spirit to its own sphere, 737, 738; genius defined, 737; leaders and teachers omnipresent, 738; M.'s theory expressed, 738; influence of the subconscious of Mrs. Chenoweth, 739-40; evidence for the presence of Mr. Myers, 739, 740-41.
- Hyslop, Mrs. Mary**, communicating through Mrs. Chenoweth, 91, 98, 159; through Miss Burton, 97, 98, 158, 159; clairvoyant vision identifying, 97, 159; presence of, announced by "Dan", 303; asked by Dr. Hyslop to give up, 303; writing in air of, imitated, 401; through Lenore, 404; face of, and name seen by Miss B., 415.
- Hysteria**, Evidence of, 1, 3; the primary interest of the case, 8; import of the term, 25; the supernormal conditioned or accompanied by, 25; case of Eusapia Palladino, 26; facts of interest in proving, 30; many indications of, discovered, 38; covers accusation of conscious fraud, 42-43; evidence of phenomena of, 53, 111, 133; definition of, 111; summary of incidents proving, 136-41; interest in association of phenomena with, 155; in the Whirlwind incident, 170; complicated conditions implied in the term, 174; slight evidences of, in Mrs. Piper and Mrs. Smead, 175; Mrs. Chenoweth shows no evidence of, 177; the symptom of abortive mediumship in Miss Burton, 178; Dr. Hamilton thinks case one of, 244.
- Illusion**, Effect of discovery of, 175.
- Imperator**, Name of, given by Miss Burton, 103, 160; Mrs. Milton and Miss Burton ignorant of, 161, 630-1; few evidences of hysteria in Mrs. Piper under, 175; Hyslop thinking of, saw blinding light, 450-2; Hyslop interprets Miss B.'s old gray beard as, 535; Mrs. Milton ignorant of, 630; remarkably evidential, 631; making new records, and planned work at the Piper light, 634; two direct influences subdued by, 634; mentioned by G. Pelham, 641.
- Imperator group**, Supernormal evidence from, 103; semi-consciousness of medium, an obstacle to, 104; apparent presence of, shown by folding of Miss B.'s hands, 138.
- Imperator's sign of the cross**, 99.
- Impersonation** involves complicity of the impersonator, 149, 151.
- "**Indian Maid**" sung, 331.
- Indian song** with whistling, 316.
- Indian yells**, Five, from Black Cloud, 333.
- Insulation of the living** from each other, 728.
- Intellectuals and respectables**, Attitude of, 2; cannot choose between fraud and spirits, 22.
- Introduction (JAMES H. HYSLOP)**, 7-29; the phenomena of hysteria to be discussed, 7; the investigators, 7-8; history of the case, 8-9; Mrs. Milton's story of the development, 9-15.
- Investigators**, Ignorant, 52, 151-52.
- "**Invisible wires**", expression applied to telepathy, 675; incident of the, 721-2.
- Iron fence**, vision of an, 94, 159, 524; and shrubbery, 525.



- J., H., and I., seen, 558.  
 J., W., William James, 100; initials seen, 560; name William J. heard, 572; initials seen near safe, 572; with papers, 609; mentioned by G. Pelham, 641.  
 James, Henry, Presence of, indicated, 101, 160; unknown to Milton family, 101, 160, 616-17; name given, 614.  
 James, William, Presence of, indicated, 100; cross reference to, by G. P., 106; name seen, 555; name William heard, 557, 559; suggested, 566; writing signed by, 581; Hodgson's description of mind of, 633; efforts of, noted at another place, 633; Myers on nervousness of, 733-4.  
 Janet, Dr. Pierre, case proof of statements of, 4-5; on ordinary investigators, 152.  
 Jennie P—, "Whirlwind", in writing of Mrs. Chenoweth, 94; through Miss Burton wrote "Wind M", 96-97, 123, 160, 527; cross reference to, by G. P., 106; the incident of, 168; account of the windmill sitting, 523-32; no assured evidence of presence of, 638n, 641.  
 Jerks, Sympathetic, 55, 130; signal for change in personality, 56, 59-60, 128, 191, 198, 377, 477; of Miss B's right hand, 307, 356.  
 Jessie, name of "Lady Q", 98.  
 Juggler, The, as an investigator, 151-52.  
 King, Mrs. Hamilton, Letter from psychometrized, 678.  
 King, Robert, saw "Emilie" standing beside Miss Ramsden, 712; vision of white light enveloping Miss R., 713; confirms statement, 714.  
 Kiss, The "spirit", materialized, 46, 195-6; felt by G. B. Canwill, 249; given to Dr. Hyslop, 274-5, 299, 326.  
 "Lady Q" of Hodgson's first Report on Piper Case, 98.  
 Lady with dark hair, Face of, seen by Miss B, 473, 475; with letters E I P, 475.  
 Larynx, Whistling with hands held on, 43, 61, 186, 295-7, 419, 420; vibrations of, 296; Oma sang with Dr. Hamilton's right hand on the, 184, 206, 259; singing, with Hyslop's hand on, and vibration noted, 298, 312; no whistling with hand held on, 417; slight vibration and muscular action of, in whistling and singing, 419-20, 421.  
 Layman, Phenomena appear marvellous to a, 16; demands of the, 147-48; must be eliminated, 152.  
 Laymen, untrained, Attitude of, 2; have not patience to deal with hysteria, 3; hereditary feud of, with the scientific man, 20.  
 Leaders and teachers, Myers on the omnipresence of, 738.  
 Lenore, a guide, a Spanish dancer, 10, 262; singing of, 12; writing by, 91, 159; explained why Mrs. Hyslop did not communicate, 161-62; sang through trumpet, 200; played tambourine and touched the Drs., 204; tests of, with dynamometer, 218; to control, 227; gave time, 246-7; impersonated by Miss Burton, 253; writing from, 395, 460; Mrs. Milton claimed hand of, was stroking hers, 395, 403, 404; touched Hyslop's hands, 395, 396; speaks easily, 414; slammed door of phonograph, 503; singing by, heard by Dr. Hamilton and Mrs. Milton but not by Dr. Hyslop, 504; whispered to Smecker, 537; allowed Smecker to feel of pulse, 538; messages from on the Smecker-Pitcher séance, 549.  
 Lethargy, Frequent fits of, 139, 488; after severe struggle over Black Cloud control, 471; after attempt at Dr. Smyth's office, 479.  
 Levitation of table, 10, 13, 15, 30, 46, 68, 107; experiment of Drs. Hamilton and Smyth, 50, 215; probable explanation of, 52-53, 68-69; at Canwill sitting, 251; reported seen by Dr. Milne, 254-5; new light on, 256-8; unsuccessful attempt at, 259-60.  
 "Light" and "bright" heard, 552.  
 Light, Bright, caused collapse of medium, 33-34, 120, 139, 305, 341, 342.  
 Light ordered put out, 400.

- Light, red, used at sittings, 209, 303.
- Light, with a capital, a cross reference, 103; effect of expected, or unexpected, 141.
- Lightning, Flashes of, interrupted experiment, 480.
- Lights, Display of, 13; with smell of phosphorus, 45, 52, 234; production of, 70; color of, 71-72; could not be reproduced, 72; Miss Burton often could not produce the, 72-73; not independent of Miss Burton's organism, 73; experiments, conducted by Dr. Hyslop for, 73-76; discussion of explanations, 76-78; supernormal, 107; may be adequate evidence, 156; not like previous, 243; as seen by G. B. Canwill, 252; Hyslop's experience of, 272-3; seen around Miss Burton, 319, 327; from Hyslop, 327, 336; single and double, 327-8; spontaneous trial for, 335-7; like small electric, 336-7; two and three, in motion, 337-8; failed to touch Dr. Hamilton when asked to, 338; produced by Dr. Smyth with a match, 351; twinkling and cloudy, seen, 359-60; attempts of B. C. to give, 395-6; failure to produce, 429; lights appeared, 429-30; seen by Hyslop and Hamilton, 462; seen by Hyslop and Mrs. M., 518-19; slight smell of phosphorus, 519-20; seen with clairvoyant visions, 523-4, 559; Pitcher on phosphorescent, 543-4; experiment for, 567; directions about, 578; Hyslop saw several, 578, 579, 581, 582-3; Miss B. did not produce lights near phonograph, 584; seen by relative of Dr. Smyth, 585; seen by several, 596, 598-9; Hyslop's observations on, 602-6; from Mrs. Smyth's right hand, 606.
- Lights, Abortive, 603-4.
- Lights, Experiments with, 651-3.
- Limitations of our facts, 164; all sorts of, 167, 168; of controls, 173; to the work a blessing rather than an obstacle, 262; under unstable mental conditions, 592.
- Locket removed by Miss B, 453.
- Lubbock, Marguerite, confirms dense fog, 704.
- M. E., Initials seen, 619, 625; and Mary Ellen, 621; Hyslop on, 629-30.
- M., W. H., suggesting Myers, 100; initials seen by Miss B, 608; with Ayers meaning Myers, 629; mentioned by G. Pelham, 41.
- Man, Real old, seen, 552-4.
- Man the master whether in spirit or not, says Myers, 736.
- Man who shot himself, 610, 611.
- Man with black hair and blue eyes, 619.
- Man with high forehead at desk, 618.
- Marginal phenomena, associated mental elements, 714; in mind of the agent, 715; if liable to transmission conform to law of coincidences of present active mental states, 716; disregarded in settling question of telepathy, 717.
- Marjorie, name not intelligible, 102; associated with Myers, 621, 625, 629.
- Mary, name of Mrs. Hyslop, spoken, 386; seen by Miss B. over Mrs. Hyslop's face, 415; with the blue eyes, 474.
- Mary Ellen incident, 93n, 398; automatic writing from, by Mrs. Milton, 398.
- Masonic, word given in fragments, 535.
- Matches tested by Hyslop for phosphorus lights, 522-3; excluded from room, 568, 593, 594.
- Materialization, Attempt at, 18; of a face with a mole on it, 47, 135; experiments in, 115; illustrative case of, 151; failure at, 301-2.
- Materializations in reality impersonations, 150-51.
- Medium, Collapse of the, in white light, 33-34; by flash lights, 50-51.
- Medium or agent, The, the subject in the phenomena, 148-49; word used by Dan, 574.
- Mediums called lights, 483.
- Mediumship, Limitations and obstacles to, 3; a normal function of human nature, 4.

- Menstruation period of Miss B., 426, 433.
- Mental functions, Summary of instabilities of the, 136-41.
- Mental phenomena, 87-108; raps on the borderland of, 87; trance personalities, 87-88; Dan Rulland appears in raps and writing, 88; communications expected from Dr. Hodgson, 89; attempted through Dan, 90-91; Mary with blue eyes, 92; Mrs. Milton and the Mary Ellen incident, 93n; sitting with Mrs. Chenoweth, 94; sittings with Miss Burton, 94-97; psychology of the, 106; points of importance in the, 106-7; apparently supernormal, 107; complaint of fatigue in the, 137; participation of medium in transparent, 150; exhibit the right psychological ring, 156.
- Messages, Psychological conditions of possibility of transmission of, 154.
- Miles, Miss Clarisse, Experiments and Experiences in telepathy, with Miss Ramsden and Miss Statkowski, 673-730. Account published in *English Proceedings*, 673; sent record of further experiments, 674; questions addressed to, 678-79; answers, 683-88; first experience of thought transference, 683; can visualize deceased persons and receive messages, 683-84; mental telepathy with Miss Ramsden, 684; brother of, and Capt. Spicer, 684; visualizes vividly, 684-85; sleeps soundly, sometimes dreams of coming events, 685; acted as precipient with success, 685; psychic experiences as a child, 685-86; since death of father in 1892, 686; knocks on furniture, 687; first illness, 687; experience with Vango, 688; invisible cord attached to Miss Ramsden, 688, 720; power of visualization in telepathy, 688; occasionally aware of presences, 688; visions in Venice, 688; answers to new questions, 701; did not see Miss Ramsden, 701; did not feel out of the body, 701; associated knocks with helping presences, 701; more recent experiments with Miss Statkowski, 701-2; visit to mummy room at British Museum, 702; note on position of mummy, 702; stereoscopic photos of planets, 703; dense fog, 703-4; saw Siegfried at Covent Garden, 704; bird's eye view of Paris, 705; the Horse Show at Olympia, 706; journey to Malmesbury, 707; the Abbey, 707; what the record of, shows, 720.
- Millard, Dr. Louis (pseud.) Medical examination of Anna Burton, 654; physical examination, 654-6.
- Milne, Dr., Experiments of, with Dr. Smyth, 69; at materializing séance, 252; failed to recognize medium, 254; reported he saw dining table lifted by a human form, 254-5; experiment repeated, 257.
- Milton, Mr., Honesty of, 5; knew Myers left a letter, 100; admits the physical facts, 181; position at sitting, 213; hands of, held by Dr. Smyth, 50, 68, 213, 214, 215, 245, 246; tested with dynamometer, 217; at sitting for photographs, 219-20; in charge of flash-gun, 221; present at table lifting, 281-4; hands of held by Hyslop during rope tying, 288.
- Milton, Mrs. M. C., Belief of, in phenomena, 244; honesty of, 5, 179, 181, 592; gave freedom for tests, 5; superficial knowledge of spiritualism of, 8; story of development of Miss Burton, 9-14, 15; spiritistic views of, 16; replies to questions, 17-18; particulars about Miss Burton's childhood, 18-19; attitude of friends and relatives, 20; explanation of incidents by, 19-20; marvelled at the hanging of tambourine on picture-frame, 30; "treated" Miss B., 31; mental treatment of Miss B. by, 31, 137; magnetizing the medium, 31, 137; imitated enlarged gland by swallowing, 49, 208; hands of, held by Dr. Smyth, 51, 68, 189, 198, 228, 230, 232, 245, 246; by Dr. Hamilton, 221, 223, 282, 298; consented to photographs, 51; could not account for phosphorescent saliva, 52, 235; claimed

lights were not fraudulent, 70; present at Hyslop's experiments, 74-5; sits by phonograph, 74, 184, 353; stood behind Hyslop, 80; angry at seeing rope on phonograph, 81; tested for localization of sound, 83; located raps, 85-6; never read literature of Spiritualism, 93n; on the Mary Ellen incident, 93n; recognized "Windmill", 96; ignorant of George Pelham, 100; never heard of Fred. Myers, 100; got name Rector, 102; ignorant of Imperator group, 103, 161; cross reference to by G. P., 106; ignorant of use of the dynamometer, 135; on Miss B.'s folding of hands, 137-38; automatic writing by, 157; had not seen our publications, 158; Newbold unknown to, 160; began sittings with Miss Burton, 9, 181; asked Drs. Smyth and Hamilton to test the medium, 182; sat next to medium during development, 185; opened windows, 196; at end of table opposite medium, 197, 198; at table when Miss B. was tied, 200; between Dr. Smyth and Dr. Hamilton, 208; left room with Dr. Smyth, 209, 211; a voice came to, 215; tested with dynamometer, 217; at sitting for photographs, 219; had trouble to bring medium out of trance, 223; protested against hurrying medium, 226; innocent of attempt to deceive, 227; crowded into corner, 230; wanted Miss Burton to sit in cabinet, 239; on time telling, 247; hands of, held by Dr. Canwill, 251n; on impersonation of sister, 253; thinks bad spirits compromised Miss B., 244; asked for the time to be given, 246-7; at Canwill sitting, 248; recognized form of sister, 253; saw no resemblance to medium, 254; throat of, held by Dr. Hamilton during the simultaneous whistling and singing, 271, 279; changed the music and put hands in Dr. Hamilton's, 271; present at table lifting, 281-84; under supervision of Dr. Hamilton during rope tying, 287, 288; smelled phosphorus, 300;

wanted materialization, 301-2; read automatic writing with Dr. Smyth, 303-4; reported seeing lights, 314; requested lights, 327; on bone playing, 333; consented to use of electric bull's eye lamp, 341; on whistling and singing in the light, 360-1; told to stop music, 371; told to start music and go to other side of table, 373, 382, 383, 393; advised feeling for mouth of trumpet, 380; did not hear duplication of music, 381, 382; saw a light, 382; got name Agnes, 386; conscious automatic writing of, signed Hodgson, 388-9; suggested that Black Cloud give lights, 395; said Lenore stroked her hand, 395; located singing, 397; gets automatic writing from Mary Ellen, 398; raps during conversation of, with Dr. Hyslop, 399-400; located whistling, 406; hands of, held by Dr. Hamilton, 407, 408; directed to stand behind Dr. Hamilton, 407, 408, 411, 445; touched on the back, 408; stopped phonograph and went to kitchen, 410; heard click of the phonograph, 412; heard two whistlings, 420; trumpet put in hands of, 420; told to stand behind Dr. Hyslop, 422; placed hands on his shoulder and back, 423; phonograph started and stopped four times, 423, 424; on Miss Burton's bodily temperature, 425-6; heard humming accompaniment, 428; suggested writing message, 430; on Miss B.'s periodic headaches, 432; noted strength of whistling, 441; located raps on window sill, 448; noted an unusual condition of Miss B., 459; angry at finding rope on phonograph, 470; trance letter by Miss B. from Mrs. M.'s mother to her father, 481; saw the Piper light, 482; felt a breeze, 483, 493; wanted Dan to tell about rope, 492; complained of being "drawn from", 499, 500; had read no psychic literature, 499-500; after remark about Lenore heard her sing, 503-4; located whistling near raised trumpet, 505; ordered Black Cloud to go,

- 506; under control of Dr. Hamilton, 510; did not hear humming duplication of music, 513-14; heard whistling, Miss B. being in normal state, 515; noted humming independent of phonograph, 518; saw lights Hyslop did not, 519; saw a middle aged person, 529; held no sittings after Dr. Hyslop, 532-3; account of the discovery of lamp black and grease after the Smecker-Pitcher séance, 546-49; in care of Dr. Smyth at his office, 568-9; in charge of phonograph, 577; conscious of dimmed light in room, 579, 583; lights seen by, 579-80, 582-3; complicity of, excluded, 584, 604; clothing changed, 585-6; saw light behind Hyslop, 586; not at sitting, 594; knew nothing of W. H. M., 611, 615; nor of James and Newbold, 616-7; made no use of public library, 615-16; ignorant of Stainton Moses and Imperator, 630; Geo. Pelham on, 640.
- Mole, Face with a, materialized, 47, 135, 199.
- Moll, *Der Rapport in der Hypnose*, 165-66.
- Morris chair in room, 524.
- Morton, C. P., *Domunia* a guide to, 12; signed Mrs. Milton's report, 16.
- Morton, Mrs. C. P., signed Mrs. Milton's report, 16.
- Moses, Stainton, Fright of Miss Burton at name of, 103; unknown to Mrs. Milton, 630; mentioned by G. Pelham, 641.
- Motor action, Dissociation of, 51, 54-55, 140, 236-7; sympathetic watched for, 40, 55, 266-71, 472; tested with dynamometer, 135; detected, 272; not noticed by Hyslop when head of Miss B. fell forward, 276; relation of Miss B.'s, to events at Dr. Smyth's, 570, 575.
- Motor condition, The passive, of Miss B., 434.
- Motor dissociations suggestive of a genuine condition, 361.
- Motor system, No convulsion of the, during any phenomena, 394.
- Music required, 31, 32; change of, demanded by raps, 33, 140-1, 328; repugnance to plaintive, 140; new needed, 237, 241; inserted, 327; duplication of, twice heard by Hyslop, 381, 382, 512-13; effect of plaintive on Miss B., 471, 595; failure of, to entrance Miss B., 486; clear impression of independent, 513; duplicate not heard by Mrs. Milton, 513-14; duplicate vocal heard by Hyslop, 513-14.
- Music cabinet, Door of, slammed, 251.
- Myers, Frederick, W. H., name given, 100, 102, 160; cross reference to, by G. P., 106, 641; initials given, 608; name spelled out, 612-13, 615, 616; communicator through automatic writing at sitting with Mrs. Chenoweth, 732-8; way of writing I and M., 732n; on Hyslop's work against odds, 733; efforts to take part in other sittings, 733; on Hodgson and James, 733-4; on the carrier for telepathy, 734-5; thoughts carried by etheric waves, 735; time of little importance, 735; a consciousness higher than the ether, man the master, 736; the mediator in communications, 736; definition of genius, 737, 738n; views of on the subliminal or spirit, 737-8; we have each been used by some power outside, 738; evidence for presence of, 739; through distinctive features of his mind, 740-1.
- Necklace removed from neck of medium, 350.
- Needle, Phonograph, pushed into flesh of Miss B., 185.
- Needles run into right arm of medium, 251.
- Nerve energies, Doctrine of specific, 148.
- Newbold, Prof., Name of, written, 101, 160, 614, 616, 617.
- Newnham, Rev. P. H., The "soundless voice" of, 676, 695.
- Newspaper reporter, The, as an investigator, 151-52.
- Nightmares, 120.
- Normal consciousness suspended, 113, 115.

- Normal experience, Facts not explained by, 107-8.
- Normal sensibility excluded, 115, 116; in the dream life and trance, 119.
- Oma, Voice of, the strongest, 12, 262; sang in trumpet, 44, 49, 184, 191, 206, 214; sang in two voices, not in trumpet, 391.
- P. E. I., The letters, correct if reversed, 477.
- P. G., George Pelham, identified, 100.
- Palladino, Eusapia, Case of, 8, 23, 26, 56, 57, 136; conscious of un-willed motor actions, 125.
- "Pelham", possibly written, 91, 159, 403; George, identified, 100.
- Pelham, George, through Mrs. Chenoweth on the Burton sittings, 104-6; Hodgson-Pelham incidents, 403-4; talk of, through Mrs. Chenoweth, 637-41; on rush to give proofs, 637; Jennie P—, and man not at sittings, 638; description of the Milton rooms, 639-40; Mrs. Milton and Miss B., 640; prophecy of train ride, 640-1; communicators at Miss B.'s, 641.
- Pencil, Dr. Hodgson's way of holding, 89, 90, 156, 309, 329; pertinence of method of holding, 388, 450, 495; efforts to change position of, 401-4; held between fingers wrote only in air, 510; point of, broken, 565.
- Percipient, Access of the, to the marginal data, 715; selects from the subliminal of the agent, 722; limitations in the power of the, 723.
- Personal identity, the first standard of evidence of spirits, 153; no attempt to supply supernormal facts in proof of, 154.
- Personalities, Differences of opinion between the, 141; concerned in this Report, 262; may be secondary personalities of Miss Burton, 263.
- Personalities involved in the visual apparitions and their messages, 477-8; seeming identity of, 478.
- Personality, Another, the only alternative to the hypothesis of honesty of the subconscious, 142-44; four hypotheses in regard to, 143.
- Personality, One, acts as aman-uensis to get through messages of others.
- Personality, Play of, in the mental phenomena, 156; in automatic writing, 161-62; must be studied in the record, 162-63.
- Perspiration under test conditions, 141; on hands of Miss Burton, 366, 426.
- Phenomena, Physical, 30-87, 263; points of importance in the, 106-7; partial anæsthesia in connection with, 139; variations in attempts at, 140; claims for independent, unsustained, 150; the principal, 154; preposterous as evidence of spiritistic theory, 154-55; most of the produced hysterically, 605.
- Phenomena, Psychology of the, 106; points of importance in the, 106-7; absence of normal training for the, 107; three hypotheses on the character of the, 109; not what they are claimed to be, in most instances, 131-32; disregard of, by the psychic researcher, 163; complex conditions which explain the unity of the, 168; systematic character of the, 174.
- Philistine, The fundamental criticism against the average, 147.
- Phinuit régime. Indications of hysteria in the, 175; intermittent style of, 634.
- Phonograph purchased, 10, 17; manipulated while medium's hands were held, 11; initial facts pertain to the, 31; started and stopped at a distance with hands and feet of medium held, 44-45, 80-81, 114, 124, 188-9, 213, 214, 245, 423-5; stopping the, at a distance, 46-47, 50, 198, 208, 245, 411; stopped and started, 211; by controls, 271; music of, a necessary accompaniment of the phenomena, 263; position of, 264; echo of, in Miss Burton's throat, 312; stopped with both hands of Miss B. held, 319, 411, 469; horn of removed, 323; while music was playing, 378-9; efforts to stop



- the, 411-12; stopped without control, 443; rope found attached to key, 470, 471-2; examined by Hyslop, 480, 481; unsuccessful efforts to stop, 498-9, 507, 509; Dan wrote "B. C. will not let us", 509-10; duplication of music of, 512-14; echoes produced by, 513; toned down, 551.
- Phosphenes seen by Dr. Hyslop, 462-3.
- Phosphorus, Slight sensation of, 519; free from, 603.
- Photographs, Attempt to take, 50-51; of tambourine in the air, 51, 225; in medium's teeth, 51; adaptations to test conditions for taking, 115; two flash-lights taken, 209; of objects held in the air, 219-21; loud explosion and over exposure, 220; Miss B. rose in chair, 220; severely shocked, 220-1; sittings for flash-light, 221-33; a failure, 221-2; a blinding flash, 222; failed to catch trumpet in the air, 223; succeeded, medium tied, 225; of tambourine in air, 225.
- Physical functions, Summary of instabilities of the, 136-41.
- Piano moved by Black Cloud, 13-14n.
- Picture of a lady at the Miltons, 639.
- Picture of a landscape, 639n.
- Pictures, Complicated conditions necessary for seeing, 94-95, 141.
- Pietra, *see* Domuria, Signor Pietra.
- Piper, Mrs., How pencil was held by, 89, 91, 156, 357; uses Light with a capital, 103, 161; anæsthesia in, 121; stability of trance in, 136; evidence of suggestibility in case of, 167; phenomena of, connected with those of Burton case, 167, 309; Burton case richer than case of, 168; communicators through, ignorant of physical phenomena, 171; slight evidences of hysteria in, 175; echolalia, in, 175; association of natural functions in, 177; complications, of conditions not apparent in case of, 178; Miss B.'s cough like that of, 434; name of, given by Miss B., 482; Piper light seen by Mrs. Milton, 482-3; psychological adaptations like those of, 486-7; stability of condition in, 567; "decisions of the light" in reference to Wm. James, 633n; work of, planned by Imperator, 634; trance personalities have no direct connection with the normal states of, 729.
- Pitcher, Mr., Account of sitting, 22 Feb. 1910, 540-6; noted position of sitters, 540; table moved, 540-1; covered medium's right hand with his left, 541; singing in trumpet came from her mouth, 541; detected coordinate movements in forearm, 542; saw medium rise and touch sitters, 542; found her chair empty, 542; phonograph stopped and started with both hands in his, 543; rappings, 543; phosphorescent lights, 543-4; table lifted, 545; left hand of medium blackened, 545; doubts genuineness of Miss B.'s trance condition, 545; a clever deception, 546.
- Podmore, Mr., Explanation of telepathy by, through Mrs. Smead, 735n.
- Policeman, The, as an investigator, 151-52.
- Precautions taken for sitting at office of Dr. Smyth, 567-9; why taken, 592-3.
- Preface (J. H. Hyslop), 1-6; Miss Burton believes in herself, 1; marks of hysteria discovered, 1; case offers no excuse for scientific contempt or neglect, 2; evidence of hysteria, 3; the impediments a clue to the mystery, 4; a proof of statements of Dr. B. Janet, 4; honesty of the Miltons and Miss Burton, 5; disqualification of the conjurer, 5.
- Psychic, influenced by suggestion of experimenter, 164-67; chasm between mind of, and the normal bridged by automatic writing, 167; unstable condition of, 173.
- Psychic phenomena, What investigation of, has proved, 148.
- Psychic research must investigate the accompaniments of telepathic phenomena, 728.
- Psychic researchers, Problem for, 3-4.



- Psychological machinery, Identity of, 478, 486.
- Psychology, normal, Laws of, 148.
- Psychometry, An example of, 677-8.
- Pulse of Lenore, 52.
- Pulse of medium, Modifications of, 134-5, 141, 194-5, 199, 208, 235-6.
- Pulse of spirit hand, 45-46, 194-5, 199, 208, 235-6; that of medium's left arm, 243; felt by G. B. Canwill, 249.
- R—, Mrs., at sitting, 593; helped dress Miss B., 594; welcomed to room by control, 599.
- Ramsden, Lady Gwendolen. Postcard, on bunch of painted flowers, 712.
- Ramsden, Miss Hermione, Experiments and Experiences in telepathy, with Miss Miles and Miss Statkowski, 673-730. Record from received, 673; First report on thought transference with lady in Norway, and with friend in Copenhagen, 675-76; his expression "invisible wires", 675, 695; heard a "soundless voice" three times, 676-7, 695; mixture of truth and falsehood, 676; an example of psychometry, 677-78, 726-7; questions addressed to, 678-9; answer on relation of coincidence to time, 680; made all inquiries regarding apparitions of the living, 680; hypnagogic experiences of, 680-1; had nightmare twice, 681; Vango enters into private matters, 681; experience with Ronald Brailey, 681-82; sensation of a "presence", 682; house at home haunted, 682; never felt any spirit guidance, 683; on externality of impressions, 683; on day-dreams, 683; answers to second set of questions, 690-700; experience in reading people's thoughts, 690; books read on telepathy, 690, 691; first attempt at telepathy, 691; impressions seldom vivid, 691-2; a sound sleeper with absurd dreams, 692; never had serious illness, 692; practice of telepathy deliberately developed, tends to clairvoyance, 692; visions of person and things, 692-93; premonitory dream of visit to Venice, 694; experiments in psychometry, 695; heard a voice, 695; experiments with psychics and with Miss Miles, 695-96; a second self in childhood dreams, 696; failed at automatic writing, 697; intense concentration and faith necessary to successful telepathy, 697; feeling of terrible unreality, 697; consciousness in three layers, 698; not absent-minded, 698; of active mental temperament, 698; the idea of sound, 698; felt "something" trying to help, 699; conscious of surroundings, 699; spontaneous messages from friends, 699; non-vidic impressions, 699; often without psychic experiences, 700; naked foot in tub, with drawing, 702; unsuccessful at cross correspondence, 703; experiments with Miss Statkowski failures, 707-8; experiments in transferring words with Sybil Blunt, 708-12; Miss Blunt's sardonix ring, 708-10; post-card to Miss Blunt on the explosion at Aldershot, 710-11; successful effort of, to get impression from mother, 711-12; saw bunch of flowers, 712; mother of, angry\* at painted flowers, 712; simultaneous vision of a white light with R. King, 712-14; statement of, confirmed, 714; experiences of, extend far beyond telepathy, 721; incident of the "invisible wires", 721; agent's thought lay in the subconscious of, 722; letter of, to her friend, 723-4, 725; incident of the "soundless voice", 724-5; records of, show same disjointed results as cases of Mrs. Piper, Mrs. Smead, and others, 728.
- Rapport, Establishment and maintenance of, 165-67; imperfect, of Miss Burton, with the discarnate, 175.
- Rapport, Der, in der Hypnose*, by Moll, 165-66.
- Raps, 8, 9, 17, 248, 330, 399; heard near bed of Anna Burton, 17; for change of music, 33; indicating displeasure at the music, 81; for answering questions, 81-82, 84;

- versatility in production of, 82; illusions of localization of, 83; evidence of independence of, 85-86, 107; of supernormal character of, 86-87; on the borderland of mental phenomena, 87; replies by, coincide with those from other psychics, 87; in dissent or approval of music, 140; may be adequate evidence, 156; at first sitting, 184; on table and chair, 201; under table, 203; in connection with reading of automatic writing, 304; with hands held, and off table, 317-18, 366-7; answered "yes" while Miss B. whispered "no", 320; near Miss B. normal, 320; partly spelling Hodgson's name, 324-5; produced with both hands held, 352, 387, 398, 575; locus of, 352, 366-7, 387; with hands held and legs controlled, 371-5, 438; like pencil point on wood, 372, 373; on other side of room, 372; evidences of intelligent purpose and adjustment, 374-5; before medium was in trance, 399-400, 415; varied locus of, 400, 426; of a new kind, 447; continuous on window sill, 447-8; inability to localize, 449; hundreds of, with hands and legs of Miss B. controlled, 489-91; not caused by her hands and feet, 491; location of, tested, 500; clear rap for "No", 508-9; Miss B.'s foot found against leg of table after a loud rap, 512; at sitting at Dr. Smyth's office, 573-4; four, arranged for by writing, 578, 579, 583; for trumpet and tambourine, 594; Hyslop's observations on, 605; under Mrs. Smyth's hand, 606n; significant of outside influence in case of Miss Miles, 726.
- Rector, Difficulty in getting name, 102, 106, 160-61, 612, 627-8.
- Mrs. Milton and Miss Burton ignorant of, 161, 630; Mrs. M. explains getting name, 629; remarkably evidential, 631; mentioned by G. Pelham, 641.
- Report by Dr. W. H. HAMILTON and Dr. J. S. SMYTH, 179-260; Introduction, by James H. Hyslop, 179-80; Introductory explanation, by Dr. Hamilton, 181-82; Detailed record, June 1-June 24, 1908, 183-216; dynamometer experiments in normal state, 216-17; with the trance personalities, 217-18; notes and recapitulations, 218-33.—General report of investigation, September-December 16, 1908, 234-44; addenda, 245-8; report of sitting by G. B. Canwill (pseud.), 248-52; reports of sittings by Dr. Smyth, 252-58; report of sitting Feb. 26, 1909, 258-59; March 23, 259-60.
- Resentment to touch, Miss B.'s, 432, 459, 470; in hands alternately, 501; indication of presence of Black Cloud, 515.
- Rheostat brought to sitting by Dr. Hamilton, 308.
- Rings removed from hands of sitters, 12.
- Room, vision of, with table and drop light, 94, 159, 524; and Morris chair, 524; saw light from hand of Mrs. Smyth, 606n.
- Rope used, 11, 18; the tying with, of interest, 31, 50; incident of rope tying, 78-80, 250-1, 285-9; fastened to key of phonograph, 470, 471-72; examined, 472.
- Rose gotten through Mrs. Chenoweth, 630; name of Mrs. Thompson, Myers' psychic, 630.
- Rulland, Dan, trance personality, *See* Dan Rulland.
- S—, Miss, Experiences of, at sitting, 607-11.
- Safe and man with papers seen, suggested Prof. James, 554.
- Saliva of Miss Burton phosphorescent, 52, 234, 243.
- Sceptic, Views of the, 152; demands of the ultra, 153.
- Science and a Future Life*, by Prof. Hyslop, 92.
- Scientific mind, Mediation of the, between two theories, 19-20, 152.
- Scientist, The, and the layman, 20-21; and the charge of fraud, 21-22; hampered by the cost of investigation, 23; self-defence of, against the charge of negligence, 23; the situation to be met by, 24; mercenary interest of, 24-25; and the spiritistic hypothesis, 144-

- 45; criticism against, 147-48; must investigate more patiently, 149; the real, will seek to understand the psychological difficulties, 163.
- Séance at house of a stranger, 290-4.
- Séances, After effects of, on Miss Burton, 31, 133, 137.
- Seiling, Prof., Criticism by, 5.
- Sensations, Dissociation of motor and sensory, 141.
- Sensibility to touch, 520.
- "Shadow World", in *Everybody's Magazine*, read by Mrs. Milton, 93n.
- Sharpshooter, Aphasia of the word, in a dream, 117.
- Sideboard, Raps on the, 372; to right of, 400.
- Sidgwick, Prof., 552.
- Sidis, Dr., The hypnoidal state of, 729-30.
- Singing and whistling, see Whistling.
- Singing through trumpet, 13, 250, 291; simultaneous talking and, unsuccessful, 45; strong and well done with mouth bandaged, 192; by two voices, 298; natural and excellent, not located near Miss B., 310-13; by new voice, 310, 311, 323.
- Singing with the machine music, 11, 12, 18, 205, 206, 250, 291, 347-8, 354-55, 357, 370, 391; purported to be direct phenomenon, 31, 53; with mouth tied with handkerchief, 44, 192, 200, 214; singing through trumpet simultaneous with independent whistling, 13, 61, 234, 244, 268-70, 278-80, 312, 322-3, 325-6, 328, 330-1, 341, 370, 383, 397, 407, 419; evidence of vocal action in, 62, 184, 348; location of, 63, 279-80, 309, 316, 323, 331-2, 348-9, 359, 383, 391, 397, 398, 465-6; alternated with whistling, 259; control of breathing during, 259-60; by two voices, 298, 349; with both hands held, 311, 466; movement of throat in, 312, 317; with independent voice, 323; not so sustained as the whistling, 331; seemed on Hyslop's right, 380; attempt at, trumpet held by Hyslop, 392, 408; a low humming, 397, 428; peculiar experiment in, 430; never located at same distance as whistling, 442-3, 465; at same time as writing, 449-50; attempt at, 465; in trumpet detected by Hyslop, 466; no evidence of independent voices in, 467; Smecker heard, 536-7; good, at Dr. Smyth's, 571-2.
- Sitter and medium, Hand arranges contacts of, 210.
- Sitters, Position of, 235, 248.
- Sitting, The poorest, for incidents, 463.
- Sitting in the light for automatic writing, 399-404, 447-56; for visual apparitions, 481-7.
- Smead, Mrs., How pencil was held by, 89, 156, 358; anæsthesia in trance of, 121; stability of trance in, 136; spells Light with a capital, 161; phenomena of case of, connected with Burton case, 167, 309; catalepsy in, 175; stable trance conditions in, 567.
- Smecker, Mr., Report of sitting, Feb. 22, 1910, 536-40; smeared trumpet with black grease paint, 536; whispered to by Lenore, 537; asked to feel pulse, having blackened his fingers, 538; felt Lenore's pulse, 538; thus blackening Miss B.'s hand, 538; saw black spots on Miss B.'s hand, 538; states his points, 539; conduct of, criticized by Dr. Hyslop, 537n, 539n.
- Smyth, Dr. J. S., discovered marks of hysteria, 1; earlier experiments of, 43; failed to catch hands on tambourine, 44, 188; tip of finger of, touched, 45, 193; not sure of spirit's pulse, 45, 194, 199; on table moving, Miss Burton visible and passive, 46; asked for a materialized face, 47, 199; touched by warm hands, medium's being cold, 48, 204; felt enlarged gland, 49, 207; found medium's saliva phosphorescent, 52, 234, 243; on table lifting, 70, 257-8; noted Miss B. unconscious of touching herself, 125; in medical practice for 23 years, 182; asked Dr. Hamilton to join in experiments, 182; sealed and wedged door, 183; position of, at sittings, 184, 185, 187; convinced of vibration of vocal

- bands, 184, 186; hands and fingers ran over, 187; objects removed from eye of, in darkness, 189-91; cross-willing with Dr. Hamilton, 192-3; asked for spirit kiss, 195; medium tied to hands of, 200; handkerchief of, tied over medium's mouth, 200; satisfied with first tying, 202; knife taken from, 202; examined materialized face, 202; experiments of, with trumpet, 203-4, 204-5, 208; called to telephone, 209, 211; unable to call hospital, 211; sitting at house of, 213-16; held the Miltons, 215, 245, 246; felt larynx, 214; tested with dynamometer, 216; showed Mrs. Milton photograph, 227; held hands of Mrs. Milton, 228, 232; objected to medium standing up, 229; admitted honesty of controls, 233; asked for lights, 234; scorned by Miss B.'s secondary personality, 235; experience with spirit hand and breath of medium, 236; held hands of Mrs. Milton, 245; asked controls what time it was, 246-7; called for the pulse at the Canwill sitting, 249; reports of sittings, 252-60: Materializing séance, 252-4; impersonation of Lenore, 253; poor impersonation of Mrs. Galton, 253; saw medium dematerialize a spirit form, 254; on experiments in table-lifting, 256; noted functional anæsthesia and subconscious trickery, 258-9; auscultation of Miss B. by, 259-60; present at table lifting, 282-3; at tying of medium, 285-6; had rope in hand just before tying began, 290; felt medium's left arm doing something, 294; insisted on having light, 302; read automatic writing with Mrs. Milton, 303-4, 305; disclaimed touching rheostat, 308; located singing from Miss Burton, 315-16; raps, 317; noted synchronous singing and whistling, 325; produced a light with a match, 351, 352; on poor sittings, 463; attempt to hold sitting at office of, a failure, 479; sitting at office of, Miss B.'s clothing completely changed, 567-9; cataleptic, 591, 598; noted excellence and peculiarity of whistling and singing, 596; letter of, on light from hand of Mrs. Smyth, 606-7n.
- Smyth, Mrs., at sitting, 216; tested with dynamometer, 217; protested against hurting medium, 226; dressed Miss B., 568, 594; letter of, on lights and raps from or near herself, 606n.
- Soul out of the body in trance, 175.
- Sound, Experiments in localization of, 648-51.
- Soundless voice, The, 676, 724-5.
- Spirit form, Attempt to dematerialize a, 254.
- Spiritistic hypothesis, The, 144-78; the ordinary conception of, 145; possibility of, guaranteed, 145; justified by the Piper and similar cases, 146, 147; subconscious processes the medium of the supernormal, 146-47; variety in mediums, 147; the scientist and the layman, 147-48; participation of the subject in character of the phenomena, 148-49; mediumistic phenomena no exception to laws of psychology, 149; relation of Miss Burton's case to, 152; questions of, relative, 153; standard of evidence for, 153-54; scientific claims of, must be admitted, 154; physical phenomena no evidence for, 155; mental phenomena exhibit the right ring, 156; specific instances, 156-63; real value of present record, 163; environment of facts must be considered, 164; limitations, 164; suggestion and suggestibility, 164-67; complexity of conditions, 168; illustrated by Whirlwind incident, 168-71; purpose in control of conditions, 171-74; value of Burton case, 174-75; other conceptions, 176-77.
- Spirits as the interpretation of the phenomena, 20; feeling pulse of, 45-46; personal identity the first standard of evidence for, 153; exempted from practicing deception, 171; Mrs. Milton believes in, 244.
- Stand, Small, moved in cabinet, 241.
- Starlight, Attempt of, to communicate, 106; no communication from, 641.
- Statkowski, Miss Tamara, Experi-

- ments and Experiences in Telepathy, with Miss Miles and Miss Ramsden, 673-730; statement, 702; sphere like planet, 703; something large and black, 704; whirling through space, 705; sea of tree tops on hill, 705; entrance into a tunnel, 706; mediæval looking hall, 707; experiments with Miss Ramsden failures, 707-8.
- Stimuli, Hysterics need new, 237.
- Stimulus. Sensorial reaction upon the, 148.
- Stomach, Disturbance of, in trances, 137.
- Subconscious, Area of the, 112; the fundamental mystery, 112; not disheartened by exposure, 134; influence of suggestion on the, 164-67; behavior of, in Whirlwind incident, 170; participation of the, and the automatic functions, 176; influence of her, on Mrs. Chenoweth, 177.
- Subconscious honesty, 58-59, 60, 134, 361, 363, 398, 570, 575.
- Subconscious processes the medium of manifestation of the supernormal, 146-47; mixture of, with the spiritistic, 152.
- Subject, The, the primary factor in the phenomena, 148-49.
- Subliminal, Myers' definition of the, as the spirit, 737-8.
- Subliminal agencies, Absence of, in Mrs. Piper, 177.
- Subliminal condition, An automatic, unusually limited, 362.
- Subliminal honesty, 132-34, 363, 455, 499, 520.
- Sudbury unknown to Miss Ramsden or her friend, 677.
- Suggestibility, Absence of automatic, 141; and suggestion, 164-65; to transcendental agencies desired, 165; delicate, to be cultivated in the psychic, 166.
- Supernormal, The medium through which the, manifests itself, 146-47; pervaded by subjective contributions of the mind, 150; revelation of the, a mixture of spiritistic and subconscious agency, 152; evidences of the, 160; cast in the mold of the subconscious, 164; complexity of conditions for obtaining the, 168, 178; distinctly approximated, 174; not much in question, 261.
- Supernormal incidents in Burton case, 167.
- Suspicious, Consideration of, 444.
- Table, Dining-room, Weight of, 68, 264; slammed about, 46, 196-7; extended by the control, 197, 203, 205, 235, 363, 369, 379, 391; tipped away from tied medium, 200, 215; movements of, 209; tipped by medium, 240; rolled nearer phonograph, 248, 264-5, 315, 330, 353, 363, 369, 379, 391, 416, 434; cracked and groaned, 274; pillow tied to foot of the, 369-70; moved toward Miss B., 416; not opened wide, 426; tipped, hands and feet not touching, 595.
- Table levitation, 251; Dr. Smyth on experiments in, 256-8; failure of efforts for, 259-60, 274; account of, by J. H. Hyslop, 281-4; in Pitcher's report, 544-5.
- Table, Small, used at Dr. Smyth's house, 213; raised and followed hands of medium, 50, 215.
- Table-tipping, *see* Levitation.
- Tambourine, Playing and movements of, 9, 10, 15, 17; hanging of, on picture frame, 15, 30; playing of, 11, 31, 44, 198, 250; photographed in the air, 51; in medium's teeth, 51; efforts to catch hands at, 44, 188; raised from Dr. Hamilton's hands, 229; raised high and dropped, 230, 232-3; rattled, with both hands of medium held, 238; touched in Dr. Hamilton's hand, 239; touched Hyslop's hand and struck nose, 270; covered with lights, 314; sound of, heard by Hyslop, 318; hand holding touched by Dr. Hyslop, 330; placed in Dr. Hyslop's hand, 339; cymbals and bells on rung separately, 345-6; on edge, trumpet resting on, 597.
- Telæsthesia has no place in the case, 109.
- Teleological or designed action, Evidences of, 115.
- Telepathic hypothesis, Supernormal modified by subliminal influences in the, 146; evidence and explanatory powers of, relative, 153.

- Telepathy, No evidence of, obtained, 41-42, 109, 174; problem in connection with, 168; apparently indicated, 289.
- Telepathy, Experiments and Experiences in, by Miss Miles, Miss Ramsden and Miss Statkowski, 673-730. Introduction by J. H. Hyslop, 673-5; value of marginal associates, 673-4; were their psychic accesses limited to telepathy, 674; significant complications of, 714-31; access of percipient to marginal data in mind of agent, 715; not selective, 715; phenomena do not show a cohesive unity, 716; defect of method in dealing with, 717; object of earlier investigations in, 717; synthetic associates show evidence of the supernormal, 718; a mere name for a group of facts not explained, only classification, 719; part of a larger whole, 719, 720; Miss Ramsden's experiences extend beyond, 721; selective extended into infinity, 722; limitations of power of percipient, 723; suppose discarnate agents are intermediaries in, 725-7; first between the living and the dead, 725-6; not an adequate explanation as the cause, 727; fragmentary character of cases of telepathic coincidence, 727-8; Miss Ramsden's cases show more complexity than those reporting content of present thought of agent and percipient, 728; Miss Miles' bring us against the influence of the dead, 728; telepathic phenomena must take place during normal consciousness, 729; exasperatingly complex set of, 730; telepathy will not account for the alliances with mediumistic phenomena, 730-1; Myers' explanation of, through Mrs. Chenoweth, 734.
- Temperature, Phenomenon of, 48, 141.
- Test conditions, Spontaneous desire for, 444.
- Test of finger touching, 193; of tying, 202; of muscular strength, 216; of lights, 273.
- Test séance, 181, 183.
- Tests readily assented to, 185, 191, 330, 375; more distinct wanted, 294; made light, 340.
- Thompson, Mrs. Rosa, Myers' psychic, 630.
- Thought, Dan on "bringing her out by", 484, 487.
- Thought transference, Miss Ramsden's experiments in, 675.
- "Thought transference", by Northcote W. Thomas, 690.
- Time, The, named by the controls, 246-8; Myers on, 735.
- Tipping, K., An externalized vision of a lady, 700-1.
- Touch, Fright from, 477.
- Touchings reported by G. B. Canwill, 248-9.
- Trance, Forces found it necessary to place medium in a, 11; important facts, pertain to the, 31; would not occur with music and darkness, 32; indicated by severe tests for anæsthesia, 58; existence of, in the case, unquestionable, 111; definition of a, 111; realm of the subconscious, 112; borderland in, 122, 131; instability of, in Miss Burton's case, 136; manner of awakening Miss B. from, 138.
- Trance deception, Suggestion of, 106; distinguished from conscious fraud, 109-10; the hypothesis of, 111-144; the field denominated by the terms, 113; not to be ascribed, 131; complicated with honest endeavors to prevent, 133; discussion of, 361-2.
- Trance personality, Is the, consciously deceiving? 361.
- Trance phenomena, chasm between Miss B.'s normal experience and the, 107-8.
- Transcendental, Rapport with the, the *quæsitum*, 165.
- Trickery, Subliminal, and conscious efforts to prevent, 132-34; noted by Dr. Smyth, 254, 255-6, 259; we cannot be confident of, 313; suggested by actions of Miss B., 463.
- Tricks, Physical, associated with hysteria, 155.
- Trumpet, Whistling or singing in a, 11; procured, 18; whistling in, with both hands held, 47, 185-6, 198, 214; imagined movements of



- the, 53-54; whistling in, when held by Hyslop, 67; fell at slightest touch, 134; fall of, when whistling ceased, 11, 185; announcement through, 196; whistling in, while on table, 198-9; Oma requested to sing in, 206; over left shoulder of Dr. Smyth, 208; two voices in, 214; whistled and moved about room, 215; attempts to photograph falling, 220-21, 223, 224, 227; in air over Dr. Smyth's head, 225; dropped from Miss B.'s face at touch by Dr. Hamilton, 237, 241; seen moving about, 259; Dr. Hyslop's experience with the, 291; held at arm's length, 293; fall of, 297, 298, 309, 310, 347; apparently not used when both hands are held, 311-12; attempt to get, from behind phonograph, 314-15; frequently thrown down, interrupting singing, 323; detection of movement of, difficult, 322, 324, 327, 331; resonance in, 332; wind through, 333; movements of, when both of Miss B.'s hands were held, 365-6, 367-8; fell at collapse after whistling, 440-1; experiments with trumpet held by Hyslop, 391-4, 397, 422, 467-9; touched by Hyslop's nose, dropped from mouth of Miss B., 437; not used during whistling, 440, 441, 458; only mechanical device required, 444; whistling in, when it struck Hyslop's face, 455; fell at touch on cheek, 458; or attempt to touch, 460; Hyslop found, at mouth during singing, 466; used with whistling and fell, 467; experiment by Hyslop in holding, 505; not used in whistling and singing, 511; smeared black by Mr. Smecker, 536; moved by jerks, both hands held, 561-4; breeze made through, 595; resting on edge of tambourine, 597.
- Vango, Miss Ramsden's experience with, 679, 681-82; message to Miss R. through, 713.
- Verrall, Mrs., Communicator through claimed to be a messenger for telepathy, 725.
- Vision of a lady, An externalized, by Miss Tipping, 700-1.
- Vision, Simultaneous, of a white light, 712-14.
- Vocal organs, Motor paralysis of, during trances, 138-39, 258; vague sense of action of, 312-13.
- Vocal piece, Duplicate of words of, heard by Dr. Hyslop, 513-14.
- Water color picture, a spirit painting, 105.
- Weale, Miss, heard voice of Dr. Pusey, 695.
- "Whirlwind", Jennie P—, a personality of Mrs. Chenoweth's, 94; identified by windmill, 96-97, 123, 160, 527; cross reference with Miss Burton, 123; the incident examined, 168-69; the sitting, 523-31.
- Whispering through trumpet, 250; in voice of Miss B., 332.
- Whistling, Skill of Miss B. at, in trance condition, 29, 107; when hands were held on larynx, 43, 419-21; in trumpet, with both hands held, 44, 47, 185-6, 215; distant from mouth of Miss B., 63; with mouth tied with handkerchief, 44, 188; well done, 192, 207, 214, 249-50, 316, 323, 331, 348, 354, 364-5, 370, 391, 393, 406, 419, 440-42, 445, 487, 550, 571; ordinary, 198, 203, 246, 322, 407, 516, 586; continued when phonograph paused, 276-7; with finger on lip, 317; when both hands were held, 365-6, 376, 439-40, 457; under difficulties, trumpet held by Hyslop, 392, 467-9; located near face and mouth of Miss B., 394, 421; not located near Miss B., 406, 416-17, 426-7, 437, 441-2, 450, 488; near phonograph, 407; two whistlings heard, 420, 421; at Hyslop's right, 426-7, 440; with trumpet not used 440; attempted with lips held, 455, 457, 464; no success, 458, 464-5; stopped at attempt to touch face, 460; with writing, 502; loud and clear through trumpet, both hands free, no stop for breathing, 517, 597; without music, 521; compared with best vaudeville, 522.
- Whistling and singing, 11, 12, 18;



- simultaneous, 13, 234, 244, 250, 268-70, 311, 312, 322, 325, 328, 354, 357, 370, 383, 397, 407, 419, 442, 467, 511, 520, 550-1, 571, 586, 596; purported to be direct phenomena, 31; impossible without music and darkness, 32; independent, 13, 53, 74, 267, 278; locating the source of the sounds, 61-65; slight movement of vocal cords in whistling, 62; more marked in singing, 62; no whistling detected near her mouth, 63, 311; experiments in localizing whistling, 65n; with both hands held, 67, 316, 488, 597; localization of, 268-70, 278-80, 321-4, 326-7, 330-1, 354-5, 359, 380, 383, 393, 397, 407-8; whistling sustained, singing interrupted, 331, 408; locus of, changed, 331-2; whistling located farther off than singing, 332-3; Mrs. Milton's suggestion regarding, 360-1; nearly all that could be got at Dr. Smyth's séance, 572; waving quality of simultaneous, 596.
- Whistling by Pietra clear and distinct, 267-8, 278, 297, 321; Mrs. Milton a hindrance to, 393.
- Whistling, Independent, not distinct, 13, 267, 278.
- Will, Possible dissociation of the, from consciousness, 176.
- Will-o'-the-Wisp, The, 77.
- Windows, Table slammed about while Mrs. Milton opened, 196-7.
- Winifred, name of Hyslop's daughter, given, 621; known to Mrs. Milton, 621.
- Windmill, a symbol for Whirlwind, 96-97, 123, 160, 527; the sitting, 523-31.
- Wood, Alonzo, Statement of, 13n; signed Mrs. Milton's report, 16.

